

THE SECOND
Tome, the Palace of
Pleasure containyng store of goodlye
Hystories, Tragical matters, & other
Morall argumentes, very requi-
site for delight and
profyte.

Chose and selected out
of diuers good and commendable Au-
thors, and now once agayn correc-
ted and encreased.

By VVilliam Painter, Clerke of the
Ordinance and Armarie

La. Savage & Roke
Imprinted at London
In Fleetstrete by Thomas
MARSHE. 1582.

3
ef
tu
m
in
of
rif
an
tha
pro
by
Et
M
thu
(ex
ler
tha
By
we

TO THE RIGHT VVOR
shipful Sir George Howard

Knight, Maister of the Luenes
Majesties Armarye.



Very Sciēce hauing

his peculier commodity, and cō-
ducinge to the trauayler and dil-
ligent searcher, a due deserued be-
nefyte (besydes the exercise and
shunninge the pestilent monster
Idlenes) discloseth the miraculous
effect of the Diuinity, and the excellency of his Crea-
ture: Who breathing life into that sencelesse worke, fra-
med within the mould of humayn Conception, forceth
in him by nature and timely institution such capacitye
of Science, as not onelye by that knowledge hee glo-
rifyeth his Creator, but also besydes himselfe, helpeth
and doth good to other. For profe wherof the Science of
that surpassing and delightsome pasture of *Theologie*, is
profitable to teache, argue, reprove, and instruct, that
by pacience and consolation we may conceiue hope of
Eternitye. The knowledge of *Philosophie* cureth the
Mynde, auoydeth childish care, expelleth feare, and
shunneth fond desyres. O *Philosophye*, the guide of life
(exclameth Tullie) the inquisitor of Vertue and expel-
ler of vice. *Rhetorike* (affirmeth he) causeth vs to learne
that we know not, and that we know to teach to other:
By the same we exhort, with *ψ* weperswade, with that
we cōfort the afflicted, by it we encourage the astōned.

Aij

and

and appease the outrageous. *Musike*, easeth the troubled mynde, lenifyeth sorrowe, comforteth the heauye harted, and erecteth a contemplatyon of Heauenlye thinges. *Astronomye*, reuealeth the nature of the Starres & Planets, presageth dayes & times for the helpe and maintenaunce of life. *Poesie* teacheth amendment of maners, directeth what things be mete for imitation, and with what detriment wantonnes anoyeth the bodye of man. By means of it (Sainct Augustine saith, he learned many good lessons to profite himselfe and do good to other. To be short euery sciēce is so necessary, as the same taken away, reason is depriued, and the Life of Man (of due order and gouernment) defrauded. Thinke (sayth a Greke Oratour) the knowledge of many thinges to bee more precious & excellent, thē a Chest heaped vp with abundance of money: for the one quickly fayleth, and the other for euer lasteth. For *Scientia* (affirmeth hee) is the onelye immortall storehouse of all possessions. Amonges which troupe of Sciences, the knowledge and search of *Histories* deserueth a place in the cheffest rank, and is for example of humaine affayres, a Christal light to shew the pathes of our Auncestors. The same displaieth the counsels, aduises, pollicies, actes, successe, and endes of Kinges, Princes and great men, with the order and discriptiō of time and place. And like a liuely image representeth before our eies the beginning, end, and circumstance of ech attēpt. The same (like a Mistresse of our life) by probable examples stirreth vp our sluggish mindes, to aspyre the eternal glorie of praise and fame, and terrifyeth the desperate and aduenturous, from enterprise of things vnseemly. The same is a passing picture of verity, and an absolute Paterne framinge the matter
greater

greater nor lesse then it is. And because I am not ignorant what *Encomia* innumerable Authors in time past, and wryters of our tyme do attribute vnto that science, and with what titles the Prince of them all decketh the praise of Historiall knowledge, I only refer the worthines to the practisers, and the singularitye of Histories trauel and delight; to eeh willing minde that imploye their leasure and tyme therin. And I for my parte do confesse (that by reading of Histories) I fynd the saying whiche *Tullie* aduoucheth of *Publius Scipio* to bee true: That he was neuer lesse idle, then when he was idle, and neuer lesse alone then whē he was alone, Meaning thereby, that when he was at best leifure, he was neuer idle, nor when he was alone vnoccupied. For when labor resteth him selfe in me, and Leifure refresheth other affaires, nothing delights more that vacant tyme, than readinge of Histories in such vulgar speache, wherein my small knowledge taketh repast. And for that my priuat readig might not delyte and pleasure me alone, to auoid the nature of that cankered churle and foe of humain companye, *Timon of Athens*, that liued but for him selfe, I haue (after my skill) culled some floures and frutes fro that pleasaunt store of those my readings to impart for vniuersal gayne and benefyte chosynge rather hereby to followe the liberalitey of *Cimon* a Gentleman of that Cittye, who knowynge hymselfe to bee borne to profite other, and for the enriching of his Country not only atchiued maruailous matters for furtherace of Common wealth, but lefte his Gardens and Orchards open for all Men to participate the Fruictes of his pleasure and trauell. Wherby so wel as I can I follow the tract & practice of other, by whose meanes, so manifold sciences

A iij.

if our

in our known tounge and translation of Histories be frequent and rise amonge vs. Al which be done after our commodity, pleasure, solace, preferuation and comfort, and without the which we cannot long be sustayned in this miserable lyfe, but shal become not much vnlyke the barbarous, ne discrepant from the sauage forte. The inuestigatours and bringers to light, wherof, direct their eyes and meaning to none other end, but for the benefyte of vs and our posteritye, and that our faces be not tayne'd with the blushing coloure to se the passing diligence of other Countreyes by curious imbelishinge of their states with the troublous trauaile of their brayne, and labourfom course of penne, Who altogether imploie those paynes, that no Science lurke in Corner, that no Knowledge be shut vp in cloysters, that no History remaine vnder the maske and vnknowne attyre of other tongues. Among which crew (I say) I craue an inferiour place, and haue vndertaken the vnfolding of sundry Histories from the couerture of foren language, for none other purpose and intent but to vniuersal benefyte. Part wherof, two yeares past (almost) wer made commune in a former boke, now succedeth a secōd, furnished with like ornamēts & the other was The first (by duties chalēge was adressed to the right honorable & Earle of Warwik, for respect of his honour, and my calling. This the secōd by lyke band, your worship may iustly clayme as a iust tribute now this moneth of Nouember, payable. Or if your Curtesye would not deale so roughly with youre bounden creditour, yet for duty sake I must acquite and content that which hath so long ben due. The same I offer now not with such vsury and gayne as your beneuolence and syngular bounty, by long forbearing hath deferred

The Epilogue.

serued, but with such affected will and desyre of recompence, as any man alyue can owe to so rare a friend.

Your worship I haue chosen for the firste person of this booke, and the protector of the same (the matter moste specially therein comprised, treating of courtly fashions and maners, and of the customes of loues gallantise, and the good or yll successe thereof because you be an auncient Courtier, and one of the eldest Trayne, and such as hath bene employed by sundry our Princes, in their affayres of greatest wayght and importance: and for that your selfe in your lustiest tyme) euer bred and brought vp in Court) haue not ben vnacquainted with those occurants. If I shoulde stand particularlye to touch the originall of your noble Auncestry, the succession of that reuowed line, their fidelity for graue aduise and counsel, your honorable educatiō, the mariage of a mighty Kyng with one of your sisters, the valiant exploitcs of your parents againste the Frenche and Scottes, the worthy service of your selfe in fiede, wherby you deseruedly wāne the order of Knighthode, the trust which her maiesty reposed in you, by disposing vnder your charge the store of her Armure, and your worthy prefermēt to be Maister of her Armary generall. If I should make recital of your careful industry and painful trauel sustayned, for answering her Maiestyes expectation, your noble cherishing of the skilful in that science, your good aduauncement of the best, to supply the vacant romes, your refusall of the vnworthy: and finally of your modest and curteous dealings in that office, I feare lacke of ability (and not of matter) would want grace and order by further circumstance to adde sufficient prayse: Yea although my selfe do say nothing, but reserue the same in silence to auoyd
suspecte

+ suspect of adulation) the very armure and their furni-
res do speake, vniuersal testimony doth wonder, and the
Readines of the same for tyme of seruice doth aduouch.
Which care of things continually resting in your breast,
hath atchyued such a tymely diligence, and successe, as
when her Maiestyes aduersary shal be readye to molest
she shal be prest (by Gods assistance) to defend and march.
But not to hold your worship long by length of pream-
ble, or to discourse what I might further saye, either in
fauour of this booke, or commendation of youre selfe, I
meane (for this instant) to leaue the one to general iudg-
ment, and the other to the particular sentence of each
of your acquaintance. Humblye making this
onlye sute that my good will may sup-
plye the imperfection of myne
Abilitye.

And so with my hartly prayer for your pre-
seruation to him that is the auctor
of life and health. I take
my leaue.

From my pore house besides the
Towre of London, the iiiiij
of Nouember.

1567.

Your most bounden
V Villiam Painter.

To the Reader.



S shewed curtesie deserueth grate-
ful acquital and frēdly fauour forceth
mutual merit. So for gētle acceptatiō
of my other boke, I rēder to thy delite
and profit a second Tome, for which I
craue but like report: albeit, neither
worthy of any: or other then the rude artificer gayneth
by tryal of his art. Who hauing cōmitted to his skil and
workmanship, some substance of gold, or other precious
matter fashioneth the same with such bungled shape &
order, as (besydes dispraysē) it carieth the vnablenes of
the workman. Howsoeuer (then) the ablenes or perfec-
tiō herof vniuersally shal cōtēt or particularly displease:
the boke craueth mild cōstruction, for imploied paines.
And yet the same (liking or lothing the licorous diet, &
curious expectatiō of som) shal beare regarde with those
that more delire in holsom viandes (voyd of variety) thā
in the cōfused mixture of foren drugges fetched farr of.
Who no doubt will supply with fauorable brute, default
of ablenes and riper skil in the Histories of forren spech.
Which is the guerdon (besides publike benefyte) after
which I gaze, and the best stipend that ech welwillinge
mind (as I suppose) aspireth for their trauel, & briefly to
touch what comodity thou shalt reape of these succedig
Histories, I deme it not vnapt for thine instructiō, to vn-
fold what pith and substance, resteth vnder the context
of their discourse.

¶ In the Nouel of the AMAZONES, is displayed a
straunge or miraculous port, (to our present skill) of wo-
mēs governmēt, what state they subdued, what increase
of King.

of Kingdome, what combats and conflicts they durst attempt contrary to the nature of that sexe

In ALEXANDER the greate, what ought to bee the gratitude end curtesye in a puissant Prince, toward his slaue and captiue, & to what perilous plunge he slippeth by exchange of vice for vertue.

In TIMOCLIA and THEOXENA the stoutnesse of two noble Dames to auoyde the beastly lust and raging fury of Tyrantes.

ARIOBARZANES telleth the duty of a Subiect to his Prince: & how he ought not to contend with his souerayn in matters of curtesy, at length also the condition of Courting flatterers: and the poiso of the monster Envy.

ARISTOTIMVS disgarboyleth the intralles of Tyranny, describing the end whereunto Tirants do attein and how that vice plagueth their posterity.

The two Romaine Queenes do point (as it wer) with their fyngers, the natures of Ambitiō and Cruelty, and the gredy lust (hidden in that feeble seaze) of souerainty.

SOPHONISBA reporteth the force of beauty, and what poyson distilleth frō that licourous sappe inuenim the hartes of valiant gentlemen.

The Gentlewomen of HYDRVSA, the ficlenes of Fortune.

The Empresse Faustina, and the countesse of Celant, what blossoms blome of whorish life, and what fruites therof be culled.

The letters of the Emperour TRAIANE, do paynt a right shape of vertue, a good state of gouernment, and the comly forin of obediēce.

¶ Thre amorous Dames reueale the sleights of loue: the redines of Nobles to be baited with þe amorous hoke, & what desire such infamous strūpers haue, to be honored.

Queene

¶ **Q**uene ZENOBIA, what the noble Gentlewomē (whom the fates ordayne to rule) ought to do, how farre their magnanimity ought to stretch, and in what boundes to containe their souerainty.

¶ **E**VPHIMIA a Kings daughter of Corinth, and the vnfortunate Duchesse of Malfi, what match of mariage Ladies of renowme, and Dames of Princelye Houses ought to chose.

¶ **M**istresse DIANORA, MITHRIDANES and NATHAN, KATHERINE of Bologna, & SALADINE the mutual curtesies of noble and gentle Personages, and for what respectes.

¶ **Q**uene ANNE of Hungarie, the good nature and liberalitie of a Quene: and with what industry Gentlewomen of priuy chamber ought to preferre the sutes of the valiant, and of such as haue wel serued the cōmon welth.

¶ **A**LEXANDRE de Medices, Duke of Florence, the iustice of a Prince, and Gouvernour to the wrōged party, what vertues ought to shine in Courtiers, & with what temperance their insolence is to be repressed.

¶ **I**VLietta & RHOMEO disclose the harty affectiōs of ij. incōparable louers, what secret sleights of loue, what dāger either sort incurre which may without the aduise of Parentes,

¶ **T**wo Gentlewomē of Venice, the wisdom and policy of Wiues to chastice and restrain the follies of Husbands, and the stoutnes they ought to vse in their defēse.

¶ **T**he Lord of Virle and the widow ZILIA geue lesōns to Iouers, to auoyde the immoderate panges of loue, they prognosticate the indiscretiō of promised penance, they warne to beware al vnseemly hestes, lest the penalties of couetise and vayn glory be incurred.

The

¶ The lady of Boeme, schooleth two noble Barōs that with great boast assured theſelues to impair her honor.

¶ DOM DIEGO & GENEVRA, record the cruelty of women bent to hate and the voluntarie vow performed by a passionate Knight, with the perfect frendſhip of a true friend in redreſſe of a friends miſhap.

¶ SALIMBENE & ANGELICA, the kindenes of a gentleman in deliuerie of his ennemy, and the conſtant mynd of a chaſt and vertuous mayden.

¶ Miſtreſſe HELENA of Florence diſcouereth what lothſom luſtes do lurk vnder the bark of fading beauty, what ſtench of filthy affection fumeth from the ſinoldring gulfe of diſhoneſt Loue, what pranks ſuch dames do play for deceit of other, and ſhame of themſelues.

¶ CAMIOLA reſproueth the mobility of youth ſuch chiefly as for noble aunceſtry regarded riches more than vertue, She lyke a Miſtreſſe of conſtancye leſſoneth her equals from wauering myndes, and not to aduenture vpon vnſtedie contracts: with thoſe that care not (vnder what pretence) they com by riches.

¶ The Lords of Nocera foretel the hazardes of whoredom, the rage of Ielouſy, the difference of duty betwene Prince and ſubiect, the fruites of a Rebelle, the endes of Traiterie and Tirāny, and what moſtruous ſucceſſe, ſuch vices do attaine.

¶ The King of Marocco deſcribeth the good nature of the homely and loial ſubiect, the maruaylous loue of a true and ſymple Countryman towarde his liege and ſoueraygne Lorde, and the bounty of a Curteous Prince, vpon thoſe that vnder rude attyre, be garniſht with the floures of vertue.

THE SECOND TOME of the Palace of Pleasure.

The Amazones.

¶ The hardinesse, and conquests of diuers stout, and aduenturous VVomen, called AMAZONES, the beginninge, and continuance of their Reigne, and of the great Iourney of one of their Queenes called *THALESTRIS* to visit *ALEXANDER* the great: with the cause of her trauaile.

The first Nouell,



Here the first Booke beegan
with a Combate fought, and tried betwene two mighty Cities, for Principality, and Gouvernement, the one hight Rome after called the head of the World (as some thinke by reason of a mans head found in the place where the Capitoile did stand) the other Alba.
To which Combat sixe Gentlemen of

either city were appoynted, and the victorie chaunced to the Romayne side: In this second parte, in the forefront, and first Nouell of the same, is described the beginninge, continuance and ende of a Womans Common wealth (an Historie rare & straunge to the vnlearned, ignorant of the Worlds sickle ruled day) which with the mighty Princes and puissant Potentates for defence of their kingdome, no lesse than the Carthaginians, & Romaynes did for theirs. But as it is no wonder to the skilful that a whole Monarchie, and kingdome should be intierly peopled with that Sexe: so to the not well trained in Histories, this may seeme miraculous. Wherefore not to scape thee from the discourse of those strange & aduenturous women, diuers be of diuers opinions for the Etimologie

The Amazones,

mologie of the word : wherof amonges the Græcians be diuers iudgements. These Amazones were most excellent warriors, very valiant, and without mans aduice did conquer mighty Cities, famous Cities, and notable Kingdomes, continuinge of longe time in one Seigniorie, and government. These people occupied & enjoyed a great part of Asia. Som writers deuide them into two Prouinces, one in Scythia in the North part of Asia : other by the hill Imaus, which at this day is called the Tartaria Scythia different from that which is in Europa : the other sort of the Amazones were in Libia a prouince of Africa. But because the common sort of Authoys doe vnderstand the Amazones to be those of Asia, I meane to leaue of the difference. The Scythians were a warlike people, and at the beginninge of their kingdome had two kinges, by whom they were gouerned. Notwithstandinge the nature of dominion beinge of it selfe ambitious, cannot abide any companion or equall. Which caused these two kinges to be at variance, and afterwards the matter grew to ciuill warres, where in the one beinge Uictor, two of the principal and chiefe of the contrary faction, called Plinius and Scolopithos, were banished with a great number of their adherentes, al which did withdraw themselves to the limits of Cappadocia in the lesser Asia, and in despite of the Countrey Peasantes, dwelled alonges the riuer of Thermodon, which entreth into the Sea Euxinum, otherwise called Pontus. And they beinge made Lordes of the countrey, and of the places adioyninge, raygned for certayne yeares, vntill the Peasantes and their confederates made a conspiracy agaynst them : and assemblinge by Pollicy, ouercame and slewe theym all. The newes of the death knowen to their Wyues dwellinge in the countrey, caused them to conceiue great beautiesse, and dolor extreme. And although they were women, yet did they put on manly courage, & determined to reuenge the death of their husbandes, by puttinge their hands to weapons wherewithal they did exercise themselves very ofte. And that they might all be equall, and their sorrow common, they murdred certaine of their husbandes which remayned there, after the other were banished. Afterward beinge altogether, they made a great army, and forsooke their dwellinge places, refusinge the mariage of many suters. And arriuinge in the lande of
their

their enemies (that made small account thereof, although forces tolde of their approche) they sodainly came vpon them vnprovoked, and put them all to the sword. This beinge done, the women tooke the government of the Countrey, inhabitinge at the beginninge alonge the River of Thermodon, where their husbandes were slayne. And although many Authoꝝ do differ in the Situation of the place where the Amazones did dwell, yet the truth is, & the beginning of their kingdome and of their Habitation was vpon that River. But of their manyfolde conquestes, be engendꝛed diuers opinions declared by Strabo, and others. They fortified themselves in those places, and wan other countreys adiopninge, choosinge amonge the two Queenes, the one named Martesia, and the other Lampedo. These two louinglye deuised the army and men of Warre in two partes, eyther of them defendinge (with great hardinesse) the Landes which they had conquered: and to make themselves moze dreadfull (such was the credite and banity of men that time) they farned to be the daughters of Mars. Afterward these miraculours women liuing after this manner in peace and iustice, considered that by succession of time, for want of daughters that might succede, warres, and time, would extinguishe their race. For this cause they treated marriage with their neyghboꝝ named Gargarians (as Plinie sayeth) with condition, that vpon certayne tymes of the yeare, their husbandes should assemble together in some appointed place, and vse the for certayne dayes vntill they were with chylde: whych beinge done and knowen, they should returne home agayne to their owne houses. If they brought forth daughters, they noyshed, and trayned them vp in armes, & other manly exercises, and to ride great Horses. They taught them to run at Base, and to followe the Chace. If they were deliuered of males, they sent the to their fathers. and if by chauce they kept any backe, they murdꝛed them, or else brake their armes, and legs in such wise as they had no power to beare Weapons, and serued for nothyng else but to spin, twisse, and to doe other feminine labour. And for as much as these Amazones defended themselves so valiantly in the warres with Bowe, and Arrowes, and percepued, that their breastes did very much impech the vse of a Weap-
 2.
 on, and

The Amazones,

pon, and other exercises of armes, they seared by the right breasts of their ponge daughters, for which cause they were named Amazones, which signifieth in the Greeke tongue, without breasts, although some other do geue vnto that name an other meaninge. Afterwards, increasinge by course of time in number & force, they made greate preparation of Weapons and other Engins for the Warres, and leauing their countrey (which they thought was very small) in the keepinge of some, whom they specially trusted, the rest marched abroade, conqueringe and subduinge all those which they found rebellious. And hauing passed the riuer of Tanais, they entred Europa, where they vanquished many countreys, directing their way towardes Thracia, from whence they returned a while after, with great spoyle, and victorie: and comminge agayne into Asia, they brought many prouinces vnder their subiection, proceedinge euen to Mare Caspium. They Edified, and peopled an infinite number of good citties, amongs which, according to the opinion of diuers, was the famous Cittie of Ephesus, the same beinge the chiefe of al their Empire, & the principal place that stood vpon Thermodon. They defended themselves in Warres with certayne Cergats, made in fashion of a halfe Moone, and entring into battaile vsed a certaine kinde of Flutes to geue the people courage to fight, as the Lacedemonians were wont to do. In this wise increased more and more the fame of those women, and so continued vntill the tyme that Hercules, Theseus, and many other valiant men liued in Græcia. The sayd Hercules, kinge Euristeus of Athens commaunded, to proceede with great force of people against the Amazones, and that hee should bringe vnto him the armures of the two Queenes, which then were two sisters, that is to say Antiopa, and Oritia. At this commaundement Hercules incouraged with desire of honoz and gloze, accompanied with Theseus, & other his frends, sayled alongst Pontus, and arriued in most convenient place vpon the shoare of Thermodon, where he landed in such secret manner and with such oportunitie of tyme, as Oritia, one of the two Queenes was gone out of the Countrey with the greatest part of her women, to make Warre, & conquer new Countreys, in so much that he found Antiopa, which doubted nothinge, ne yet knewe of his comminge. Vppon which occasion, Hercules and his people surprisinge the Amazones vnwares, and although they en-

they entred into fildes & did put themselves in defence with such diligence as they could, yet they were overcome, and put them to flight, and many of them slayne, and the rest taken: amongst whom were the two sisters of the Queene, & one named Menalipe which was Hercules Prisoner, and the other Hipolita, the Prisoner of Theseus. Certaine Historians do say that they were subdued in a pitched field, & appointed battle. And afterwards the two sisters were vanquished in singular Combat. The Queene Antiopa the seeinge this overthrow, and the takinge of her sisters, came to composition with Hercules, to whom shee gaue her armure to carry to Euristeus. Upon charge that he shoulde render vnto her, her sister Menalipe. But Theseus for no offer that she coulde make, woulde deliuer Hipolita, with whom he was so farre in loue, that he caried her home with him, and afterward toke her to wife, of whom hee had a sonne called Hipolitus. Hercules satisfied of his purpose, returned very ioyful of his victorie. Oriia certified of these newes, beinge then out of her countrey, conceived no lesse shame than sorrow, who fearing greater damage, returned speedily with her women the greater part whereof beinge of her opinion, perswaded Antiopa to be reuenged vpon the Grekes. For which purpose they made great preparation of warre. Afterwards leuyinge so great a number of the Amazones as they could, they sent to Sigilus king of Scythia for succour: who sent them his sonne Pisagoras, with a great number of horsemen, by whose helpe the Amazones passinge into Europa, and Countrey about Athenes, they greatly annoyed their ennemy. But Pisagoras entred in quarel agaynst the Queene and her women, by meanes whereof, the Scythians could not fight, but withdrew themselves aside, whereby the Amazones (not able to support the force of the Greekes,) were overcome, and the greatest part of them cut in peeces. Those which did escape, ran to the Scythians Campe, of whom they were defended. Afterward being returned into their countrey, they liued in lesse force, and surety than before. In processe of time the Greekes passed into Asia, & made a famous Conquest of the City of Troy, when Penthesilea was Queene of the Amazones, who remembinge the iniuries receyued by the Greekes, went with a great army to helpe the Troians: Where the Queene did thinges worthy of remembrance, but the Troians vanquished, in many skirmishes at the Amazones were

The Amazones.

almost slayne. And Penthesilea amonges other, was killed by the hand of Achilles. Wherefore those that remained, returned into their countrey, with so little power (in respect of that they had before) as with great difficultie they susteyned, and defended their old possessions, and so continued till the time that Alexander the great went into Asia, to make warre against the Hircanians. In which time one of their Queenes named Thalestris accompanied with a great number of the Amazones, went out of hir countrey with great desire to see & know Alexander. And approachinge the place where hee was, shee sent her Ambassadour vnto him to the ende that shee might obtayne safeconduct to see him, makinge him to vnderstand how much the Renoume of his personage had inflamed hir heart to see him. Whereof Alexander beeinge tolde, graunted hir hys safeconduct. By meanes whereof, after she had chosen out some of hir principall women, leauinge the rest in a certayne place in very good order, she went towardes Alexander, of whom she was curteously enterpayned, and then with very good countenance, shee offered vnto him the effect of al her ability. Who prayed hir to tell him, if he were able to do her pleasure, & promised that hir request should be accomplished. She answered that hir comminge was not to demaund either landes or dominions, (whereof she had sufficient) but rather to knowe & be acquainted with sutch a famous Prince as hee was, of whom she had heard maruellous and straunge report. But the chiefeest cause of hir comminge was, to pray him of carnal copulation, that she might be conceiued with childe, & haue an heire begotten of so excellent a Prince, telling him that she was come of noble kinde, and of high parentage, & that he ought not to disdaine hir vs. Promisinge hym that if it pleased the Gods, that she should haue a Daughter, she would nourish it her selfe, & make it her vniuersall Heire, and if it were a Sonne, she would send it vnto him. Alexander asked her if shee would go with hym to the warres, which if she would, hee promised hir his company. But she excusinge hir selfe, answered that she could not goe with hym without great shame, besides the hazardinge the losse of her kingdom. Wherefore she prayed him agayne to satisfie hir request. Finally she kept company with Alexander by the space of. 13. dayes in publike and secret sort, which beeinge expired, she tooke hir leaue, and returned home to hir Province. But as it is the property of

tyme

time to consume all things: euen so the kingdome and power of the Amazones grew to bitter decay, no one such nation at this day to be found. For what monstrous Deed was this that durst not onely by many armies encountre with puissant nations, but also by single Combate, to fight with that terrible personage Hercules, whose vnspeakable and incredible labours and victories, are by antiquity reported to be such, as none but he, durst euer aduenture the like. What Nation euer comparable to the Greekes, or the Athenian Citty? And yet these Manlike Women for Reuenge shonke not to peece their Prouince. What like besieged towne as that of Troy was: and yet Penthesilea one of their Queenes with hir mapny, indenuored to rayse the Greekes, that so many peares had lien before the same. What Queene (nay what Stalant) durst sue for company of meanest man: and yet one of these presumed to begge the match of the mightiest Monarch that euer ruled the world. The maners and qualities of which nation, because they were Women of no common spirite and boldnesse, bee thought good in the front of this second Volume to be described: because of dyuers Womens liues plentifull variety is offered in the sequele. And for that some mention hath bin made of the great Alexander, and in what wise from vertue hee fell to vice, the seconde Nouell ensuing shall geue further aduertisement.

(..)

A 4.

Alexan-

Alexander the great.

The great pitie and continencie of *ALEXANDER* the great and his louinge entertaynment of *SISIGAMBIS* the Wyfe of the great Monarch *DARIUS*, after he vvas vanquished.

The second Nouell,

Great Monarches, and Princes be the Gods, and onely Rulers by Earth, and as they be placed by Gods only prouidence and disposition, to conquere, and rule the same, euen so in victoriorious battayles and honorabie Exploites, they ought to rule and order their conquestes like Gods: that is to saie, to vse moderate behaitour to their Captiues and slaues, specially to the weaker sort and feminine kynde, whom like Tyrantes & barbarous, they ought not to corrupt & abuse, but like Christians and vertuous victors, to cherish and preserue their honour. For what can bee safe to a woman (sayde Lucrece, when she was rauished by the Romayne Tarquine) her chastity beinge defiled? Or what can be safe to a man, that geueth himselfe to incontinency? For when he hath despoiled the virgin, robbed the wyfe, or abused the Widow of their honor and good name, they protrude theselues into many Myseries they bee impudent, Unshamefast, Aduenturous, and Carelesse, howe many myschiefes they doe. And when a Prince or Gouverner doth geue himselfe to licentious life, what mischiefes, what rapes, what murders doth hee commit? No frende, no foe, no subiect, no enemy doth he spare or defende. Contrarywise, the mercifull & continent captayne, by subduinge hys affections recouereth immortal fame, which this History of kinge Alexander full well declareth. And because before we spake of that great conquerour in the Nouell of the Amazones, and of the repaie of Queene Thalestris for vse of his body, at what tyme (as Curtius sayth) he fell from vertue to vice: wee purpose in this, to declare the great continencie and mercy that hee vsed to Sisigambis, the Wyfe of the Persian Prince Darius, and bytesty to touch the time of his abused life, which in this maner doth begin. Alexander the great hauing banquish-

vanquished Darius and his infinite army, and retiringe with his
hoast from the pursute & slaughter of the Persians, entred into their
campe to recreate himselfe. And beinge with his familiers in the
mids of his banquet, they sodaynly heard a pitifull cry, with straig
howlinge and cryinge out, which did very much affon them. The
Wyfe, and Mother of Darius with the other noble women newly
taken Prisoners, were the occasion of that present noyse, by lamen-
tinge of Darius, whom they beleueed to be slayne and which opini-
on they conceued thzough one of the Eunuches, which standinge
befoze their Tent dooze, saw a Souldier beare a peece of Darius
Diademe. For which cause Alexander, pityinge their misery, sent
a noble man called Leonatus to signifie vnto them that they were
deceyued, for h Darius was liuing. Repayring towards the Tent
where h womē were w certayne armed men, he sent word befoze, h
he was cōminge to thē w th message from the Kinge. But when
such as stood at the tent dooze saw armed men, they thought they
had bene sent to murder the Ladies: for which cause they ran in
to them, cryinge that their last houre was come, for the souldiers
were at hande to kill them. When Leonatus was entred the Pa-
uilion, the Mother and wyfe of Darius fell downe at his feete, in-
treatinge him that befoze they were slayne, he would suffer them to
bury Darius, accordinge to the order and maner of his Countrey,
after the performance of which obsequies, they were content (they
sayd) willingly to suffer death. Leonatus assured them, that both
Darius was aliue, and that there was no harme ment towards
them, but should remayne in the same state they were in befoze.

When Sisigambis heard those wordes, she suffered her selfe to be
lifted vp from the grounde, and to receyue some comfort. The next
day, Alexander with great diligence buried the bodies of such of
his owne men as could be founde, and willed the same to be done
to the noble men of the Persians geuinge licence to Darius mother
to Bury so many as she like, after the custome of her Countrey.
She performed the same to a fewe that were next of her kin, ac-
cordinge to the habillty of their presente fortune, for as she should
haue vsed the Persians Pompe therein, the Macedonians might
haue enuied it, whych beinge Victors, vsed no great curiosity in
the matter. When the due was performed to the dead, Alexander
signified to the women prisoners, that hee himselfe would come to

Alexander the great

vifite them, and caufinge futch as came with him to tary without,
 he onely with Epheſtion entred in amongs them. The ſame Ephe-
 ſtion of all men was beſt beloued of Alexander, brought vp in his
 company from his youth, and moſt priuy with him in all thinges.
 There was none that had futch liberty to ſpeake his private playn-
 ly to the Kinge as hee had, whych hee vſed after futch ſorte, that
 he ſeemed to doe it by no authorite, but by ſufferaunce. And as he
 was of like yeres vnto him, ſo in ſhape and perſonage hee did ſome-
 what excell him. Wherefore the Women thinkinge Epheſtion to
 be the kinge, did fall downe and worſhip him (as their countrey
 maner was to do to kinges) till futch time as one of the Eunuches
 that was taken priſoner, ſhewed which of them was Alexander.
 Then Siſigambis fell downe at his feete, requiringe pardon of her
 Ignorance, forſomuch as ſhe did neuer ſee him before. The kinge
 tooke her vp by the hande, and ſayd: Mother you be not deceiued:
 for this is Alexander alſo. Then he behaued himſelfe after futch
 a maner, that hee exceeded in continency and compaſſion, all the
 kinges he had bin before his time. He entertained the two Queenes
 with thoſe virgins that were of excellent beauty, ſo reuerently, as
 if they had bin his ſiſters. He not onely abſtyned from al violati-
 on of Darius wyfe, which in beauty excelled all the women of his
 time, but alſo tooke great care and diligence, that none other ſhould
 procure her any diſhonour. And to all the women, he commaunded
 their ornaments, and apparell to be reſtored: So that they wan-
 ted nothinge of the magnificence of their former eſtate, ſauinge on-
 ly the aſſured truſt that creatures want in miſery: which thinges
 conſidered by Siſigambis, ſhe ſayd vnto the kinge: Sir, your good-
 nes towards vs, doth deſerue, that we ſhould make the ſame pray-
 er for you, that whilome we did for Darius: and we perceiue you
 worthy to paſſe ſo great a King as he was, in felicity and good for-
 tune, that abound ſo in iuſtice, & clemency. It pleaſeth you to terme
 me by the name Mother & Queene: but I confeſſe my ſelfe to bee
 your handmayde. For both I conceiue the greatneſſe of my ſtate
 paſt, & feele he can beare this preſent ſeruitude. It lieth only in
 your hands how we ſhal be beſt wiſhall, & whether you will make
 vs notable to the Worlde through your clemency or cruelty. The
 King comforted the al he might, & willinge the to be of good cheere
 tooke Darius ſonne in his armes. Therat the childe was nothing
 afraid

afraid, hauing neuer seene him befoze, but take & embraced him as
 bout the necke. He was so moued with the constancy of the childe,
 as he beheld Ephesion, and sayde: Oh, I would that Darius had,
 hed some part of this childes gentlenesse. Which mercy, continen-
 cy, humillity and constancy of minde in Alexander, if hee had still
 kept to his latter daies, might haue bin accounted much more
 fortunate than he was, when hauinge subdued all Asia from Hel-
 lespont to the Ocean Sea, he did counterfayte the Triumphes of
 Bacchus. Or if amonges the residue of his conquests, hee would
 haue traupled to overcome his pride & wrath, beinge vices inui-
 cible. Or in his drunkennes abstained fro the laughter of his Po-
 bility, & not to haue put to death those excellent men of warre woue
 iudgemēt, which helped him to conquer so many Nations. But at
 this time the greatnes of his foies had not yet altered his nature,
 although afterwards he could not beare his victories with Vertue,
 whereto he wan the. For whē he gaue himself to feasting and
 banquettinge, he vsed the company of Harlots. Amonges whom
 there was one Thais, who vpon a day in hir drunkenesse, affirmed
 to Alexander, he should wonderfully win his fauour of the Greeke, if
 hee commaunded the Palace of Persepolis to be set on fire. The
 destruction whereof (he sayd) they greatly desired, for so much as
 the same was the chiefe seat of the kings of Persia, which in times
 past had destroyed so many great Cities. When the drunken harlot
 had giue her sentence, there were other present, who being likewise
 drunken, confirmed hir wordes. Alexander then that had in him
 more inclination of heat than of patience, sayd: Why do we not
 then recouer the fauour of the Greekes by settinge this City on
 fier? They were all chafed with drinkinge, and rose immediately
 vpon those wordes to burne that City in their drunkenesse, which
 the mē of warre had spared in their fury. The kinge himselfe first,
 and after his guesles, his seruantes and his Concubines, set fier
 in the Pallace, which beinge builded for the most part of Cedar
 trees, became sodenly in a flame. When the army that was encam-
 ped neere vnto the City, sawe the fire, which they thought had ben
 kindled by some casualty, they came runninge to quenche the same
 againe. But when they sawe the Kinge there presente increas-
 ynge the fyre, they poured downe the Water whych they
 broughte, and helped likewise the matter forwardes.

Thus

Alexander the great

Thus the Pallace that was the heade of the whole Orient, from whence so many nations befoze had fetched their lawes to liue vnder, the Seat of so many Kinges, the onely Terror sometimes of Greece, the same that had bin the sencer forth of. 9000. Ships, & of the armies that ouerflowed all Europa, that made Wyddges ouer the Sea, & vndermined mountaynes where the Sea hath now his course, was consumed and had his ende, and neuer rose againe in all the age that did ensue. For the Kinges of Macedon vled o-ther Citties which be now in the Persians hands, The destruction of this Cittie was such, that the Foundation thereof at this day could not be found, but that riuer of Araxes doth shew where it stood, which was distant from Persepolis 20. furlonges, as the Inhabitants rather doe beleue than know. The Macedonians were ashamed that so noble a Cittie was destroyed by their kinge in his drunkennes: yet at length it was turned into an earnest matter, and were content to thincke it expedient that the Cittie should haue ben destroyed after that maner. But it is certayne, that whē Alexander had taken his rest, and was become better aduised, hee repented him of his doinge. And after he had kept company with Thalestris aforesayde, which was Queene of the Amazones, hee tourned his continency and moderation (beinge the most excellent vertues appearinge in any kind of estate) into Pride & voluptuousnes, not esteeming his countrey customes, nor the hollesome temperance that was in the vsages, and discipline of Kinges of Macedon. For he iudged their ciuill vsage and maner, to be ouer base for his greatnesse, but did counterfalte the height and Pompe of the kings of Persia, representinge the greauesse of the Gods. Hee was content to suffer men there to fall downe flat vppon the ground & worship him, & accustomed the victors of so many nations, by litle and litle to seruile offices, coueringe to make them like vnto his Captiues. He ware vpon his head a Diademe of Purple interpaied with white, like as Darius was accustomed: and fashioned his apparell after the maner of the Persians, without scrupulousness of any euil token that is signified, for the victor to change his habite into the fashion of him whom he had vanquished. And although he vaunted, that he ware the spoiles of his enemies, yet with those Spoiles he put vpon him their euil maners, & the insolency of the mynde, followed the pride of the apparell. Welldes, he sealed


sealed futch Letters as he sent into Europa, with his accustomed scale, but all the Letters he sent abroade into Asia, were sealed to Darius Kinge. So it appeared that one minde could not beare the greatnesse that appertayned to two. He apparelled also his frends, his Captayns, & his hoysenē in Persian apparell, & heretofore though they grudged in their mindes, yet they durst not refuse it, for feare of his displeasure. His courte was replenished with Concubins, for he still mainteined three hundred, and threescore that belonged to Darius, and amonge them were flocks of Eunuches accustomed to perforce the vse of women. The olde Souldiours of Philip naturally abhorring futch thinges, manifestly withstood to bee infected with futch voluptuousnes, and strange customes. Whereupon there rose a general talke and opinion throughout the Cāpe, that they had lost moze by the victorie, than they won by the wars. For when they sawe themselves overcome in futch excesse, and forrayne customes so to preuaile, they iudged it a simple guerdon of their longe beeinge abroade, to returne home in Prisoners maner. They began to be ashamed of their Kinge, that was moze like to futch as were subdued, than to them that were victorious: & that of a Kinge of Macedon, was become a Prince of Persia, and one of Darius Courtiers. Thus this noble Prince from continency and mercy fell into all kinde of disorder, the originall whereof, hee tooke by delite in Women, which beings vled in sozt lawfull, be great comfortes and delightes; otherwise, the very Springe of al cruelty and mischife.

Timo-

Timoclia of Thebes.

TIMOCLIA, a Gentlewoman of **THEBES**, vnderſtādinge the couetous deſire of a Thraciā knight, that had abuſed hir, and promiſed her marriage, rather for her goods than loue, vuell acquired hir ſelfe from his falſhooſe,

The third Nouell,

 *Vintus Curtius*, that notable *Historiographer*, remembryng the ſtout ſact of thys Thebane Gentlewoman, amenges other the Geſſes, and ſacts of Alexander the great, I haue deemed not altogether vnfit for this place, to reueale the fine and notable pollicy deuised by her, to rid hir ſelfe from a couetous cattife of the Thracian kinde, who for lucre rather than loue, for gayne than gratitude, prompted golden Hylles to thys dyſtreſſed pooze Gentlewoman. But Shee in the ende payinge hym hys well deſerued hys, was liked and prayſed of Alexander for hir aduenturous ſacte, beinge not one of the leaſt vertues that ſhined in him, befoze hee grewe to exceſſiue abuſe. But bycauſe Plutarch in hys *Treatyſe De clariſ mulieribus*, moze at large recounteth this Hystory, I haue thought good almoſt (*verbatim*) to follow him. Theagenes a Gentleman of Thebes, toyntinge himſelfe wth Epaminon his, and Pelopidas, and wth other noble nien, for preſeruatiō of their countrey of Greece, was ſlayne in the chace of his enemyes, as he purſued one of the chyefe of hys aduerſaries, the ſame cryng oute vnto him: Whether doeſt thou purſue vs Theagenes? Euen to Macedonia aunſwered hee. Thys Gentleman thus ſlayne had a ſiſter, whoſe vertue and neerenesse of kin by noble deedes, ſhe well witneſſed, although ſhe was not well able to mauniſt her vertue, for the aduerſity of the tyme, but by patient ſufferance of the common calamities. For after Alexander had won the City of Thebes, the ſouldiours-greedy of Spoyle runninge by, and downe the City, euery of them chauncinge bypon ſuch Booty as fortune offred them, it hapned that a Captayne of the Thracian hoſtmen, a barbarous, and wycked wyetch, came to the houſe of Timoclia,

moclia, who somewhat neere the Kynge both in name, and kyn,
 in manners, and conditions was greatly different from him. Hee
 neyther regardenge the noble house, ne yet the chastity of hir foze-
 passed life, apou a tyme after supper, glutted & swilled wyth abun-
 dance of wine, caused Timoclia forcibly to be haled to his dyonke
 Couch: and not contented with the forced wronge, as they were
 in talke together, diligently demaunded of her, if she had in no place
 hidden any Golde or siluer, and partly by threats, and partly by
 promise to keepe her as his wyfe, endeouored to get that he des-
 red. But shee beinge of ready wit, takinge that offered occasion of
 hir aduersary: I would to God (sayd shee) that it had bene my
 lucke to haue died befo:e this night, rather then to liue. For hither
 to haue I kept my body pure, and vntouched from all despyre, and
 villany, vntill vnlucky fate forced mee to yelde to thy disordnate
 lust: but sith my hsp is sutch, why should I conceale those thyngs
 that bee thyrne owne, thou beinge mine onely tutor, lord, and hus-
 band (as thou sayst) when the Gods shal please to bringe the same
 to passe. For by thy will and pleasure must I vnhappy Thebane
 Wench be ruled and governed. Each bāquished wight must subdue
 their wyl and minde to their lord and victor: I beinge thy slaue &
 Prisoner, must needes by humble meanes, yelde by my selfe to
 the vnsatiate hest of thy puissant heart. What shall let me to dis-
 close the pray that thou desirest, that we both, if thy minde be sutch,
 may rather toy the same, than the soyle sith of sinking Earth,
 should deuoure sutch spoyle, which for feare, and hope of future
 fortune, I buried in the bowels of y same. The make my wordes,
 beare them well in mynde, sith lot hath wrought me this mishap.
 I hauinge plenty of copied siluer, and of syned gold no little store
 besydes sutch Jewels as belonge to the settinge forth of the grace
 of womans beauty, of valure and pricc inestimable: when I saw
 this City brought to sutch distresse as vnpossible to be saued fro
 takinge, all the same I threw away, or more truely to say, I whel-
 med altogether in a dype Ditch boide of water which my fact
 fewe or none did knowe. The Dyke is couered with a litle couer
 aboue, and thickly round a bou: beset with Bushes, & Thornes.
 Those goods will make thee a welthy personage, none in all the
 Campe to be cōpared to thee, the riches & valur whereof, wyl wit-
 nes our former fortune, & the state of our gorgeous, & stately house.

All those

Timoclia of Thebes

All those doe I bequeath to thee, as on whom I thinke them well bestowed. This greedy Lecher, laughinge to him selfe for this so daime pray, and thinking that his Lady fast holdē within his barbarous armes had tolde him truth, routed in his filthy Couch till the day had discovered h̄ morning light, thē gaping for his hoped gaine, he rose & prayed her to tell the place, h̄ he might recouer the same. She then brought him into her Garden, the Doore whereof sh̄ comāunded to be shut, that none might enter. He in his Hose, & Doubler, went downe to the bottome of the Pit. When Timoclia perceiued him downe, she beckned for certaine of her maids, & rolled downe diuers great stones with her own hands, which of purpose she had caused to be placed there, & commaunded hir maides to tumble downe the like. By which meanes she killed that lecherous & couetous bilapne, that rather carked to satisfie his desire, than coueted to obserue his promised faith. Which afterwarde beinge knowen to the Macedonians, they haled his body out of h̄ Pit. For Alexander had made proclamatiō, that none should dare to kill any Thebane, and therefore apprehendinge Timoclia, they brought her to the kinge, accusinge her for donge of that murder: who by her countenance, & stature of body, and by her behauiour & grauity of maners, beheld in her the very Image of gentle kinde. And first of al, he asked her what she was. To whom boldly with constant cheere, she stoutely answered: Theagenes was my Brother (said she) who beinge a valiaunt Captaine, & fightinge against you for the common safegard of the Greeks, was slaine at Charonca, h̄ we together might not sustaine, & proue the miseries, wherewith we be now oppressed. But I rather thā to suffer violence unworthy of our race & stocke, am in your maiesties p̄sence brought ready to refuse no death: For better it were for mee to dye, than feele such another night, except thou commaunde the contrary. These wordes were uttered in such rufull plight, as the standers by could not forbeare to weepe. But Alexander sayinge, that hee not onely pittied the woman endewed with so noble wit, but much more wondred at her vertue & wisdom, commaunded the Princes of his army, to forseeke no wronge or violence to be done to the Gentlewoman. He gaue order also, that Timoclia & all her kin, should be garded and defended from slaughter or other wronges. What say yee (good Ladies) to the heart of this Gentlewoman that durst bee so

be so bolde to stone this Captiue wretch to death, and for wronge done to her bodie til that tyme vntouched, to wronge the corpes of him þe sauoured of no gentile kinde: who rather for earthy mucke, than for loue of suche a pleasaunt Prisoner, exchaunged Loue for Gold? But note hereby what force the puritie of mynde vntwilling of beastly lust doth carpe in it selfe: A simple woman boyde of helpe, not backed with defence of husbandes ayde, doth bying a mighty Captayne, a strong and lusty lubber to enter into a Caue, and when shee saw her best aduauntage, thacked him with stones, vntill he groaned for his grieuouse ghost. Such is the might and prowesse of chastitie. No charge to burdenneus or weightye for suche a vertue, no enterpryse too harde for a mynde so pure and cleane.

Ariobarzanes.

ARIOBARZANES great Stevvard to ARTAXERXES King of Persia, goeth about to exceede his Soueraigne Lord and maister in curtesie: vwherein be conteyned many notable and pleasaunt chaunces, besides the great patience & loyaltie naturally planted in the sayd ARIOBARZANES.

The fourth Nouell.



Question is mooued manye times among learned men and Gentlemen addicted to the seruice of the Court, whether commendable deede, or curteous and gentle fact done by the Gentlemā or Courtier towarde his soueraigne Lord, ought to be called Liberalitie & Curtesie, or rather Band and Dutie. Which question is not proponed with out greate reason. For so muche as

ech man doth know, that a seruaunt do what he can for his Ma-
B
to be

ser, or lette him employ the bittermost of his indetour, al the laboz
and trauaple he bestoweth, all trouble and daunger which he suf
farneth, is to litle, yea and the same his very bounden duty.
Haue wee not red of many, and knowne the lpe that to gratifye
their prince and mayster, haue into a thousande daungers and li
ke number of deaths, aduentured their owne proppre liues? Marcus
Antonius that notable oratour beyng accused of incest, & brough
to the iudgement seate, his accusers required that his seruante
should be called, for because he bare the candel before his maister,
when hee went to do the dede, who seeng his maysters life and
death to depend vpon his euidence bitterly denyed the facts, and
notwithstanding that he was whipped, racked and suffered other
cruel tormentes, would rather haue losse his lyfe than accuse and
betray his mayster. I could alleage and bring forth in place, the
example of Mycinius, the seruant of one Anaxilais Mellenius, the
fidelitie of the seruantes of Plotinus Plancus, the faythful may
den called Pythias, that waited vpon Octavia, the chaste Emperesse
& wife of that monster Nero, with diuers other; but that I thinke
they be to the learned wel knownen, and of the vnlearned the ver
tue of seruantes fidelitie is greatly liked and commended. But
if the faythful seruant know that his desertes do gayne the gra
ce and fauoure of his mayster, what trauaples, what payns ought
he to suffer to mayntayne his reputation and to encrease the fauour
obtayned? For as the common prouerbe and wise saying reporteth
That the vertue is no lesse to conserue frendship gotten, than
the wisdom was great to get and win the same. Other there be
which do contrarily contend, and with very stronge argumentes
do force to proue that al which the seruant doth besides his ductye
and beyond the obligation, wherein he is bound to his mayster, is
and ought to be termed, Liberality, which is a matter to prouoke
his patrone and mayster to deuyse new benefytes for his seruante.
And that at al tymes when a man doth his duty & seruice appoynt
ed by his mayster, executing the same with all diligence and in
dustry requisite therunto that then he deserueth to be rewarded.
Which is not to be discommende. For no true and honest seruant
will refuse any trauaple for commodity of his mayster, ne yet dis
crete

crete and wyse mayster, will leaue the same unrewarded according
to that portion of ability wherewith he is possessed. But leauinge
questions and disputaciō aside procede we to that which this Ro-
uel purposeth. I say then that there was in the kyngdome
of Persia, a kyng called Artaxerxes, a man of most noble mynde,
and of great prowesse in armes. This was he that firste beynge a
private man of armes, not hauing as yet obtained any degree in
the fiede, killed Artabanus the last kyng of the Arsacides whose
souldiour he was and recovered the Persian kyngdome, which was
then in the Macedonians subiection (by the death of Darius, which
was vanquished by Alexander the great) the space of 538. yeares.
This noble gentleman hauing deliuered all Persia, and created
king, kept a princely court, wherin were many magnificent factes
and vertuous deedes exercised and done, and hee himselfe moste
noble in all affayres, besydes the tytles which hee worthelye wanne
in many bloudy battels, was esteemed throughtout the East part of
the worlde, to be the most liberal and magnanimous prince that
in any age euer reigned. In feastes and bankets he was an other
Lucullus royally entertaining strangers that repaired to his court.
This king had a Senescall or Steward, named Ariobarzanes, whose
office was, that when the king made any pompous or publike feast
to mount vpon a whyte Courser with a Wace of gold in his hand,
to ride before his esquieres & Sewers for the Kings own mouth &
those also to bare the kings meat in vessel of gold covered wth fine na-
perry, wrought & puried wth most beautiful workmanship of silke &
gold. This office of Senescall was highly esteemed & commonly wont to
be geue to one of his chiefe Warres of his Realm. Wherefore this Ario-
barzanes besydes noble Linage & incomparable riches was his most
curtious & liberal knight that frequented the court whose immode-
rate expence was such, as leauing his mean, wherin al hertu consisteth
by reason of outrage which many times he vsed he fel into the vice of
prodigality, whereby he seemed not only in curtious deedes to compare
wth the R. but also contended to excel him. One day the R. for his re-
creatiō called for his chess board requyring Ariobarzanes to kepe him
company, which game in those daies among his Persians was in greate
vse, in such wise as a player at the Chesses was no les commen-
ded the amonge vs in these daies an excellent Oratour, or famous

learned man. Yea and the very same game in common use in the Court, and noble mens houses of our time, no doubt very commendable and meete to be practised by all states and degrees. The King and Ariobarzanes being sette downe at a table in the greates Hall of the Pallace, one right against another, accompanied with a great number of noble personages and Gentlemen lookinge vpon them, and marking their playe with great silence, they began to counter one another with the Chessmen. Ariobarzanes whether it was that he played better than the king, or whether the kynge tooke no heede to his game, or what so euer the occasion was, hee cursed the King to such a narrow straight, as he could not auoid, but within two or three draughtes, he must be forced to receiue the Checkmate: which the king perceiuing, and considering the danger of the Mate, by and by there grew a greater colour in his face than was wont to bee, and imagininge how hee mighte auoyde the Mate, besides his blushing he shaked his head, and fetched out diuers sighes, whereby the standers by that marked the game, perceiued that hee was dyuenu to his mistes. The Seneſcalle spyinge the Kinges demeanour, and seeing the honest shamefastenesse of the King, would not suffer him to receiue such a foyle, but made a draught by removing his Knighte backe, to open awaye for the King to passe, as not onely hee deliuered him from the daunger of the mate, but also lost one of his Rokes for lacke of takinge hede: whereupon the game rested equall. The King (who knewe the good nature and noble mynde of his sernant, by experience of the same in other causes) sayning that hee had overseene the takinge of his Roke, gaue ouer the game, and resting vp, sayd: No more Ariobarzanes, the game is yours, and I confesse my selfe overcome. The king thought that Ariobarzanes did not the same so much for curtesie, as to hynde his soueraigne lord and king by benefitt to recompence his subiectes like behauiour, which he did not very well like, and therfore would play no more. Notwithstanding the king neither by signe or deede, ne yet in talke, shewed any token of displeasure for that curtesie done. Now be it, he would that Ariobarzanes in semblable act, shoulde abstayne to shewe himselfe curteous or liberal, except it were to his inferiours and equallies, because it

is not conuenient for a seruant to contēd with his maister in those qualittes.

Not long after the Kinge beyng at Persepolis (the p̄ncipal citie of Persia, ordained a notable day of hunting of diuers beastes of that countrey breede: And when all thinges were in a readinesse he with the most part of his Court repayed to the pastyme. When they were come into the place, the king commaunded a woodde to be set about with nettes and toiles, and appointed eche man where he should stand in most conuenient place, and he himselfe attended with the dogs and hognes to cause the beastes to issue forth oute of their Caves. And beholde, they rased a world beast, which with greate swiftnesse leapt ouer the nettes and ranne awaye with greate speede. The King seeng that strange beast, purposed to pursue him to death. And makinge a signe to certayne of his noble men which hee desired to keepe him companie hee gaue the rayne and spurre to his horse., and followinge the chase Ariobarzanes was one of those noble men which pursued the game. It chaunced that day the king rode vpon a horse, that was the swiftest runner in his stable, which hee esteemed better then a thousande other, as wel for his velocity, as for his readinesse in factes of armes.

Thus following with brydle at will, they flying rather then running beast, they wer deuinded far frō their cōpany, & by reason of the Kings spedines, none was able to followe him but Ariobarzanes & behind him one of his seruants vpon a good horse which alwaies he vsed in hunting matters, which horse was counted the beste in all the court. And thus following the chase with gallapting speede Ariobarzanes at length espyed the horse of his soueraigne lord had lost his shooes befoze, and that the stones had surbated his hoofes, wherupon the kyng was driuen either to geue ouer h̄ chase or else to marre his horse. And neyther of these two necessities but would haue greatly displeased the kinge, that perceiued not his horse to be vnshod. The Seneschall did no sooner espye the same but sodainly dismounted from his owne, caused his man to deliuer vnto him a hammer and nailles (which for such like chaūces he alwaies caried aboute him) and toke of two shooes from the horse feete of his good horse, to set vpon the kynges not caring for his own rather then the

Ariobarzanes.

King should forgoe his pleasure. Wherefore hallowing the Kinge which was earnestly bent vpon the chace, tolde him of the daunger wherein his horse was for lacke of shoes. The kinge hearinge that lighted from his horse, and serng two shoes in Ariobarzanes mannes hand thinking that Ariobarzanes had brought them with him, or that they were the shoes which fell from his owne, taried still until his horse was shod. But when he saw the notable horse of his *Seneschall* bushod before, then he thought that to be the curtesle o Ariobarzanes, & so did let the matter passe. Audryng by lyke meanes to requite him with Curtesle, which forced himselfe to surmount in the same. And when his horse was shod, he gaue the same to Ariobarzanes in rewarde. And so the king chose rather to lose his pleasure of hunting, then to suffer himselfe by his man to be excelled in curtesle, wel noting the stoutnesse of Ariobarzanes mynde which seemed to haue a will to contend with his prince in factes renowned and liberal. The *Seneschall* thought it not conuenient to refuse the gift of his liege lord, but accepted the same with like good will as before he shod his horse, still expectinge occasion how he surpas his master in curtesle & so to bind him to requite the same againe. They had not taried there long, but many of those that followed did ouertake them. And then the king got by vpon a spare horse and returned to the city with all his company.

Within few daies after the king by proclamation sommoned a solemne and pompous iust and triumph at the tilt, to be done vpon the Kalends of May next ensuing. The reward appointed the victor and best Doer in the same was a couragious and goodly curser with a bydle and byt of fine gold richly wrought, a saddle corresponding of passngng great pryce, the furniture and trappers for the bydle and saddle of lyke cost and workmanship the rayns wer twoo chaynes of golde very artificially made, the barbe and couerture of the horse, of cloth of golde fringed round about with like gold, ouer which horse was placed a fine sword the hiltes and chape wherof together with the scabard wer curiously beset with Pearles and Precious Stones of Inestimable value.

On the other syde was placed a very beautiful & stronge Horse,
verge

verre cunninglye wrought with damaskin. The Horse was placed in forme of triumph, and besides the same all the Armour and weapons meete for a Combatante Knyghte, riche and fayre without comparison. The Blacart was marueylous and strong, the Lance was guilte and bygge, as none greater in all the troupe of the chalengers and defendantes. And all those furnitures were appoynted to be geuen to hym that should do best that day.

A greate assemblie of straungers repayed to that solemne feast as wel to doe deedes of Armes, as to looke vpon that pompous triumph. Of the kynges Subiectes there was neither Knyghte nor Baron, but in rich and sumptuous apparell appeared that day, amonges whom, of chiefest fame the Kynges eldest sonne was the first that gaue his name, a Gentlemanne very valorous, and in deedes of Armes of passing valour brought vp from his very youth, and trayned in the ficke and other warlike exercises. The Seneschall also caused his name to be inrolled, The like didde other knyghtes as wel Persians as other straungers. For that the proclamation was general, with safeconduite for all Forayners, noble men or other that should make their repaire. The king had elected three auncient Barons to be Iudges and Arbitratours of their deedes, such as in their tyme for their owne personages had bene very haliant, and in many enterprises well exercised, men of great discretion & iudgement. Their seage was placed in the middes of the Listes to view and marke the Counterbuffes & blowes of the Combatants. We neede not to remember, ne ought to forget the number of ladies & gentlewomen asssembled out of all partes to behold and view this triumph & paradiuenture eche knight & ra that day was not without his amorous lady to note & behold his actiuitie and prowesse. euery of them wearing his ladies sleene, gloue, or other token, according to the common custome in such like cases. At the day and houre appoynted appeared all the Combatantes in greate Tryumphe, and Pompe, with rich furnitures as wel vpon them selues as vpon their horse. The triumphe begon & many Launces broke in good order, on either sides Iudgement was geuen: genenerally that the Seneschall Ariobarzanes

had wonne the pisse, and next vnto him the kinges sonne did passe them all, for that none of al the combatantes hadde broken past. v. slaues, and the sayd yong Gentleman had in the face of his aduersary broken in pieces ix. at the least. This Senescall brought for the eleuen launces, which were couragiously and honourably broken, by breaking of the last staffe which was the twelfth he was iudged most worthy. The condition wherof was, that euery combatant should runne twelue courses with twelue launces, and he whiche should first breake the same should without doubt or further controuersie obtayne the reward. What pleasure and delight the king did conceiue to see his sonne behaue him selfe so valiantly that day, I referre to the iudgement of fathers, that haue children endued with like actiuitie. But yet it grieved him that the Senescall had the greater aduantage, and yet being a matter so wel knowen & discerned by the Iudges, like a wise man he discerned his countenance. On the other syde, the yong gentleman which did combate before his amorous ladye was very sorrowful for that he was voyde of hope of the chiefeest honour. So that betwene the father and the sonne, was one very thought and desire. But the vertue and valour of the Senescall did cut of eithers greefe. Now the tyme was come that the Senescall should runne with his last staffe mounted vpon the horse which the king gaue him when he was an hunting, who knowing wel that the king was very desirous that his son should excell all men, perceyued likewise the inflamed mynde of the yong Gentleman for the presence of his ladye to aspyre the honour purposed to geue ouer the honour atchieued by himselfe, to leaue it to the sonne and heir of his lord and mayster, And yet hee knewe wel that those his curtesies pleased not the king, neuertheless he was determined to perseuer in his opinion, not to bereue the King of his glory, but onely to acquire same and honour for himselfe. But fully mynded that the honour of the triumph should be geuen to the kinges sonne he welded the staffe within his restle and when he was ready to encounter (because it was he that should come agaynst him, he let fall his launce out of his handes, and said Farewel this curtesie of mine, As it is no better taken. The kinges sonne gaue a gentle counterblow vpon the blacarde of the

of the *Senefcall*, & brake his staffe in many pieces, which was the course. Many heard the wordes that the *Senefcall* spake when his staffe fell out of his hands, and the standers by well perceiued that he was not minded to geue the lasse blowe, because the kings sonne might haue the honoz of the triumph, which he despred so much. Then Ariobarzanes departed the listes. And the Prince without any great resistance wan the prize and victorie. And so with sounde of diuerse instruments the prize borne before him, he was throughout the citie honorably conueyed, & among other, the *Senefcall* still waited vpon him with mery countenance, greatly praising & exalting the valiance of yong Prince. The King which was a very wise man, and many times hauing experience of the Chivalry of his *Senefcall*, at other *Courneys*, *Iustices*, *Baratours*, and *Battels*, and always finding him to be prudent, politike, and for his person very valiant, knewe to well that the fall of his lance was not by chaunce but of purpose, continued his opinion of his *Senefcall*s liberallitye and courage. And to say the trouth, such was his exceeding curtesie, as fewe may be found to imitate the same. We daily see that many be liberall of Fortunes goods inuelling some with promotion, some with apparel, gold and siluer, Jewels and other things of great value. We see also noble men, bountifull to their seruantes, not onely of mouable things, but also of Castels, Lads, and Cities. What shal we speake of them, which will not sticke to sheade their owne blood, and many tymes to spende their lyfe to do their frendes good? Of those and such like examples, all recordes be full. But a man that contemneth fame and gloze or is of his owne honour liberal, is neuer founde.

The victorious captayne after the bloudy battayle, giueth the spople of his enemies to his souldiours, rewardeth them with prisoners, departeth vnto them the whole praye but the gloze & honoz of the battel he reserueth vnto himselfe. And as diuinely the father of Romaine eloquence doth say, how y philosophers by recording y glorious gestes & dedes of others, do seke after gloze themselves. The king was displeased w these noble dedes & curtesie of his *Senefcall*, because he thought it not mete or decenre that a Subiecte and seruant should compare with his lord and mayster: and therfore
did

did not bare him that louing and chereful countenance which hee was wont to doe. And in the ende, purposed to let him know, that he spent his dayes in very great errour, if he thought to force his master to be bound oꝝ beneficial vnto him, as herafter you shal perceiue.

There was an auncient and approued custome in Persia that the kinges yerele did solemnize an Anniuersarye of theꝝ Coronation with great feast and triumph, vpon which day all the Barons of the kyngdome were bound to repaꝝe to the court where the king by the space of viiii. dayes with sumptuous bankets and other feastes kept open house. Vpon the Anniuersarye day of Artaxerxes coronation, when al thinges were disposed in order, the king desirous to accomplish a certayne conceiued determination commaunded one of his faythful chamberlaynes spedely to seeke out Ariobarzanes which he did and telling him the kinges message sayd: my lord Ariobarzanes, The king hath willed me to say vnto you, that his pleasure is, that you in your own person euen forthwith shal carry your white steele & Courser the mace of gold, & other ensignes due to the office of Seneschal vnto Darius, your mortal enemy, and in his maiestyes behalfe to say vnto him, that the kyng hath geuen him that office, and hath clerely disposedd you thereof. Ariobarzanes hearing those heauy newes, was like to dye for sorowe, and the greater was his grief, because it was geuen to his greatest enemy. Notwithstandinge like a gentleman of noble stomacke, would not in open apperaunce signifie the displeasure which hee conceiued within, but with mery cheare and louing countenaunce answered the chamberlayne: Do my right humble commendations vnto the kinges maiesty, and say vnto him, that like as he is soueraine lord of all this land, and I his faythful subiecte, euen so mine office, my lyfe, landes and goods, be at his disposition, and that willingly I wil performe his behest. When he had spoken those woordes hee rendred by his office to Darius, who at dinner serued in the same. And when the king was set Ariobarzanes with comly countenance satte downe among the rest of the lords, which sodentle deposition and depꝝuation, did maruelously amaze the whole assembly, euery mā secretly speaking chꝝ mīd either in praise oꝝ dispraise of the fact.

Ths

The king all the dinner time, did marke and note the countenance of Ariobarzanes, which was pleasant and merie as it was wont to be, whereat the kinge did greatly maruell: And to attaine the ende of his purpose, hee began with sharpe wordes in presence of the nobilitie to disclose his discontented minde: & the grudge which he bare to Ariobarzanes. One the other syde the king suborned diuers persons diligently to espy what he saide and did. Ariobarzanes hearing the kings sharpe wordes of rebuke, and stimulated by the perswasion of diuers flatterers, which were hired for that purpose, after he perceined that his declared patience, that his modest talke and his long and faithful seruice, which he had done to the king, his losse and hinderance sustained, the perill of his life, which so many tymes he had suffred preuayled nothing as length bāquished with disoayne he brake the bridle of Patience, and soyled out of the boundes of his wonted nature, for that in place of honour he receiued rebuke, and in steed of reward was deppriued of his office, began in a rage to complayne on the king terminge him to bee an vnkynd prince, which among the Persians was esteemed a worde of great offence to the maiesty: wherefore saine he would haue departed the court, and retired home to his countrey, which he could not doe without speciall licence from the king, and yet to craue the same at his handes, his heart would not serue him. At these murmures and complaintes which he secretly made, were tolde the king and therfore the king commaunded him one day, to be called before him, vnto whome he sayd: Ariobarzaues your grudging complaints and enuious quarels, whyche you brute behinde my backe throughout my Courte, and your continuall rages outrageously pronounced, through the very Windowes of my Palace haue pierced mine eares, whereby I vnderstand y thing which hardly I would haue beleued. But yet being a Prince aswell inclined to fauoure and quiet hearinge of all causes, as to credite of light repoztes, would saine know of you, the cause of your complaints, and what hath moued you thereto. For you be not ignorant, that to murmur at the Persian King, or to terme him to be vnkinde, is no lesse offence than to blaspheme the Gods immortall, because by auncient Lawes and Decrees they be honored and worshipped

Ariobarzanes.

shipped as Gods. And among all the penalties conteyned in
 our lawes, the vyce of Ingratitude is moſte ytterlye corrected.
 But leauing to ſpeake of the theſtes and daungers of our lawes,
 I pray you to tell me wherein I haue offended you. For albeit that
 I am a king, yet reaſon perſuadeth me, not to giue offence to anye
 man, which if I ſhoulde doe (and the Gods forbid the ſame) I
 ought rather to be termed a tyrante than a King. Ariobarzanes
 hearing the King ſpeake ſo reaſonably, was abaſhed, but yet with
 ſoute countenaunce he feared not particularly to remember the
 wordes which he had ſpoken of the king, and the cauſe wherefore
 he ſpake them.
 Wel (ſaid the king) I perceiue & you bluſh not at the wordes, ne yet
 feare to reherſe the ſame vnto my face, whereby I do perceiue and
 note in you a certayne kind of ſtoutenes which naturally procedeth
 from the greatnes of your mynd. But yet wiſdome would that you
 ſhould conſider the reaſon and cauſe why I haue deppryed you
 from your office. Do you not know that it appertaineth vnto mee
 in all myne affaires and deedes to be liberal, curtious, magnifi-
 cent, and bounteous? Be not thoſe the vertues that make the ſa-
 me of a Prince to gliſter among his ſubiectes, as the Sunne bea-
 mes doe by in the circuit of the world? Who oughte to rewarde
 wel dorrs and recompence ech wight which for any trauell haue
 al the dayes of their lyfe, or els in ſome perticuler ſeruiſe vſed their
 induoy, or aduentured & peril of their life, but I alone being your
 ſoueraigne Lord and Prince? To the vertuous and obedient, to
 the Captayne and the Souldiour, to the poliſtyke and to the lear-
 ned and graue, finally to ech well deſerning wight, I know how
 to vſe the noble princely vertues of curteſſe and liberality.
 They be the comly enſignes of a kenge. They be the onely orna-
 ments of a prince.
 They be my perticular vertues. And wil you Ariobarzanes being
 a valiaunt ſouldioure, a graue counſayler, and a poliſtyke perſo-
 nage, goe about to diſpoſſeſſe me of that which is myne? Wil you
 which are my ſeruaunte and ſubiecte of whome I make gre-
 ateſſe accompt & haue in deareſt eſtimation byd who I did beſtow
 the greateſt dignitie within the compaſſe of my whole Monarchie
great

grate benefite at my handes, by abusinge those vertues whiche I
 aboue other do principally regard? You do much abuse the credit
 which I repose in youre greate wisdom. For hee in whome I
 thought to fynde most graue aduise, and deuined to bee a recepta-
 cle of al good counsel, doth seeke to take vpon him the personage
 of his Prince, and to vsurpe the kingly qualite which belongeth
 only vnto him. Shal I be tyed by your desertes, or bound by car-
 teous deedes, or els be forced to rendre recompence? No no, so lōg
 as this impertall crowne shal rest on royal head, no subiect by any
 curteous deede of his, shal straine vniwilling mynde, which mente
 it not befoze. Tel me I beseech you what reward and gift, what
 honour and preferment haue I euer bestowed vpon you, sithes my
 first arriuall to this victorious raigne, that cuer you by due desert
 did vynde me thereunto? Which if you did, then liberal I cannot
 be termed, but a slavish Prince bound to do the same, by subiects
 merite. High and mightie kinges doe rewarde and aduaunce their
 men, hauing respect that their gift or benefite shal exceede deserte,
 otherwise that preferment cannot bee termed liberal. The greate
 conquerour Alexander Magnus wan a greate and notable Citie for
 wealth and spoyle. For the principallitie and gouernment wherof
 diuers of his noble men made sute, alleaging their paynful seruice
 and bloudy woundes about the getting of the same. But what did
 that worthy king? was he moued with the bloudshed of his cap-
 taines? was hee styrrred with the ballaunce of his men of warre?
 was he prouoked with their earnest suites? No trulye: But cal-
 ling vnto him a poore man, whome by chaunce he found there, to
 him he gaue that riche and wealthy Citie, and the gouernment
 thereof, that his magnificence & his liberalitie to a person so poore
 and base, might receiue greater fame and estimation: and to
 declare that the conferred benefyte didde not proceede of de-
 sert or dutie, but of mere liberalitie, very curtesse, true munificence
 and noble disposition, deriued from princely heart and kingly na-
 ture. Howbeit I speake not this that a faythful seruaunt should
 be vnrewarded (althing very requisite) but to inferre and proue
 that reward should excell the merite and seruice of the receiuer. Now
 then I say, that you going about by large desert and manifold cur-
 tesse to binde mee to recompence the same, you seeke the next waye

Ariobarzanes.

to cut of the meane whereby I should be liberall. Do you not see
 that though your vnadvised curtesie I am preuented, and let-
 ted from myne accustomed liberalitie, wherewith daily I was
 wont to reward my kynde, louing and loyal seruantes, to whom
 if they deserued one talent of golde, my manner was to geue them
 two or thre: If a thousand crownes by the yeare, to geue them. y.
 Do you not know that when they looked for most rewardes or pre-
 ferment, the soner did I honour and aduaunce them? Take heede
 then from henceforth Ariobarzanes, that you liue with such prou-
 dence and circumspection as you may bee knownen to be a seruant,
 and I reputed (as I am) for your souerayne Lord and master.
 All Princes in myne optioun requyre two thinges of theire ser-
 uantes, that is to say, fidelitie and loue, which being hadd they care
 for no more. Therfore he that list to contende with me in curtesie,
 shal fynde in the ende that I make smale accompte of him. And he
 that is my trusty and faithfull seruant, diligente to execute & do my
 commaundementes, faithfull in my secret affayres, and duetyfull
 in his vocation, shal truely witte and most certaynly feele that I
 am both curteous and liberall. Which thou thy selfe shal wel per-
 ceiue, and be forced to confesse that I am the same manne in dede,
 for curtesie and liberalitie whom thou endeourest to surmount.
 Then the king held his peace, Ariobarzanes very reuerently and
 stoutly made answer in this maner,

Most noble & victorious Prince wel vnderstanding the conceiued grief
 of your inuincible mind pleaseth youre sacred maiesty to geue mee
 leaue to answer for my self, not to aggrauate or heap your wrath &
 displeasure (which God forbid) but to disclose my humble excuse
 before your maiesty & the same posseed wth the equall balace of yours
 rightfull mind, my former attēpts may neither seme presumptuous, ne
 yet my wel meaning mind, wel measured wth iustice, ouerbold or ma-
 lapert. Most humbly the, prostrate vpon my knees I say that I neuer
 went about, or else did thinke in mind to exceede or compare wth your in-
 finite & incomprehensible bounty, but endeoured by all possible means
 to let your grace perceiue, & the whole world to know that there is
 nothing in the world which I regard so much as your good grace
 (and

and fauour. And mighty Ioue graunt that I do neuer fal into so
 great errour to presume for to contend with the greatnes of your
 mynde: which fond desire if my beaſtly mynde ſhould apprehend, I
 myght be likened to the man that goeth aboute to berieue and take
 away the cleareneſſe of the Sun, or brightneſſe of the ſpiedant ſtars
 But euer I did thinke it to be my bounden ducty not only of thoſe
 fortunes goods which by your princely meaneſ I do inioy to bee
 a diſtributer and large giuer, but alſo bound for the proſite and
 aduancement of your regal crowne and dignitie and defence of
 your moſt noble perſon, of mine owne life and bloud to be both libe
 rall and prodigall. And where your maieſty thinketh that I haue
 laboured to compare in curious dede or other liberall behauiour,
 no dede that euer I did, or fact was euer enterpriſed by me for o
 ther reſpect, but for to get and continue your moze ample fauour
 and daily to increaſe your loue for that it is the ſeruants part with
 all his force and might to aſpyre the grace and fauoure of his ſo
 ueraygne lord. How beit (moſt noble prince) befoze this tyme I
 did neuer beleue, nor hard youre grace confeſſe, that magnanimi
 ty gentleneſſe and curteſie, were vertues worthy of blame
 & correccion, as your maieſty hath very maniſeſtly done me to vn
 derſtande by wordes ſeuere and taunting checkes unworthy for
 praictiſe of ſuch rare and noble vertues. But how ſo euer it bee,
 whether lyfe or death ſhal depend vpon this prayſe worthy and ho
 nourable purpoſe, I meane hercafter to yeld my dutye to my ſo
 ue ayne lord and then it may pleaſe him to terme my dedes cour
 teous or liberal or to thinke on my behauiour, what his owne prin
 cely mynde ſhal deme and iudge. The king vpon theſe wordes roſe
 by & ſayd Ariobarzanes, now it is no tyme to continue in further
 diſputation of this argument committing the determination and
 iudgement herof, to the graue deliberatiō of my counſel who at co
 uenient leaſure aduiſedly ſhal accoꝝding to the Perſian lawes and
 cuſtomes conclud the ſame. And for this preſent tyme I ſay vnto the
 that I am diſpoſed to accōpt the accuſation made agaynſte thee to
 be true, & confeſſed by thy ſelf. In the mean tyme thou ſhalt repayre
 into thy country, & come no moze to the court til I commaund thee
 Ariobarzanes receiuinge this anſweare of his ſouerayne Lorde de
 parted and to his great contētatiō, went home into his countrey
 mers

Ariobarzanes.

merre, for that he should be absent out of the daylye sight of his enemies, yet not wel pleased for that the king had remitted his cause to his Councell.

After the lesse minded to abyde and suffer al fortune, he gaue him selfe to the pastime of huntinge of Deere, runninge of the wyld Beeste, and flying of the Hauke. This noble Gentleman had two onely daughters of his wife that was deceased, the most beautiful Gentlewomen of the countrey, the eldest of which two was peerlesse and without comparison, older than the other by one yeare. The beauty of those fayre ladies was byruted throughtout the whole Region of Persia, to whome the greatest Lordes and Barons of the countrey were great and importunate suiters. He was not in his countrey resiant the space of fower monethes, which for salubritie of ayre was most holsome and pleasant, full of lordlike liberties and Gentlemanlike pastimes, as wel to be done by the hound as folowed by the spannell, but one of the kinges Haraulds sente from the Court, appeared before him with message to this effectie, saying vnto him: My Lord Ariobarzanes, the King my souerayne Lord hath commaunded you to send with me to the Court the fairest of your two daughters, for that the repute of their famous beautie, hath made him hardlie to beleue them to be such, as common bruite would sayne doe him to vnderstand. Ariobarzanes not well able to conceiue the meaning of the kinges commaundment, reuolued in his mynde diuers thinges touching that demaund, & concludinge vpon one which fel to his remembrance, determined to send his younger daughter, which (as we haue sayde before) was not in beauty comparable to her elder sister, whereupon hee caused the mayden to be sent for, and sayde vnto her these wordes: Daughter, the king my master and thy soueraigne Lord, hath by his messenger commaunded me to sende vnto him the fairest of my daughters, but for a certaine reasonable respect which at this time I purpose not to disclose, my mynde is that thou shalt goe, praying thee not to say but that thou thy selfe art of the twayne the fairest, the concealinge of whiche mine aduise wil breede vnto thee (no doubt) thy great aduancement, besides the profite and promotion that shal accrue by that thy silence: and the disclosing of
sam

same may hap to engendze to thy deere father his euerlasting hin-
 dzaunce, and perchaunce the depziation of his lyfe: but if so be the
 Kinge doe beget the with childe, in anye wise keepe close the same:
 And when thou seeest thy belly begin to swell, that no longer it can
 be closely kept, then in conuenient time, when thou seeest the Kinge
 merily disposed, thou shalt tell the King that thy sister is far moze
 beautifull than thy selfe, and that thou art the yonger sister. The
 wise maiden well vnderstanding hir fathers minde, and conceiuing
 the summe of his intent, promised to perfozme his charge, and so
 with the Haraulde and honozable traine, he caused his Daughter
 to be conueyed to the Court. In easie matter it was to deceiue the
 King in the beauty of that maiden. For although the elder daugh-
 ter was the fairest, yet this Gentlewoman seemed so peerelesse in
 the Courte, that without comparison she was the most beautifull
 that was to be found either in Courte or countrey: the behauiour
 and semblance of whiche two daughters were so like, that hard it
 was to iudge whether of th. m was the eldest. For their father
 had so kept them in, that seildome they were scene within his house
 or at no time marked when they walked abzoade. The wife of the
 King was dead the space of one yere before, for which cause he de-
 termined to marry the daughter of Ariobarzanes, who although she
 was not of the royall bloud, yet of birt, she was right noble. Whe
 the Kinge sawe this Gentlewoman, he iudged hir to be the fairest
 that euer he saw or heard of by report, whom in the presence of his
 noble men hee solemnly did marry, and sent vnto her father to ap-
 poynt the Dowry of his married Daughter out of hande, and to
 returne the same by that messenger. When Ariobarzanes hearde
 tell of thys vn hoped marriage, right ioyfull for that successe, sent
 vnto his Daughter the Dowry which he had promised to geue to
 both his Daughters. Many of the Court did maruell, that the
 Kinge beinge in aged yeares woulde marry so yongue a mayden,
 specially the daughter of his Subiect, whom he had banished fro
 the Courte. Some praysed the Kinges Disposition for takinge
 hir whom he fancied: Ech man speakeinge his seuerall mynde ac-
 cordinge to the dyuers customes of men. Notwithstandinge
 C. there

Ariobarzanes.

there were diuers that moued the Kinge to that marriage, thereby to force him to confesse, that by takinge of the goods of Ariobarzanes, he might be called Courteous and Liberaill. The marriage beinge tolenimized in very sumptuous and princely guise, Ariobarzanes sent to the Kinge the like Dowry which befoze hee had sent him for marriage of his daughter, with message to this effect: That for so much as hee had Assigned to his Daughters two certayne dowries to mary them to their equal fees, and seeinge that hee which was without exception, was the husbände of the one, his duety was to bestow vpon his grace, a more greater gift, than to any other which should haue bene his sonne in lawe. But the king would not receiue the increase of his dowry deeming himselfe well satisfied with the beauty and good condicions of his new spouse, whom he entertayned and honozed as Queene. In the meane time she was with childe with a Sonne (as afterwar des in the birth it appeered) which so wel as she coulde she kept close and secret, but afterwar des perceiuinge her Belly to wake bigge, the greatnesse whereof she was not able to hyde, beinge vppon a time with the kinge and in familiar dispozte, she like a wise and sobze Lady induced matter of diuers argumēt, amonges which as occasion serued, she disclosed to the King, that she was not the fairest of hir fathers daughters, but hir elder sister more beautifull than she. The King hearing that, was greatly offended with Ariobarzanes, for that he had not accomplished his commaundement: and albeit hee loued well his wife, yet to attaine the effect of his desire, he called his Haraulde vnto him, whom he had first sent to make request for his wyfe, and with him returned agayne his new married Spouse vnto her father, commaunding him to say these wordes: That for so much as he knew himselfe to be vanquished and overcome by the Kinges humanity, his grace did maruell, that in place of Curtesse, he would vse such contumacy and disobedience, by sendinge vnto him, not the fairest of his daughters which he required, but such as he himselfe liked to sende. A matter no doubt worthy to be sharply punished and reuenged. For which cause the Kinge beinge not a litle offended, had sent home his daughter agayne, and willed hym to sende his eldest daughter; and that he had returned the dow-

the dowry which he gaue with his songer. Ariobarzanes receiued his daughter and the dowry with willinge minde, and sayd these words to the Harauld : Mine other daughter which the King my Soueraygne Lord requireth, is not able presently to go with thee, because in hir bed she lieth sicke, as thou mayst manifestly perceiue if thou come into hir chamber : but say vnto the king, that vppon my faith and allegiaunce so soone as she is recovered, I will sende hir to the court. The Harauld seeing the mayden lye sicke on her bed, weake and Impotent, not able to trauel, returned to the king, and tolde him of the sicknesse of the eldest Daughter of Ariobarzanes, wherewithall beinge satisfied, he attended the successe of his desired sute. The Gentlewoman no sooner beinge recouered, but the tyme of the others childbirth was come, which brought forth a goodly Boy, both the Mother safely brought to Bed, & the childe strong and lusty. Whych greatly contented and pleased Ariobarzanes, and the greater grew his ioy thereof, for that hee sawe the Childe to be like vnto the kinge his Father. And by that time the pong Gentlewoman was risen from her childbed, the sister was perfectly whole, and had recovered her former hiewe and beauty, both which beinge richely apparelled, Ariobarzanes with an honourable trayne, sent vnto the kinge, instructinge them first what they ought to say and do. When they were arrived at the Courte, one of the pryuy Chamber aduertised the king that Ariobarzanes had not onely sent one of his Daughters, but both of them. The Kyng hearinge and seeinge the liberality of Ariobarzanes, accepted the same in gracious part, and determined for that his curtesie, to vse him with such princely liberality, as he should be forced to confesse himself ouercome. And before the messenger which had brought the pong Gentlewoman did departe, he caused to be called before him his only sone called Cyrus, vnto who he sayd : Because Cyrus the tyme of thy yeares bee such, as meete they be to match the in Mariage, for hope I haue to see some Progeny proceede of thee before I die, my minde is y thou shalt marry this goodly Gentlewoman here, y sister of my Wyfe. To which hys Fathers Wylle, the pong Gentleman willingly assented. The y Kyng toke again his

owne, and ordayned a royall feast, for the marriage of his Sonne,
 which was celebrated and done with graet triumph and solemnity,
 continuinge the space of. 8. daies. Ariobarzanes hearinge these
 good newes, would not yet acknowledge himselfe to be ouercome,
 and seeinge that his purpose was nowe brought to an extremity,
 determined to send the little childe, a little before begotten of hys
 daughter, to the Kinge, which so resembled the Kinges Face and
 Countenance as was possible. And therefore caused a Cradle to
 bee made of the fairest Iuoy that was to be gotten, embossed and
 garnished with pure Golde, Adorned and set wth most precious
 Stones and Jewels, wherein he caused the childe to be placed, and
 couered with rich clothes of fynest Gold, and Silke, and rogether
 with the Nurice, accompanied with a Pompous trayne of Gentle-
 men. he sent him to the Kinge, the very time that the solempne ma-
 riage should be celebrated. And the King beinge in his great Hall,
 which was hanged with maruellous rich and costly Arras, atten-
 ded vpon with a great numbꝛ of his Barons and noble men, hee
 that had the charge of the conduction of the childe, vpon his knees
 presented the same before him, lpyng in the Cradle. The King and
 the Noblemen, meruelling what that did meane expected what the
 Messenger would say, who holding the Cradle by one of the Po-
 mels, sayd these wordes: Most renoumed and victorions Prince,
 in the behalfe of Ariobarzanes my Lorde and your Subiect most
 humbly I present vnto your maiesty, with al Submission and Re-
 uerence, this gift. And my sayd Lord doth rendꝛe infinite thanks
 vnto your highnesse, for the great Curtesie it hath pleased you to
 vse, by bouchsafinge to entertayne him into your Alliance. For
 which not to seeme vnmindfull, this present (and therewithall he
 opened the Cradle) by mee hee hath sent vnto your maiesty. Whē
 the Cradle was discovered, there appeared a goodly yong Chylde,
 Smilinge and Laughing vpon his father, the topfullest sight that
 euer his father sawe, and so like vnto him, as the halfe Moone is
 lyke the proportion of the rest. Then euery of the Standers by
 began to say his minde touchinge the resemblance of the Chylde
 to hys Father, hardily protestinge the same without doubt to be his
 owne. The King could not be satisfied with the sight of his childe.

by reas

by reason of the great delight he had to looke vpon him, and of the generall opinion whych all men auouch: touching his lphenesse. The Chylde agayne vpon the comon reioyce made vpon hym, but specially of hys Father, with preaty motions and swete laughinges, representinge two smilinge pyttes in his ruddy Cheekes, crowed many tymes vpon his Father, toynging vp and downe hys tender handes. Afterwardes the Kyng behelde the workmanship of that sumptuous cradle, and demaunded whereof the substance was. Unto whom the Messenger described the Hystory and whole content of that incomparable Jewel. Who hearing that discourse, caused the Quene to be called forth, and by her was further certified of her fathers Noble disposition, with exceeding contentation, and wonderfull reioyce, he receiued the little Chylde, and confessed hym selfe in maner vanquished. Notwithstandinge, seeming to be thus surmounted, he thought if he did not surpasse this Curtesy, his Noble and Princely minde should be disgraced. Wherefore he determined to vse a kynde of Magnanimity, thereby eyther to ouercome Ariobarzanes, or else hauinge apparant occasion altogether to fall out and to conuerue a mortall malice agaynst hym.

The Kyng had a Daughter of the age of 21. yeares, a very fayre and comely Lady (accordinge as her Royall education and princely bringinge vp required) whom as yet he had not matched in marriage, meaninge to bestowe her vppon some Kyng or great Monarch with a dowry of Ten hundred thousand Crownes, besides the princely and great costly Apparell and Jewells, whych her owne mother lyng vpon her death Bed did bequeathe her. The Kyng then purposinge to excell Ariobarzanes, mynded by couptyng hym with hys Daughter, to make hym hys Sonne in lawe: Whych to a Lady of Royall Linage, appeareth some debasinge of her noble bloud, to be matched with a man of inferiour birth. The lyke to a Man how honourable so euer he be cannot chaunce, if he take a Wyfe of Degree neuer so Base. For if hee bee bozne of Noble and Gentle kynne, hee doth Illustre, and Aduaunce the Woman whom he taketh, all be it shee beere of the meanest Trampe of the Popular sorte, and the Chyldezen whych be bozne of them, by the Fathers meanes. At the

Ariobarzanes.

Noble and of a gentle kynd. But a woman, although she be most Noble, if shee bee married to hir inferiour, and that hir husbände bee not so Noble, the chyldren that shall be bozne of them shall not receiue the honour of the mothers stock, but the state of the fathers lotte, and so shall be vnnoble. Such is the Reuerence & Authority of the Sexe of man, wherebpon doeth ryse the comparyson of the wyfe, which doth resemble the man vnto the Sunne, and the Woman to the Moone. For wee see that the Moone of hir selfe doth not giue light, ne yet can peld any brightnesse to the darknesse of the Night, if she did not partake some shyning of the Sun, wth his bright flames at times & places, doth brighten the darke, and maketh the Moone to shine. Euen so the Woman dependeth of the man, and of hym doth take hir nobility. The Kyng therefore thought the match not meete for Ariobarzanes to marry his Daughter, and feared he should incurre some blemish of his house. But for all respect and feare of shame, the emulation wherby hee had to be victorious of his forced curtelle, did surpasse. Wherefore he sent for Ariobarzanes to come vnto the Court. Who vpon that commaundement came. And so soone as hee was entred the Palace, he repayed to do his reuerence vnto the Kinge, of whom he was welcomed with glad and ioyfull entertaynement. And after they had a while debated of diuers matters, the Kyng said vnto him: Ariobarzanes, for so much as thou art without a Wyfe, we minde to bestowe vpon thee a Gentlewoman, which not onely wee well like, and loue: but also is such a one, as thou thy selfe shalt be well contented to take. Ariobarzanes answered, that he was at his commaundement: And that such choyse as pleased his Maesty, should very well content and satisfie him. Then the Kyng caused his daughter, in riche bestures sumptuously attired to come before him, & there openly in presence of the whole Court, commaunded y Ariobarzanes should marry her. Which wth seemely ceremonies being consummate, Ariobarzanes shewed little ioy of y partridge, & in apparance made as though he cared not for his wyfe. The Nobles, and Gentlemen of the Courte wondred to see the straunge behauiour of the Wydegroome, consideringe the great humanity of their Prince towards his Subject, by takinge him for his

for his Father, a Sonne in law: and greatly murmured to see the obstinacy & rudenesse of Ariobarzanes, towards the Kinge and the Saye newe married Spouse, much blaininge and rebukinge bys unkinde demeanour. Ariobarzanes that day fared as thogh hee were besides himselfe, bope of ioy and mirth, where all the rest of the Courte spent the tyme in sport and Triumph, the Ladies and Noble Women together with the Kinge and Queene themselves, dauncinge and masainge, vntill the time of Night did force ech Wyghre to Retyre to their Chaumbers. Notwithstandinge the Kinge did marke the Gesture, and Countenance of Ariobarzanes, and after the Banquet the Kinge in Solempne guise and great Pompe caused bys Daughter to bee accompanied with a great Traine to the Lodginge of Ariobarzanes, and to bee caried with hir, hir Princely Dowry, where Ariobarzanes very honourably receued bys Wyfe, and at that Instant, in the presence of all the Noblemen, and Barons that waited vpon the Bride, hee doubled the Dowry receued, and the same with the Ten hundred thousand Crownes geuen hym by the Kinge, hee sent backe agayne. This vnmearured Liberality seemed passinge Strange vnto the Kinge, and bredde in him such dyspayre, as doubtful he was whether to yelde, or to condemne him to perpetuall Banishment. The Kinge thought that the gratinnesse of Ariobarzanes mynde was Inuincible, and was not able patiently to suffer, that a Subject in matters of Curtelle & Liberality, should still copare with his King and maister. Herewithal the King conceiuing malice, coude not tell what to say or do In casey matter it was to perceiue the rage & furie of the king, who was so sore displeased, as he bare good looke & countenance to no man. And because in those dayes the Persian kings were honoyred & reuerenced as Gods, there was alawe that when the king was dysuene into a furie or bad conceited a iust displeasure, he shoulde manifest vnto his Counsellers, the cause of his anger, who afterwarde by mature diligence hauing examined the cause and findinge the kinge to be vniustly displeased, shoulde seke meanes of his appeasing. But if they found his anger & displeasure to be iustly grounded, the cause of the same, according to the quality of the offence, litle or great they shoulde punish, either

Ariobarzanes.

by Banishment or capital death. The sentence of whō should passe & be pronounced without appeale: Howbeit Lawfull it was for the Kinge to mitigate the pronounced sentence, eyther in al, or in part, and to dimish the payne, or clearely to assole the party. Whereby it evidently appeared, y the Counsellers Sentence once determined, was verye suffice, and the Kinges will if he pardoned, was mere grace, and mercy. The King was constrained by the statutes of his kyngdome to disclose vnto his Counsell the cause of his displeasure, which particularly he recited. The Counsellers when they heard the reasons of the Kinge, sent for Ariobarzanes, of whom by due examination, they gathered, that in diuers causes he had prouoked the Kinges dyspleasure. Afterwards the Lords of the Counsell, vpon the proposed question began to argue, by inuestigation and search whereof, in the ende they iudged Ariobarzanes worthy to loose hys head. For that he would not onely compare, but also goe about to ouertoppe him in thinges vndecent, & to shewe himselfe discontented with the mariage of his daughter, & vnthankfull of the benefites so curteously bestowed vpon him. A custome was obserued amonge the Persians, that in euery acte or enterpryse, wherein the seruaunt endeouored to surpasse & vanquish his lord and maister (albeit the attempt were commendable and praiseworthy) for respect of want of duety, or contēpt to the Royall Maiessty, he should lose his best ioynt. And for better confirmation of their iudgement, the Counsellers alleaged a certayne diffinitive sentence, registred in their Chronicles, whilom bone by the Kinges of Persia. The cause was this: One of the Kinges of y Region disposed to dispozte with certayne of his noble mē abroad in the fieldes, went a Hauking, and with a Faucon to fly at diuers game. Within a while they sprange a Hearon, and the Kinge commaunded that one of the Faulcons which was a notable swift & soaring Hauke, should be cast of to the Hearon: which done, the Hearon began to mount, and the Faucon speedely pursuen, and as the Hauke after many batings & intercourses, was about to seaze vpon the Hearon, he espied an Eagle. The stoute Hauke seeing the Eagle, gaue ouer the fearefull Hearon, & with swift flight flew towards

wardes the harde Eagle, and fiercely attempted to seaze vpon her. But the Eagle very stoutly defended her selfe, that the Hauke was forced to let goe hir holde. In the ende the good Hauke, with her sharpe talander, agayne seazed vpon the Eagles neck, and with her beake strake her sharke dead, wherewithall she fel downe amid the company that wayted vpon the King. Al the Barons & Gentlemen highly comended and praysed the Hauke, affirminge that a better was not in the worlde, attributing vnto the same such prayse, as they thought meete. The King for all the acclamations & shoutes of the troupe, spake not a worde, but stood musing with himselfe, and did neyther prayse nor blame the Hauke. It was very late in the eueninge, when the Faucon killed the Eagle, and therefore the Kinge commaunded ech man to depart to the Citty. The next day the King caused a Goldsmith to make an exceeding fayre crowne of Golde, apt and meete for the Falcons head. Afterwards when he saw time conuenient, he ordayned that in the market place of the Citty, a Bearche should be erected, and adozned with Tapestry, Arras, and other cosly furnitures, such as Prynces Palaces are bedecked withall. Thither with sound of Trumpets hee caused the Faucon to be conueyed, where the Kinge commaunded one of his noble men to place the Crowne vpon his head, for price of the excellent praye achieued vpon the Eagle. Then he caused the hangman or common executioner of the Citty, to take the Crowne from the Faucons head, and with the Trenchat sword to cut it of. Vpon these contrary effectes the beholders of this sight were amazed, and began diuersly to talk thereof. The King which at a window stood to behold this fact, caused silence to be kept, and so opened his princely voice, as he was wel heard speaking these words:

There ought (good people) none of you all to Murmur and grudge at the present fact executed vpon the Faucon, because the same is done vpon good reason and iust cause as by processe of my discourse you shall well perceiue. I am perswaded that it is his office and ducty of euery magnanimous prince, to know the baloy and difference betweene vertus and vice, that all vertuous actes and worthy attempts man be honoured, and the contrary chastised and punished, otherwise he is not worthy of the name of a King & Prince,

Ariobarzanes.

Princke, but of a cruel and trayterous Tyrant. For as the Prince beareth the title by principality and chiefe, so ought his life chiefly to excell other, whom he governeth and ruleth. The bare title and dignity is not sufficient, if his conditions and moderation be not to that supreme state equiualent. Full well I knew and did consider to be in this dead Faucon, a certayne generosité & stoutnesse of minde, iorned wth a certayne fierce actiuitie and nimblenesse, for which I Crowned and rewarded hir wth hys golden Garland, becaus: of the shoute slaughter which she made vpon that Wyghty Eagle, worthy for that solempne guise. But when I considered how boldly and rashely she assailed and killed the Eagle, which is hir Queene and Maystresse, I thought it a part of Justice, that for hir bolde and vncomely act, she shoulde suffer the payne due to hir deserte. For vnlawful it is for the seruante, and vnductifull for the Subject, to imbrue his handes in the bloud of his Soueraygne Lord. The Faucon then hauinge slayne hir Queene, and of all o-ther Birdes the Soueraygne, who can with reason blame me for cuttinge of the Faucons head? Doubtlesse none, that hath respect to the quiet state betweene the Prince, and Subject.

This example the Iudges alleaged against Ariobarzanes whē they pronounced sentence: And applyinge the same to him, ordeyned that first Ariobarzanes, for his Magnanimitie and liberal curtesse shoulde be Crowned wth a Laurell Garland for the generosité of his minde & exceedinge curtesse, but for his great emulation earnest endeuour, and continuall deuice to contende wth hys Princke, and in Liberality to shew him selfe superiour, bysides the mutteringe speech bittered agaynst hym, his head ought to be stricken of. Ariobarzanes beinge aduertised of thys seuerer Condemnation, hee purposed to sustayne the Venemous Dart of Fortune, as hee had endured other Woundes of that Enuious inconstant Lady, and in such maner behaued and directed his Welles, and Countenaunce, as no Sygne of Choler or Despayre appeared in him, onely Pronouncinge thys Sentence with ioyfull Cheare in the presence of many. Glad I am that at length there resteth in me so much to be liberall, as I employ my life

my life and blood, to declare the same to my Soueraygne Lorde, which right willingly I meane to do, that the World may know, how I had rather lose my life, than to saynt and geue ouer in mine accustomed liberality. Then callinge a Notary vnto him, he made his Will (for so it was lawfull by the Persian lawes) and to his Wyfe, and Daughters hee increased their Dowries, and to his kinsfolke and frendes he bequeathed diuers rich and bountifull Legacies. To the King he gaue a great number of most precious Jewels. To Cyrus the Kings sonne, and his by marriage (besides a great masse of money) he bequeathed all his armure, and Weapons, with all his instruments for the warres, and his whole stable of horse. Last of all he ordained, that if (perhaps) his wyfe should be found with childe, and brought to Bed of a Sonne hee should be his vniuersall heire: But if a Woman chyld, to haue the dowry that his other daughters had. The rest of his goods & cattel he gaue indifferently to al. 3. equally to be diuided. He provided also, that all his seruantes accordinge to their degree, should be rewarded. The day before he should be put to death (according to the custome of Persia) his prayes and ballant factes, as wel by Epitaphes fixed vpon poasts, as by proclamation, were generally sounded throughout the Realme, in such wise as ech wight iudged him to be the most liberall and noble personage that was in all the Countrey, and in the borders confininge vpon the same. And if there had not bene some enuious persons neere the King, which studied & practised his overthrow, al other would haue deemed him vnworthy of death. Such is the enuy of the maliciously disposed, that rather than they would see their equals to be in better estimation with the Prince than themselves, studie and deuise all policy either by flattery or false surmise to bringe them in discredite, or to practise by false Accusation, their bitter subuersion by Death or Banishment.

But whyles Ariobarzanes was disposinge his thinges in order, his Wyfe and Daughters with his Friends and Cousins, were affected with great sorrow day and night, complaining for the heauy state of that noble Gentleman. The eight day being come (for the Lawe allowed that space to the condemned, for disposition of their things)

Ariobarzanes.

their thynges) a Skaffolde was made by comaundement of the King, in the middell of the Market place, al couered wth black cloth, & an other right ouer against the same with Purple & Silk, where the King (if he list) in the mids of the Judges should sit and the inditement redde, iudgement (by the Kynge's owne mouth declared) should be executed, or if it pleased him, discharge and assyle the condemned. And the King vnwillinge to be present, gaue to one of the eldest Judges, hys full power and authority. But yet sorrowful that a Gentleman so noble and valiaunt, his father and sonne in lawe, should finishe his life with a death so horrible, would needes that morning, be present himselfe at that execution, as wel to see the continent and skoute ende of Ariobarzanes, as also to take order for his deliuey. When the time was come Ariobarzanes by the Sergeante and Garde was brought vnto the Skaffolde, and there Apparellled in rich Vestures, the Laurel Crowne was set on his head, and so continuinge for a certayne space, the garment and Crowne was taken of agayne together with his other Apparell. The Executioner attendinge for commaundement to do his office, and listring vp his sworde to do the fact, the King desired to see the countenance of Ariobarzanes, who neuer chaunged Coloure for all that terrour of death. The King seeing the great constancy and inuincible minde of Ariobarzanes, that it is not I, which haue wroughte thy condemnation, ne yet by enuious desyre haue sought thy bloude, to bryng thee to thys extremity, but it hath bene thy ill disordred life, and the statutes of this Realme, which haue found thee guilty, and thereupon sentence and death pronounced, and execution now ready to be done, and the minister ready to aduaunce his arme, to play the last acte of this Tragedy: And yet for that our holy lawes doe geue liberty that I may assyle and deliuer whom I list, and them restore to their former state, if now thou wilt acknowledge thy selfe banquished and ouercome, and accepte thy lyfe in gracefull part, I will pardon thee, and restore thee to thyne offices and promotions. Ariobarzanes, hearyng these wordes, kneeled downe wth hys heade declined, and expecting the blow of the Sworde, lysted vp himselfe, and turnynge his face

to the Kinge, perceyuing his malice not so soze bent agaynst hym as the enuy and malice of his enemies desired, he determined to proue and vse the pittiful liberality and fauour of his Soueraigne Lord, that his foes by his death might not Triumph, ne yet stayne the thinge, for which so longe they aspired. Wherefore in reuerent wyse kneelinge before his maiesty, with a stout and perfect voyce sayd these wordes: Most victorious & mercifull souerayne Lord, in equall worship and honour to the immortall Gods, sith of thy abundant grace and mercy it hath pleased thee to graunt me lyfe, I do most humbly accept the same, which if I wylt should be prolonged in thy disgrace and wrath, could not be pleasaunt vnto me, and therefore do confesse my selfe in curtesie and liberality altogether surmounted & ouercome. I most humbly then do geue thee thanks for preservation of my lyfe, hopinge hereafter to employ the vitermost of myne endeouour for the benefite and honour of thy Crowne and dignity, as readely and without supplication made in my behalfe, thou hast vouchesafed to restore the same. And sith thy clemency hath reuiued me thyne humble vassall, I beseech thy maiesty to giue me leaue to say my minde, trustinge thereby to do thee to vnderstand the effect and cause of that my former presumption. The Kinge made signes that he should arise and boldly speake the summe of his desire. When he stood by, silence was proclaimed: who then began to speake these wordes: Two things there be, (most sacred Prince) which doubtlesse do Resemble the raging Waues of surginge Seas, and the mutability of vassalle windes, and yet great is the folly of an infinite numbre, which imploie their whole care and diligēce to the pursute thereof. These two thinges whereof I speake, and be so deere beloued of flattering Courtiers, are the grace and fauour of their soueraygne lord, and the luringe loue of Amorous Dames: whych two do so often beguyle the Courty Gentleman that in ende, they risgender nought else but repentance. And to begin with the loue of Ladies, they, as by common experience is proued, most commonly do recline to their Inferiours. It is dayly seene by to much vnhappy proofe, that a yongue Gentleman by Wyth noble, and other wyse riches, vertuous, and indued with many goodly gifts, shall chooſe & worship

Ariobarzanes.

worship one for his soueraigne Lady and maistrisse, and her shall
 serue and honour with no lesse faith and fidelity then is due to the
 immortal Gods, and shal not sticke to employ for her loue and ser-
 uice all the possible power and trauell he is able to do, and yet she
 in despite of all his humble endeavour, shall embrace an other boide
 of all vertue, makenge him possessor of that benefite after which
 the other seeketh, and shce not longe constant in that minde, alter-
 wards will attend to the first Suter, but in such mouable and dis-
 dainfull sort, as the wandring staries (though their natural in-
 stability) be moued to & fro, and him in the ende will suffice to fall
 headlong into the bottomlesse pit of dispayre: and to him that as-
 keth hir the reaso of this variety, she maketh noe other answer
 but that her pleasure is such, and wilfull will to dally with her
 suters. So that seldome times a true and perfit Louer can fasten
 his foote on certayne holde, but that his life is tossed by & downe
 like the whirling blastes of inconstant windes. The like succedeth
 in the Courtes of Kings & Princes, he which is in fauoure with
 his soueraigne Lord in al mens eyes, so great and neare, as it sees-
 meth the Prince is disposed to resoluue vpon nothing without hys
 aduise and counsell, when suche fauored person shall employe hys
 whole care and industrie to maintaine and encrease the comenced
 grace of his soueraigne Lord, behold, vpon the sodaine the minde &
 fauour of his lord is charged, & an other without desert, which neuer
 carked to win good will, is taken in place, cherished as though hee
 had serued him an hundred yeares before: and he that was the first
 minion of the Courte in greatest grace and estimation, is in a mo-
 ment dispyed, and out of all regards. In other, within fewe daies
 after, shall supplie the place of the other twaine, verie diligent and
 careful to serue a man trained by in Courtly exercise, whose mind
 full mind shall bee so caring ouer his lords affayres, as vpon the
 safeguard & preservation of hys owne life. But all his labour is em-
 ployed in vayne: and when the aged daies of his expired life ap-
 proch, for the least displeasure he shalbe thrust out without reward
 for former trauel, & right aptly the Comon Proverb may be appli-
 ed: The comon Courtiers life is like a golden misery, & the faith-
 full ser-

ful seruant an Asse perpetuall. I haue seene my selfe the right wel
 learned man to serue in Court for want of meate, and a blockish
 beast bodye of vertue, for lust, and for merite, aduanced & made a
 Gentleman. But this may chaunce bicause hys lord is not dispo-
 sed to vertue, nought esteeming those that be affected with good
 sciences & that onely for lacke of careful! trayninge by in yowthfull
 dayes, or else for that his minde cannot frame with gentle sprits,
 the closets of whose breast be charged and fraught with infinite
 loades of learninge, and haue not bin noseled in trade of Courtes,
 ne yet can vse due courtly speech, or to vnblushing face can shuffe
 themselves in presence of their betters, or commen with Ladies of
 dame Venus toyes: or race of birth not mingled with the noble or
 gentle Sire. For these causes perhaps that vertuous wighte can
 not attain the hay of Fortunes giftes. Which person thoughe in
 Court he be not esteemed yet in Schoolehouse of good arte he is
 deemed famous, and for his worthy skill right worthy to be pre-
 ferred aboue the heauens. In semblable wise, how oftentimes and
 comonly is it seene & the man perchance which neuer thou sawest
 before, so sone as he is seene of the, sodaynly he is detested lyke a
 plague, & the more earnest he is to do the seruice and pleasure, the
 greater is thy wrath bent towards him. Contrarywise, som other
 vpon the first view shal so content & please the, as if he require the
 bestowing of thy life, thou hast no power to denie him, thou arte in
 loue wth h^e, & let him tw^hart thy mind & wil neuer so much, thou can-
 rest not for it, all is well he doth. But that these varieties do pro-
 ceede from some certayn temprement of bloud within the body co-
 formed and moued by som inward celestial power, who doubteth?
 And surely & foundation of these Courtly mutations, is the prick-
 ing venomous Goade of pestiferous Enuye, whych continually
 holdeth the fauour of Prynces in ballaunce, and in a moment
 hoisteth by him which was below, and poizeth downe agayne him
 that was exalted. So that no plague or poison is more pestiferous
 in Courts, than the hurtfull disease of Enuy. All other vices with
 little paine and lesse labour may easily be cured, and so pacified as
 they shal not hurt thee. But rooted Enuy by any meanes is dis-
 charged, with no pollicye is expelled, ne yet by any Dugge or
 Medicine

Ariobarzanes.

Medicine purged. Merely without great danger, I know not
 which way the poysonant bittes of Envy can be auoyded. The
 proude man in Courte, the arrogant and ambitious, the lofty min-
 ded foole, moze eleuate and lustie than pride it selfe, if reuerence
 bee done to him, if he be honoured, if place be giuen to him, if hee
 be prayesed and glorified aboute the heauens, if thou humble thy
 selfe to him, by and by he will take thee to be his friend, and will
 deeme thee to bee a courteous and gentle companion. Let the lacy-
 uous and wanton person giuen to the pleasures and lust of wo-
 ermen, fixing his mind on nothing else but vpon fugitiue pleasures,
 if his loue bee not impeached, ne yet his wanton toyes repproued, if
 he be prayesed before his Ladie, he will euer be thy friend. The co-
 uetous and gloutonous carle, if first thou make him quaffe a Me-
 dicine, and afterwarde byd hym to thy Table, the one and other
 disease is speedily cured. But for the enuious person, what Whi-
 ske can be sought to purge his pestiferous humoar? Which if
 thou go about to heale and cure, rather muste thou remedye the
 same by waisting the life of him that is so possessed, than find cau-
 ses of recouerie. And who knoweth not (most sacred Prince) that
 in your Courte there be some attached with that poisoned plague
 who seeing me your maiesties humble bassall in greater fauoure
 with your grace, than they, my seruice moze acceptable than theirs,
 my prowesse and exercise in armes moze woorthy than theirs, my
 diligence moze industrious than theirs, my aduise and counsell
 moze auayleable than theirs, all mine other deedes and doings in
 better Estimation than theirs: They I say, dallied in the Lap of
 the cancred Witch dame Envy, by what meanes are they to be re-
 couered? by what meanes their infection purged? by what means
 their mallice cured? If not to see me depriued of your grace, ex-
 pelled fro your court, & cast headlonge into the gulfes of death ex-
 treme? If I should bribe them with great rewardes, if I should
 honour them with humble reuerence, if I should exalt them aboute
 the Skyes, if I should employ the bittermost of my power, to do
 them seruice, all frustrate & cast away. They wil not cease to bring
 me into perill, they will not spare to reduce me to misery, they will
 not stick

not sicke to pماغin all deuyses for myne auoydance, when they see al other remedies impotent and vnable. This is the poisoned plague which enuenuometh all Princes courtes. This is the mischiefe which destroyeth all kyngdomes. This is the monster that deuoure all vertuous enterpryses and offendeth eche gentle spirite. This is the dim bale which so ouershadoweth the clerenes of the eyes as the bright beams of verity cannot be sene and so obscurerh the equity of iustice, as right from falshode cannot be discerned. This is the manifest cause that breedeth a thousand errors in the workes of men. And to draw nere to the effecte of this my tedious talke, briefly, there is no vice in the worlde that more outragiously corrupteth Princes courtes, that more vnfrendly vntwineth frendships band, that more unhappely subuerreth noble houses, then the popson of Enuy. For he that enclinerh his eares to the enuious person, he that attendeth to his malignant deuyses, vnpossible it is for him to do any dede that is eyther good or vertuous. But to finishe and end for auoyding of wearines & not to stay your maiesty from your waighty affayres, I say that the enuious man reioiceth not so much in his owne good turnes nor gladdeth himself so greatly with his owne commodities, as hee doth insulte, and laugh at the discōmodities & hinderance of others, at whome profite & gain he sorroweth and lamenteth. And to pnt out both the eyes of his cōpanton, the enuious man careth not to plucke out one of his owne. These wordes (most inuincible Prince) I purposed to speake in the presence of your Maiesty before your gard and courtlyke train, and in the vniuersal hearing of all the people that eche wighte may vnderstand how I not of your maiesties pretended malice, or mine owne committed faulte, but through the benemous tongues of the enuious fel into the lapse of your displeasure. This moste true oratiō of Ariobarzanes greatly pleased the noble Prince, and although he felt himself somewhat touched therewith and knowing it to bee certayn & true & that in tyme to come the same mighte pōsse all sortes of people, hee greatly praised and exalted him in the presence of all the assembly. Wherefore Ariobarzanes hauing receouered his lyfe confessed himselfe to bee vanquished and ouercome by the king, who knowing the valoure and fealy of that noble Gentleman

heman and louing him with hartie affection, caused him to come
 Downe from the mourning scaffold, and to ascend the place where
 he was himselfe, whom he embraced and kissed, in token that al dis-
 pleasure was remitted. All his auncient offices were restored to
 him agayne. And for his further aduancement, he gaue him the
 citie of Passagarda where was the old monument of kinge Cyrus
 and made him lieutenant generall of his realmes and dominions
 commandinge euery of his subiectes to obey him as himselfe.
 And so the kyng rested the honourable father in law to Ariobarza-
 nes, and his louing sonne by marriage crauing still in al his enter-
 preses, his graue aduise and counsell. And there was neuer thing
 of any importance done, but his liking or dislikinge was firste de-
 manded. Ariobarzanes then returned into greater grace and fa-
 uour of his souerayne lord than before, and for his singular vertue
 hauing dispersed and boken the amies and meyle of all his enimies,
 if before he were curteous and liberal, after these so stoure ad-
 ventures he became moze then princely in his dedes, and if somety-
 mes he had done one curteous act now he doubled the same.

But such was his Magnanimitye, so noble were his induors,
 tempered with such measure and equanimity, as the whole worlde
 clerely might deserue, that not to contend with his souerayne lord
 but to honour and serue him therby to expresse the maiesty of his
 Prince, he employed his goodes and liuing al which the kinge and
 fortune had bountiffully bestowed vpon the: Who vntill his dying
 day famously mayntayned him selfe in the good grace and fauour
 of his prince, in such wyse as the kyng moze clerely then the shining
 Sunnebeames, knew: Ariobarzanes to bee framed of nature for a
 chrystalline mirrour of curtesie and liberalitye, and that moze easie
 it was to bereiue the fyre of heate, and the Sonne of lighte then
 despoyle Ariobarzanes, of his glorious dedes. wherfoze he ceased
 not continually to honour, exalt, and enrych him, that hee mighte
 vse the greater liberality. And to say the treuth, althoughe these
 two vertues of curtesie and Liberality be commendable in all per-
 sons, without the which a man truely is not he whereof hee bea-
 reth the name yet very fitting and meete for euerye ryche and wel-
 thie subiect, to beware how he doth compare in those noble ver-
 tues

mes with Princes and great men, which being together
noble and pericles vppon earth canne abyde
no Comparisons

Aristotimus the Tyrant.

LVCIVS one of the gardeto ARISTOTI-
MVS the Tyrant of the cittye of ELIS, fell
in loue vwith a fayremayden called MIC-
CA, the daughter of one PHILODEMVS,
and his cruelty done vpon her. The stout-
nesse also of a uoble matron named MEGIS-
TONA in defence of hir husbände and the
common wealth from the tyranny of the said
ARISTOTIMVS: and of other actes done
by the subiectes vppon that Tyrant.

The fyfth Nouell.



You haue heard, or as it were in a
manner, you haue beeholden the
right images and courtuous con-
ditions of two well conditioned
persons mutually ech towards o-
ther obserued. In the one a Prin-
cely mind towards a Noble Gen-
tleman his subiecte: In the other a duetiful obedience of a louing
bassal to his soueraigne Lord and Maister. In both of the true
figure of Liberality in liuely orient colours described.
Now a contrary plott, grounded vpon extreame tyranny, is offered
to the viewe, done by one Aristotimus and his clawbacks against
his humble subiects of the City of Elis, standeng in Peloponessus, a
countrey of Achaia (which at this tyme we cal Morea) This Ari-

Aristotimus the Tyrant.

Aristotimus of nature was fierce and passing cruell, who by fauour of king Antigonus was made Tyrant of that City. And like a Tyrant gouerned his countrey by abuse of his aucthority with newe wronges, and straunge cruelties vexing and afflicting the poore Cityzens and all hys people. Which chaunced not so much for that of himself he was cruel and tyrannous, as for that his counsellours and chiefe aboute him were barbarous and vicious men, to whom he committed the charge of his kyngdome and the garde of his person. But amonges all his mischietes wrongfully done by him which were innumerable, one committed agaynst Philodemus (the same which afterwarde was the cause of the depriuation of his life and kingdome) is specially remembred. This Philodemus had a daughter called Micca that not onely for hir chaste qualities and good condicions whiche vertuouslye flourished in hir but for her extream and goodly beaurtye, was in that city of passing fame and admiration.

With this sayre maiden one of the Tyrants garde called Lucius fel in loue, if it deserue to be called loue, and not the rather, as the end ful wel declared, a most filthy and beastly lust. This Lucius was derely beloued of Aristotimus, for the fiendish resemblance & wicked nerenesse of his vile and abhominable condicions: and therfore feared and obeyed as the Tyrants owne person. For which cause this Lucius sent one of the yeomen of the kinges chamber to commaunde Philodemus at an appoynted hour al excuses set apart to bring his daughter vnto him. The parentes of the mayden hearing this sodayne and fearful mesuage, constrained by Tyrants force and fatal necessity, after many tears and pittious sighes, began to perswade their daughter to be contented to goe with him, declaring vnto her the rigour of the magistrate that had sent for hir the extremity that wold be executed, and that ther was no other remedy but to obey. Was how sore agaynst their willes, with what trembling gesture, with what horror the good parentes of this tender pusill were affected, to consider the purpose of that dreadfull mesuage, all dere fathers and naturall mothers can tell. But this gentle mayden Micca which was of nature stoute, and yet vertuously lessoned with sundry good and hollesome instructions from hir
infant;

Infantes Age was Determined rather to Dye, then, to suffer her selfe to be Desfloured. This vertuous Mayden fell downe Prostrate at her Fathers feete, and clasping him fast about the Knees, louingly did pray him, and Pitiuously besought him not to suffer hir to bee haied to so filthy and vile an office, but rather with the piercing blade of a two edged sword to kill her, that thereby she might be rid from the violation of those fleshy and libidinous varlets, saying, that if hir virginity were taken from hir, she should liue in eternal reproch and shame. As the father and daughter were in these termes, Lucius for the long tariance and delaye, Dronke with the Wine of lechery, made impatient and furious, with cursed speede posted to the house of Philodemus, and finding the maiden prostrate at her fathers feete, weeping, her head in his lappe with taunting voice and threating wordes commaunded presently without longer delay he should rise and goe with him. She refusing his hasty request, & crying out for Fathers help, who (God woe) durst not resist, stode still and would not goe. Lucius seeing hir refusal full of furie and proud disdain, begā furiously to hale hir by the garments, hyon whose struggling he tare hir kirtle and furnitures of hir head and shoulders, that hir Ablasser Specke and bosome appeared naked, and without compassion tare and whipte hir flesh on euery side, as the bloud ranne downe, beating that tendre flesh of hers with manifold and greuous blowes. O vile tyrant, more wood and sauage than the desert beast or mountain Tigre. Could cruelty be so deeply rooted in the hart of man which by nature is affected with reasons instinct, as without pity to lay handes, and violently to hurt the tendre body of a harmlesse Maidee? Can such inhumanity harbor in any that beareth aboute him the shape of man? But what did this martyred maiden for all this force? Did she yeld to violence, or rendre hir self to the disposition of this mercilesse man? No surely. But with so great stoutnesse of mind, she suffered those imressed woundes, that no one word sounding of sorrow, or womanly speech was heard to sound from hir delicate mouth. Howbeit the pore father and miserable mother at that rueful and lamentable sight, moued with inward grief and natural pity, cried out aloud. But when they sawe that neyther

Aristotimus the Tyrant.

playnt nor sayre speech coulde deliuer their Daughter out of the
 hands of that cruell monster, they began with open cryes and hor-
 rible exclamation to imploze helpe and succour at the handes of
 the immortall Gods, thinking that they were vnwoorthely pla-
 ged and tormented. Then the proud and most barbarous wretch,
 moued & disquieted by cholers rage & fume of chafinge Wyne, so-
 daynly catched the most constant virgin by the happe of the head, &
 in her fathers Lap did cut her white and tender throte. O detesta-
 ble fact right worthy iust reuenge. But what did this vnfaith-
 full & cruell Tyrant Aristotimus, when by the blustering bruit of
 peoples rage he heard of this vengeable murder, not only he shew-
 ed himselfe contented wth the fact, but had him in greater regard
 than before, & towards the which made complaint hereof, greater
 cruelty & mischefe was done & executed. For in open street, lyke
 beastes in the Shambles they were cut & hewed in peeces, which
 seemed to murmur at this bloudy & vnlawfull act: the rest were
 banished & expelled the Citty. Eight hundred of these exiled per-
 sons fled into Etolia (a prouince adioyninge to Epirus, which now
 is called Albania.) Those people so banished out of thei country,
 made instant sute to Aristotimus to suffer Wyues & chyliden
 to repayre to them: but thei sute was in vayne, their petitions &
 supplications seemed to be made to the deafe, and dispersed into
 the wyndes. Notwithstandinge, within few dayes after, he caused
 by sound of trumpet to be openly proclaymed, that it should be lawfull
 for the wyues & chyliden of the banished to passe wth their bag-
 gage and furniture to thei husbandes in Etolia. This Proclama-
 tion was exceeding ioyfull to al the women whose husbands were
 exiled, which at the least by common report were the numbre of 6.
 hundredes. And for moze credite of that Proclamation, the wicked
 Tyrant did ordayne, that al the company should depart vpon a pre-
 fixed day. In the meane time, the ioyful Wyues glad to vissit their
 pooze husbands, prepared horse & wagon, to cary thei prouisions.
 The appoynted day of their departure out of the Citty being come,
 all of them assembled at a certayne gate assigned for their repayre,
 who by time together resorted with their little childe in their handes
 bearing vpon thei heads thei garmets and furnitures, some on
 horseback

horseback, & some be to wrd in the wag^{gs} according as ech of the^r states required: wh^{er} al thing^s wer in a readinesse to depart, & the gate of the City opened, they begā to issue forth. They wer no soner gone out of the City walles, & had left behind thē the soile of the^r nauities, but the Ty^{ra}t^s guard & Sergeāts brake vpo thē, & before they were approached they cried out to say & go no further vpo pain of the^r liues. So the poze amazed women, contrarry to the promise of the Ty^{ra}t, wer forced to retire. Which sodain cōtremānd was sorrowful & woful vnto h^e afflicted flock. But there was no remedy, for procede they could not. Thē those Termagāts & villains caught the^r horse by the bydles, & droue back again the^r wagōs, picking the poze oxē & beasts wth the^r speares & Iauelins, that horrible it is to report h^e tyrany vled towards mā & best, in such wyse as the poze miserable women (God wot) contrarry to the^r desires, were forced in dyspyte of the^r teeth to retourn. Som alack fell of the^r horse wth the^r little babes in the^r lappes, & were miserably troden vnder h^e horsefete, & ouerrun wth the wheles of h^e wagōs the^r brains & guts gushing out through the weight & cōberāce of h^e cariage, & (wh^{ich} was most pītiful) one of thē not able to help an other, & much lesse to rescue the^r yōg & tendre suckīng babes, the vile sergeāts forcing ech wight wth the^r slaues & weapōs man^{gre} the^r desirous minds to reēter the City. Many died by h^e constrained meanes out of hād, many wer trodē vnder the horsefete, & many gasping betwene lif & death: but the greatest soarr of the litle infants were slaine out of hand, and crūst in pyres: those wh^{ych} remainēd alque, were comynitted to Pryson, and the goods wh^{ich} they carped wth them altogether sealed vpon by the Ty^{ra}nt.

Thys wycked and cruell facte was most intollerable and greuous vnto the Cytizens of Elis, Wherebpyon the holy dames consecrated to the God Bacchus, adoynd and garnished wth the^r pyestly Garments, and bearyng in the^r handes the sacred mysteryes of the^r God as Aristotimus was passing through the Streete garded wth hys Souldyers and Men of Warre, wente in procession to sende hym oute. The Sergeauntes for the reuerence of those religious womē dislosed, & gaue thē place to enter in before the Ty^{ra}nt. He seing those

Aristotimus the Tyrant.

Women apparelled in that guise, and bearing in their hands the sacred Bachanal mysteries; Noode stil, and with silence heard what they could say. But when he knew the cause of their appoach, and that they wer come to make sute for the poore imprisoned women, sodainly possessed with a diuelish rage, with horrible hurly burly, bitterly repzehēded his garrison for suffering those women to come so neare him. Then hee commaunded that they should be expelled from that place without respect, and condemned euery of them (for their presuming to intreat for such cal. iue prisoners) in ii. Calērs a peece. After these mischiefs committed by the tyrant, Hellenicus one of the pꝛyncipal & best esteemed persons of the City, although that he was decrepite, and for age very weake and feeble, cared not yet to aduenture any attempt, what soeuer, so it might extend to the deliuey of his countrey from the vnspeakable tyranny of most cruel Aristotimus. To this gray haired person, bicause he was of aged yeares void of children which were dead, this tyrant gane no great hede ne yet employed any care, thinking y he was not able to raise any mutine or tumult in the City. In the mean space, the Citizens, which as I haue sayd before, were banished into Erolia, practysed amongs them selues to proue their fortune, and to seeke al meanes for recouery of their countrey, and the death of Aristotimus. Where fore hauing leuied & assembled certaine bands of Souldiers, they marched forth from their banished seat, and neuer rested till they had gotten a place hard adioyning to their City, where they might safely lodge, and with great commodity and aduantage bessege the same, and expel the tyrant Aristotimus. As the banished were incamped in that place, many citizens of Elis daily fled forth, & ioined with them, by reaso of which auxiliaries and daily assemblies, they grew to the ful numbꝛe of an army. Aristotimus certified hereof by his espials was brought into a great chafe & fury, & euen now began to pꝛesage his fall and ruine. But yet meaning to foꝛesee hys best aduantage, went vnto the pꝛyson, where the Wyues of the banished were fast inclosed, and bicause he was of a troublesome and tyrannical nature, he concluded with him self rather to vse & intreat those wiues with feare and thꝛeates, than with humanity and sayꝛe woꝛdes. Being entred the pꝛyson, hee sharpsly and with great

great fiercenesse commaunded them to write vnto their husbands that besieged him without, earnestly to persuaue them to giue ouer they attempted warres: otherwise (sayd he) if ye do not follow the effect of my commaundemēt, in your own p[re]sence I wil first cause cruelly to be slayne al your little Children, tearing them by piece meale in pieces, and afterwarde I wyll cause you to be whipped and scourged, and so to dye a most cruel and shamefull death. At which fierce and tyrannycall newes, there was no one woman amongs them that opened theyr mouthes to answer him. The most wicked and vile tyrant seing them to be in such silence, charged the vpon theyr liues to answer what they were disposed to doe: But although they durst not speake a word, yet with silence one beholding eche other in the face, fared as though they cared not for his threats, moze ready rather to dye than to obey his commaundement. Megistona the (which was the wife of Timolion, a matrone as well for hir husbands nobility as hir owne vertue, in great regard and estimation, and the chief amongs all the Women, who at his coming in would not rise, but kept her place, nor vouchsafing to doe any reuerence or hono[ur] vnto hym, and the like she had the rest: In this wise sitting vpon the ground which vnloosed tongue and liberty of speach, stoutly she answered the tyrants demaund in this manner: If there were in thee Aristotimus, any manly p[ro]vidence, wisdom, or good discretion, truly thou wouldest not commaund vs poore imprisoned women to write vnto our husbands, but rather suffer vs to goe vnto them, and vse moze moderate wordes & mild behauiour, than wherewith of late thou diddest emertaine vs, by scoffing, mocking, & cruelly dealing with vs, and oure poore children: and if now thou being voyd of all hope, doest seeke to persuaue by our meanes likewise to deceiue our husbands that be come hither to put theyr Lyes in Deryll for our deliuerance, I assure the thou vainly begilest thy selfe, for wee hencefoorth do purpose neuer to bee deceyued of the, wee require thee also to thinke & steadfastly belecue, that our husbands heades bee not so much betwixted with folly, as despyllinge their Wyues and Children, neglecting their Dutyes towards them, wyll being in this forwarde, abandon their p[re]seruation and geue ouer the Liberty of theyr

Aristotimus the Tyrant.

they countrey. Think also that they little esteeme or wep & regard of
us, & they childe, in respect of the great contentation they shal at-
taine by vnyoking the liberty of theyr countrey fro the pride & in-
tolerable bondage, & which is worst of al, from that tyranny which
neuer people felt the like. For if thou were a king as thou art a ty-
rant, if thou were a Gentleman borne of noble kind as thou arte a
Slave, procedyng from the deuil thou wouldest neuer execute the
cursed cruelty against a feble kind, such as womē be, & werest thou
alone iopned in singular cōbat with my valyāt & dere beloved hus-
band, thou durst not hand to hand to shew thy face: for cōmonly it
is seene, that the Courtly Ruffyan backed on wyth such mates as
he is himself, careth not what attēpt he taketh in hand, and stares
with hapye vpright, loking as though he would kil the deuyll, but
when he is p̄cass to seruyce of the field, and in order to encountre
with his Wynces foe, vpon the small sway by shooke or pūth that
chauncech in the sight, he is the first that taketh flight, & laste that
standeth to the face of his ennemy. Such kind of man art thou, for
so long as our husbands wer farre of, absent fro theyr Country, not
able to rid us fro the thral, thou wroughtest thy malece thē against
theyr wyues at home, doyng the greatest cruelty towardes them &
theyr suckyng babes, that euer deuyll could do vpon the damned soyt
and now thou seest thē arriued here vnder our countrey walles, thou
fleeest, and seekest help at womens hands, whose power if it serued
them according to their willes, would make the task the fruit of thy
cōmitted smart. And as she would haue proceeded further in hir li-
beraill talk, the Captiue tyrant not able to abyde any further speach,
troubled beyond measure, presently cōmaūded & little child of hir to
be brougt before him, as though immediatly he would haue killed
him, & as his seruāts sought hī out, & mother espied hī playing a-
mong other childe, not knowinge for his small stature and lesse
yeres, wher he was becom, & calling him by his name said vnto hī:
Why boy come hither, & first of al thou mayst lose thy life, to seele &
prouse & haue experiēce of the cruel tyranny wherin we be, for more
griuous it is to me to see the serue agāst & nobility of thy bloud,
thā dismembred & toyn in pieces before my face. As Megistona stoutly
& vnfearfully had spokē those words, & furious & angry tyrāt dyem
forth

forth his glistering blade out of the sheath, purposing to haue slaine
the gentle woman, had not one Cilon the familiar freend of Aristotimus
slept his hād, forbidding him to cōmit an act so cruel. This
Cilon was a sayned & cōsūterfayt frend of the Tyrant, verie cōuer-
sant with other his familiar frēds, but hated him with deadly ha-
tred, & was one of the ȝ with Hellanicus had conspired against the
tyrant. This Gentleman then seeing Aristotimus with so great
fury to waxe wood agaynst Megistona, embraced him, and sayd, ȝ
it was not the part of a gentleman proceeding from a Race righte
honourable, by any meanes to smyue hys Handes in Womans
bloud, but rather the signe & token of a cowardly knyght, wherfore
he besought him to stay his hands. Aristotimus perswaded by Cilo,
appeased his rage, & departed from the imprisoned women. Not
long after, a great prodige & wonder appeared in this sort: before
supper the tyrāt and his wyfe withdrew themselves into their chā-
ber, and being there, an Eagle was seene to soare ouer the tyrants
palace, and being aloft, by little and little to descend, and letting fall
from her tallands a huge and great stone vpon the top of that chā-
ber, with clapping wings and flying noise soared by againe, so far
as she was cleane out of sight from them that did behold hir. With
the rumoz and shous of those that saw this sight, Aristotimus was
appalled, and vnderstanding the circumstance of the chaunce, hee
sent for his diuine to declare the signification of this Augurye,
which greatly troubled his minde. The Southsayer bad him to
be of good chere, for that it did portend the great fauour and loue
which Iupiter bare vnto him. But the prophet of the City whom
the Cittizens had wel tryed and proued to be faithfull and trusty,
manifested vnto them the great daunger that hong ouer the tyrāts
head, such as the Ipe neuer before. The confederats which had
conspired with Hellanicus, made great speede to prosecute thez
enterpryse, & the nexte night to kill the tyrant. The very same night
Hellanicus dreamed that he saw his dead sonne to speak vnto him
these wordes: What meane you father this long tyme to sleepe, I
am one of your sonnes whom Aristotimus hath slayne, know you
not that the same day you attempt your enterpryse, you shalbe cap-
taine & prince of your cōuntry: By this vision Hellanicus cōfirmed, he
rose bytymes in the morninge, & exhorted the conspiratoz ȝ day to
execute the

Aristotimus the Tyrant.

execute the benefit of their Country. That time Aristotimus was certified how Craterus the Tyrant of another City, with a great army, was coming to his ayde agaynst the Banished people of Elis, and that hee was arrived at Olympia a City betwene the Mount Ossa, and the mountayne Olympus. With which newes Aristotimus beinge encouraged, thought already that he had put to flight and taken the banished persons, which made him to adventure himselfe abroade wythout Guard or garrison, accompanied only wyth Cilon and one or two of his familiar frendes, the very same time that the conspiratours were assembled to do the facte. Hellanicus seeinge y^e time so convenient to deliuer his beloued cōtrey by the death of the traitterous Tyrant, not attending any signe to be geuen to his companions (although the same was concluded vpon) the lusty old man listinge by his handes and eyes vnto the heauens, with cleare and open voyce cried out to his companions and sayd: Why stay yee, O my Citizens and louinge cōtreyemen in the face of your City to finish this good and commendable act? At whych wordes, Cilon was the first which with his brandishing blade killed one of those that wayted vpon the Tyrant. Thrastibulus the and Lapidus assailed Aristotimus, vpon whose sodayne approche, he fled into the Temple of Iupiter, where hee was murdered wth a thousand woundes vpon his body, accordingly as he deserved. He beinge thus deservedly slayne, his body was drawen by & do wne the streetes, and proclamation of liberty sounded vnto the people: Whereunto ech Wycht assembled, amonges whom the imprisoned Women also brake forth, and reioysed with their cōtrey deliuerers of that egregious enterpryse, by fires and bankets outwardly disclosing their exceeding great ioy wythin, and in mid of their mirth the people in great thronges and companies ranne to the Tyrants Palace, whose Wyfe hearinge the Peoples noise, and certified of her husbonds death, inclosed her selfe in a chamber with her two daughters, and knowinge how hatefull she was vnto the Citizēs, wth a fastned cord vpon a beame she hong hir selfe. The chāber doores beinge brok opē, the people viewed the horrible sight of the strangled Lady, wherewithall not mooued they tooke the two trembling Daughters of the Tyrant, and carryed them away, purposinge to Raushe and Violate the same, firste to satiate

to sacrate their lust with the spoyle of theire virginitye, and afterwards to kill them (those Gentlewomen were very beautiful and marriageable) and as they were about to do that shamefull deede, Megistona was tolde thereof, who accompanied with other Wharons sharply rebuked theire surp sapinge, that vncomely it were for them which sought to establishe a ciuill state, to do such a shameles act as tyrants rage would scarce permit. Vpō that noble matrons auctoritie and interception, they ceased from their filthy fact: and then the woman tooke the Virgins out of the peoples handes, and brought them into the chamber where there strangled mother was. And vnder standing howe it was decreede that none of the tyrantes bloude should rest a liue: shee turned her face to the two yonge Gentlewomen, and sayde: The chiefest pleasure which I can do vnto you, resteth in this choyse, that it shall be laufull for epyther of you to chosse what kind of death you list, by knyfe or halter, if you wil to dispatch your liues from the headles peoples greater fury vppon whose two whyte and tender bodyes if they do seaze the goddes do knowe and we do feare the crueltye & great abuse which they do mean to vse, I thinke not for despyte of you, but for the iust reuenge of your most cruell fathers actes, for the tyrannous life of whom the goddes do thunder downe the bolttes of their displeasure afflicting his nearest blood and bestrubbed wyfe and childe, with vengeance poured from heauens. Vppon the sentence of this the fatall ende, the elder mayden of the twayne vnloosd a gyrdle frō her middle, and began to tye the same to hang hir selfe, exorting her yonger sister to do the lyke: and in any wise to beware by sparing of her life, to incur the beastly rage of the monstrous people, which cared not to do ech vile and filthy act, vnworthy theyr estate. The yonger sister at those wordes, layd handes vpon the fastened corde, and besought hir righte earnestly first of al to suffer hir to die. Wherevnto the elder answered: So long as it was lawfull for me to liue and whiles we led our princely time in our fathers courte, and both were free from enemies danger, all things betwene vs two were common and indifferent: wherefore the Gods forbid (that now the gates of death be opened for vs to enter, when with the Ghostes of our deere Parentes

Our

Aristotimus the Tyrant.

our soules amidst the infernall fieldes be predestined to ramage & wander) that I shoulde make denpall of thy request. Therefore goe to good sister mine, and thinke not when thou seest the vgly face of her, that must consume vs all. But yet (deere sister) the deadly sight of thee before my selfe, will breede to me the woe and smart of double death. When she had so sayd, she pelded the collar to her sister, and counsell'd hir to place the same so neere the necke bone as shee could, that the sooner the halters force might stop her breath. When the basearefull ponger sister was dead, the trembling hāds of the dyedlesse elder maid buried the girdle from her neck, couerig in comely wise her senslesse corpp. Then turning hir self to Megistona. she humbly prayd hir not to suffer their two bodies to be seene naked, but so sone as she could, to bury them both in one Earthly graue, referring the frutes of their virginity to the mould wherof they came. When she had spoken these wordes, without any stay or feare at all, with the selfe same corde she strangled herselfe and so finished her fatal dayes. The guiltlesse death of which two tender maydes there was none of the citizens of Elis (as I suppose so stoupe hearted and boyde of Natures foie, ne yette so wothe agaynst the tyrant father, but did lament, as wel for the constant stoutenes and manner of their death, as for their maydenlike behauiour and right honest petitions made to that noble matrone Megistona, who afterwarde caused þ other dames, to bury those two bodies in one graue. How happy & famous had these two sisters bene, if they had not bene the daughters of so wicked and cruell a father? But parentes offence or childzens trespass ought not to deface þ vertuous dedes of their posterity.

The maruaylous courage and ambition of a gētle-
 vvoman called TANAQVIL, the Queene and
 vvife of TARQVINIVS PRISCVS the fift Ro-
 man King vvith his perswasions and pollicy to hir
 hulbande for his aduancement to the Kingdom
 her lyke encouragement of SERVIVS T V L-
 LIVS wherein also is described the ambition of
 one of the ii. daughter SERVIVS TVLLIVS
 the sixt Roman king, and her cruelty towards her
 owne natural father: with other accidents chaun-
 ced in the new erected common welth of Rome
 specially of the last Romane King TARQVINI-
 VS SVPERBVS who with murder aiteined the
 kingdome, with murder mayuteined it, and by the
 murder and insolent lyfe of his sonne was withal
 his progeny banished.

The sixt Nouel.



Ncus Marcius beyng the fourthe
 King (after Romulus the first builder
 of that Cittie) there came to dwell in
 Rome one Lucumo, a lusty gentlemā,
 ryche and desirous of honour, who de-
 termined to continue his habitation
 there. The same Lucumo was the son
 of one Demaratus, a Corinthian, that
 for sedition fled his owne countrey, &
 dwelt in Heturia amonge the Stocke
 of the Tarquines: & after he was married he begat. ii. sons on of ihe
 was this Lucumo, & the other was called Aruns. Lucumo was hel-
 re to his father, & of y Aru^d died before leauig his wife grei to child
 y father not knowig y his daughter i law was to child, geue nothig
 i his will to his nephew: for which cause the child was called Aruns
 Egerius

Egerius Lucumo being the sole heire of his father, married a noble woman named Tanaquil, and because the Tuscans could not abide to see a stranger grow to abundance of wealth and authority, she despised his owne countrey rather than she would suffer her husband in any wise to be dishonoured. Wherefore she deuyled to forsake the Tarquinians and to dwell at Rome where she thought among that honourable sort and new erected state that her husband being stout and valiant should attayne some place of reuerence. For she shalbe called to remembrance that Tattius & Sabine Numa, bothe of the stocke of Curies and Ancus brought her forth by a Sabine woman all strangers did rapine and became noble & mightie. Thus ambition and desire of honour easily doth perswade any deuyse. Wherefore carrying with them all their substance they repaired to Rome. It chaunced when they came to Janiculum, as he and his wife were sitting in a Wagon, an Eagle hovering over his wings over Lucumo, suddenly toke away his Cappe, which done she soared over the Wagon with great force, then she returned againe, as though he had bene commaunded by some Celestiall providence, and aptly placed his cappe againe vpon his head, and then soared away by into the element. Tanaquil conceiuing this act to be some Augurie or Prophecie, being cōfined in that knowledg (as commonly all the people of Herruria be) embraced his husband and willed him to be of good cheere and to expect great honour. And as they were ymagining and consulting vpon these euents, they entered the City, and when they had gotten a house for him & his family, he was called Tarquinius Priscus. His riches and great wealth made him a noble man amonges the Romanes, and through his gentle entertainment and courteous behauiour, he wanne the good willes of many, in so much as his fame & good reporte was bzured through out the pallace. At length he grew in acquaintance with the King him selfe, who seeing his liberall demeanour and diligent seruice, esteemed him as one of his familiar and nere friends, and both in his warres and also at home he imparted to him the secrets of his counsell, and hauing good experience of his wisdom, by his last will and testament appointed him to be tutor of his children. Ancus reigned .xxiii. yeres, a man in peace and Warre, in pollicy

pollicy and baltance with any of his pzedecessours cōparable. His children were very pong, and for that cause Tarquinius was moze instant to summon a parliament for creation of a kpng. When the day was come he sente the young children abroade a hunting, and then Ambitiously presumed to demaunde the kpngdome, beinge the first that euer attempted the like. For the better conciliation and obteynng of the peoples good will, hee vttered his Oration: I do not presume to require a strange or newe thyng: that was neuer before put in practyse, nor yet am the first, but the third stranger and foraine bozne that affected and aspired this gouernment. For which consideration there is no cause why any man ought to muse or maruell moze than behoueth. It is euidently knowen that Tarius, not onely being a stranger but also an enemy, was made King Numa also was made King, heing altogether a foraine and stranger bozne, not thzough his owne request, but rather volūntarily accited & called thereunto by the Romaynes: but for my parte, after I was able to gouerne my selfe. I repayred to dwell at Rome with my Wyfe, my Children, and all my substance, where I haue spent the chieftest porcion of my lyfe, specially after it was mature and able to execute ciuile magistrery, which I chose rather to bestowe at Rome than at home in myne owne country. I haue learned the Romane rites and lawes, aswell such as be meete to serue abroade in the warres, as also necessary to be practised at hoame, at the handes of mine olde master Aeneas Martius your late king, a master right worthy and famous in all popnetes to bee followed. I shewed myselfe an humble and obedient subiect to the kpng and in frendship and familiarity toward others, I contended with the kpng himselfe. When he had spoken those woordes, which in deede were very true, with the whole consent of the people, he was salured kpng. And as all thynges succeeded his noble request, euen so after hee was settled in his kpngdome, hee gaue himselfe to amplify the common wealth. He chose an hundred graue persons, wherch he called the fathers of the lesser Countreys. He warred first with the Latines, and won the Citty of Appiolas, who byrnyng from thence a greater spoyle and booty than was looked for, or dayned richer & moze gorgeous

E.

Plares

Two Romane Queenes.

7. 104
 Places than any of hys predecessours. Hee builde certayne Gal-
 leries and other places of assembly aboute the *Forum*, hee walled the
 City round about wth Stone. And as he was doing these things,
 the Sabines interuented him vpon the sodayne, in so much as they
 were passed the River of Anienes befoze the Romane hoste was in
 a readynesse. Whych was an occasion of great feare and stre at
 Rome. In the ende after the battayles were toynd betweene them
 both, a cruell and bloudy slaughter was committed, the victorie
 falling to nether parte. Then the Romanes sought meanes to re-
 newe theyr force, by adding to theyr armie a further bande of horse-
 men. Wherefore Tarquinius sent to the Rammenes, Titienses, Lu-
 ceres. To the bandes that Romulus had conscribed, hee added o-
 ther new troupes of horsemen, purposing that the same should con-
 tinue in memozye of him after hys death. And bicause Romulus
 dyd the same without aduise of the Southsayers, on Accius, Na-
 vius the notablest Prophecier in those Dayes, wthstode that cons-
 titution, affirmyng that it was not lawfull for him eyther to ap-
 poynt a newe order, or to alter the olde, except the bydes and Ju-
 guries did assent thereunto. Wherewith the kynge was displeased
 & deluding that Science, said. Go to W. Southsayer, tell me now
 (quod he) is it possible to bring that to passe which I haue now co-
 ceined in my mynde? Yea quod the Southsayer if you tel me what it
 is. Then quod Tarquinius, I haue deuised that thou shalte pare
 thine owne skin with a Raser: Therfore t he thyrs Lynke and doe
 as thy Bydes doe portend and signifie. And as it was repo-
 ted hee pared his owne Skin in deede. In Memozy whercof an
 Image of Accius was erected, with his Head couered. After that
 tyme there was nothing attempted without those auguries. Not-
 withstandpug, Tarquinius proceeded in hys constitution, and ad-
 ded to the Centurias an other number, for that 1800. horsemen wer
 conteyned in the thre Centuriz. The latter addytion was cal-
 led also by the same name, whych afterward were doubled into
 vi. Centurias. When hys Numbre was thus increased,
 once agayne hee toynd Battell wth the Sabines, who by ano-
 table pollicy recovered a great victorie, And bicause h Sa-
 uins doubled afresh onfet without any order of battell or good aduysment,
 they

they were ouerthrowen, and then constrained to make petition for peace. The City of Collatia, and the Countrey confining vpon the same was taken from the Sabines. The Sabine warres beinge in this sorte ended, Tarquinius in triumphaunt manner retourned to Rome. At that time a prodgye and myraculous wonder chaunced to bee seene in the Palace. The head of a Chylde whose name was Seruius Tullius lyinge in the palace, was seene to burne. The kynge was brought to see that myracle. And as one of his seruants was going to fetch water to quench the fire, he was slayed by the Queene, who commaunded that the Childe should not once be touched vntill he awaked of hymselfe. And so soone as hee rose from sleepe, the fire banished. Then she tooke hir husbände aslde, & sayde: doe you see this Chylde whom we haue very basely and negligently brought vp? I assure you Sir (sayd she) he wil be the onely safegard and defender of this our doubtfull state, and will be the preseruer of our household when it is assailed. Wherefore let vs make much of him, that is lyke to be the mynemen and a worthy stay to all our famly. After that they had accompted him amongs the Number of theyr Chylidren, & traded him vp in those Arts, which excyte all good dispositions to aspyre vnto honour, the pleasure of the Gods appeared in shorte tyme: For the childe grew to a royall behauior, in so much, as among all the Romane youth, there was none moze meete to mary the daughter of Tarquinius. This Seruius Tullius, was the sonne of oue Seruius Tullius that was a Captaine of a towne called Corniculum, at the apprehension whereof, it chaunced that the sayd Tullius the father was slayne, leauing his wife great with childe: the mother beinge a captiue and bondwoman was deliuered of hir Childe at Rome, in the house of Priscus Tarquinius. After Tarquinius had reigned, 38. yeres, the yong man began to grow to great honor & estimation, as well with the kinge himselfe, as also with the ffather. Then the Romanes conceiued a hateful indignation against the king, for that he beinge put in trust to be the Tutor and gouernour of Ancus childe, displaced them from theyr reght inheritance, and specially for that he himself was a stranger, feareng also that the kingdome should not returne againe to the election of theselues, but degenerat & grow into seruite bondage. They

Two Romane Queenes.

also caled to remembrance, that the City continued one hundred yeres after the sub'ation of Romulus, an intier kingdome within one City, and that it was a shame for them to suffer a bondeman, bozne of scrulle kind, to possesse the same, and would rebounde to their perpetuall ignomie, hauing the progente of Ancus alitue, to suffer the same to be open to strangers, and bondmen. Wherefore they determined to defend the griece of that iniury, and to be reuēged rather vpon Tarquinius, than vpon Seruius. In fine, they committed the executiō of that fact to two shepherds chose out for that purpose. Who deuised this policie. Before the entrie into the Palace they fell together by the eares, vpon which fray al the kinges officers assembled and repaired thither to know the cause of theyr falling out, when they were parted, they appealed to the king, with such exclamation, as they were heard to the Palace. Being call'd before the king, both of them fell to brawling, and one of them strued of purpose to hinder the tale of the other. The kings sergeant rebuked them, commanding them to tel theyr tales in order. Whē they were a litle quieted, one of them beginneth to discourse the tale. And as the King was attentife to heare the plaintiff, the other tooke vp a hatchet and threwe it at the King, and leauing the weapon stickinge in the wound, they conueyed themselves out of the Doores. Those that wayted vpon the Kinge, made hast to releue him, and the Sergeantes followed to apprehend the malefactor. With that a hurly burly rose amongs the people, euery man maruelling what the matter shoulde be. Tanaquil commaunded the Palace Gates to be shut, and seeketh remedy to cure her husband, as though some hope sayled of his recovery, she called Seruius before her (whych married her daughter) and shewed vnto him her dead husoand, holdinge him fast by the right hande, shee intreated hym that he would not suffer h death of his father in the law to be vntreunged, to the intent he might not be ridiculous to the traitours, saying to him further these wordes : If thou bee a man of thy handes (O Seruius) the kyngdome is thine and not theirs, which thus cruelly by the handes of other haue committed thes abhominable fact. Wherefore put forth thy self, & the Gods be thy guide :

guide: for they did portend this noble head to be the Gouernor of this City, at such tyme as they circumfused the same with a fire descending from aboue. Let þ heauēly flame excite thy courage. Be throughly awaked. We beyng straungers sometime haue raigned. Thinke and consider what thou art, & not frō whence thou comest. If the strangenesse of the case do affray the, my counsell frō time to time shall relieue thee. The cry and stirre of the people being vnumerable, that one could scarce heare an other, Tanaquill opened the windowes that had their prospect to the new way (for the king dwelt at the temple of Iupiter Stator) and then spake to them in thys wyse: We of good cheere (good people) the king is but amazed with the sodainesse of the stroke, the wound is not very deepe, for euen now he is come agayne to hym selfe, and the wound being opened and dresed, there is good hope of life. I trust within these fewe dayes you shall see hym. In the meane time, I pray you to shewe your obedyence to Seruius Tullius, who is appointed to execute the lawes, and to doe all other affayres in the absense of my husbände. Seruius occupyinge the state and Authoryte of the kyng, executed the lawes in som cases, and in other some made the people beleue that he would consult with the king him selfe. The death of the king was concealed and kept close a certayne space til such tyme as Seruius had gathered his foze about him. After the death of the kyng was disclosed, Seruius beinge garded with a strong Garrison, toke vppon him to be king, not by the consente of the people, but by the will of the fathers. The chylzen of Ancus vnderstanding that the kyng was allue, and that Seruius power and foze was greatz, conueyed them selues in exile to Suecia Pomeria. And leasse the chylzen of Tarquinius should attempte like enterpryse against him, as the chylzen of Ancus did agaynst Tarquinius, hee maryed .ii. of his daughters to Lucius and Aruns the chylzen of Tarquinius. But yet the deuise of Man could not breake the necessity of fate and constellation, for the hatred conceived in desyre of Ambitious gouernment, made all thyngs vnsustainable and vnfaythfull amongs domestical frends. But yet to quyet and pacifye the present tyme, warre was renued with the Veientes, and other Cyties of Heiruria: wherein the fortune and val-

Two Romane Queenes.

stance of Tullius excelled. For when he had given an overthrow to
 the enemy, least the peoples and fathers good wil should be with-
 drawne, he returned to Rome: who then attempted and broughte
 to passe a notable worke in the common wealth. He instituted a cer-
 taine perely rate and reueneue, to satisfie and discharge all charges
 sustained in the time of peace and warre, with sundry other notable
 lawes and deuises for the defence of the publique state After that
 he had mustered the whole numbze of the Citizens in the field cal-
 led Marrius, the same amounted to lxxx. M. And as Fabius Picor
 saith, there were so many that were able to beare armure. Then
 the hillies Quirinalis, Viminalis and Exquiliz, were added to the
 Citie. He compassed the town round about wth a banure, ens-
 urtroung the same with a double trench. He deuiped the Roma-
 nes into v bandes called Classes, and into Centurias, whych bee
 bandes of an hundred men. He also builded a temple to Diana, with
 the helpe and assistance of the Latine people. Amongst the Sabines
 there chaunced an Oxe in the House of an Husbando Man to bee
 broughte forth, of an huge bignesse and maruellous shape (the hor-
 nes wherof were placed at the porche of Dianas temple for a mo-
 nument long time after.) The Southslayers prophetic, that where
 the same Oxe shoulde be first sacrificed to Diana, there the Chiefe
 Empire and principall gouernement should remaine: which pro-
 phetic came to the knowledge of the chiefe minister of Diana his
 Temple One of the Sabins expecting for a day more to be employed
 in that sacrifice, brought the sayde Oxe to Rome to the Temple
 of Diana, placing the same befoze the Altar. The chiefe Minister
 calling to remembrance the oracle, and saw that the greatnesse of
 that sacrifice shoulde be famous, spake to the Sabine these wordes.
 "What dost thou meane (thou impure Straunger) to prepare sa-
 crifice to Diana, befoze thou bee purified and censed in the Iquelp
 "Riuer of Tyber? Here belowe in this valley the sayde riuer doth
 "runne. Goe get the hence and wash the. The Sabine attached with
 a religious feare, goeth downe to the Riuer, and while he is wash-
 ing himselfe Romane doth offer the Sacrifice, which was right
 acceptable both to the King and his countrey. The king althoughe
 that of longe tyme he had raigned, yet vnderstoode, that the eldr

Tarquinius

Tarquinius which was married to one of his daughters, did bragge and report eftsones that his father in law obtained the gouernment and Kingdom without the consent of the people: wherfoze the king through his lyberality by deuyding the conquest atchreued of the Cannipe amongs the common people, conciliated theyr fauor and good wils. In so much as he affirmed that he would raig in despite of them all, and that there was no king at any tyme that raigned with a moze generall consent: All which did nothing diminish the hope and desire of Tarquinius. He had a Brother whose name was Aruns, being of a quiet and gentle disposition. Both they married two of the kings daughters, which were of manners and conditions very unlike. The yonger daughter being the wife of Aruns the sharper shewe, and fiercer of nature, seeing that hir husbände was nothing giuen oꝝ pliant to match with hir vngracious deuice oꝝ ambitious stomack, attempted hir brother, whose conduct was correspondēt to hers, and sayd vnto him, that he was a Man in deede, and one worthy to be accompted to be borne and proceede of the bloud Royall. Then she began to contemne hir sister: for that she hauing such a man to hir husbaude, would suffer him to neglect so meete and iust occasion for recovery of the Kingdom. Their natures being of one disposition, as commonly one myschyeffe procureth an other, all things began to be disquieted throughe the attempt of that vngracious woman. To be shorte, they two deuyfed meanes, that Aruns hys Brother, and the Elder Tullia hir sister were slaine: which done, they two married together. The wicked woman ceased not daylye to animate and prouoke hir husbände from one parricide to an other. And amongs all hir wicked talke a cruel instigations, she bled these words: If thou be that man vnto whom I thinke I am married, then I will call the both husband and king. But if thou bee not hee, then the alteration is chaunged to the worse, and cruelty is matched with cowardise. But why dost thou not put thy selfe in a readinesse? Why thou comest not nowe from Corinthe, oꝝ from the Hettrurian Tarquines, to stchieue and conquire newe kingdoms as thy father did. The familiar Gods, and the Gods of the Countrey, the nobility of thy father, and thy royal bloud, thy statefy seate within thine own house, and thy name

Two Romane Queenes.

Tarquinus, do create and make King, But if in al these occasions thou dost wante stomacke, why dost thou make the whole Citie conceiue a false opinion of thee? Why dost thou not shewe thy selfe to be the sonne of a King? Quoth hence I say, and go to the Tarquinians, or to Corinth, retire again to thy firste lynage: thou dost rather resemble thy brothers effeminate hart, than the valiant stomacke of thy Father. With these wordes and such like, he pricked forward his husbände, and shee his selfe could in no wise bee quiet, Then Tarquinus went forth to the fathers of the lesser countries, and called to them; remembraunce the benefites vnto them by his father extended, desiring the like to bee shewed and rendred vnto hym, he allured the yonger sort of the Citie by giftes and other liberrall rewardes, promising them, if he attained his purpose, more frankly to recompence them. By this meanes the King became odious and offēsiue to the people. Tarquinus seeing his time, guarded with a bande of Men, entred the market place, wherewith the common people were greatly abashed, then he mounted into the palace, and placed himselfe in the royal seate of the same, causinge the Fathers to be cited before hym by the Haraulde, vnto whom he repeated the petigree of Seruius, and his first entrance into the kingdom. As he was speaking these wordes, Seruius in great haste repaired to the Palace, and finding Tarquinus sitting in his place, sayd to him these wordes. Why? what is the matter Tarquinus (quod he?) Howe darest thou be so bolde so long as I am liuing to call the fathers, or yet presume to sit in my seat? wherunto Tarquinus fiercely replied, That hee possessed but the rouine of his Father, which was more mete for a Kings sonne and Heire, than for such a bondeman as he was, and that hee had long enough abused his Lordes and maisters: wherewithal a great hurly burly and tumult began to rise by the fauours of both parts, so that he was like to attaine the Garland, which best could daunce for it. Tarquinus forced to giue the laste aduenture, beyng more lusty and stronger than the other, tooke Seruius by the myddle, and carryinge hym oute of the Courte, threwe hym downe the Staires, whiche done, hee caused the Senate to retourne into the Palace. Then the Kinge wyth all his trayne of Officers,
and

and other hys seruants ranne away, and as they were flying, hee was slayne by those that Tarquin. us sent after to pursue hym, in the streete called Cyprius. Tullia vnderstanding that Seruius hys father was slayne, she bathed not in hir Wagon to come into the market place before all the assemblie there, called hir husband out of the Court, and boldly was the first that called him King. But being rebuked & commaunded by him to staid out of that greale throng of people, she retired home agayn, and when she was passe the vpper ende of the said streete called Cyprius, the wagoner dreyning toward the right hand to the Hill called Exquilie hee stayed the Wagon, and shewed his Ladye the bodie of hys father, lyinge stark dead in the streete. In memory of which shamefull and vnnatural fact, long tyme after ther continued a Monument. For the same streete was called Vicus Sceleratus. Some report that she caused the wagon to be dreyuen ouer the dead corpe of hir father, with the bloud of whom and hir husband, hir wagon being contaminated, she presented the same to hir Gods. After which abhominable beginnings, like end ensued. This Seruius Tullius reigned. xliiii. yeres. Then Tarquinius began to raigne, vnto whom Superbus was added for his surname. This wicked sonne in law would not suffer the dead body of Seruius to be buried. His conscience being pricked with the abhominable gain of hys kyngdom, fearyng also least other might conceiue like example, he guarded his person with a band of armed men, executing all thinges with force & Tyranny, contrary to the aduise and consents of the Senate and people. He caused the fautors and frendes of Seruius to be put to death, whereby the numbre of the fathers was diminished, whose places he suffered none other to supply, of purpose to bring hys honorable order to contempt. He gouerned the comon welth by his own domestical & priuate Counsel. War, peace, truce, society of the Cyties adioining, he vsed as he list, without any further assent. The Latines he specially regarded, to the intert through foreine aide hee might raigne in more surety at home, to the chief of which countrey he ioyned affinity. One Octavius Manilius a Tusculan born, was the prince & chief ruler of hys countrey descending from hys stock of Vlisses, & hys Goddesse Circes, if y^e fame be true, vnto who Tarquinius gaue his daughter

daughter in marriage: By reath wherof he conciliated great alliaſce
 and frendes. Tarquinius beinge of great authorite among the La-
 tines, appointed them vppon a day to aſſemble at a woode called
 Feronina, there to intreat of matters concerninge both the ſtates.
 To which place the Latines repaired vpon the breake of the day,
 But Tarquinius came not thither till the Sunne was ſet. During
 wher time many things were in talke. There was one amonges
 them called Turnus Herdonius, wher in Tarquinius abſence had
 inueped vehemently agaynſt hym, affirminge that it was no mar-
 uell though he was called Superbus by the Romanes. For what
 prouder mock could be inforced to the Latines, than to make them
 wait a whole day for his pleaſure. Ouer his Princes and Noble
 men (quod he) that dwel far of, be come accordyng to the appoint-
 ment, and he which firſt allotted the day, is not preſent. Herreby it
 moſt evidently appeareth in what ſort he will ble vs if he myghte
 once attayne ſoueraignty. And who doubteth in theſe ſo manifeſt
 apparance, but that he went about to affect the Dominion of the
 Latines? If the Romanes haue had iuſt cauſe to beleeue hym, and
 if their Kingdome had ben but gotten and violently rapt & ſolne
 by parricide, then the Latines myghte alſo beleeue hym, who
 being but a ſtranger to them, had no great cauſe to beleeue hym.
 Theſe owre ſubiects do repent the time that euer he bare rule: For
 ſome be ſlaine and heaped vpon the dead bodie of other, ſome be
 baniſhed, ſome haue loſt their goods: what other fruites than theſe
 maye the Latine people expecte and looke for? Therefore if they
 would be ruled, he required euery man to returne home to his own
 houſe, and geue no more attendaunce for the day of Couſel, than
 he doth which firſt appointed the ſame. Theſe wordes and ſuch
 like, this ſeditious & deſperat man declared: Whoe talke Tarqui-
 nius inſequentially, and vpon his comyng euery man conſidered him-
 ſelfe to ſalute hym. Then Tarquinius began to excuſe his long ta-
 riaſce, for that he was appointed an arbitrator betwene the father
 & the ſonne, for whoſe reconciliation hee was forced to ſtay ſo longe
 ſpace, and to ſpend the time of that day. Wherefore he appointed
 the next day. The conceit of which excuſe Turnus could not kepe
 ſecret, but ſayd: that a matter betwene ſon & father might
 be eni

be ended in few wordes: for if the Latines would not bee obedient to
 his father, some mischief must needs light vpon him. Tarquinius
 understanding these inuentions made against him by Turnus,
 immediately deuise such meanes to kill him, to the intent he might in-
 culcate like terror to the Latines, that he did to his owne subjects.
 And because he was not able to fort his purpose to effect, by secret
 malice, he attempted to accuse him of Treason; and suborned
 (by meanes of diuers of the Citie of Aricia,) his owne man whom
 with gold he had corrupted to bring in a forged accusation, which
 was, that his master had prepared in one night a number of Ma-
 chination and weapon to destroy the Nobility of the Latines of pur-
 pose to recouer the principalltie of the same. This matter began
 to be suspicious, by reason of the Tumult made the day before as
 against Tarquinius, and therefore the people the sooner did credit the
 case. In fine, Turnus was condemned, and therefore a new kind of
 death deuised for him. Who being laide vpon a hurdle, his face vp-
 ward, was throwen into the water of Ferentina. This execution
 being done Tarquinius reuoked the Latines to Counsel, wherein
 he praised them for their Justice extended vpon Turnus, and then
 spake these Wordes. I may by an old order and constitution
 iustlye say thus much vnto you. The whole Nation of the Lati-
 nes descending from the Citie of Alba are bounde to obserue that
 truce, which the Albanes with all their colonies annexing them-
 selues to the Roman Empire in the tyme of Tullius Hostilius,
 were firmly obliged to accomptish. The renouation whereof
 will nowe conduce more aduantage and vnto them at, than
 euer it did before. For throughe this Truce the Latines shall
 possede and participate parte of the prosperous successe of the Ro-
 mane people. Better it were in this sort to ioyne themselues to-
 gether, than to see Destruction of either Cities, Depopulations and
 spoiles of their Countreies, which in the tyme of Abas (my fa-
 ther then raygning) he suffered. The like also (if you do forsake this
 offer) ye may still expecte and suffer. The Latines hereunto were
 soone perswaded, a Day was appointed when the lustiest sort of
 their Countrey should be ready armed at the wood called Ferren-
 tina. Being togged in order of battell, they marched towards the
 Volsciens,

Volscians, and toaune the Citie of Sueſſa Pometia, the spoile wher-
of Tarquinius ſolde for xl. Talents, imploing the ſame vpon the
Temple of Iupiter. Afterwards he aſſaulted the Gabinians, and
when he ſaw he coulde not by force obteyne the ſame, he ſurmiſed a
pollicie. Who ſeeming to bend him ſelf wholly vpon the building of
the Capitoie, and to ſet aſide the affaires of his warres, deuiled with
his ſonne Sextus, which was the pongeſt of the three, that he ſhould
runne to the Gabinians, and complaigne of his fathers intollerable
crueltie, whych accordingly he did. Who ſhewing himſelfe as a
voluntarie exyle, ſayd that hys father had conuerted hys tyrannye
from other, and began to execute the ſame vpon his owne freendes.
And that he was alſo weary of the preſence of his owne chyldren
going about to remoue hys domeſticall conuerſants oute of hys
houſe, as he had done the like out of the Court, to the intent hee
would leaue no offspring or heire behinde him to poſſeſſe his king-
dome: adding further, that he was eſcaped euen through the midde
of his fathers weapons and furr, thinking no place better for his
ſafegarde and refuge, than to ſeeke ſuccour amongs his ennimites.
And becauſe (quod he) ye ſhall not be deceiued, he is euen now pre-
paring of warres againſt you, & purpoſeth vpon the ſodaine to ſet
vpon you. Now if there be no place of abode for me your humble
ſuppliant amongs you, I muſt needes wander through Italy, and
firſt I will attempt the Volſcians, afterwards the Equians and
Hernicians, tyll ſuch tyme as I finde ſome Nation willing to de-
fend the poore Chylde from the cruell and wicked furre of the fa-
ther. And perchaunce (quod he) ye ſhall wyne hym that may bee
an Inſtrument and courage vnto you all, to repreſſe that proude
King and cruell Patryon. The Gabinians delibaratyng what
was beſt to bee done in this caſe, the youngman ſeemed as though
he were offended, and would in a haſt depart: and ſeeke refuge of
others, then they curteouſly interteined him. This pong man was
had in great eſtimation amongs them, throughe craftye and baينه
perſuaſions, making them beleue that he would conduct their ar-
my euen vnder the walles of Rome, with ſundry other fained in-
ſtigations to hyenge him ſelf the more in credit. At length he was
choſen captain of theſe warres, and reconered ſundry victories for
the

the Gabinians. Whereby the foolish Nation both of the towne & chiefest fort, beleueed that their captayne was sent vnto the by the prouidence of the Gods. He susceined perill and payne in like sort as the common Souldier did, liberally deuindinge his spoiles and booties amongs them. He was so well beloued, that hys father Tarquinius at Rome was of no greater authoritie than hee was among the Gabinians. When he thought that he had recouered force enough to answer his fathers expectation, he sent a post to Rome, to know his fathers pleasure, although the Gods had given him sufficient authoritie amongs the Gabinians. And because Tarquinius was doubtful of the trust and fidelity of the Messenger, hee would answer nothing by worde of mouth, but carying the Messenger into a garde, hard adorning his house, with a wand which he caried in his hand, he cut of the heads of the highest Poppies that grew in the garden: meaning therby that he shoulde dispatche the heads of the chiefest and principal in the Citie. Whereupon the messenger without answer by mouth returned. But by declaring those signes and circumstances which his father vsed in the garde Sextus conceiued his meaning. Then like a naturall sonne, following the steppes of his father, he cut of the heads of the Gabinian nobilitie, wherupon som ran away, vpon whose departure the goods as wel of them as of other that were put to death were deuided. The state of the Gabinians being in this doubtful case, void of all counsell and succour, at length was surrendred to the Romanes. Then Tarquinius concluded peace with the Aquians, and renewed a truce with the Thuscans, and wholly bent him self to the affaires of the Citie. This Tarquinius was the father of him that rauished the noble Lady Lucretia: the lamentable history whereof, is recited in my former Tome, by the end of which booke, remembred in that history, and beginning of the same described in this Nouell, may be gathered, what fructes Ambryon and lothsome luste bring forth. For Tarquinius Priscus repatring out of Hetruria, to dwell at Rome, by the ambryous will of hys wyfe aspired and atcheued the Kingdome, which was by the sundry deuyce of Tullia, the Daughter of Seruius Tullius maintained, and by the libidinous desire of Sextus Tarquinius, the sonne of Superbus

Two Romane Queenes.

of Superbus the 6. Romane Kynge ended, and the whole race expelled and euerlastingly banished out of that Citie. So meete an example for those, that heare and longe after the Rightes, titles, and Kingdomes of other, as may bee read in any Authoꝝ. For although the Springe appeare very fresh and lusty, of some degenerate grasse planted vpon some ancient stocke, yet the fruyt most commonly in taste eateth somewhat sower, and the Wellthe in mouth not altogether so pleasaunt, as that which both in soyle and stocke, is duly planted.

Sophonisba,

The vnhappy end and successe of the loue of King MASSINISSA, and Queene SOPHONISBA his wyfe.

The seuenth Nouell.



LF Men woulde haue a fore consideration of theyr owne doings, before they do attempt the same, or els premeditate and study the scope and successe thereof. I do hereby beleeue that a number would not cast themselves headlong into so many gulfs of miseries and calamities as they do, specially Noblemen, and Princes, who oftentimes doe exceede in temerity and rashnesse, by lettynge the Raynes of theyr owne Whistles, to farre to Raunge at large, wherein they deeply plunge themselves to theyr great Preiudice and Dishonour, as teacheth this goodly Hystoie ensuinze, which declareth that there was a Prince called Massinissa, the Sonne of Gala Kynge of Massazali, (a people of Numidia): who Warfaring with the Carthaginians in Spayne agaynst the Romaines, having first fought honourable agaynst Kynge Syphax in Numidia, it chanced that Gala hys father dyed, vppon whose

de

death hys Kingdome was inuaded and occupied by other, where-
 fore sustayninge stoutly the surges of aduersity combatinge wth
 hys Enemies, sometymes gettinge part of hys Kingdome, and
 sometymes losinge, and many tymes molestinge both Syphax, and
 the Carthaginians, was in many Consistis like to bee taken o^r
 slayne. Wth these hys trauels, impatient of no payne and trou-
 ble, he became very famous and Renowned, that amoniges the
 people of Affrica he acqutred the name and title of a valiant and
 puissant souldier, and of a politique and prouident Captain. Af-
 terwards he was generally welbeloued of the Souldiers, because
 not like the kings sonne o^r a prince, but as a priuate souldier and
 companion, his conuersation and vsuall trade of life was amongs
 them, calling every man by his prope name, cherishing and este-
 eming them according to their desert, obseruing neuerthelesse a cer-
 taine comeliness of a Superiour. This Malsinissa by meanes of
 one Syllanus being in Spayne, priuely entred acquaintance and fa-
 miliarity with that Scipio which afterwarde was surnamed Af-
 fricanus, and who in those dayes with the authoritie of *Proconsul*
 in that prouince, victoriously subdued the Carthaginians. The same
 Malsinissa entred league with the Romanes, and inuolably so long
 as he liued obserued amity with the Romane people, and lefte the
 same to his children and posteritie as an inheritance. When the
 Romanes begā warres in Affrica, speedily with that power he was
 able to make, he repaired to his old friend Scipio. within a while
 after Syphax beyng overthrowen in battell & take, Malsinissa and
 Lelius were sent to surpriue the chief city of y^e kingdom, which so-
 times were king Syphax owne, called Cirra. In that City remay-
 ned Sophonisba y^e wyfe of Syphax & daughter to Hasdrubal of Gi-
 con, who had alienated hir husband from the Romanes, being in
 league with them, and by hir perswasions went to aide and defend
 the Carthaginians. Sophonisba perceluting that the ennies were
 entred the City of Cirra: & that Malsinissa was going towards
 the Palace, determined to meete him, to proue his gentleness & cur-
 tise, whercupon in the middes of the Souldiers thronge, wherch
 were already entred the Palace, She stoutly thurst, & bouldly
 looked rounde aboute, to proue if She could espye by some sig-
 nes

Sophonisba

nes and tokes the personage of Masinissa. She amongst that prease perceiued one; for whose apparel, armure and reuerence don vnto him, semed vnto hir that without doubt the same was the King. And therefore incontinently kneeled down before him, and pittously began to speake in this manner: For so much (O puissant Prince) is felicity and good fortune, but specially the fauour of Gods immortall haue permitted, that thou shouldest recouer thine auncient kingdome descended vnto the by righte and lawfull inheritance, and therewithall hast taken vanquished thine ennemy, and now hast me at thy will and pleasure to saue or spell, I poore wretched miserable woman brought into bondage from Quene Iphes state, whilom leading a delicate life in Princely Courte, accompanied with a royall traine of beautifull dames, and nowe at thy mercifull disposition, doe humbly appeale to thy mercye and goodnesse, whose Princely maiesty & comfortable aspect, chereth by my worfull heart to loke for grace, and therefore am bold thus to presume with most humble voice to imploze and crie out, beseeching thee to reach me hither thy victorious hands to kiss & saluate. This Lady was a passing fayre gentle woman, of flourishing yge & comely behauiour, none comparable vnto her within the whole region of Africa. And so much the more as hyr pleasat grace by amiable gesture of complaint did increase, so much the heart of Masinissa was deliured, who being lusty and of youthful age (according to the nature of the Numides,) was easily intrapped and rangled in the nettes of Loue. Whole glutting eyes were neuer full, nor fierie hart was satisfied in beholding and wondring at hir most excellent beauty: not foreseeing therfore, or taking heede of the dangerous effect of beauties snares, his heart being so fiercely kindled, with the swaying flames of loue, who causing hir to rise, excoited hir to prosecute hir supplication: Then she began to procede as foloweth: If it may be lawfull for me thy prysoner and bondwoman (O my soueraign Lord) to make request, I humbly do beseech thee, by thy royall maiesty, wherein no longe time past my husband and I were magnificently placed in so kynglike guise as thou art now, & by that Numidicall name, common vnto thee and my husbände Syphax, and by the sauinge Gods and Patrons of this City, who with better

fortune

fortune and more full success do receiue thee into the same, than
 expelled Syphax out from thence: it may please thy sacred state,
 to haue pity on me. I require no hard and difficult thinge at thy
 handes, vse thine imperiall gouernement ouer me, such as law of
 armes and reason of Warre require. Cause me if thou wilt, to
 pine in cruel prison, or do me to such death with tormentes, as the
 list to vse, the sharp, fierce and cruell death that any wight can suf-
 fer, or Perillous Wall shall not be dreadfull vnto me, but more deare
 and acceptable than wanted life in pleasures led. For no death shall
 bee refused of mee, rather than to bee rendred into the proude
 handes of the most cruell Romanes. Rather had I tast the trust
 of a natiue Numidie, borne with me in Affrike soyle, than the faith
 of Strangers kinde. I know full well that thou dost knowe what
 curtesy a Carthagioian & daughter of Hasdrubal, shall surely looke
 for at thy Romines handes: whose mind is fearfull of nothing more
 than of the pride & glory intollerable. If thou (my Lord) haddest
 sisters of thine own, or daughters of thy royal blood brought forth
 think they may chaunce (if fortune frown) to slide into the pit of
 aduerse lucke, so well as I am now. Of that forme fortunes
 wheele is made, whych we daily see to be vnstable, turninge & dy-
 uers, that now peace, & now warre it promisseth now euill it threat-
 neth, now mirth, now sorrow it bringeth, now aduancinge aloft,
 now tumbledowne the clymbers vp. Let Syphax bee cleare and
 liuely Exauple to thee, whych coulde neuer finde any stedfast
 day vnder the Moones Globe. He was the mightiest & the richest
 kinge that reigned in Affrica, and now is the most miserable & vn-
 lucky wight that liueth on Eard. The Gods graunt that I bee no Pro-
 phet or Diuiner of future euill, whose omnipotency I deuoutly
 beseech to suffer thee and thy posterity in Numidie Land & most
 happily to raygne. Touchsafe then to deliuer me from the Ro-
 manes thraldome, which if thou bee not able safely to byng to
 passe, cause death (the ease of al woe) to be inflicted vpon me.
 In speakinge those words, she tooke the Kynges right hande,
 and many times sweetly kissed the same. And then her Teares
 turned to pleasant cheare, in such wise as not onely the mynde
 of the armed and victorious Prince was moued to mercy, but
 strangely wadded in the amorous Nets of the Lady whereby the

F.

Victor

victour was subdued by the vanquished, and the Lord surprised
of his Captiue, whom with trembling voice thus, he answered:
Take an end O Sophonisba, of thy large complaynt, abandon thy
conceyued feare, for I wil not onely ridde the from the Romanes
Handes, but also take thee to my lawfull wyfe (if thou therewith
shalt be content) where by thou shalt not leade a prisoners life, but
passe thy yowthfull dayes and hoarpe age (if Gods doe graunt the
lyfe so long) as Queene vnto a King, and wise vnto a Romane frënd.
When he had sayd so with weeping teares, he kissed and embraced
hir. She by the countenaunce, Srgnes, Celtes, and interrupted
Woodes, comprehending the Wynde of the Numide king to be
kindled with feruent loue: the moze to inflame the same breuonned
her self with such heautnesse, as the beastly heartes of the Hircane
Tygres would haue bene made gentle & dispoiled of al fiercenesse.
If they had beheld her. And againe she fel downe at hys feete kis-
singe the armed Sabbarons vppon the same, and bedewinge them
with hir warme teares. After many sobbes and infinite sighes, dis-
coyted by him, and sayd: O the glozie and honoz of all the Kynges
that euer were, bee o: shall bee hereafter. O the safest aide of Car-
thage mine vnhappy countrey without desert, and now the present
and most terrible astonishment: If my hard fortune and distresse
after so great ruine might haue bene relieued, what greater fauour
what thing in all my life, coulde chaunce moze fortunate, vnto me,
than to bee called wyfe of thee? O I blessed aboue all other women
to haue a man so noble and amous to husband. O mine aduen-
turous and most happy ruine. O my moste fortunate misery, that
such a glorious and incomparable mariage was prepared for me.
But bicause the Gods be so contrary vnto me, and the due ende of
of my life approcheth, ceasse from henceforth (my deare soueraygne
Lorde) to kindle againe in me, my hope half dead, o: rather confus-
med & spent, bicause I see my self wrapped in a flate, & in bayne as
gainst þ pleasures of þ Gods, I go about to molest the. A greate
gift (& to say truth) a right great good turne I make accompte to
haue receiued of the, if mine own death I should procure by þ that
dyinge by thy meanes o: with thy Handes, whych were more
acceptable,) I shoulde escape the feare of the Romaynes,
thall

thral & sublection, & this soule deliuered of the same, should streight
 passe into the Elyſian ſeldes. The ſinal ſcope of this my humble
 plaint, is to rpe me from the hands of the Romanes, whose thral-
 dom to suffer I had rather die. The other benefit which thou doſt
 frankly offer to me poore wretch, I dare not desire much leſſe re-
 quire the same, becauſe the preſent ſtate of my miſhap dareth not pre-
 ſume ſo high. But for this my pity & compaſſion ioined with lo-
 uing regard and mind toward me, mightye Ioua with al the other
 Gods reward & bleſſe thy gotten kingdom in long raign, enlarging
 the ſame with moze ample boundes to thine eternal renoum & praiſe.
 And I do not only render humble thanks for this thy kind & lo-
 uing enterteinment, but alſo peld my ſelf thine own, ſo long as Iyfe
 gouerneth this caitif corpes of mine. Theſe wordes wer pronounced
 with ſuch effect, as Maſiniſſa was not able for pity to hold his tea-
 res, which watred ſo his comely form, as the dew therof ſoaked in-
 to his tender heart, & not able a long time to ſpeak, at laſt thus hee
 ſayd: Gue ouer (O my Quene) theſe cares and thoughts, bye by
 thy cries & plaints, make an end of al theſe dolorous ſutes, and re-
 ioyce, that frowarde Fortune hath changed hir mind: the Gods no
 doubt with better ſucceſſe, wil perfourm the reſt of thy liuing daiſe.
 Thou ſhalt henceforth remain my Quene & wiſe, for pledg whereof
 the ſacred Godheads I cal to witneſſe. But if perchaunce (which I
 thūdzing mighty God aboue forbidd) that I ſhalbe forced to render
 thee the Romanes priſoner, be well aſſured, that on liue they ſhall
 not poſſeſſe the. For credit & accompliſhment of this promiſe & in
 ſigne of his aſſured faith, he reached his right hād to Sophonisba, &
 led hir into the inner lodging of the kings Palace, wher after ward
 Maſiniſſa with himſelf cōſidering how he might perſorm hys pro-
 miſed faith, vexed & troubled with a thouſand cogitations, ſeing in a
 maner his manifeſt owerthrow & ruine at hād, prouoked with mad
 & temerarious loue, the very ſame day in open preſence he toke hir
 to wiſe, ſolemnizing that marriage, which after wardes byed vnto
 hym greate vexation and trouble, meanwyte by the ſame to
 haue dyſcharged Sophonisba from the Romanes rule and or-
 der. But when Lælius was come and hearde tell there-
 of, hee fretted and chafed, and wrth theauringe Wordes coun-

commanded Malsinissa to send his new married wife (as the booty and pray of the Romanes) together with Syphax, to their Captaine Scipio. Notwithstanding vanquished with the supplications & teares of Malsinissa, referring the matter wholly to the iudgement of Scipio, he dispatched Syphax with the other prisoners and booty, to the Romane campe, and he himself remained with Malsinissa for the reconerie of other places of the Kingdome, minding not to returne before the whole prouince were brought vnder the Romane subiection. In the meene time Lelius gaue intelligence vnto Scipio, of the successe of Malsinissa his marriage. Who knowing the same to be so hastie celebrated, was maruellously offended and troubled in minde, muche maruellinge, that Malsinissa would make lutch posthast before the coming of Lelius. And vpon the very first day of his entrie into Cirra, that hee would comminate that vnadvised wedding: and the greater was Scipio his displeasure towards Malsinissa, for the Loue which he had conceived of the woman, was vnlesely & dishonest, wondering (not a little that he could not find out some Lady within the region of Spain of semblable beauty and comelinesse, to please and content his honest and commendable intent: wherfore he iudged Malsinissa his fact to be done out of time, to the pretudice and great decay of his honor & estimation. Howbeit like a wise and prudent personage he dissimbled his conceived griefe, expecting occasion for remedye of the same. Now the time was come that Lelius and Malsinissa were sent for to the Campe. But to declare the teares and lamentable taske, the great mone and sighes, vttered betwene this new married couple, time would want, and tediousnesse would overcome the Reader. He had scarce lpen with his beloued two or thre breaths, but Lelius (to their great grief and sorrow) claymed him to bee his prisoner. Wherfore verie sorrowfull and pensue hee departed, and returned to the Campe. Scipio in honourable wyse accepted him, and openly before his Captaines & men of warre, gaue thanks to Lelius and him, for their prowesse and notable exploits. Afterwards sending for him into his Tent, he said vnto him: I do suppose (my dere friend Malsinissa) that the vertue & beneuolence which you saw in me did first of all prouoke you, to transgrete the straits, to visite

me in Spaine, wherein the good will of my vallant friend Syllaous
 did not a little auale, to sollicite and procure amity betwene vs.
 And the same afterwards inducing your constant minde, to retire
 into Affrica committed both your selfe and all your goods into my
 hands and keeping. But I well pondering the quality of that be-
 true whych moued you therunto, you beinge of Affrica, and I
 of Europa you a Numidian boyme, and I a Latine and Romane,
 of diuers customes & language different, thought that the tempe-
 rance and abstinence from venerial pleasures which you haue sene
 to bee in me, and experiente therof wel tried and proued, (for the
 which I render vnto the immortal Gods most humble thanks)
 would or ought to haue moued you to follow mine example, being
 vertues which aboue al other I doe most esteeme and cherish. For
 he that well marketh the rare giftes and excellent benefites wher-
 with Dame nature hath arrated you, would thinke that ther should
 be no lacke of diligence and trauell to subdue and ouercome the
 carnall appetites of temporal beauty: which had it bene applied to
 the rare giftes of nature plantied in you, had made you a personage
 to the posterity very famous and renoumed. Consider wel my pre-
 sent time of youth, full of courage and youthe lust, which contrary
 to that naturall race I stay and prohibite. No delicate beauty, no
 voluptuous delectation, no feminine flattery, can intice my youthe
 and state to the perils and daungers whereunto that heedlesse age
 is most prone and subiect. By which prohibition of amorous pas-
 sions, temperately raigned and gouerned, the tamer and subduer of
 those passions, closing his breast from lasciuious imaginations,
 and stopping his eares from the Syrenes, and Harmaydes, of
 that seere and kinde, getteth greater Glorpe and fame, than wee
 haue gotten by our victorie agaynst Syphax. Hanniball the grea-
 test enemye he euer wth Romanes felt, the stoutest gentlemā & captain
 without peere, through the delites and embracements of women
 effeminated, is no more the manlike and notable Emperour that hee
 was wont to be. The great exploits and enterprises which valy-
 antly you haue done in Numidia, when I was farre from you, your

I 3 care,

care, readinesse, animosity, your strength and valor, your expediti-
on and bold attempts, with all the reste of your noble vertues
worthy of immortal praise, I might & could perticularly recite, but
to commend and extol them my heart and minde shall neuer be sa-
tisfied, by renouacio wherof I should rather giue occasiō of blush-
ing, than my selfe could be contented to let them sleepe in silence.
Syphax as you know is taken prisoner by the valiance of our men
of warre, by reason wherof, him selfe, his wife, his kingdome, hys
campe, landes, citie, and inhabitants, and brieely all that which
was king Syphax, is the pray and spoile to the Romane people,
and the king and his wife, albeit he was no Citizen of Carthage,
and his father although no captain of our ennemies yet we muste
send them to Rome, there to leaue them at the pleasure and dispo-
sition of the Romane Senate and people. Doe you not know that
Sophonisba with her toyes and flatteries did alienat & withdraw
king Syphax from our amitie and friendship, and made him to
enter force of armes against vs: Be you ignorant that she, full of
rancor and malice agaynst the Romane people, endeouored to set
all Affrica against vs, & now by her fayre inticementes hath gaped
and wonne you, not I say our enemy, but an enemy so farre,
as shee can, with her cruell Inchauntments: What Damage
and hurt haue yghted hypon diuers Monarches and Princes
through sugred Lippes and Venemous Woozdes, I wyl not
spend tyme to recite. With what prouocations and contured char-
mes shee hath already bewitched your good nature, I wyl not now
imagine, but referre the same to the deepe consideration of youre
wisdome. Wherefore Malsinissa, as you haue bene a Conquerer o-
uer great nations and prouinces, be now a conquerer of your owne
kind and appetites, the victorie wherof deserueth greater prayse
than the conquest of the whole world. Take heede I say, that you
blot not your good qualities and conditions, with the spots of dis-
honor and pusillanimitie. Obscure not that same which hitherto
is aduanced aboue the Region of the glitteringe Starres.
Let not this Urce of fempuine Flatterie spoile the desertes
of Noble Chyualrye, and bitterly deface those Merytes with
greater ignomynie than the cause of that offence is worthy of
dispraise.

Malsinissa

Malsinissa hearing these egre and sharpe rebukes, not onely
 blushed for Shame, but betterly Weeping, sayde that hys poore
 prisoner and wyfe was at the commaundement of Scipio. Not-
 withstanding, so instantly as Teares coulde suffer hym to speak,
 he besought hym, that if it were possible, hee woulde geue him
 leaue to obserue hys Fathes foolishly assured, because hee had
 made an othe to Sophonisba that with life shee shoulde not bee
 deliuered to the Handes of the Romanes. And after other talke
 betweene them, Malsinissa retired to hys paupryon, where a-
 lone with manifolde sighes, and most better Teares and plain-
 tes, bittered with such howlinges and outcries, as they were
 hearde by those whych stood neare hande, hee rested at the Dape
 bewailynge hys presente state: the most part of the Nychte al-
 so hee spent with lyke heauynesse, and debating in hys mynd vpon
 diuers thoughts and deuises, more confused and amazed than be-
 fore, hee could by no meanes take rest: somtimes he thought to flee
 and pass the straights commonly called the pillers of Hercules,
 from thence to saile to the fortunite Ilandes with his wyfe, then
 agayne hee thoughte with hir to escape to Carthage, and in ayde
 of that City to serue agaynst the Romanes, somtimes hee purposed
 by sword, poison, halter, or som such meanes to end his life and fi-
 nish his dolorous days: many times hee was at pointe by prepared
 knife and sword to pierce his heart, and yet stayed the same, not
 for feare of death, but for preservation of his fame and honor.
 Thus this wretched and miserable louer burned and consumed
 in loue, tossing and tumbling him selfe vpon his bedde, not able
 to find comfort to ease his payne, thus began to say: O Sopho-
 nisba, my deare beloued wyfe, O the life and comforte of my life,
 O the deintye repast of my ioy and quiet, what shall become of thy
 Alas and out alas I cree, that I shall see no more thine incompa-
 rable beauty, thy surpassing comely face, those golden lockes, those
 glistering eyes which a thousand times haue darkned & obscured
 the rays and beames of the Sunne it selfe: Alas I say, that I can
 no longer be suffered to heare the pleasant harmonye of thy voice
 whose sweetenesse is able to force Iupiter himselfe to mitigate his
 rage when with lightning Thunderbolts and stormie claps in her

greatest surie he meancth to plague the earth. Th that is not law-
 full any more for me to throw these unhappie armes about thy tē-
 der neck, whose whitenesse of face entermingled with semely rudds,
 excelleth the Doyning Roses, which by sweete nightly dewes doe
 spoure and budde. The Gods graunt that I doe not long remaine
 on liue without thy sweete haunt and company, which can no lon-
 ger draw forth this breathing ghoste of mine, than can a Wodpe
 lyue wythoute a Breathe in it. Graunt (O Myghty Iupiter that
 one graue may close vs twaine to liue among the ghostes and sha-
 dows that be already past this world for like right louing sits, if
 intent of life be ment to mee without thy fellowship and delectable
 presence. And who (O good God) shal be more blissful amongs the
 Elysian fields, wandring amids the spirites and ghostes of depar-
 ted soules, than I, if there we two may iette and stalke amonge the
 shadowed feths and forestys huge, besette with Myrtle trees, odo-
 riferous and sweete: that there we may at large recount and sing
 swete and sower pangis of those our passed loues without anye
 stay or let at all: that there I say we may remembre things already
 by done, reioycing for delights and sighing for the paines. There
 shall no harde hearted Scipio bee found, there shal no marbie min-
 ded captain rest, which haue not had regard of Loues toyes, ne yet
 haue pittied bitter payns, by hauing no experice what is the force
 of Loue. We then with ouer cruell wordes shall not goe aboute to
 persuaide me to forsake the, or to deliuer thee into the Romanes
 handes, to incurre miserable and most cruell bondage: he shal there
 neuer checke me for the seruient loue I beare thee: we shal there a-
 bide without suspition of him or any other: they can not seperate
 vs, they be not able to deuide our sweetest companie. I would the
 Gods aboue had graunted me the benefite, that hee had neuer ar-
 rived into Affrica, but had still remayned in Sicilia, in Italy or
 Spayne. But what stand I vpon these termes, O I sole and beaust
 what meanes my drouille head to becomee such fancies: if he hadde
 not passed ouer into Affrica, and made war against kinge Syphax,
 how should I haue euer scene my fatre Sophonisba, whose beauty
 farre surmounteth e. by other wight, whose comeltnes is without
 peere, whose grace inspeakable, whose maners rare and incompa-
 rable,

rable, and whose other qualities generally disparced throughout
 same Natures mould by speech of man can not bee described? If
 Scipio had not transfrasted the seas to arrive in A strike soile, how
 should I, (O onely hope and last refuge of my distress) have know-
 wen thee, neither should I have bene thy seere, ne yet my wife thou
 shouldst have ben, but great had ben thy gaine and losse not much
 neuer shouldst thou have felt the present painfull state, wherein
 thou art, thy life (whereof most worthy no doubt thou art) should
 not have lien in ballance poize, or rested in doubtfull plight, which
 now in choyse of enimites thall thou maist prolong, or else in Ro-
 manes handes a praye or spotle by captiue state. But I beseech the
 Gods to prevent the choyce to be a Romane prisoner. And who
 can thinke that Scipio ever ment to graunt me the life of one, and
 goeth about to spotle me of the same? Did not he giue me the par-
 don of one, when he sent me to besiege the City of Cirta, where I
 found fayre Sophonisba which is my life? A strange kind of par-
 don, by giuing me a pardon to dispossesse me of the same. Who
 euer hard tel of such a pardon? So much as if he said to me, thus:
 Malsinissa, I go take the paine to cause the City yeld, and ransack
 it by force, and I will pardon thee thy lyfe, And not wryth the onely
 benefitt, but with Cresus goods I will enrich thee, and make thee
 owner of the happy soyle of Arrabia, and when I have so done and
 raised the walles by myne indeuor, wherein myne onely lyfe and tope
 did rest, at my retourne for guerdone of that Noble fact, in neede
 of Lyfe hee choppeth of my head, and for fayre promise of Gol-
 den Mountes, hee stryps me naked, and makes mee a Romane
 slave. Accordeinge to which case and state he deales wryth me.
 For what auailles my Lyfe, if in greefe and sorowes Gylt I
 down the pleasures of the same? Doth not he berieue my life & bre-
 des my death by diuiding me fro my fayre Sophonisba? Ah Caitife
 wretch what lucke haue I, that neither Rome nor whyle Wynde
 could send him home to Italian shore, or set him packing to Sicile
 land? What ment cruell Scipio, when so sone as Syphax was ta-
 ken, he did not streight way dispatch him to Rome, to present the
 glorious sight of Numidia king to the Romane people? If Scipio
 had not

had not bene here, thou Sophonisba frankly hadst bene mine : for
 at Lelias hands I coulde haue found some grace. But surely if
 Scipio did once see Sophonisba, and reclined his eyes to viewe hir
 perelless beauty, I doubt not but he would be moued to haue com-
 passion vpon hir and me, and would iudge hir worthy not onely to
 be Queene of Numidia but of all the prouince besides. But what
 do I make this good accompt? The common prouerbe sayth, that
 he which counteth before his horse, must reckon twice: and so per-
 haps may be my lot. For what know I if Scipio did wel view hir,
 whether himselfe would be inamored of hir or not, & so bitterly de-
 prine me of that Jewell? He is a man no doubt as others be, and it
 is impossible me think, but that his hardnesse of his heart must bow
 to the view of such a noble beauty. But (beas I am) what mean
 these wordes? What follies doe I haunt by singing to the deafe, &
 teaching of the blinde? O wretch, wretch, naye more than miserable
 Wretch. Marke the words of Scipio, he demaunders Sophonisba,
 as a thing belonging vnto him, for which cause he sayeth that she is
 the pray and part of the Romane spoyle. But what shall I doe that
 I geue hir vnto him? Hee will haue hir, hee constraynes me, he ex-
 hortet mee, hee prayes mee, but I know full well whereunto those
 intreaties tend, and vnder the Masse what lurking Serpent lieth.
 What I then put into his hands mine owne Sophonisba? But be-
 fore I so doe, the armipotent God aboue, with his flashing fies &
 flaming brands shall thunder me downe into the depthes of Hell.
 The gaping ground receiue my corpes, before I yeld to that request
 the trampling steeles of sauage kinde do teare my members in
 thousand gobbets, the desert beastes consume my flesh, the rauen-
 ning gripes & carrain kites, pick out my tongue and eyes, before I
 glutte his rauenous mind wth that demand to break the sayth
 which by holy othes I haue promised to performe. O cursed casill,
 but what shall I doe then? It behoueth to aby, & in despite of my
 teeth to do that which the Romane Emperour commaunders. Alas
 by thinking vpon that strait and needefull lot, I die a thousand
 deathes: wherefore of euill to chuse the least of twaine, & to preferre
 my plighted faith O swete Sophonisba, thou must die, & by meanes
 of the beloned scere, shalt void the pocke of Romanes thral, for so it
 pleaseth vniuersall Ioua to appoynt. The wretched Heauens be

crush

cruel fate haue thzowen their lot, & I of mine owne mischefe shal
 be the minister. And so (O life most deere) I shall perfozme the
 effect to kepe the sayth whych last of all befoze thy face I did con-
 firme. By this speech & maner of talke, the good Prince bewayled
 his case, excogitatinge by what meanes hee myght doe to death the
 thing which aboue al the world he loued best. At length it came vn-
 to his minde to send hir a draught of popsoned drinke, which deuise
 he had no sooner founde, but he was dyluē into a new kinde of fu-
 ry, & kindled with disdayne, his bzaynes were on fire with extreme
 madnesse, as though Sophonisba had bene befoze him, hee talked &
 ragued in Bedlem wyse, somtimes with taunts he checked hir to hir
 teeth, sometimes lamented hir vnfortunate state, sometymes with
 patwes displayed, he seemed to rampe into hir face, & then agayne in
 to amorous toles his passions droue him forth. When I do thinke
 what kinde of man Massinissa was, who in deede was a crowned &
 most noble king, and who with such Prudence gouerned his new
 conquered & recovered kingdoms, & so constantly perseuered in a-
 mity of the Romane people, I pray to God to graunt my frendes
 and my selfe also, not to enter into so intricat & lousesome Labyrinth,
 wherein this Noble Prince was tangled, and wpth moze tempe-
 raunce to gouerne our beloued things.

But retourning agayne to this afflicted Gentleman Massinissa.
 He sent vnto his beloued wyfe & Queene a pot of popson to rid hir
 of hir life: but yet staryng his messēger, he cried out these words:
 God forbid that I should commit this infamous murder vpon hir
 whom I most deerely loue, I would rather conuey hir into the ex-
 treme partes of the vnknoen sandy Coastes of Libia, where the
 Countrey is full of venemous beasts and crawling popsoned ser-
 pēts, in which we shalbe safe & sure frō the dasiger of cruell & in-
 ozable Scipio, by which meanes he shall neuer see the rare & diuine
 beauty, which the serpents once beholding, will mitigate & asswage
 their bitter popso, & for whose sake they will not annoy ne yet hurt
 me hir louing husband & cōpanion. Wherefoze let vs make hast to
 flee thither, to auoide y^e bondage & death prepared for vs. And if so
 be we be not able to cary with vs gold & siluer, yet shal we not wat
 there some reliefe to maintayn our liues: for better it is to feede on
 bread & water, thē to liue in perpetual shaldome. And liuing is thee
 (Sweete

Sophonisba.

(Sweete wyfe) what pouerty & beggery am not I able to sustayne?
 The torments of exile and penury, I haue already suffered. For be-
 inge driuen out of my kingdome many times, I haue repayed to
 obscure dens and caues, where I haue hidden my selfe, and liued
 in the Wildernesse among the Savage beasts. But what meane I
 thus to say of my selfe, whom no misadventure can affray or mys-
 lyke? but thou deare wyfe whych hast ben trayned vp and nouri-
 shed amongs the delicacies and bankets of the Court, accompa-
 nied wth traynes of many fayre & noble Ladies, liuinge lyke a
 Queene in al kinde of pleasures and delights: what shall I doe
 wth thee? I knowe thy heart will not suffer thee to follow me, &
 yet if the same would serue thee, from whence shall I procure pre-
 sent shippinge? Upon the Sea the Roman flecte beares swinge,
 vpon the land Scipio wth hys Army occupieth euery Coast, and
 is generall Lord of the field. What then shall I most miserable &
 infortunate Captiue do? For whilest I am thus makinge my bit-
 ter playnts, the night is past away, day light approcherh, and the
 bright shinning morninge beynneth to cleare the earth. And behold
 ponder commeth the Generalls messanger for Sophonisba, whom
 I must epyther deliuer into his handes, or else commit hir to presēt
 slaughter. beunge assured that she had rather make choise to dye, thā
 fall into the Laps of the cruell Romans.

Whereupon he determined to sende hir the popson, and for ves-
 ry sorow fell downe vpon the ground like a man halfe deade, Af-
 terwards being come agayne to him selfe, he cursed the Earth, the
 Ayre, the Fyre, Deaume, Hell, and all the Gods of the same, & excla-
 ming in lamentable wyse he called vnto him one of his most faith-
 full seruant, who according to the custome of those dayes, alwaies
 kept popson in store, and sayde vnto him: Recepue thys Cuppe of
 Golde, and deliuer the same wth the popson, to Queene Sophonis-
 ba now abidinge within the City of Cirra, and tel hir that I wth
 greates good will would fayre haue kept the mariage knot, and
 the firste sayth whych I plightred vnto hir, but the Lorde of the
 fiede, in whose power I am, hath bitterly forbidden the same. I
 haue assayed all possible meanes to preserue hir my Wyfe and

Queene

Queene at liberty, but he which commaundeth me, hath pronoun-
 ced such hard and cruell sentence, as I am forced to offend my self,
 and to be the minister of mine own mischief. Thys poyson I send
 hir with so dolefull Message, as my poore hearte God knoweth)
 doth only fele the smart being the most sorrowfull present that euer
 was offered to any fayre Lady. This is the way a'one to save hir
 from the Romanes handes. Pray hir to consider the the worthines
 of hir father, the dignitie of her countrey, & the royal matelty of the
 Kings hir husbands, and to do as hir mynd and wil shall fante
 best. Get the hence with possible speede, and lose no tyme to do thys
 Message. For thou shalt carry the bane and present death of the fa-
 rest Ladye that euer Nature framed within hir fayrest mould.
 The Seruaunt with this commaundment did departe, and Mas-
 sinissa toke a Childe beaten with the Rodde, wept and cried. The
 Messenger being come to the Queene, and giuing hir the cup with
 the poyson, declared his cruell ambassage. The Queene tooke the
 poysoned Cuppe, and sayd vnto the Messenger: Geue the King
 thy master myne humble thanks, and say vnto hym, that I re-
 ceue and Drynke thys Poyson with a will so good, as if hee
 had commaunded me to enter in Tryumph with Laurel Gar-
 lande ouer myne Ennymies. For a better Gifte a Husbnde
 can not geue to Wyfe, than accomplyment of assured Faith,
 the Funerall of wherof shall bee done with present obsequie.
 And sayinge nethynge else vnto the Messenger, she tooke the
 Cuppe, and mynglynge well together the Poyson within, shee
 vnfearefully quafft it vp. And when she had Dronke it shee deli-
 uered the Messenger hys Cuppe agayne, and layed hir selfe vpon
 hir bed, commaunding hir Gentilwomen in comely wyse to couer
 hir with Clothes, and withoute lamentation or Sigh of fee-
 minine minde, shee stoutly waighted for a pocking death. The
 Gentilwomen which waited vpon hir, bewailed the rusull state of
 their Maystresse, whose plaines and schryches were heard through
 out the palace, wherof the brute and rumor was great. But the
 good Queene vanquished with the strong force of the poyson, con-
 tinued not long before she died. The Messenger returned these hea-
 uie newes vnto Massinissa, who so sorrowfully complained & lesse of
 his

Sophonisba.

like to kill himselfe, that his Soule mighte haue accompa-
nied the ghost of hir, which was beloved of hym aboue all
the dearest things of the Worlde. The valyaunt and wyle Ca-
pitayne Scipio vnderstanding the newes hereof, to the intente
Massinissa shoulde not commit any cruelty agaynste himselfe, or
perpetrate other vncomele deede, called hym beefore him, and
comforted hym wth the sweetest wordes he could deuise, a frende
ly reprovved him. The next day in the presence of al the army
hee highly commended him, and rewarded him wth the kyngs
dome of Numidia, geuing hym many ryche Jewels and treasures,
and brought hym in great Estimation amonges the Romaynes,
whych the Senate and people of Rome, very well approued and
confirmed wth most ample Privileges, attributing vnto hym
the tyle of kyng of Numidia, and freende of the Romaynes.

Such was the ende of the vnhappy loue of kyng
Massinissa, and of the fayre and lucklesse
Queene Sophonisba.

(.)

Poris and

Poris and Theoxena.

¶ The cruelty of a Kynge of MACEDONE who forced a Gentiewoman called THEOXENA, to persuade hir children to kill and poyson themselues : after which fact, she and hir husband PORIS, ended their lyfe by drowninge.

The eyght Nouell.



But now wee haue beegon to treat of the stoutnesse of certayne noble Queenes, I will not let also to recite the Hy story of a lyke vnscarefull dame of Thessalian Lãd, called Theoxena, of right noble Race, the Daughter of Herodicus Prince of that Countrey in the tyme that Philip the Sonne of Demetrius was Kynge of Macedone, tolde also by Titus Lilius, as two of the former be. This Lady Theoxena, first was a notable example of Piety and vertue, and afterwarde of rigorous cruelty. For the sayd King Philip, hauinge through his wickednesse first murdred Herodicus, and by succession of time cruelly done to death also, the husbands of Theoxena and of Archo hir naturall sister, vnto epyther of them bring Wydowes remayninge a Sonne : afterwarde Archo being maryed a gayne to one of the principall of their Countrey named Poris, of him she had many childzen. But when she was dead, the sayd Lady Theoxena hir sister, who was of heart moze constant and stout than the other, still refused the second mariage, although sued vnto by many great Lordes, and Princes, at length pittyinge her Mesphewes state, for fere they should fall into the handes of some cruell Stepdame, or that theyr father would not bring them by with such diligence, as till that tyme they were, was contented to be espoused agayne to Poris, (no lawe that tyme known to defend the same) to the intent she might trayne by hir sisters childzen as her owne, That done she began (as if they were hir owne) to the in-

treat

create and vse the n louingly, with great care and industrie: wher-
by it manifestly appeared, that she was not married againe to Poris
for hir owne commoditie and pleasure, but rather for the wealth &
gouernement of those hir sisters children. Afterwards Philip king
of Macedone, an vniuersall Prince, determininge to make newe
warres vpon the Romanes (then throughout the worlde famous
and renowned for thei good fortune) exiled not onely the chief and
noble men, but almost all the auncient inhabitants of the Cities as
long the sea coaste of Thessalia, and thei whole and entier fami-
lies into Paxonia afterwarde called Emathia, a Countie farre
distant from the sea giuing their bolded cities for the Thracians to
inhabite, as most proper & faithfull for the Romans warre, which
he intended to make: and hearinge also the curses and maledic-
tions pronounced against him by the banished people, and vniuers-
ally by al other, thought he was in no good surety, if he caused not
likewyse all the sonnes of them, whom a little before he had slayne,
to be put to Death. Wherefore he commaunded them to be taken
and holden vnder good gard in prison, not to do them al to be slain
at once, but at times now one and then an other, as occasion ser-
ued. Theoxena vnderstanding the Edicte of this wicked and cru-
ell king, and wel remembryng the death of hir husband, and of him
that was husband to hir sister, knew wel that hir Sonne and Ne-
pheyw incontinently should be demanded, and greatly fearinge the
kings wrath, & the rigour of his Guard, if once they fell into thei
hands, to defend them from shame and cruelty, sodainly applied
hir minde vnto a straunge deuice. For shee durst to saye vnto hir
husband their fathers face, that sooner she would kil them with hir
owne handes, if otherwise she coulde not warraunt them, then suf-
fer them to bee at the will and power of Kinge Philip. By reason
wherof Poris abhorring so execrable cruelty, to comfort his wife
to saue hys Chylidren, promysed hys secretely to transporte
them from thence, and caried them hymselfe to certayne of
hys faithfull frendes at Athens, whych done wythoute longe
delaye, hee made as though hee woulde goe from Thessaloni-
ca to Aenia, to bee at the Solemytys of certayne Sacrifices,
whych yereleze at an appoynted tyme was done wyth great
Ceremonies

ceremonies to the honour of *Æneas* the Founder of that City,
where spendinge the time amonges other in solempne banquets, the
third watch of the night when euery man was a slepe, as though
he would haue returned home to his countrey with his wife and
childzen, priuely imbarkeeth himselfe and them, in a ship hired of
purpose to passe into *Euboea*, and not to retourne to *Thessalonica*.
But his entent was cleane altered and chaunged, for his ship was
no sooner vnder saile, but at that instant a contrary winde & tem-
pest rose, that brought him backe againe, in despite of their labour,
and all the endeuour they were able to doe. And when daye lighte
appeared, the kings garrison descried that shippe, and manned out
a boate, to bring in the same, which secretly they thoughte was a-
bout to escape away, giuing them straight charge, that by no mea-
nes they shoulde retourne without hir. When the boate drew neare
the shippe, *Poris* bent him self to encourage the mariners to hope
by saile againe, and to make way with their oares into the Sea,
if it were possible, to auoide the imminent and present daunger, to
saue the life of him selfe, his wife and childzen: then hee lifted hys
handes vp vnto the heauens to imploze the help and succor of the
Gods, which the stoute Gentlewoman *Theoxena* perceiuing, and
manifestly seeing the Daunger wherein they were, callinge to hir
minde hir former determinate vengeance which she ment to do, and
beholding *Poris* in his prayers, she prosecuted hir intente, prepa-
ring a popsoned drinke in a cuppe, and made readye naked swoz-
des: At which bringing forth befoze the Childzens face, she spake
these words: Death alone must bee the reuenge of your selfe liues, ,,
wh: runt o there be two wayes, poison o: the swozde. Euery of you ,,
choose which ye list to haue: o: of whether of them your heart shall ,,
make y frankest choise. The kings cruelty & pride you must auoid. ,,
Wherfoze deare childzen be of good chere, raise vp your Noble ,,
courage: y: the elder aged boyes, shew now your selues like Men, ,,
and take the sword into your handes to pierce your tender hearts ,,
but if the bloody smart o: that most dreadfull death, shal feare and ,,
fright your greene and vnrype age, then take the benomed cup, and ,,
gulpe by sundry daughters, this poisoned drinke. Be franke and ,,
luste in this your beklended Death, with the violence of Fortune, ,,
G, by Sea, ,,

Poris and Theoxena .

by sea, doeth let the lengthning of your life. I craue this requeste of choyse, and let not the same rebound with fearfull refuse of thes my craued best. Your mother afterwarde shal passe that straght, whereof she prayeth hir babes to bee the posses:ye the vaunt courours, and shee, with your louing sire, shall end and finishe Philips rage bent agaynst vs. When shee had spoken these Wordes and sawe the enimies at hand, this couragious dame, the deniser of the death, egged and prouoked these pong trembling childzen (not yet wel resolved what to do (with hir encharmed wordes in such wyse, as in the ende, some dranke the porson, and oither strake them selues into the body and by hir commaundement were thowen ouer boord, not altogether dead, and so she set the at liberty by death whō tenderly she had brought vp. Then she embracing hir husband the companion of hir death, both did voluntarily throw themselves also into the sea; And when the Kings espials were come aborde the ship, they found the same abandoned of thes praye. The cruelty of which fact, did so moue the common people to detestacion and hatred of the Kinge, as a generall curse was pronounced against him & his childzen, which heard of the Gods aboue was afterwarde terribly reuenged vpon his stocke and posterity. Thes was the end of good Poris & his stout wyfe Theoxena, who rather then she would fall into the lapse of the Kings furie, as hir father Herodicus, and hir other husbände did, chose violently to dye with hir own hands, and to saue hir husbandes childzen & hir owne, to berieue them selues of Lyfe, whych although agaynst the louinge order of naturall course, and therefore that kinde of violence to bee abhored, as horrible in it self, yet a declaration of a stout mind, if otherwise she had ben able to reuenge the same. And what coward heart is that, that dare not vpon such extremity, when it seeth the mercilesse ennimy at hand, with shining blade ready bent, to stryke the blowe, that withoute remedye must ridde the same of breath, specially when it beholdeth the trembling babe, naturally begottē by hes owne kinde and nature, before the face imploeyng fathers rescue, what dastarde heart dare not to offer himselfe, by singular sight (thoughe one to twentye) either by desperate hardinesse to auoid the same, or other anoyauce, aduenture what he can: which in
Christians

Christians is admitted as a comely fight, rather than with that Pagan Dame to do the death it selfe.

But now returne we to describe a fact that passeth al other forced deedes. For Theoxena was compelled in a manner thus to do of meere constraint to eschue the greater tormētts of a tyrants rage, & thought it better by chosen death to change hir life, than by violent hands of bloudy Butchers to be haled to the slaughter. But this Hidrusian Dame was weary of hir owne life, not for that she feared losse of life, but desperate to think of Fortunes sickle day: whych if Fortunes Darlings would regarde in time, they would foresee thepp slippery holde.

A Gentlewoman of Hidrusa.

¶ A Strange and maruellous vse, which in old time was obserued in *HIDRUSA*, where it was lawfull, with the licence of a Magistrate ordayned for that purpose, for every man, and woman that list, to kill them selues.

The ny nth Nouell,



Andello amonges the company of hys Nouels, telleth this History: and in his own person speaketh these words. If I should begin to tell those things which I saw in the tyme that I sayled as longe the Leuant seas, very tedious it would be for you to heare, and I in reporting could not tell which way to ende, bicause I saw and heard thynges right worthy to bee remembred. Notwithstandinge, for satisfaction of deuaurs that be my frendes, I wil not sticke to reherse some of them. But first of all one strange custome, whych in the Romaynes tyme was vsed in one of the Ilandes of the sea Egum, called Hidrusa, in these dayes by the traauylers called *Cea* or *Zea*, & is one

A Gentlewoman

of the Ilandes named Ciclades, whileme full of Populous and goodly Cities, as the ruines thereof at this day to declare. There was in olde time in that Island a very strange Lawe and ordynance, which many hundred yeares was verie well and perfectly kept & obserued. The Law was, that euery person inhabiting within the sayd Isle, of what sexe and condition so euer, being through age, infirmity, or other accidents, weary of their life, might choose, what kind of death that liked them best: howbeit it was prouided that the party, before the dooing of the same, should manifest the cause that moued him thereunto, before the Magistrate elected by the people for that speciall purpose, which they constituted because they sawe that diuers persons had voluntarily killed themselves vpon trifling occasions and matters of little importance: according to whiche lawe very many Men and Women, hardily with so merry there went to theyr Death, as if they had gone to some banquet. or marriage. It chaunced that Pompeius Magnus the dreadfull Roman, betwene whom and Iulius Caesar were fought the greatest battailes for superiourity that euer were sailing by the Sea Aegum arrived at Hidrusa, and there gorged a land vnderstode of the inhabitants the maner of that law and how the same day a woman of great worship had obtained licence of the Magistrate to poison hir selfe. Pompeius hearing tell hereof, was diuened into great admiration, and thought it very strange, that a woman which at the dayes of hir life had liued in great honour and estimation, should vpon light cause or occasion poison her selfe sith it was naturally giuen to eche breathyng wyght to prolong theyr liuing dayes with the longest threed that Atropos could draw out of dame Natures webbe. Wherevpon he commaunded the said matrone to be brought before hym, whose Death for hir vertue was generallye lamented by the whole countrey. When the Gentlewoman was before hym, and had vnderstanding that she was fully resolved and determined to dye, hee began by greates persuasions to exhort hir, that she should not wilfully cast hir selfe away, vpon consideration that she was of lusty yeares, riche and welbeloued of the whole Countrey: and how greates pitty it were but she should reueue hir Wynde and gyue hir selfe still to lyue and remayne, till Natural course

dyd

did ende and length his life: howbeit his graue and earnest perswasion could not diuert hir from hir intended purpose. But Pompeius loth to haue hir dye, ceased not still to prosecute hys former talke with newe reasons and stronger arguments. All which shee patiently heard with fixed countenance, til at lengthe with cleare voyce & smiling cheere she answered him in this maner.

You be greatly deceyued (my lord Pompeius) if you do beleue that I wythout very great prouidence and mature aduise goe about to ende my dayes: for I do knowe and am fully perswaded, that eche creature naturally craueth the prolongation and lengthninge of lyfe, & so much abhorreth to die, as the desirous to lyue, desireth the popson wherch I haue prepared for consumption of my lyfe. Whereupon as I haue diuers times thought, considered and discoursed with my selfe, and amongs many considerations oftentimes debated in my minde, there came into the same the instabilitie and fickle change of Fortune, whose whirling wheele, neuer ceaseth, ne yet remaineth stedfast. It is dayly scene how she doth exalte & aduance some man from the lowest and bottomlesse Pit, euē to the top of high Heaueus, endowinge him with so much Substaunce as he can desire. In other that was most happy, honoured in this world lyke a God, vnto who n no goods and welfare were wanting, who might wel haue bene colled in his lyfe, a thre times happy and blessed wyght, sodaynly from his honour and state decayed and made a very poore man and begger. Some man also, that is both ritche and lusty, accompanied with a fayre wyfe & goodly Chylde, lyuinge in great meryhe & ioyntie, this wicked Lady Fortune, the deuourer of all our contentations, depriveth from the inestimable treasure of health, causeth the fayre Wyfe to loue another better than hir husbände, and with hir venomous Tooth, biteth the childe, that in short space myserable death catcheth the all within his dreadfull Clowthes, wherby hee is defrauded of those chylde, whom after his death he purposed to leaue for hys Heires.

But what meane I to consume tyme and words in declaration of Fortunes vnsteady stay, which is more cleare than beams of the Sunne, of whom dayly a Thousande thousande examples

¶ 3. be ma-

A Gentlewoman

" be manifest. All histories be full of them. The mighty countrey
 " of Graecia doth render ample witness wherin so many excellent men
 " were bred & brought up. Who desirous with their finger to touch
 " the highest heauens, were in a moment throught downe: And so many
 " famous Cities, which gouerned numbers of people, now at this
 " present day we see to bee thral and obedient to the City of Rome.
 " Of these hurtfull and perillous mutations (O noble Pompeius)
 " the Romane City may be a most cleare glasse and Spectacle, and
 " a multitude of the noble Citizens in tyme past and present, may
 " geue plentifull witness.

" But to come to the cause of this my death, I say, that finding
 " my selfe to haue liued these many yeares (by what chaunce I can
 " not tell) in very great prosperitie, in al which tyme I neuer did suf-
 " fer any one my mischance, but fell from good to better, haue passed
 " my time vntill this daye. Nowe fearing the frowninge of Ladies
 " Fortunes face, and that she will repent hir long continued fauour
 " I feare. I say, least the same Fortune should chaunge hir stile, and
 " begynne in the middest of my pleasaunt life to sprinkle hir pos-
 " soned bitterness, and make mee the Receptacle and Quiuer of hir
 " sharpe and noy some arrowes. Wherefore I am nowe determined
 " by good aduise, to rid my selfe from the captiuitie of hir force, fro
 " al hir misfortunes, and from the noysome and grieuous infirmities,
 " which miserably be incident to vs mortall Creatures: And be-
 " lieue me (Pompeius) that many in their aged dayes haue left their
 " life with little honour, who had they bene gone in their youth, had
 " dyed famous for euer.

" Wherefore (my Lord Pompeius) that I may not be tedious
 " vnto thee, or hinder thyne affaires by long discourse, I beseech thee
 " to geue me leave to follow my deliberate disposition, that frank-
 " ly & freely I may be vnburdened of all daunger: for the longer the
 " life doth grow, to the greater annoy sauce & daunger it is subiect.

When she had so sayd, to the great admiration and compassion of
 all those which were present, with trembling hands and feares
 full cheare, she quaffed a great Cup of possoned drinke, the which
 she brought with hir for that purpose, & within a while after dyed.

This

This was the Traiſe of ſe, & order obſerued in Hircania. Which
 good coſt of ſe Dine had ſe noble & valiant Cyprian followed,
 no doubt he would haue bin coſtred to haue bin brought to order:
 And then he had not loſt ſe bloody battel archieued agaynſt hym by
 Iulius Cæſar at Paſſalia, in Egypt: Then hee had not ſuſtayne
 ned ſo many ouerthrowes as he did: then had hee not ben forſaken
 of his frendes, and in the ende endured a death ſo miſerable. And
 for ſo much as for the moſt part hitherto we haue untreated of ma-
 ny Tragicall and cloudy chaunces, reſpeying now from thoſe, let
 vs a little touch ſome medicinable remedies for loue, ſome leſſons
 for gouernment and obedience, ſome treaties of amorous
 Dames, and haute Gallies of Princes, Queenes & other
 perſons, to variate the changeable Diet, where-
 with deuers bee affected, ſwellinge their
 Stomackes with ſome moze pleaſant
 Digeltions than they haue.

taſted.

(.)

G 4.

Fauſtina

Faustina the Empresse.

¶ The dishonest Loue of *FAUSTINA* the Empresse, and with what remedy the same loue was remoued and taken away.

The Tenth Nouell.



Rue and most holy is the sentence, that the Lady, Gentlewoman, or other wight of Female kinde, of what degree or condition soeuer she be, be she fayre, fowle, or ysaououred, cannot be endued with a moze precious Pearle or Jewell, than is the neate and pure vertue of honestie: which is of such valour, that it alone without other vertue, is able to render hir that glistereth in hir attyre, most famous and excellent. Be she moze beautiful than Helena, be she mightier than the Amazon, better learned than Sappho, rycher than Flora, moze louinge than Queene Dido, or moze noble than the best Empresse and Queene of the worlde, or be she full of any other vertue, if she want the name of chaste, shee is not worthy so much as to beare the title of honour, nor to be entertayned in honest company. Wee shall peruse hereafter an history of a Countesse of Celant, that was a passing fayre Dame, singularly adorned with Nature's gifts. She was fayre, pleasaunt, amiable, comely, and perchaunce not altogether barrayne of good erudition and learnige: she could play vpon the instruments, sing, dance, make and compose witty, and amorous Sonets, and the moze her company was frequented, the moze amiable and gracious & same was esteemed. But because she was vnhamfast and lesse chaste, she was boyde of honest regarde. Such as bee dishonest, do not onely hurt them selues, but giue cause to the common people to mutter and grudge at their parentes education, at their husbands gouernment and institution of their Chidzen, causing them most commonly to leade a discontented and heauy lyfe. Thinke you that

Augustus

Augustus Caesar (albeit he was a victorious Emperour, and led a triumphant raigne) liued a contented life when he sawe the two Iulia, one of them his daughter, the other his Niece, to vse them selues like comon strumpets constrained through their shamefull acts to pin, & close by him selfe, shunning the conuersation of men, and once in minde to cut his Daughters Waynes to let out his Lusty bloud? Was not he woe (the teares trickling downe his Princely face) to say, that better it was neuer to haue children & to be deade wout them, than to haue a brutish wife and children so disordered? He termed his Daughters to be a Carrion lump of flesh, full of stench & filthinesse. But if I list to speake of women of this age, fro noble to vnnoble, from an Emperours Daughter to a Ploughmans modder, whose liues do frame after Iulia his loze, my pen to the stumps would weare, and my hande be wearied with witting. And so likewise it would of numbres no doubt in these dayes that folow the trace of Lucrece line, that huswifely and chastly contriue the day and nightes in pure & Godly exercise. But of the naughty sozte to speake, (leauing to boyde offence, sutch as do flourish in our time) I will not conceale the Empreſſe Messalina, that was Wyfe to the Emperour Claudius, not only unworthy of Empreſſe degree, but of the title of Woman: who being abused by many, at length arriued to sutch abhominable lust, as not contented with dayly adulterous life, would resoꝛt to the common stews, where the ruffians and publike harlots haunted, for little hire, and there for vilest price with eche slaue did humble herselfe: and at night not satisfied, but weared, returned home to his Palace, not ashamed to disclose his selfe to any that list to looke vpon his: And for victoꝛy of that beastly game, contended with his lyke. But not to say so much of his as I finde in Plinie his naturall history, in Suetonius, and Cornelius Tacitus, I leaue his to his selfe, because I haue made promise to remeꝛber the dishonest loue for exaꝓle sake, which I reade of Fauftina, whose beauty of all Writers is vouchd to be most excellēt, if excellency of good life had thereunto ben coupled. She was the daughter & wyfe of two holy and vertuous Emperours, the one called Antonius Pius, the other Marcus Antonius. This M. Antonius in all vertuous woꝛkes was perfect & godly, and singu-

Faultina the Empreſſe.

and ſingularly loued his wife Faultina, and although ſhe was famous to the world, and a ſtable to the people, yet he cared not for the ſame, ſuch was the paſſing loue hee bare vnto hir, & thus we to ſpeake of hir beaſtly behauiour amongs the noble ſort, without regard vnto hir moſt noble husbände, and come wee to treat of a certaine ſavage kind of luſt ſhe had to one of the Gladiatores, which were a certaine ſort of Gamblers in Rome, which we terme to bee maiſters of Defence. She was ſo far in loue with this Gladiator, as ſhe could not eat, drinke, or ſleepe, ne take any reſt, This Faultina was ſo vniſhamefaſt, as not regarding hir ſtate, being as I ſayde before the daughter, and wife of two moſt worthy Emperors, dyſdarned not to ſubmitte her Body to the Baſeneſſe of one of the vileſt ſort, a Rascal Frenchman: and many times would goe to Caieta, a Citie and hauē of Campania, to toyne hir ſelfe with the Galve ſlaues there. Hir husbände which loued her dearly, comfortyng his feeble louing wyfe ſo well as he coulde, cauſed the beſt Phyſicians he could finde, to come vnto hir for recouery of hir health. But all the deuſed Phyſike of the world was not able to cure her, ſhe was ſo loueliſke.

At the end knowing by long experience the fauour and loue hir husbände bare vnto hir, and knowing that nothing could withdraw his continued minde, ſhe tolde him, that al the torment and payne ſhe ſuſtained, was for the loue of a Gladiator, towards whom hir loue was ſo miſerably bent that except ſhe had his company, death was the next medicine for hir diſeaſe. The good husbände which beyond meaſure loued his wife, comforted hir with ſo louing wordes as he could, and bad hir to bee of good cheare, promiſſinge hee would prouide remedy. Afterwards conſulting with a wiſe man a Chaldee boy, opened vnto him the effect of his wifes diſeaſe, & how ſhe was loueliſke with ſuch a perſon one of the Gamblers of the City, promiſſing great rewardes if he could by his ſecretes ſerche out redreſſe to ſaue hir life. The Chaldee could tel him none other remedy, but that he muſt cauſe the Gladiator to be ſlaine, and with the bloud of him to anoint the body of the Empreſſe, not telling vnto hir what the ointment was; which done, that he muſt goe to naked bed to hir, and do the act of matrimony. Some Hiſtoriographers do write, that the Chaldee gaue him counſell, that Fau-

nina should drinke the blood of the Gladiator, but the most part, that hir body was bathed in the same. But how so euer it was, it would haue cooled the hottest Gentlewomans Stomack in þe world, to be anointed with like Salue. To conclud the Gladiator was slyne and the medicine made and applied to the Patient, and the Emperour lay with the Empresse, and begat hir with childe. And immediately she forgot the Gladiator, neuer after that tyme reme[m]bering him. If this medicine were applied to our carnall louinge dames (which God defend) they would not onely follow Faustina in forgetfulnes, but also would mislike hir Physicke: and not greatly regard the counsell of such doctours. By meanes of this medicine & copulation was the Emperour Commodus borne, who rather resembled the Gladiator than his father. In whose breast rested a storehouse of mischefe and vyce, as Herodian and other Wryters plentifully do wryte.

Two Maidens of Carthage

CHERA hid a treasure, *ELISA* going about to hang her selfe, & tying the halter about a beame found that treasure, & in place thereof left the halter. *PHILENE* the daughter of *CHERA* going for that treasure, and busily searching for the same, found the halter, wherewithal for d[ea]th she would haue hanged hir selfe, but forbidden by *ELISA*, who by chaunce espied hir; she was restored to part of hir losse; leading afterwards a happy and prosperous lyfe.

The Eleventh Nouell.

Fortune the Lady Regent, and Gouvernesse of many lyfe, so alreth and chaungeth the State thereof as many times we see the noble boine from that great height to poore, wherem they be, debased so farre, as either miserably their lyfe is spent in the hungry lap of Dame Penury, or else

Two Maidens.

or else contrived in the ugly lothsom house of Wantonnesse, & they
dame of all honesty and vertue. Sometimes we marke the vnnob-
le ladde that was noofoled in the homely countrey caban, or rude
ciuile shoppe, attaine to that whech the onely honorable and gentle
do aspire: and he agayne that is ambitious in climbing by the tur-
ning wheele, throwen down beneth the brinke of aduerse luck, whel-
med in & ditch & pit of black despair. We note also sometimes & the
carelesse wpght of Fortunes giftes, hath (vnlooke for) his mouth
and throte crammed full of promotion and worldes delights. Such
is the maner of hir sickle stay. Whereof this Hystory ensuing, ge-
ueth some intelligence, by remembryng the destenied lucks of. 2. poore
soyrgirls & were left destitute of desired things, both like to fal in
to despair, and yet both holpen with that they most desired: which
in this sort beginneth. In the time that Scipio Affricanus had be-
sieged the City of Carthage, Chera that was a widow (dwellinge
there) seeinge the daunger at hand wherein the City stood, and
doubtyng the losse and ouerthrowe of the same, and that the hono-
of the dames and womankind, coulde vneths be safe and harme-
lesse, determined not to abide the bittermost: and hauinge a good
quantity of Gold & precious Stones, she bestowed the same in a cas-
quet, and hid it vpon one of the beames of hir house, purposinge
whē the sir & danger was past, to retourne to hir house agayne for
those hir hidden things. Which done in the habite of a poore wo-
man with her onely daughter in hir hand that was about. 5. or. 6.
yeares of age, she went out of Carthage, and passed ouer the Seas
into Scicilia, where fallinge sicke, after she had bene there thre or
foure yeares, at length died. But before she departed, she called
hir Daughter before hir, then about Ten yeares olde, and told hir
the place where she had layed hir Casket. And by reason of the
Victory gotten by Scipio, the City was maruellously chaunged,
and amongs other things, the house of Chera was given to a Ro-
mane Souldiour that was so enriched with Nobility of Wynd,
as hee was poore of Fortunes Goods. Whych Chera vnder-
standeng, was sorrowfull, and doubted of hir thynges secretly
bestowed

secretly bestowed vpon the beame. And herevpon she sayd vnto hir daughter, that for so much as their house was in the possession of en other, she ought to be wise and circumspect in the recouerye of of hir hidden goods: and that hir death was the more greuous vnto hir, because she must leaue hir (so yong, a maiden) vnprouided of frendes for hir good gouernement. But yet she encouraged hir againe and sayd: that alth necessity appoched, she must in child she age, put on a graue and auncient mind, and beware howe she bewrayed that casket to any person, for that of purpose shee reserued the knowledge thereof, to hir self, that it might serue for hir preferment, and procure hir a husband worthy of hir selfe. And the maiden demaunding the value of the same, shee tolde hir that it was worth. CC. Talentes, and gaue hir in wryting the particulars inclosed within the Casket, and that the lyke bill shee should find within the same, wrytten wth hir owne hande. And so the good woman within a while after dyed, leauyng behynde hir the yong mayden hir daughter, that maruellously lamented the death of hir mother, accordingly as nature taught hir, and ech other reasonable wyght depriued from their dearest friends. The maiden for hir petyes was very wise, and would disclose to none what hir mother had sayd, keeping the wryting very carefully. Not long after Philene (whych was the maidens name) fell in loue with a Gentleman of Sicilia of greate reputation and authozity, who al bee it he sawe hir to be very faire and comely, yet cared not for hir loue in respect of Marriage, for that hee knewe hir to be pooze, and withoute dowrie mete for a Gentleman, ispyng and mocking to see hir fixe hir minde on him, for desyre to haue him to hir husband, that was a personage so noble and rich: which refusall pierced the hearte of the tender maiden, bicause she saw hir selfe forsaken for nothyng else, but for want of goods: whych made hir to think and consider, howe shee myght recouer the riches that hir mother had layed by in Carthage. It chanced as she was in this meditation, the daughter of him to whome the House of Chera was giuen, called Elisa, was likewise enamoured of a noble yong gentelman in Carthage, who bicause Elisa was the daughter of a Sculdieur, and not very rich, in like manner laughed & iested at hir loue, no lesse than the other

other did at Philene. Notwithstanding Eliza attempted all meanes possible to induce the yong man to loue hir, but hir practise and attempts tended to none effect. And last of all, desirous to haue absolute answere, and thereby vnderstande, that he would rather dye than take hir to Wyfe, she fell into despair, and cursed fortune, and hir fate. that she was not borne riche enough to match with hir chosen Gentleman, and that he being poore, must fall in loue with such a personage: whereupon she miserably tormented hir selfe, still bewayling hir vnhappy lucke, that shee could not win him to be hir husband, for whych only intent and purpose shee lo-ued him. And this amorous passion incredibly growing in hir, the rootes whereof be planted in the restless humor of melancholy, & wanting all hope and comforte to stay that Banke, and Bannish the weede, it so increased in her, as shee frantick in raging loue gaue hir selfe ouer to the spoyle of herself: And to rid her from þe griefe, she determined to kill hir selfe, Imagining whych way she might do the same. At length she was resolved, with hir fathers sword to pierce hir body: But hir heart not serving hir thereunto, deuised by þe Halter to end her lyfe, saying thus to herselfe: Thys death yet shal do me good, þe cruel mā may know that for his sake I haue done this fact: And if hir heart be not made of Iron or Steele, hee can not chose but sorowe and lament, that a poore mayde whych loued him better thā her owne lyfe, hath made such wretched ende onely for his cruelty. Eliza concludinge vpon this intent, prepared a Halter: And being alone in her house, in the chamber where the Casack lay vpon the beame, placed a stoole vnder the same, and began to tye the Halter about the beame: In doinge whercof, she espied the casack, and reached the same vnto hir, who feeling it to be heauy and weighty, immediatly did open it, and founde the Wyll within, which Chera had written with hir owne hand, agreeable to that which she had deliuered to hir daughter, wherein were particularly remembred the Jewels and other riches fast closed within the casack. Who disclosing the bagges wherein the gold & Jewels were bound vp, & seeing þe great value of the same, wōdred thereat, & loyfull for that fortune, hid the rope which she had prepared for hir death,

death, in the place where she found the casket, and with great gladnesse and wirth went vnto hir father, and shewed him what she had found, whereat the father reioyced no lesse, then his daughter Elisa did, bicause he sawe himselfe thereby to be discharged of his former pooze life, and like to proue a man of inestimable wealth and substance: and saw likewise that the pooze wench his daughter, by the addicion of those riches, was like to attayne the party whom she loued. When he had taken forth those bagges and well surueyed the value, to the intent no man might suspect the sodayne mutation of his state, tooke his daughter with him, and went to Rome, where after he had remayned certayne monethes, hee returned to Carthage, and began very galantly to apparell himselfe, and to keepe a bountifull and liberall house. His table and port was very delicate and sumptuous, and hys Stable stoxed wth many fayre Horses, in all poyntes shewinge himselfe very Noble and rich: By which sodayne chaunge of state, the whole Cittie beleued, that he had brought that wealth from Rome. And bicause it is the common opinion of the vulgar sort, that where there is no riches, there is no nobility, and that they alone make men noble & gentle (a foolish Opinion in deepe proceedinge from heads that be rash and light) the people markinge that poze and charge kept by the Souldiour, conceived that he was of some noble house. And throughout the whole Cittie great and solemne honour was done vnto him: whereupon the young Gentleman, with whom Elisa was in loue, began to bee ashamed of himselfe, that he had disdained the mayden. Whych mayden seeing hir fathers house to be in such reputation, made sute to her father, that he would procure the Gentleman to bee hir Husband. But hir father wylled hir in any wyse to keepe secret hir desire, and not to seeme her selfe to bee in loue, and wylsef tolde hir, that moze meete it was, that shee should bee solicited by him, than shee to make sute or request for marriage: allcaginge that the lesse desirous the Gentleman had bene of hir, the moze deare and better beleued shee shoulde bee to hym. And many tymes when hys Daughter was demanded to Wyfe, he made aunswere that Matrimony was a state of no litle importance, as enduring the whole course

Two Maidens.

course of life, and therefore ought well to bee considered and weighed, before any Conclusion were made. But for all these Demaundes and Answers, and all these stops and stayes, the mayden was indowed with an honest dowry, and in the end her louer and she were married, with so great pleasure and satisfaction of them both, as they deemed themselves happy. In the meane time while these things were done at Carthage, Philene in Scicilia toke thought how she might recouer her goods geuen to her by her mother, desirous by their meanes also to sort hir earnest & ardet loue to happy successe: And debatinge with her selfe (as we haue sayd before) howe she might obtayne them, because the house was in possession of an other, thought it to bee agaynst reason and order, that although she had lost hir house, yet hir goods ought to be restored vnto hir, which were hir onely maintenance and reputation and the fittest Instrument that should conduct her loue to happy ende. And hearinge tell that the father of Elisa the Possessor of hir Mothers house liued at Carthage in great Royalty and magnificence, thought that if by some sleight and Pollicie she founde not means to enter the house without suspicion, hir attempt would be in vayne: determined therefore to goe to Carthage, and to seeke seruice in that House, counterfaytinge the kynde and habitz of a Page. For she considered, that if she went thither in order and apparell of a mayden, she should incur the perill of hir virginity, and fall into the lapse of diuers other daungers: purposed then to goe thither in maner of a Page and lacky. And when she had in that sort furnished herselfe, she passed the Seas, and arriued at Carthage. And seekinge seruice about the City, at length chaunced to be retained in a house that was next neyghbour to the Soaldier, and because this wench was gentle and of a good disposition, was wel beloued of her master, who beinge the friend of Elisa, hir father many times sent vnto him diuers presents & gifts by Philene, wherevpon she began to be acquainted and familiar with the seruantes of the house, & by her oft repayre thither viewed and marked euery corner, and vpon a time entred the chamber wherein hir Mother Chera tolde hir, that shee had bestowed hir goods, and lookinge vpon the Beames espied by certayne Signes and tokens, one of the m to

them to be the same where the Casket lay. And therewithal wel satisfied and contented, verily supposed that the casket still remayned there, & without further businesse for that time, expected some other season for recovery of the same. In the ende, the good behaviour and diligence of Phileas, was so liked of Elisa, as hir father and she made sute to hir master to giue hir leaue to serue them, who because they were his friends, preferred Phileas vnto them, and became a page of that house. And one day secretly repayringe into the chamber, where the treasure lay mounted vpon a skole, and sought the beame for the casket: where she found no casket, but in place where that lay, the halter, wherewithal Elisa would haue strangled hir selfe. And searching all the parts of the Chamber and the beames, & finding nothing else but the halter, she was surprised with such incredible sorrowe, as she seemed like a stock, wout speech, voice or life. Afterwardes, being come againe to hir selfe, she began pitifully to lament & complaine in this maner: Oh wretched Phileas. vnder what vnluckie signe and planer was thou begotten and borne: with what offence were the heauens wroth, when they forced thee to pierce thy mothers wombe? Could I poore creature when I was framed within the mould of nature, and fed of my mothers substance within hir wombe, and afterwards in due time brought forth to light, commit such crime, as to prouoke the celestiall impressions to conspire agaynst my Nature, to bringe mine increased age into such wretched state & plights wherein it is now wrapped? No no, my faulte was nothing, it was parents offence, if any were at all: For many times we see the innocent babe afflicted for the fathers guilt. The gods do punish the posterity, for some sacrilege or notorious crime committed by progenitors. Their manner is not to suffer heinous faultes vnrueged. Their Justice can not abide such mischief vncorrected for example sake. So saith it by me. First my father died, after wardes my Mother a widow was driuen to abandon native soyle, and seeke reliefe in foreign land: And leauing that wherewith we were possessed in continuall keeping, were forced a simple life to leade among straungers. And my mother, reiding forth hir ghost, made me beleue that shee had hidden great treasures here: And I vnhappy wench thinking

Two Maidens

to obtaine the pray, haue wandzed in counterfait kinde, and fetched many a bitter sigh, vntill I came into this place: And the thing I hoped for, which myght haue bene the meanes and ende of all my care, is turned to nothyng: A casket transformed into a halter, gold and Jewels into a piece of rope: Is this the marriage dowry (Philene) thou art like to haue to match with him whom thou so derely louest? Is this the knot that shall conioyne you both in yoke of mā and wife? Oh wretch & miserable cattife, the goods thy mother layd by for thee, for maintenance of thy rest, and safegarde of thine honour, and for the reputation of thy noble house wherof thou camst, is now berieued from thee. They that kepe this stately house, and beare their lofty port amid the best, haue despoiled thee poore wench of that after which thou didst vainly trauaile. But what remedye now? Sith thy wicked lot doth thus fall out, sith thy cruel fate is loth thou shouldest attaine the thing on whych thy mind is bent, & sith thy painfull life can take no ende, make speede to rid thy selfe from misery by that meanes which he hath prepared for thee that hath found thy goods: who seeing his good aduenture to be thy bane, his happy pray to bee thy spoyle, hath left in lieu of treasure, a halter, that therewith thou mightest dispatch thy selfe from all thy griefes, and in their vnhappye companie to cease thy life, that the lothsom, lengthning of the same might not increase thy further plaints, sorowes, anguish and affliction. And in the place where infortunate Philene toke hir beginning, ther the miserable Wretche must finishe that, which without hir desired gaine no longer can be mainteyned. Peraduenture it may come to passe as when thy soule is losed from this mortall charge, it shall walke by hym, by whom it liueth, and by him also whom she thought to ioy in greatest cōtentation, that euer mortall woman did. And thus plaininge & sighing hir ill fortune, when she had ended those wordes she tyed her halter about the beame, where sometimes hir Treasure lay, which beying done shee put the same about hir necke, sayinge: O crooked Lady Fortune that hast thus unfrendly dealt with thine humble client: Oh dispayre, thou vgly wretch and companion of the distressed that is vnwillinge to leaue my haunte vntill thou playe the Hangman. Oh Druell incarnate that goest aboute to hale and plucke

and plucke the innocent into the hellish caue. Out vpon the thou
 deformed hellish dogge, that waitest at the fierre gate to sette them
 in, which faine would passe an other porte. And as shee was pow-
 ring forth these spitefull wordes, redy to remoue the stoole to fetch
 hir swynge, the Gods which would not giue consent, that the inno-
 cent wench should enter that vile & opprobrious death, moued the
 heart of Elisa, to passe by the place where she was in workeinge
 on her selfe that desperate end: who hearing those moneful plaints
 bitred after such terrible manner, opened the chamber doore, and
 saw that miserable sight: and ignorant of the occasson, moued with
 pity, ranne and stayd hir from the fact, saying thus vnto hir: Ah
 Philene, (whych was the name that she had giuen to hir selfe)
 what folie hath bewitched the mind? what phrensie hath incharmed
 thy braine? what harde aduenture hath moued thee in this misera-
 ble wise, to ende thy life. Ah (sayd Philene) suffer me Elisa, to finish
 my tormentes, giue me liberty to vnburden my selfe from the bande
 of cares that do assaile me on euery side: Lette these Whithoundes
 that stande heere rounde aboute mee, haue thei praye for
 which they gape. Thou moued by compassion, arte come hither to
 stay mee from the halter: but in doing so, thou doest mee greater
 wrong, than doeth despayre, whych eggeth me therunto. Suffer I
 say, that mine afflictions may take some end, with cruel fortune wis-
 leth it to be so, or rather vnhappy fate: For sorrowe death is sweeter
 in my conceit, than bitter life continued in sharper sauce than gall
 or wormewood. Elisa hearing her speake these wordes, sayd: For so
 much as thy mishap is such, as onely death is the nearest remedye
 to deprive thy payne, what wicked chaunce hath induced thee, in
 this house to finish those thy miseries? What hath prouoked the to
 such augury to this our most happy and ioyfull family? forced
 is the partye (sayd Philene) so to doe, when destiny hath so ap-
 pointed. What destiny is that demanded Elisa? Tell mee I beseech
 thee, perchaunce thou mayst prouent the same by other remedies
 by than that whereabout thou goest. No (answered Philene) that
 is impossible, but to satisfie thy request which so instantly thou cra-
 uest of me, I will tel thee the summe of al my misery. In saying so she
 teares gus-

Two Maidens

teares gushed forth hir Eyes, and hir voice brake oute into complaints, & thus began to say: Ah Elisa, why should I seke to prolong my wretched life in this vale of wretchednesse, wherein I haue ben so miserably afflicted? my mother (pitieng mine estate & seeynge me boyde of friends, & a fatherlesse child vpon hir death bed, disclosed vnto me a treasure which she had hidden vnder this beam wher vnto this halter (the best remedy of my misery) is tied, and I making serch for the same: in place of that treasure found this halter, ordeined as I suppose (by what misfortune I knowe not) for my death: and where I thought among the happy to be the most happy I see my selfe amongst all vnlucky Women to be the most vnfornate. Elisa hearing hir say so, greatly maruelled & said: Why then I perceiue thou art a woman and not a man. Pea truly answered the vnhappy mayden: A singular example of extreme misery to all sortes of women. And why so? demaunded Elisa. Because (answered Philene) that the pestilent planet vnder which I was borne, will haue it to be so: and the she told hir all that which had chanced from the time of hir mothers departure out of Carthage, and how she went into Sicilia and recounted vnto hir the loue that she bare to a Sicilian Gentleman, and howe that he disdayning hir for hir pouerty, refused to be hir husband: wher vpon to archiue hir desire as loth to forgoe him, was come in manner of a page to Carthage, to recouer the riches which hir mother had hidden there, to the intent she might obtaine (if not by other meanes) with som rich dowrie, the yong Gentleman to husoand whom she so dearly loued. And then reenforcing hir complaint, she said, that stich Fortune had de spoiled hir of that which might haue accomplished hir desire, resting no cause why she should any longer liue, the halter was prepared for hir to end hir daies, & to rid hir life from troubles. And therfore she praied hir to be contented, & she might make that end which hir misaduenture & wicked fortune had predestinate. I doubt not but there be many, which vnderstanding that the treasure did belong to Philene, if they had found the like as Elisa did, would not onely not haue forbidden hir the Death, but also by speede meanes haue hastened the same, for so much as by that occasion the hidden treasure should haue ben out of strife & contentio: so great is the force of

Coustousnesse

Couetousnesse in the minde of man. But good Elisa knew full wel the mutability of Fortune in humane thinges, for so much as she by seeking death, had founde the thinge which not onely deliuered hir from the same, but made hir the best contented woman of the worlde. And Philene seekinge hir contentation, in place thereof, and by like occasion, founde the thinge that would haue ben the instrument of hir death. And moued with very great compassion of the mayden, desired to haue better aduertisement howe that treasure could belong to her. Then Philene shewing forth hir mothers writing, which particularly remembred the parcels within the casket: and Elisa seeinge the same to be agreeable to the hand wherewith the other was writte, that was founde in the casket: was assured that all the gold and Jewels which she had found, did belöng vnto Philene, and sayd vnto herselfe: The Gods defend that I should prepare the halter for the death of this innocent Wench, whose substance hath yelded vnto mee my hartes desire. And comforting the mayden, in the ende she sayd: Be contented Philene, & giue ouer this thy desperate determination, for both thy life shalbe prolonged, and thy discontented minde appeased, hoping thou shalt receiue the comforte thou desirest. And with those words she tosed the halter from hir neck, and takinge hir by the hand, brought hir to the place where hir father and husband were, and did them to vnderstand the force and terms whereunto the fier of loue and desperation had brought that amorous mayden, tellinge theym that all the treasure and Jewels which she had found (where she left the halter, and wherewith Philene was minded to hang hir selfe) did by good right and reason belonge to hir: the she did let them see the counterpayne of that bill which was in the casket, in al points agreeable therunto, declaringe moreouer that herre life and reasonable yt were, like curtesie house-keepe vnto hir, as by whom they hadde receiued so greate honoure and delights Her Husband which was a Carthagian boyme, very churleshe and couetous, albeit by conferring the writings together, he knewe the matter to be true, and that Philene ought to be the possessor thereof, yet by no meanes woulde agree vnto hys Wifes request, but fell into a rage, callinge hir foole and Idiot, and sayinge that hee had rather that shee had bene a Thousande tymes

harged, than he would giue hir one peny: and although she had sa-
 ued hir life, yet she ought to be banished the Citie, for so much as
 she same and all the proprietie thereof was brought into the Ro-
 manes handes, and amongst the same hir mothers house, and al hir
 goods in possession of her victors, a euery part, at their disposition
 and pleasure. And moreover, for so much as hir mother and shee
 had departed Carthage, and would not abide the hazarde and ex-
 tremity of their countrey as other Citizens did, and hauing con-
 cealed and hidden those Riches which ought to haue ben brought
 forth for the common defence of their countrey, and gone out of the
 citie as though she had ben a poore simple Woman, poorely there-
 fore she ought to lye in Scicilia, whither she was fled. Wherefore
 he was of opinion, that she in this maner beinge departed whē the
 citie had greatest neede of hir helpe, was disfranchised of all the
 rightes and customes of the countrey, and that like as a stranger
 can recouer nothinge in that citie, except he haue the priuiledge &
 freedome of the same; enen so Philene (for the considerations be-
 fore recited) ought to be compted for a stranger, and not to parti-
 cipate any thinge within the citie, accordingly as the lawes forbid.
 When he had so sayd, he was like by force to expell the sorrowfull
 mayden out of the house. These wordes greatly grieved Philene,
 who doubted least his father in law would haue toynd with him,
 and agree vnto his alleaged reasons, which seemed to be of great
 importance and effect: and therefore thought newly to returne to
 the Walter for remedie of hir griefes: but it otherwise chaunced, for
 the Father of Elisa, which was a Romane boyn, and affected with
 a Romane minde, and therefore of a Gentle and well disposed na-
 ture, knew full wel, that although the house was giue vnto him by
 the consent of Scipio, & other the Captaynes, yet he knew that their
 pleasure was not to bestowe on him her treasure hidde in the same,
 & therefore ought to be restored to the true owner, or else confiscate
 and properly due to the Romane Exchequer, or common treasure
 house of the same. And albeit that it was true that hir Mother
 went out of Carthage, in the time of the Siege, and therefore had
 forsaynted the same, yet he determined to shewe some curtesie vnto
 the younge

soe young mayden, and to be th inkfull to fortune, for the benefite
 which by hir means he had receyued, thinkinge that she would be
 displeased with him, if he with vngratefull minde or dishonoura-
 ble intent should receyue hir giftes. For in those dayes the Romas
 highly reuerenced Lady Fortune, and in hir honour had Erected
 Temples, and Dedicated Altars, and in prosperous tyme and
 happy aduentures, they colecrated bowes, and sacrifices vnto hir,
 thinkinge (although superstitiously) that like as from God there
 proceeded none euil, euen so from him all goodnesse was deriued
 that all felicity and other good happes, whych chaunced vppon
 the Romane Common wealth, proceeded from Fortune, as the
 fountayne and most Principall Occasion, and that they which
 would not confesse hir force, and be thankfull vnto hir godheade,
 incurred in the ende hir Displeasure and Daungers very great
 and haynous. This Romane then hauing this opinion, bringe (as
 I sayd before) of a gentle Disposition would at one instant both
 render thanks to Fortune, and vse curtelle vnto that mayden, by
 whose riches and goods from lowe degree he was aduanced to
 honourable state. Wherefore turning his face vnto her, with lo-
 uing countenaunce he spake these wordes: Right gentle damosel,
 albeit by the reasons alleged by my sonne in lawe, none of the trea-
 sure hidden by thy mother, and founde by my Daughter in thy
 house, of right doth appertayne to thee, yet I will that thou shalt
 vnderstande my curtelle, and that thou see how the Romanes doe
 more esteeme the nobility of their minde, than all the riches of the
 world. Therefore that thou mayst enioy thy loue, I referre vnto
 thee and to thy disposition all the goods and Jewels that were in
 the Casket, and contayned in thy writtinge. Beholde therefore
 (causinge the Casket to be brought vnto him) all the Jewels and
 other parcelles that were in the same when they were founde, take
 so much thereof as thou wilt, and if so bee thou desire the whole,
 willingly I render the same vnto thee, Athens by meanes of those
 riches, and the industry of my traffique, I haue garded so much,
 as hauinge giuen a conuenient dowry vnto my daughter, I hono-
 rably liue without it. Philene seeinge the curtelle of this valiant
 Gentleman, gaue him infinite thanks, & then sayd vnto him: Sir,

Two Maidens

I for my part dare aske nothinge, well knowinge that if you geue me nothinge, there is no cause why I shoulde complaine of you, but of my hard and wicked fortune, whych hath offered and giue that to you, whych ought to haue bin mine. Wherefore, with your curtesie is such, as you refer the whole to mee, I purpose to take nothinge, but will that the whole shall bee in your disposition: and giue mee what you will, what so giuen of your liberality, I shal moze thankfully receiue, than if debt or duty did constrayne it: And if it shall please you to giue me nothing, my heart shal bee so well appeased, for that your curtesie, as rather woulde I chose to liue in the pooze estate wherein I am, than be rich with your displeasure. Howbeit, the Romaine intreated Philene to take thereof what shee thought good: And Philene craued no moze than it pleased hym to giue. Either of the standinge vpon these termes Elisa, brake the strife, who knowinge the force of loue, and the griefes incident to his clients, by hir owne harmes, moued to haue compassion vpon the afflicted, turned towardes hir father, & sayd vnto him: Right louinge father, the contention betweene Philene and you, is risen of a matter which came by me. The treasure for which you strue, and committed to the will of Philene, was found by me, whereof if it please you both, I will take such order, as both you shalbe satisfied. I am contented sayd hir father: and I likewise answered Philene. Then sayd Elisa: You father hitherto haue had but one Daughter, which am I, vnto whom like a childe and louinge daughter I haue bene obedient, and shalbe all the dayes of my life: And I agayne haue receiued from you such fatherly education, as your ability and state required. This treasure I found and gaue to you for ease and comfort of vs both. To me it yelded the only delectation of my heart in choyse of husband, to you honour and estimation within this City. Wherefore, with the principal came frō me, and I right relecth in this careful maiden, my desire is, that where before you had but one daughter, you will adopt this mayden for another, and thinke I you haue twaine, and that you will intreate Philene in like sort as if shee were my Sister: And where this Inheritance and reuenue wherewith now you be possessed, and this casket also ought to be onely myne after your decease, for that you haue no sonnes, nor other Issue, my de-

Wm Richards His L^{ty} 1654

Are is that you geue vnto her the halfe, and that you accept hir for
 your daughter, as I doe meane to take hir for my suster: and ac-
 cordingely to vse hir duringe yefe. With these wordes Elisa em-
 braced Philene, and louingly dyd kisse hir, sayinge vnto hir: For
 my suster I entertayn thee Philene, and then shee tooke hir by the
 hand, and gaue hir vnto hir father with these wordes: Beholde
 father, your new daughter, whom I beseech you so hartly to loue
 as you do Elisa your naturall chyld. The father prayled the cur-
 tesse of Elisa, and receiued Philene for his Daughter and was
 contented wyth the Arbitrament of hys Daughter. But Elisa
 perceyuing hir husband to be somewhat offended therewith, spe-
 cially for that the same should be deuided into two partes, which
 was like to haue bene hys wholly before, perswaded hym by gentle
 meanes to be content wyth that agreement: and although at the
 first he could not well brooke the liberality of his wyfe, yet at length
 viewinge the good behaviour and gentle disposition of Philene, &
 the contented minde of his father in law, together wyth the noble
 nature of his wyfe, and hir wise aduertisement of Fortunes sic-
 kle assurance, yielded, and acknowledged Philene for hys Kins-
 woman. And so Philene put in possession of the halfe of those
 goods, whereof she was altogether out of hope, was well sa-
 tisfied, and had the Romane for hir father, Elisa for hir Sister,
 and hir Husband for hir Kinsman. That valyant Roman was
 so careful ouer Philene, as if she had ben his owne daughter, and
 so induozed, as he brought to passe that she obtayned hir beloued
 Sicilian to husbande: who also sent for hym to Carthage, where
 he continued with his wife in the Romanes house, and loued them
 both so dearely as though he had ben father to the one, and fa-
 ther in lawe to the other.

In this maner these two pooze wenches attained their two hus-
 bands, for hauing of whom, they onely care was for Ryches, and
 for lacke thereof were bypuen to despayre. And in the ende both
 (though diuersly, and the one moze fortunat thā the other) recou-
 red riches, and with the same they husbandes, to their heartes
 singular ioye and contentation. Which lucke I wylle to all o-
 ther pooze Girles (but not hangng rype, or louenge in despayre)
 that

of Carthage

that bend their mindes on Martage, and seeke to people by that estate, their countrey common wealth.

But leauinge for a time these Tragicall Nouels and heauy chaunces, wee purpose to remember some morall matters right worthy of remembraunce, Letters they bee from a goodly Pagane clerk, the famous Philosopher Plutarch, Schoolemaister to an Emperour of no lesse vertue, than hys maysters Schoole and mynde was fraught with diuine Precepts. Wherefore proceede (good Reader) to continue thy paynes by the readinge of these, so well as thou hast vouchsafed to employ thy time before. They shal no lesse delite thee, if vertue brooke thee, they shal no lesse content thee, if duty pleaseth thee, than any Delightsome thing, whercupon (at any tyme) thou hast employed thy vacaunte tyme.

Letters

Letters of the Emperour Traiane

g Letters of the Philosopher Plutarch to the noble and vertuous Emperour Traiane, and from the sayd Emperour to Plutarch: the lyke also fro the sayd Emperour to the Senate of Rome. In all which be conteyned godly rules for government of Princes, obedience of Subiects, and their dueties to Common wealth.

The. X I I. Nouell.



Because these Letters ensue (proceeding from the infallible Schoole of Wisdome, and practised by an apt Scholler of the same, by a noble Emperour that was well trained by a famous Philosopher) in myne opinion deserue a place of Recorde amonge our English Volumes, and for the wholsome Erudition, ought to Englishmen in english shape to bee described, I haue thought good in this place to introduce & same. And although to some it shal not peraduenture seeme fit and conuenient to mingle holy with prophane (accordinge to the prouerbe) to intermedle amongs pleasaunt histories, earnest epistles, amid amorous Nouels, learned Letters: yet not to care for respect or thought of such defaults, I iudge them not vnseemely, the course of those histories. For amid the diuine works of Philosophers and Oratours, amongs the pleasaunt paynes of antient Poets, and the Nouell writers of our time, merry verses so well as morall matters be mingled, wanto bankets so wel as wise disputations celebrated, rauntinge and iocund Orations so well as effectuell declamations and persuaasions pronounced. These Letters contayne many graue and wholesom Documents, sundry vertuous and chosen Institutions for Princes and Noble men, yea and for such as beare office and preeminence in commonwealth, from highest Title to meanest degree. These Letters do bouch the reioyce

the reioyce of a Schoolemaster, for bringinge by a Scholler of Capacity and aptnesse, to imbrace and fixe in Memorye such lessons as he taught him. These Letters do gratulate and remembre the top of the disciple for hauinge such a maister. These Letters do pronounce the minde of a vertuous Prince towards his subjects for choyse of him to the Empire, and for that they had respect rather to the vertue and condition, than to the nobilitye or other extreme accident. To be short, these Letters speake and pronounce the very humblenesse and fealty that ought to rest in subjectes hearts: with a thousand other excellent sentences of Duties. So that if the Emperour Nerua had bin alwaies a gayne to peruse these letters & Epistles of congratulation betwene the Schoolemaster and Scholler, he would no lesse haue reioysed in Plutarch than King Philip of Macedon did of Aristotle, when hee affirmed himselfe to be happy, not so much for hauinge such a sonne as Alexander was, as for he was bozne in such a time, as had brought Aristotle to be his maister. That good Emperour Nerua, shewed a patern to his successor by his good vertuous life and godly gouernment, which made a successor and a people of no lesse consequence than they were trained, accordingly as Herodian boucheth, That for the most part the people be wont to imitate the Life of their Prince and Soueraigne Lord. If Philip deemed hymselfe happy and blessed for hauing such a sonne & maister, then might Nerua terme himselfe threefold more happy for such a Nephew and such a notable Schoolemaster as Plutarch was, who not only by doctrine but by practise proued a passing good scholler, Alexander was a good scholer & for he time wel practised his maisters Lessons, but afterwards as glorie & good hap accompanied his noble dispositiō, so did he degenerate frō former life, & had quite forgotten what he had learned, as the second Nouell of this Booke more at large declareth. But Traiane of a toward Scholler, proued such an Emperour and victor ouer himselfe, as schoolinge & rulinge were in him miraculous, a surmounting Paragon of piety and vertue: wherefore not to say, thee from the perusinge of those Letters, he right image of himselfe thus beginneeth Plutarch to write vnto his famous Scholler Traiane.

A Let.

A Letter of the Philosopher Plutarch to the Emperour Traiane, wherein is touched how Governours of Common wealthsought to be Prodigal in deedes & spare in words.



Most dread soueraigne Lord, albeit of longe tyme I haue known the modesty of your mynde, yet nerther I nor other liuing man did euer know that you aspired to that, which many men desire, which is to be Emperour of Rome: That man should withdraue himselfe from honour, it were cleane without the boundes of wisedome: but not to licence the heart to desire the same, that truely is a worke diuine, and not proceedinge of humayne nature. For he doeth indifferently well, that representeth the works which his handes be able to do, without staying vpon his owne desires, and for good consideration wee may terme thine Empire to be very happy, sith thou hast so nobly demeaned thy selfe to deserue the same without seatch & seekinge industrious policy to attayne thereunto. I haue known within the city of Rome many great personages, which were not so much honored for the offices whych they bare, as they were for the meanes and deuises wherby they sought to be aduanced to the same. May it please you to vnderstand (most excellent Prince): hat the honoz of a vertuous man doth not consist in the office, which he presently hath, but rather in the merites that preferred him thereunto: In such wise, as it is the office that honozeth the partye, and to the officer there resteth but a painful charge. By meanes wherof, when I remember that I was your gouernor from your youth and instructed your vertuous mind in letters, I can not chose but very much reioyce, so well for your soueraigne vertue, as for your maiesties good fortune, deeming it to be a great happinesse vnto me that in my time Rome hath intoyed him to be their soueraigne lord whom I had in yuines past to be my scholler. The principallities of Kingdomes some winne by force, and maintayne the by armes, which ought not so to be in you, nor yet coeque opinion of your selfe, but rather to thinke that the Empire which you gouerne by vniuersall content, yee ought to entertayne and rule with general iustice. And

Letters.

Alice, And therefore if you loue and reuerence the Gods, if you bee
 patient in trauels, warie in daungers, courteous to your People,
 gentle to straungers, and not couetous of treasure, nor louer of
 your owne desires: you shall make your fame immortal, and go-
 uern the common wealth in soueraign peace: That you be not a lo-
 uer of your own desires, I speake it not withoute cause. For there
 is no worse gouernement than that which is ruled by selfe will
 and priuate opinion. For as he that gouerneth a common wealth
 ought to lyue in feare of al men, euen so much more in feare of him
 selfe: in so much as he may commit greater errour, by doinge that
 which his owne luste commaundeth, than if he were ruled by the
 counsell of other. Assure you Sir. that you can not hurt your self, and
 much lesse prejudice vs your subiects, if you do correce your selfe
 before you chastise others, esteemynz that to bee a ryght good go-
 uernment when you be prodigal in wordes, and spare of speech.
 May then to be such a one now, that you do commaunde, as you
 were when you were commaunded. For otherwise it would lytle
 auaille to do things for deseruing of the empyre, if after wards your
 dedes be contrary to former desires. To com to honour it is a huma-
 ne worke, but to conserue honour it is a thing diuine. Take hede the
 (most excellent Traiane) that you do remembre and still reuolue in
 minde, that as you be a Prince supreme, so to apply your self to be
 a passing ruler. For there is no authorite amongs men so high, but
 that the Gods aboue be iudges of their thoughts, & men beneath be
 holders of their dedes. Wherefore sith presentlge you are a migh-
 ty Prince, your duety is the greater to be good, and leisure lesse
 to be Wycked, than when you were a pryuate Man. For hauing
 gotten authorite to commaund, your liberty is the lesse to bee idle:
 so that if you bee not sutch a one as the common people haue opi-
 nion of you and such againe as your maister Plutarch desireth, you
 shall put your selfe in greate Daunger, and myne Ennymies
 will seeke meanes to bee reuenged on mee, knowynge wel that
 for the Schollers faulte the Mayster Daply suffreth wronge by
 slanderous checke imputed vnto hym (although withoute cause.
 And for so much as I haue ben thy maister, & thou my scholer, thou
 must

must indenuour by well doing, to render me some honour. And
 I pkeuise if thou do euill, great infamy shall lyght on me, euen as
 it did to Seneca for Nero his cause, whose cruelties don in Rome
 were imputed to his master Seneca. The like wronge was done
 to the Philosopher Chilo, by beinge burdened with the negly-
 gent nouriture of his Scholler Leader. They truly were famous
 personages and greate learned men, in whom the gouernemente of
 myghty Princes was reposed. Forwithstandyng, for not correc-
 ting them in their youth, nor teachyng them with carefull dyl-
 gence, they blotted for euermore theyr renoume, as the cause of the
 destruction of many common wealthes. And forsomuch as my pen
 spared none in times passe, bee well assured Traiane, that the same
 will pardon neither thee or mee, in tyme to come. For as wee bee
 confederat in the fault, euen so we shal be heires of the paine. Thou
 knowest well what lessons I haue taught thee in thy youth, what
 counsell I haue giuen thee, beeyng come to the state of man, and
 what I haue written to thee, sithens thou hast ben Prince, & thou
 thy selfe art recorde of the wordes which I haue spoken to thee in
 secreete. In all whych I neuer perswaded thyng but that intended
 to the seruice of the Gods, profite of the common wealthe, and in-
 crease of thy renoume. Wherefore, I am right sure, that for anye
 thing which I haue written, sayd, or perswaded there is no cause
 I should feare Gods punishment of Gods, & much lesse the reproch-
 ful shame of men, verily beleueing that al which I coulde say in se-
 crete, might without reproch be openly published in Rome. Nowe
 before I toke my pen in hand to write this Letter, I examined my
 lyfe, to know, if (during the time that I had charge of thee) I dyd
 or sayd in thy presence any thing that might prouoke thee to euill
 example. And truly (bushete for me to say it) vpon that searche
 of my forpassedd life, I neuer found my selfe guilty of facte vn-
 mete a Romane Cytizen, nor euer spoke Wordde vnseme-
 ly for a Philosopher. By meanes whereof I doe ryghte hear-
 tely wyllie, thou wouldest remember the good educatyon and
 instructyon whych thou dyddest learne of mee. I speake not
 this, that thou shouldest gratifie me againe with any Benefite,
 but to the ende thou myghtest serue thy selfe esteemyng that
 no greater

no greater pleasure there is that can redounde to me, than to heare a good report of thee. We then well assured that if an Emperre bee bestowed vpon thee, it was not for that thou wert a Citizen of Rome or a couragious person descended of noble house, rich and mighty but only because vertues did plentifully abounde in thee. I dedicated vnto thee certaine booke of old and auncient common wealth which if it please thee to vse, and as at other times I haue sayd vnto thee, thou shalt finde me to be a proclatmer of the famous workes, a chronicle of all thy noble facts of armes: but if perchance thou follow thine owne aduise, and chaunge thy selfe to bee other than hitherto thou hast ben, presently I inuocate and cry out vpon the inmortall Gods, And this Letter shall bee witness, that if any hurt do chaunce to thee, or to thine Emperre, it is not through the counsell or meanes of thy maister Plurarch. And so farewell most Noble Prynce.

The answere of the Emperour Traiane to hys master Plurarch.



Occius Traiane Emperour of Rome, to the Philosopher Plurarch sometimes my master, salutation and consolation in the Gods of comfort. In Agrippina was deliuered vnto me a letter fro thee, which so soone as I opened, I knew to be writt with thine owne hand, & indited with thy wisedom. So flowing was the same with goodly woordes, & accompanied with graue

sentences, an occasion that made mee reade the same twice or thrice thinking that I saw thee write, & heard thee speak, and so welcome was the same to me, as at that very instant, I caused it to be red at my table, yea and made the same to be fixed at my beds heade, that the well meaning vnto me might be generally known, how much I am bound vnto thee. I esteemed for a good presage the congratulation that the Consul Rutulus did vnto me from thee, touchinge my commyng to the Emperre. I hope through thy meritis, that I shall be a good Emperoure. Thou sayest in the letter, that thou canst

can be by no meanes beleue, that I haue giuen bribes, and vsed meanes to buye myne Empire, as other haue done. For aunswere thereunto I say, that as a man I haue desired it, but neuer by solicitation or other meanes attempted it. For I neuer saw wythin the City of Rome, any man to bribe for honour, but for the same, some notable infamy chaunced vnto hym, as for example wee may learne of the Good old man Menander. my friende and t hy neyghbour, who to bee *Consul*, procured the same by vnlawful meanes, & therfoze in the end was banished and died desperately. The greate Caius Caesar, and Tiberius, Caligula, Claudius, Nero, Galba, Otho Vitellius, and Domitian, some for vsurpyng the Empire, some for tyranny, some for gettyng it by bribes, and some by other meanes procuring the same, lost (by the sufferance of the righteous Gods) not onely their honour and goodes, but also they died miserably. When thou dydst reade in thy schole, and I that time an hearer of thy doctrine, many times I hearde thee say, that we ought to trauel to deserue honour, rather than procure the same, esteemyng it vnlawfull to get Honour by meanes vnlawfull. He that is without credite, ought to assay to procure credite. Hee that is without honour, ought to seeke honour. But the vertuous Man hathe no neede of noblenesse, ne hee himselfe, ne yet any other person can decriue him of due honour. Thou knowest wel Plutarch, that yere past, the office of *Consul* was giuen to Torquatus, and the Dictatorship to Fabritius, who were so vertuous and so little ambitious as not desirous to receyue such charges, absented themselves, although that in Rome, they might haue ben in great estimation, by reason of those offices, and yet neuerthelesse without them they bee presently esteemed, loued and honoured. And therefore I conceiue greater delight in Quintius Lincinarius, in Scipio Africanus, and good Marcus Portius, for contemning of theyr offices, than for the victories which they archieued. For victories many times consist in fortune, and the not caryng for honozable charge in onely wisdome. Semblably, thou thy selfe art witnesse, that when mynck Cocceius Nerua was exiled to Capua, he was more visited, and better serued, than when he was at Rome. Whereby may bee

I.

inferred.

inferred, that a vertuous man may be exiled or banished, but ho-
nour he shall never want. The Emperour Domitian (if you do re-
member) at the departure of Nerua, made me many offers, and the
many sape promises, to entertain thee in his house, & to send mee
into Almayne, which thou couldest not abyde, and much lesse cons-
sent, deeming it to be greater honour with Nerua to be exiled, than
of Domitian to be fauored. I swear by the Gods immortall, that
when the good olde man Nerua sent me the ensigne of the Emperre,
I was viterly ignozant thereof, and voyd of hope to attayne the
same: For I was aduertised from the Senate, that Fuluius, sued for
it, and that Pamphilus went about to buy it. I knew also that the
Consul Dolobella, attempted to entoy it. Then sith the Gods did per-
mit, that I should bee Emperour, and that myne vncle Nerua did
commaund the same, the Senate approued it, & the common wealth
would haue it to be so. And sith it was the generall consent of all
men, and specially your aduise, I haue greate hope that the Gods
will be fauozable vnto me, and Fortune no ennemie at all, assuring
you, that like to you which you do sape you had by teaching me, and
seing me now to be Emperour, the lyke I haue to thynke that I
I was your Scholler. And sith that you will not call mee from
henceforth any other but Soueraigne Lord, I will terme you by
none other name, than Loung father. And albeit that I haue ben
visited and counselled by many men, since my coming to the Em-
perre, and by thee about the rest, whom before all other I will be-
leue, considering that the intent of those which counsell me, is to
draw my mynd to theys: your letters purpozeng nothyng else
but mine aduantage. I doe remember amongst other wordes,
which once you spake to Maxenius Secretary of Domitian, this
saying: that they which doe presume to geue counsell vnto Pryn-
ces, oughte to bee free from all passions and affections: for in
counsell, where the will is moste enclined, the mynde is more
prompte and ready. That a Prynce in all thyngs doe his will I
praise not. That he take aduise and counsell of euery man, I lesse
allowe. That which he ought to doe (as me thinke) is to doe by
counsel, foreseeing for al that to what counsel he applyeth his mynd.
For counsel ought not to be taken of hym whom I doe well loue,
but

but of hem of whom I am well beloved. All this I haue wrytten
 (my Maister Plutarch) to aduertise you that from henceforth I
 desire nothing else at your handes, but to be holpen with your ad-
 uise in myne affayres, and that you tell me of my committed faults.
 For if Rome do thinke me to be a defender of their common welth
 I make accompte of you to bee an ouerseer of my life. And there-
 fore if you thinke that I am not thankfull enough for the good ad-
 uise, and holsoin warnynge that you geue me: I am to intreate,
 you (myne owne good Maister) not to take it in ill part for in such
 cases, the grieve that I conceiue, is not for the good Lessons you
 geue me, but for the shame that I feele in followynge them. The
 byngeng of me vp in the house, the hearyng of the Lectures, the
 foloweng of the doctryne, and liuing vnder the discipline, haue
 ben truly the principal causes that I am comen to this Emperre.
 This much I say (Maister) for that it were an vnnatural parte,
 in the not to assit me to beare that thing, which, thou haste holpen
 me to gayne and winne. And although that Vespasian was of Pa-
 mire a very good man, yet his greatest profite rebounded to him, by
 entertayning of the Philosopher Appolonius. For truelye it is a
 greater felicity for a Prince to chaunce vpon a good and faythfull
 man, to be neare about him, than to atchieue a Large Realme and
 Kingdome. Thou sayest (Plutarch) that thou shalt receiue great co-
 tentation, from henceforth, If I be such a one now as I was be-
 fore or at lestwise if I be no worse. I beleue that which thou doest
 say, because the Emperour Nero, was the first five yeares of hys
 Emperre good, and the other nine yeares excedyng euill, in such
 wyse as he grew to be greater in wickednesse, than in dignitee.
 Notwithstanding, if thou thinke that as it chaunced vnto Nero,
 so may happen vnto Traiane, I beseech the immortall Gods rather
 to deprivie me of life, than to suffer me to ratgne in Rome. For ty-
 rantes bee they, which procure degayntes and ppointions,
 to vse them for delighte and filthye luste: and good Rulers bee
 they which seekethem for profite of Common Wealthe. And there-
 fore to them which beefore they came to those degrees, were
 good, and afterwarde waxed Wicked, greater pitye than Crueltye
 ought to be attributed, consideryng specially, that Fortune did

I 2.

not

Letters.

not aduance them to honour, but to shame and villany. Beleue me then (good maister) that sith hitherto I haue ben reputed vertuous, I wyl assay by Gods assistance to aspire to be better, rather than to be worse. And so the Gods preserue thee.

The Letter of the Emperour Traiane to the Senate of Rome, wherein is contained, that Honour ought rather to be deserued than procured.



Occius Traiane Emperour, of the Romanes, euer Augustus, to our sacred Senate health and consolation in the Gods of comfort. We betinge aduertised here at Agrippina of the Deathe of the Emperour Nerua, your soueraigne Lord & my predecessour, and knowing it to be true, that you haue weyt and bewailed the losse of a Prince so noble & rgh- teous, we likewise haue felt like sorow, for the death of so notable a fa- ther. When children lose a good father, & subiects a good Prince, eyther they muste dye wyth them, or else by teares they must rase them vp again, for so much as a good Prince in a comion wealth is so rare, as the Phœnix in Arabia. My lord Nerua brought me out of Spayne to Rome, nourished me vp in youth, caused mee to bee trained in letters and adopted me for his sonne in mine olde age. Which graces and benefites truly I can not forget, knowing that the ingrate man prouoketh the Gods to anger, and men to ha- tred. The death of a vertuous man is to be lamented of all Men, but the death of a good prince, ought to be extremely mourned: for if a common person die, there is but one dead, but if a good Prince dye, together with him dieth a whole Realme. I speake this (O ye Fathers) for the rare vertues abounding in myne uncle Nerua: For if the Gods were disposed to sell vs the liues of good Prin- ces already departed, it were but a small rancome to redeeme them w teares. For what gold or syluer may be sufficient to buie the lye of a vertuous man. Truly there woulde be a great masse of money
gyuen

by the Greekes for Alexander, by the Lacedemonians for Lyncus, by the Romanes for Augustus, and by the Carthaginians for Annibal. But as you knewe the Gods hauing made all thynges mortall, so haue they reserued onely themselves to bee immortall. How eminent and passing the vertue of the good is, and what praise the godly haue, it may easily be knowne: for so much, as honour is carried euen to the very graues of the dead, but so it is not to the greates Palaces of the wicked. The good and vertuous man, without sight or knowledge we loue, serue, and aunswer for him: wherein the wicked we cannot beleue what he sayeth, & lesse accepte in good part the thyng whych he doeth for vs. Touchinge the electyon of the Emperre, it was done by Nerua, it was demaunded by the people, approued by you, and accepted by me. Wherefore I praye the immortall Goddes that it may be lyked of the Godheades. For to small purpose auayleth the election of Prynces, if the Gods doe not con firme it: and therefore a Man maye knowe hym whych is chosen by the Gods, from him that is elected by men, for the one shall decayne & fal, & other shalbe vpholden and preserued. The choyse of man sodaynely exalted doth bowe & abase, but that which is planted by the Gods, although it bee tossed to and fro wth seuerall Wynds, and receiuech greate aduersitye, and boweth a litle, yet the same shall neuer fal. We knowe right wel (most honozable Fathers) that I neuer demaunded the Emperre of Nerua my Soueraigne Lord, although he broughie me by and was his Nephew. hauing heard and wel remembryng of my Master Plutarch, that honour ought rather to be desired than procured. Notwithstanding I wyl not deny but ioyfull I was when my Lord Nerua sent me the ensigne of that greate and hygh dignity: and yet I wyl confesse that hauing begon to tast the trauailes and cares which that Imperfall State byingeth, I did repent more then a thousand times for taking vppon mee a charge so great. For Empire and gouernment is of such qualitty that although I honoz be mighty, yet I gouernour sustaineth manifold paynes & miserable trauailes. O how greatly doth he bind himself, whych by gouernment bindeth other: for if hee bee iuste they call hym cruell, if hee bee Pittifull, he is contempned,

Letters.

if liberall, he is esteemed Prodigall, if he keepe oꝝ gather together he is counted couetous, if hee be peaceable and quiet, they deeme him foꝝ a coward, if he be couragious, he is reputed a quarreller, if graue, they will say he is proude, if he be easie to be spoken to, hee is thought to be light oꝝ simple, if solitary, they will esteeme him to be an hypocrite, and if he be ioyfull, they will terme hym dissolute: In sutch wise as they wil be contented, and vse better termes to al others what so euer, than towards him, which gouerneth a comon wealth. Foꝝ to sutch a one they reckon the mozels which he eateth, they measure his pases, they note his words, they take heede to his companies, & iudge of his works (many times wzongfully,) they examine and murmur of his pastimes, and attempt to Coniecture hys Thoughtes. Consider then the trauaples which bee in Gouvernement, and the Enuy which many times they beare vnto him that ruleth. We may say, that there is no state moze sure than that which is furthest of from Enuy. And if a man cannot but weth great payne gouerne the Wyfe which hee hath chosen, the Children which he hath begotten, noꝝ the Seruaunt which he hath bzought by, hauing them altogether in one house: How is it possible that he can still conserue in peace a whole commonwealth? I praye you tell mee, in whom shall a poore Prince repose his trust? Syth that many times hee is most flattered by them whom he fauoureth best? Princes and great Loydes cannot cate without a Garde, cannot sleepe without a Watch, cannot speake without espiall, noꝝ walke without some fauery, in sutch wise as they being Lords of al, they be as it were, Prisoners of their owne people. And if we wil beholde somewat neerely, and consider the seruitude of Princes, and the liberty of Subiects, we shall finde that he which hath most to doe in the Realme, oꝝ beareth greatest swinge, is most subiect to Chaldome. So that if Princes haue authoritie to geue liberty, they haue no meanes to be free themselves. The Gods haue created vs so fre, and every man desireth to haue hys liberty so much at well, that a man be he neuer so familiar a Freende, oꝝ so neare of kin, we rather haue him to be our subiect, than our Loyde, and Master. One man alone commaundeth all, and yet it seemeth to him but little. Ought we then to maruelle, if

many be weary to obey one : Wee loue and esteeme our selues so much, as I neuer saw any which of his owne good will would be subiect, ne yet agaynst his will was made a Lord, a Principle by daily experience proued very true. For the quarels and Warres to be amongs men, are not so much for obedience sake, as for rule, & commaundment. I say mozeouer, that in drinke, eating, clothing, speaking, and louing, al men be of diuers qualitties : but to get liberty, they be all comfortable. I haue spoken thus much (O Fathers conscript) vpo occasion of mine owne Empire, which I haue taken with good will, albeit afterwards I was soze for the great charge. For the waltering Seas & troublesome gouernement be two things agreeable to beholde, and daungerous to proue. Notwithstanding sith it hath pleased the Gods that I should be poure lord, and you my subiects, I beseech you hartely to vse your obedience, as to your soueraygne lord, in that which shall be right and iust, and to aduertise me like a father, in things that shall seeme unreasonable. The Consul Rurulus hath sayed much vnto mee in your behalfe, and hath saluted me for the people, hee himselfe shall bring aunswere & shal salute you al in my name. The Allobrogians and the inhabitants about the riuer Rhene, be at controuersie for the limittes of their countrey, and haue prayed me to be their Arbitrator, which will stay me a little there. I require that this Letter may be red within the Senate house, & manifested to the whole people. The Gods preserve you.

An other Letter of the Emperour Traian to the Romayne Senate, contayning how gouerners of Common wealths ought to bee Friends rather to those which vse traficke, than to them that gather and heape together.



Occus Traiane Emperour of the Romaynes to our holy Senate health and consolation in the Gods of comfort. The affayres be so manyfolde, & businesse so graue and weighty, which we haue to doe with diuers countries, that

Letters.

erles, that scarce we haue tyme to eate, and space to take any
 rest, the Romane Princes hauing still by auncient custome both
 lacke of tyme, and commonly want of money. And bicause that
 they which haue charge of common Wealths, to the vttermost of
 their power ought to be frends to trafficke of marchandise, and e-
 nimies of heappng treasure together, Princes haue so many peo-
 ple to please, and so greate numbꝛ of crauers, that if they keepe
 any thing for them, the same shall rather seeme a spice of theft than
 of prouidence. To take away an other mans goodes, truly is a
 wicked part: but if it bee permitted to take Treasure, better it
 were to take it out of the Temples, than to defraude the people.
 For the one is consecrated to the immortal Gods, and the other
 to the poꝛ Commons. I speake this (right honorable Fathers)
 to put you in remembraunce, and also to aduise you, that you take
 good heede to the goodes of the Common wealth, howe they bee
 despended, howe gathered together, howe they bee kepte
 and howe they be employed. For ye ought to vnderstand, that
 the goodes of the Common wealth be committed to you in trust,
 not to the ende yee shoulde enioy them, but rather by good go-
 uernement to vse them. We do heare that the Wallies be ready to
 fall, the Towers be in decap, and the temples in great ruine wher-
 of we be not a litle offended, and you ought also to be ashamed,
 for so much as the Damages and detreymts of the Common
 Wealth, we ought epyther to remedye, or else to Lament. Ye haue
 wyrtten vnto mee to know my pleasure, whether the Censors,
 Pretors, and Ediles should be yearely chosen, and not perpetuall,
 as hitherto they haue bene: and specially you say, that the state of
 the Dictators (which is the greatest and highest dignyty in Rome)
 is onely but for sixe Moneths. To this I aunswer, that we are wel
 contented wpyth that aduise: For not wpythout cause trust reason
 our predecessours dyd abolysh the fyrst Kynges of Rome, and or-
 dayned, that the Consuls shoulde yearely be chosen in the Common
 Wealth. Whych was done, in consyderation that hee whych
 had perpetuall gouernement, many tymes became insolente and
 proude. And therfore that the Charges and offices of the Senate,
 shoulde be yearely, to auoyde danger, which if they shoulde be per-
 petuall there myght ensue great hurt and damage to the Common
 Wealth

Wealth. For if the Officers, being verely chosen, be good, they may be continued. And if they bee Euill, they may be chaunged.

And truely the officer, whych knoweth that vpon the End of euery yeare he must be chaunged. and examined of his charge, he will take good heede to that whych he speaketh, and first of all will consider what he taketh in hand. The good Marcus Portius was the first that caused the Officers of the Romane Common Wealth to bee thus visited and corrected. And because that these Almayne Warres doe still increase, by reason that King Decceball will not as yet bee brought to obedience of the Romanes, but rather goeth about to occupy and winne the Kingdome of Dacia, and Polonia, I shall be forced thzough the businesse of the Wars, so long continuing) to deuple and consult here vppon the affaires touchyng the gouernement of the Common Wealth of Rome. For a lesse euill it is for a Prince to be neglygent in matters of Warre, than in the gouernement of the Common Wealth.

A prince also ought to think, that he is chosen, not to make wars, but to gouerne, not to kyll the Enemies, but to roote out vices, not that he goe in person to inuade or defend his foes, but that he reside and be in the Common Wealth, and not to take away other mens goodes, but to do Justice in euery man, for somuch as the Prince in the warres can fight but for one, and in the Publyke wealth he committe faults against a numbre. Truly it liketh me wel, that from the degree of Captaines men be aduanced to bee Emperours, but I think it not good, that Emperours do descende to be Captains, considering that, that realm shal neuer be in quiet, where the prince is to gret a warriour. This haue I spokē (Fathers cōscript) to the intent ye may beleue, that I for my parte if these warres of Almayne were to begin, I being at Rome, it wer impossible that I should be brought vnto hē same, for that my principal intent, is to be esteemed rather a good gouerner of a common wealth, than a forward captain in the field: nowe then principally I commend vnto you the veneration of the Temples, & honoz of the Gods, because kings neuer liue in surety, if the Gods be not honozed, & the Temples serued. The last words which my good Lord Nerua wrot vnto me were these: Honour the temples fear the Gods, maintein Justice in thy cōmō vwealth & defend the pore, in
so

Letters.

so doing thou shalt not be forgotten of thy friend, nor vanquished by thy Foe. I do greatly recommend vnto you the Vertues of Amity and Fraternity, for that you know howe in great common Wealthes, more hurt and Damage do ciuile & neighborly wars bring vnto the same, than those attempted by the Enemies. If parents against Parents, and Neighbours against Neighbours had not begon mutuall hatred and Contention, neuer had Demetrius ouerthrowen the Rhodes, neuer had Alexander conquered Thyr. Marcellus Syracuse, Scipio Numantia. I recommend vnto you also the pooze people, loue the Orphanes and fatherlesse children, support and help the Widowes, beware of quarels and debates amongs you, and the causes of the helpless se that ye maintaine and defende: bicause the Gods dyd neuer weake more cruell Vengeance vpon any, than vpon those which dyd ill intreate and vse the pooze and needy: And many times I haue heard my Lord Nerua say: that the Gods neuer shewed themselves so re- gorous, as agaynst a mercilesse and vnpytfull people. Semblably, we pray you to be modest of Words, pacient to suffer, and ware in your forme of Lyfe. For a great fault it is, and no lesse shame to a gouerner, that he prayse the people of his Common Wealth, and geue them occasion to speake euill of him. And therefore they which haue charge of the Common Wealth, ought rather to repose trust in their workes, than in theyr Words, for so much as the Citizens or Common People, do rather fixe theyr iudgement vpon that which they see, than on that which they heare. I would wylly that (touchyng the affaires appertinent to the Senate) they might not know in you any sparke of ambition, malice, deceipte, or enuy to the intent that the iust men might not so muttly complain of the commaunding of the Common Wealth, as vpon the entertainment and profite of the same. The Empire of the Grekes putting theyr felicity in Eloquence, and we in well doing. I speake this (reghyt honorable Fathers) to Counsell and Exhorte ye, that when ye be assembled in Senare, ye do not consume tyme in dysputing and holding opintions for the verification of any thyng. For if you will iudge wethout parciality and affection wout great

disputation

disputation, ye may come to reason. I do remember that being at a lesson of Appolonius Thiancus, I heard him say that it was not so expedient that Senators and Emperors should be skilful and wise, as if they suffered themselves to be governed by those that were of great experience and knowledge: and verely he said truth: For by that meanes he prohibited and forbade them, not to arrest and stand vpon their owne opinion, whereof they ought to be many times suspicious. Likewise we recommend vnto you the Censores, who haue charge of Iudgement, and the Tribunes, whose office is to attende the affaires of Common Wealth, that they bee wise and learned in the Lawes, expert in the Customes, prouident in Iudgements, and ware in their Trade of Life. For I say vnto you, that a wise man is more auailable in gouernement of a common Wealth, than a man of ouermuch skyll and experience. The forme then whych ye shal obserue in matters of iudgement shal be thus: That in ciuile pprocess you keepe the Law, and in criminall causes to moderate the same, bicause harsh, cruell, and rygorous Lawes be rather made to amaze and feare, than to be obserued and kept. When you giue any sentence, ye ought to consider the age of the offendaunt, when, how, wherefore, with whome, in whose presence, in what time, and how longe ago, forsomuch as euery of these thyngs may either excuse or condemn: whych you ought to heare and vse towards them in lyke sort as the Gods towards vs, who giue vs better help & succoure and correct vs lesse than we deserue. That consideration the iudges ought to haue, because the offenders doe rather trespassse the Gods than men. If then they be forgien of the Gods for offences whych they commit, reason it is that we pardon faultes don by those rather then by our selues. In like maner we commaund you, if your enemies do you any annoiance or intury, not incontinently to take reuenge but rather to dissemble wth same, bicause many wrongs be don in the world, which were better to be dissembled than reuenged. Wherin ye shal haue like regard, touching offices in the Senate & common wealth, that they be not giuen to ambitious or couetous persons. For there is no Beast in the Worlde so pestiferous and Venemous, to the Common Wealth, as the Ambitious
in

Letters.

in commaunding, and the couetous in gathering together. Other things we let passe for this tyme, vntill we haue intelligence howe these our commaundements be fulfilled. This Letter shall be red in the chiefeest place within the Senate, and afterwards pronounced to the people, that they may both know what yee commaunde, and see also what ye doe. The Gods keepe you, whome we pray to preserve our mother the City of Rome, and to send vs good successe in these our Warres.

A notable Letter sent from the Romane Senate to the Emperour Traiane, wherein is declared how sometimes the region of Spayne did furnish Rome with golde from their Mines, and now do adorne & garnish the same with Emperours to gouerne their Common wealth.



THE sacred Romane Senate, to thee the great Corceius Traiane new Emperour Augustus, health in my Gods and ours, graces euerlastyng wee render to the immortall Gods, for that thou art in health, which wee desyre and pray may be perpetual. We signified vnto thy maiesty the death of Nerua Corceius, our soueraigne Lord, and thy predecessor, a man of sincere lyfe, a frend of his Common Wealth, and a zealous louer of Justice, wherein also we aduertised, that like as Rome did weep for the cruell lyfe of Domitian, so much the more bitterly doth she bewaile the death of thine vncle Nerua, whose counsell (although hee was very olde and diseased) which he gaue vs lying on his Bedde, we loued better, and embraced with greater comforte, than all the enterpryses and deedes don by his predecessors, when they were in health & lusty. And besides the ordinary mourning vsed to bee done in Rome for Prynces, wee haue caused all recreatio & pastime to cease, so wel in the comon wealth as in euery of vs particularly. We haue shut vp the Temples and made the
Senate

vnderstand, how displeasantly we accept the death of good Men.
 The good old gentleman Nerua dyed in hys house, and was bu-
 ried in the fiede of Mars, he died in debte, and we haue payd hys
 debtes. He dyed calling vpon the Gods, and we haue canonized
 him amongst theyr numbze, and that which is most to be noted, hee
 died commending vnto vs the common wealth, and the Common
 wealth recommending it self vnto him. And a little befoze his lat-
 ter gaspe, to the principall of the holy Senate, and many other of
 the people, standing about his bedside, he sayde: O ye fathers, I
 committe vnto you the common wealth and my selfe also vnto the
 Gods: vnto whom I render infinite thanks, bicause they haue ta-
 ken from me my chyldzen, to bee mine heires, and haue lefte mee
 Traiane to succede. You do remēbze (most dread soueraign Lord)
 that the good Emperour Nerua had other successours than your
 maiesty, of nearer aliance, of greater frendship bound by ser-
 uice, and of greater prooofe in warfare: Notwithstandyng amongst
 other noble personages, vpon you alone he cast his eyes, repossinge
 in you such opinyon and confidence, as to reuiue the prowes and
 balpaunt facts of the good Emperoz Augustus he suppressed in ob-
 blution the insolent facts of Domitian. When Nerua came vnto
 the Crowne, he found the treasure pilled, the Senate in dissentyon,
 the people in commotion, iustice not obserued, and the Common
 wealth ouerthrowen: which you likewise presently shall finde, al-
 though otherwys quiet and wholly reformed. Wherefoze we shalbe
 right glad, that you conserue the common wealth in the state wher-
 in your vncle Nerua left it, considering specially that new Princes
 vnder colour to introduce new customs, do ouerthrow their comon
 Wealths. Fourtene Princes your predecessours in the Empe-
 re were naturally bozne in Rome, and you are the firste straunge
 Prince. Wherefoze we pray the immortall Gods, (wth that the
 stocke of our auncient Cæsars is dead) to send thee good fortune.
 Out of the countrey of Spaine was wont to come to this our Ro-
 mane City great abundance of gold, siluer, Steele, leade and tinne,
 from theyr mines: but now in place thereof, he giueth vs Empe-
 rours to govern our common wealths. Sith then I thou commett
 of so good a countrey as Spayne is, from so good a Prouince as is
 Vandoz

Letters.

Vandolosi, and from so excellent a citie as Cales is, of so noble & fortunate a Linage as is Cocceius, and aduanced to so noble an Empire. It is to be supposed that thou wilt proue good & not euill. For the Gods immortall many times do take away their graces from vngratefull men. Whereouer (most excellent Prince) sith you wrote vnto vs the maner and order what we ought to doe: reason it is that we write to you agayne what you ought to forsee. And sith you haue tolde vs, and taught vs to obey you, meete it is that we may know what your pleasure is to commaunde. For that (it may come to passe) that as you haue bene brought vp in Spayne, and of longe time bene absent from Rome, through followinge the Warres, that not knowinge the lawes whereunto we are sworn, & the customes which we haue in Rome, Per commaund some thinge that may redound to our damage and to your dishonour. And therefore we account it reason that your Maiesty be aduertised hereof, and the same prevented, for so much as Princes oftentimes be negligent of many thinges, not for that they wil not foresee the same, but rather for want of one that dare tell them what they ought to doe. And therefore we humbly beseech your most excellent maiesty, to extend & shewe forth your wisdom and prudence, for that the Romanes hearts bene drawn and made pliant rather by famous diligent, than by prouoked force. Touchinge the vertue, Justice, may it please you, to remember the same. For your olde Uncle Nerua was wont to say, that a Prince for all his magnanimity, valaunce, and Felicity, if he do not vse and maintayne iustice, ought not for any other merite to be praised and commended. Semblable we make our humble Petition, that those commaundements which you shal send and require to be put in execution, be thoroughly established and obserued. For the goodness of the lawe doth not consist in the ordinance, but in the fulfilling and accomplishment of the same. Wee will not also omit to say vnto you (most famous Prince) that you must haue patience to suffer the importunate, and to dissemble with the offenders. For that it is the dzie of a Prince to chastise and punish the wrongs done in a common wealth, and to pardon the disobedience done vnto him. Your send vs word by your letters that you wil not come to Rome, vntill you

to you haue finished the Germaine warres. Whych seemeth vnto vs to be the determination of a vertuous and right noble Emperour, for so much as good Princes such as you be, oughte not to desire and chose places of delite & recreation, but rather to seek & win renowne & fame. You commaunde vs also to haue regard to the beneration of the Temples, & to the seruice of the Gods. Whych request is iuste, but very iust it were and merite that your selfe should do the same. For our seruice would little preuaile, if you should displease them. You will vs also one to love another, whych is the counsell of a holy and peaceable prince: but know ye that wee shal not be able to doe the same, if you will not loue and cherish vs all in equall and indifferent sort. For Princes cheerefully and louing some aboue the rest, do raise slanders and grugges amongs the people. You likewise recommend vnto vs, the poore & the widowes: wherein we thinke that you ought to commaund the Collecters of your Tributes, that they do not grieue, when they gather your rightes & customes. For greater sinne it is to spoyle & pill the needie sort, than meritorious to succour and relieue them. Likewise you do persuaade vs to be quiet & circumspect in our affaires, which is a perswasion resembling the nature of a worthy prince and also of a pitifull father. In sensible manner you require vs not to be opinionatiue & wilfull in the Senate, ne affectionate to self will, whych shal be done accordingly as you commaund & accept it as you say. But therewithall you ought to thinke that in graue and wayghty matters, the more depely things be debated, the better they shal be provided & decreed: You bid vs also to beware, the *Censores* be honest of life and rightfull in doing iustice: To that we aunswere, that in the same we will haue good respect, but it is expedient that you take hede to the whom you shal name and appoint to those offices. For if you do chose such as they ought to be, no cause shal rise to reprehend them. It is wher you say, that we ought to take hede, that our children committe no offences to the people, wherein the aduise of the Senate is: that you do draw them awaye from vs, & cal them to the Almayne warres, for as you do knowe (right souerain prince) that when the publike welth is exempt, and boord of enemies, then the same will begin to bee replenished with

youthfull

youthfull vices. Notwithstanding when the warres bee farre o:
from Rome, then the same to them is profitable, because there is
nothing which better clenseth common wealths from wicked pro-
ple, than warres in strange Countries. Concerning other things
which you write vnto vs needfull it is not now to rectie them, but
to see them kept. For truely they seeme rather to be the lawes
of God Apollo him selfe, than Counsels of a mortall man. The
Gods preserve your Maiesie, and graunt you good success: in those
your warres.

These Letters and Epistles, although besides the Scope and
Nature of a Nouell, yet so worthy to be read and practised, as no
History or other morall Dialecte more expressing the great care
of a maister towards his schooler, that he should proue no worse
being an Emperour, than he shewed hymselfe diligent when he was
a Scholer: fearing that if he should gouerne contrary to his ex-
pectation, or degenerate from the good institution, which in his
yong yeares he embraced, that the blame and slander should rest
in hymselfe: that was his tutor & bringer vp. O careful Plutarch,
O most happy maister, as well for thine owne industry, as for
the good success of such a Scholer. And O most fortunate
and vertuous Emperour, that could so wel brooke and
digest the blisfed persuasions of such a maister, &
whose mind with the blast of promotion, was
not so swolne and puffed, but that it bouch-
safed to cal him father and Maister, stil
crauing for an instigation of re-
proofo, when he did or app-
ped from the path of
reason and duety.
And happy Counsel
& Senate that could
so wel like and
practyse the documents
of such an Em-
perour.

Of three

Of three Amorous Dames.

A notable History of three Amorous Gentlewomen, called *LAMIA, FLORA*, and *L A I S*; conteyning the futes of noble Princes and other great personages made vnto them, with their answers to diuers demaundes: and the manner of their death and funerals.

The. X I I I. Nouell.



Cauynge now our moꝛall discourse of a carefull Maſter, of a prouident Scholer, of a vertuous Emperoure, of a ſacred Senate, and vniſorme magiſtery, returne we to the ſetting forth and deſcription of thꝛee arrant honeſt Women, which foꝛ lewdneſſe wer famous, and foꝛ wicked Lyfe worthy to be noted with a blacke coale, oꝛ rather their memoꝛy raked in the Duſt and

Cinders of their Coꝛpſes vnpure. But as all hiſtoꝛies be ful of leſſons of vertue and vice, as Bookes ſacred and prophane deſcribe the liues of good and bad foꝛ example ſake to yelde meanes to the poſterity, to enſue the one and eſchue the other, ſo haue I thought to interminge amongeſt theſe Nouels the ſeueraill ſortes of either, that ech Sexe and Kinde may pike out like the Bec of ech Floꝛe, Honny, to ſtoꝛe and furniſhe with delightes their well diſpoſed myndes. I purpoſe then to vnlace the diſſolute lynes of thꝛee Amozouſe dames, that with their graces allured the greateſt Princes that euer were: enticed the noble men, and ſometimes procured the wiſeſt and beſt learned to craue their acquaintaunce, as by the ſequels hereof ſhall well appeare. Theſe thꝛee famous Women, (as Wꝛiters do witneſſe) were furniſhed with many
R. goodly

Of three.

goodly graces and giftes of nature, that is to say, great beaute of face, goodly proportion of body, large and high foreheades, theyr brestes placed in comely order, smal wasted, sayre hands of passing cunning to play vpon Instruments, a heauynly voice to farne and sing: byrthly, these qualities & beauty were moze famous than ever any & were bozn within the countreies of Asia & Europa. They were neuer beloued of Prynce, that did forsake them, noz yet they made request of any thing which was denyed the. They neuer mocked or flowted man (a thing rare in womē of theyr conditiō) ne yet were mocked of any. But theyr speceial proprieties wer to allure men to loue them: Lamia wyth hir plesaunt loke and eye, Flora with hir eloquent tongue, and Laïs wyth the grace and sweetenesse of hir singing voyce. A straunge thinge that he which once was surpysed wyth the loue of any of those thre, eyther to late or neuer was deliuered of the same. They were the Richest Courtizans, that euer lyued in the Worlde, so long as theyr life did last, and after theyr decease, great monumentes were erected for theyr remembraunce, in place where they died. The most auncient of these thre Amorous dames was Lamia, who was in the tyme of king Antigonus, that warfared in the seruice of Alexander the great, a valpant gentleman, although, not fauored by Fortune. Thys kynge Antigonus left behynde hym a Sonne and Deyze called Demetrius, who was lesse valpant, but moze fortunate than his Father, and had bene a Prynce of greate estimatton, if in hys yowthe hee had acquired frendes, and kept the same, & in hys age had not ben gyue to so many vices. Thys kynge Demetrius was in loue with Lamia, and presented hir wyth Rych giftes and rewardes, and loued hir to affectionatly, and in such sort, as in the loue of his Lamia, he semed rather a sole then a true louer: for forgetting the grauity and authoryte of his person, hee dyd not onely gyue hir all such things as she demaunded. but besides that hee vsed no moze the company of his wyfe Euxonia, On a tyme kynge Demetrius askynge Lamia, what was the thyng wherewith a woman was sonest wonne. There is nothyng (answered shee,) whech sooner ouercometh a Woman, than when she seeth a man to loue hir with al hys hart, and to susteyne for hir sake greate paynes and Passyons wyth long

hath long continuance and entier affection: for to loue men by collusion, causeth afterwards that they be mocked againe. Demetrius asked hir further, tell me Lamia, why doe diuerse Women rather hate then loue men? whereunto she answered: The greatest cause why a woman doth hate a man, is, when the man doth vaunt and boast himselfe of that which he doth not, & performeth not & thing which he promiseth. Demetrius demaunded of hir. Tell me Lamia what is the thing wherewith men doe content you best: when wee see him (sayde she) to be discrete in words, and secrete in his doings. Demetrius asked hir further. Tell me Lamia how chaunceth it & men be ill matched: bycause answered Lamia, It is impossible that they be well married, when the wife is in neede, and the Husbande indiscrete. Demetrius asked hir what was the cause, that amitie betwene two louers, was broken? There is nothing answered she, that sooner maketh colde the loue betwene two louers, than when one of the is doth straye in loue, and the woman loue to importunate to craue. He demaunded further. Tell me Lamia, what is the thing that most tormenteth the louing man? Not to attayne the thing which he desireth answered she, and thinketh to lose the thing wherby he hopeth to enioy. Demetrius yet once againe asked hir this question. What is that Lamia which most troubleth a Womans hart? There is nothing (answered Lamia) wherewith a woman is more grieued, and maketh hir more sad, than to be called ill fauored, or that she hath no good grace, or to vnderstand that she is dissolute of life. This lady Lamia, was of iudgement delicate and subtyll, although it imploied in hir: & thereby made al the world in loue with her: & drew al men to hir through hir fayre speech. Now before she lost the heart of king Demetrius, she haunted of long time the vniuersities of Athenes, where she garded great store of money, and brought to destruction many young men.

Plutarch in the life of Demetrius saith, that the Atheniens hauing presented vnto him, xlii. talents of money for a subsidie to paye his men of warre, he gaued al that summe to his woman Lamia. Wherby meanes whereof, the Atheniens grudged, and were offended wryth the king, not for the losse of their gift, but for that it was so euill employed. When the king Demetrius would assure any thyng by

¶ 1.

oth hee

Of three.

oth, he swore not by his Gods, ne yet by his predecessors, but in this sort: As I may be still in the grace of my lady Lamia, and as hir lyfe and mine may ende together, so true is this which I say & do, in this & thys sort. One yere & two Moneths befoze the Death of king Demetrius, his frend Lamia died, who sorowed so much hir death, as for the absence and death of hir, he caused the Philosophers of Athens to entre in this Disputation: Whether the teares and sorow, which he shed and toke for hir sake were moze to be esteemed, than the riches which he spent in her obseques and funerall pompes. This amorous gentlewoman Lamia was bozne in Argos, a City of Peloponnesus, besides Athenes, of base Parentage, who in hir first yeres haunted the countrey of Asia maior of very wyld & dissolute lyfe, & in the end came into Phancia. And whē the king Demetrius, had caused hir to be buried befoze hys chamberwindow, hys chiefest frendes asked him, wherefoze hee had entombed hir in that place. His aunswere was this: I loued hir so well, & she likewise me so hartly, as I know not which way to satisfie the loue which she bare me, & the duety I haue to loue hir agayne, if not to put hir in such place, as myne eyes may wepe euery day and mine hart still lament. Truly this Loue was straung, which so mighty a Monarch as Demetrius was, did beare vnto such a notable curtizā, a woman vtterly void of grace, barren of good woꝝkes, & without any zeale oꝝ spark of vertue as it should appeare. But sith we read & know y none are moze giuen oꝝ bent to vnreasonable loue, than mighty pꝛinces, what should it bee demed straung and maruellous, if Demetrius amongst the rest do come in place for the loue of that most famous woman, if fame may stretch to epyther sorts both good and euill? But let vs come to the secoud infamous gentlewoman called Lais. She was of the Isle of Bithritos, which is in the confines of Gracia, & was the daughter of the great Sacrificer of Apollo his temple at Delphes, a man greatly experienced in the magike art, wherby he prophced the perdition of his daughter. Now this amorous Lais was in triumph in the time of the renowned king Pyrrhus, a Pꝛince very ambitious to acquire honoꝝ, but not very happy to keepe it, who beinge younge of Axtene oꝝ seuentene yeaers, came into Italy to make

make warres against the Romans. He was the first (as some say) that aranged a campe in orde, and made the Phalanx, the maine square and battell, for before his time, when they came to entre battell, they assailed confusedly, and out of array gaue the onset.

This amorous Lais, continued long time in the campe of Kinges Pyrrhus, and went with hym into Italy, and with him retourned from warre agayne, and yet his nature was such, as shee would neuer bee maintained with one man alone. The same Lais was so Amorous in her conuersation, so excellent sayre, and of so comely grace, that if shee would haue kept his selfe saythfull to one lord or gentlemā, there was no pynce in the world but if he would haue perded himselfe and all that he had at his commaundement. Lais from his retourn out of Italy into Greece, repayed to the citie of Corinth to make his abode there, where he was pursued by many kings, lordes, and princes. Aulus Gellius saith (which I haue recited in my former part of the Pallace of pleasure the fiftenth Booke), that the good Philosopher, Demosthenes, went from Athens to Corinth, in disguised apparell, to see Lais, and to haue his company. But before the doore was opened, she sent one to demaunde. *¶* C. Sestercios of Auer: whereunto Demosthenes answered: I buy not repentance so deere. And I beleue that Demosthenes spake those wordes by folowing the sentence of Diogenes, who sayeth, Every beast after such acte is heauy and sad. Some wyrters affirme of this Amorous Lais, that thing which I neuer reade or hearde of Woman: which is, that shee neuer shewed signe or token of loue to that man which was desirous to doe her seruice: nor was neuer hated of man that knew her. Whereby we may comprehend the happe and fortune of that amorous Woman. Shee neuer shewed semblance of great loue to any person, and yet shee was beloued of all. If the amorous Lamia had a good Spirite and mynde, Lais truly had no lesse. For in the art of loue, she exceeded all other women of his detestable Arte and Sepence, as well, in Knowledge of Loue as to profite in the same. Upon a Daye a Younger Man of Corinth demaunding of his, what hee shoulde say to a Woman whome hee long tyme had loued, and made so

great sute, that thereby he was like to fall into dispayre. Thou shalt say (sayd Lais) vnto hir, that although she wyl not graunt thy request, yet at least wyle it myght please hir to suffer thee to bee hir seruant, and that shee would take in good parte the Seruice that thou shalt doe vnto hir. Whych requeste if shee doe graunte, then hope to attayne the ende of thy attēple, because wee Women bee of such nature, as opening our mouthes to geue some mylde & pleasant answer to the amorous person, it is to bee thoughtie that wee haue gyuen our heart vnto hym. In other Daye in the presence of Lais, one prayd the Philosophers of Athenes, saying that they were very honest personages, and of great learninge. Whereunto Lais answered: I can not tell what great knowledge they haue, nor what science they studie, ne yet what bookes poure Philosophers doe reade, but thus I am sure that to me beyng a woman and neuer was at Athenes, I see them repayre, and of Philosophers become amorous persons. A Theban knight demanded of Lais, what he might doe to enioy a ladye wth whose loue hee should bee surprisid: Shee answered thus. A man that is desirous of a woman, must follow his sute, serue hir, & suffer hir and somtymes to seeme as though he had forgotten hir. For first that a womans heart is moued to loue, she regardeth more the forgetfulness and negligence vsed towards hir, than she doth the seruice done before. In other Gentleman of Achaia asked hir what he shoulde doe to a woman, whom he suspected that she had falsified hir sayth Lais answered, make hir beleue that thou thinkest she is very saythful and take from hir the occasions wherby shee hath good cause to be vnfaithful: For if she do perceiue that thou knowest it, and dissemblest the matter, she wyl sooner dye than amend. A gentleman of Palestine at another time inquired of hir what hee shoulde doe to a Woman whych he serued, and did not esteeme the seruice done vnto hir, ne yet gaue him thanks for the loue which hee bare hir. Lais sayd vnto him. If thou be disposed to serue hir no longer, let hir not perceiue that thou hast gyuen hir ouer. For naturally we women be tendre in loue, and hard in hatred. Fyrng demanded by one of hir Neryghbours what shee shoulde doe to make

make hir Daughter very wise. | Shee (sayde Lais) that wylt haue hir Daughter to bee good and honest, must from her youth learne hir to feare, and in going abrode to haunte little company, and that she be shamefast and moderate in hir talke. In other of hir neighbors inquiryng of hir what shee myght doe to hir daughter whych began to haue delpght to come in the fieldes and wander abrode. The remedye (sayde Lais) that I finde for your daughter disposed to that condition, is, not to suffer hir to be idle, ne yet to be braue and sumptuous in apparel. This amorous gentlewoman Lais, dyed in the Citie of Corinth, of the age of .lxxii. Yeares, whose death was of many matrones desired and of a great number of amorous persons lamented.

The third amorous gentlewoman was called Flora, which was not so ancient, ne yet of so greates renoume as Lamia & Lais were, whose country also was not so famous, for she was of Italy, and the other two of Grecia, and although that Lamia & Lais exceeded Flora in antiquity, yet Flora surmounted them in lineage & generosity. For Flora was of noble house, although in life lesse than chaste. She was of the country of Nola in Campania, issued of certayne Romans, Knights very famous in facts of Armes and of great industrie and gouernement in the common wealth. When the father and mother of this Flora deceased, she was of the age of .xv. yeares, indued with great riches and singular beauty, and the very orphane of all hir kynne. For shee had neyther brother leste wyth whom she myght solourne, ne yet vncle to geue hir good counsell. In such wyse that like as this young maistres Flora had pouth, riches, liberty and beauty, euen so there wanted neyther baudes nor Pandores to entyce hir to fall, and allure hir to folly. Flora seeing hir self beset in this wyse, she determined to goe into the Affrick warres, where she hazarded both in hir person and hir honor. This dame flourishd and triumphed in the tyme of the first Punique warres, when the Consul, Mamillus was sent to Carthage, who depended more Honor vpon the loue of Flora, than hee did vpon the chase and pursute of his enemies. This amorous lady Flora had a witting and ryle fired vpon hir gate, the effect wherof was this:

¶ 4.

and

and come in. In that wytyng Flora named neither Emperoz nor Caesar, bycause those two most Noble names were long tyme after created by the Romanes. Thys Amorous Flora woulde neuer abandon hir Person, but wth Gentlemen of Noble House, or of greate Wrgntye and Ryches. For shee was wonte to say that a Woman of passyng Beauty shoulde be so much esteemed as shee doth esteeme and sette by hir selfe. Lais and Flora were of contrary maners and conditions. For Lais would first bee payde, before shee yelded the vse of hir bodye: but Flora wthout any semblance of desyre eyther of golde or siluer was contented to bee ruled by those wth whom shee committed the facte. Wherof bypon a day being demaunded the question, she answered: I geue my bodye to prynces and noble Barons, that they may deale with mee lyke Gentlemen. For I sweare vnto you by the Goddesse Venus, that neuer man gaue me so little, but that I had moze than I looked for, and the double of that which I could demaund. This Amorous lady Flora was wont many times to saye, that a wise woman (or moze aptly to terme her a subtyll Wench) oughte not to demaund reward of her louer for the acceptable pleasure which she doth hym but rather for the loue whych he beareth him, bycause that al thyngs in the world haue a certayn pryce, except loue, which cannot bee payde or recompenced but wth loue. All the Ambassadors of the world, whych had accesse into Italy, made so greate repozte of the Beauty and Generositie of Flora, as they dyd of the Romane common wealth, bycause it seemed to bee a Monstrous thyng to see the Ryches of hir house, hir trayne, hir beauty the prynces & great lordes by whom she was required, and the presents and gyses that were giuen vnto hir. This Amorous Flora had a continual regard to the noble house whereof shee came touching the magnificence and state of her seruyce. For albeit that she was but a common woman, yet she was serued & honored lyke a great lady. That day wherein she rode about the city of Rome, she gaue occasion to be spoken of a whole month after, one inquirenge of an other what great Romane lordes they were that kepte her company: Whosemen they were & waightyd vpon her? And whose liuery they ware. What Ladies they wer & rode in her trayne & bauerie

brauerie of hir apparell: hir great beauty and port, and the wordes
 spoken by the amorous gentlemen in that troupe were not unre-
 membered. When this maistres Flora waxed old, a yong and beau-
 tiffull gentleman of Corinth, demaunded her to wyfe, to whom she
 answered: I know well that thou wilt not marie, the thre score
 yeares whych Flora hath, but rather thou desirest to haue the
 twelve hundred thousand Sesterces which she hath in hir Coffres.
 Content thy selfe therefore my frende, and get thee home agayne to
 Corinth from whence thou comest. For to such as be of myne age
 great honoz is bozne, and reuerence done for the riches and wealth
 they haue, rather than for marriage. There was neuer in the Ro-
 mane Emppye, the lyke amorous woman that Flora was, indued
 wth so many graces and Queene-like qualities, for shee was of
 noble house, of Anguler beauty, of comely personage, discrete in hir
 affayres, and besides al other comly qualities, very liberall. This
 maistres Flora spent the most part of hir youth in Affrica, Almayne
 and Gallia Transalpina. And albeit that she would not suffre anye
 other but great lordes to haue possesse of hir body, yet she applied
 hir selfe to the spoile of those that were in place, and to the praye of
 those that came from the warres. This amorous Flora died whē
 she was of the age of lxxv. yeares. She left for the principal heire
 of all hir goods and Iuells, the Rom. in people, which was este-
 med sufficient and able to make newe the Walles of Rome,
 and to raunscome and redeme the common Wealth of the same.
 And bycause that shee was a Romaine, and had made the state
 therefore hir heire, the Romaines builded in hir honoz a sumptu-
 ous Temple, whych in memoire of Flora was called Florianum;
 and euery peere in the memoire of hir, they celebrated hir feast by-
 pon the day of hir death: Suetonius Tranquillus sayeth, that the
 first feast which the Emperour Galba the second celebrated wth
 in Rome, was the feast of the amorous Flora, bypon whych daye it
 was lawfull for men & women, to doe what kynd of dishonesty they
 could deuise. And she was esteemed to be the greater saint which
 that day she wed her selfe mosse dissolute and wanton. And be-
 cause that the temple Florianum, was dedycated to amorous Flora, the
 Romanes had an opinion, that al women which bypon the same day
 repayed

of Palmyres.

repayed to the Temple in whorish apparell, should haue the graces and gifts that Flora had. These were the fond opinions and maners of the aunient, which after their owne makinge and deuises framed Gods and Goddesses, and because she pꝛeued vnshamefast and rich, a Temple must bee erected, and Sacrifices ordained for hir Whorish triumphes. But that noble men & Kings haue bene rapt and transported with the lurements of such notorious Trumpets, is and hath bene common in all ages. And commonly such infamous women be indewed with greatest gifts and graces, the rather to noosell and dandle their fauozers in the laps of their sadinge pleasures. But euery of them a most speciall grace, aboue the rest. As of a King not long agoe we reade he kept thre, one the holiest, another the craftiest, and the third the merriest. Two of which properties meete for honest Women: although the third so incident to that kinde as heat to a liuinge body. Cease wee then of this kynde, & let vs step forth to be acquainted with a lady and a Queene the Godlyest and Rousest, that is remembred in any aunient Monument of
Hystory.

Zenobia Queene of Palmyres.

¶ The lyfe and giftes of the most Famous Queene Zenobia with the Letters of the Emperour *AVRELIVS* to the sayde Queene, and her stoute aunswere thereunto.

The. XIIII. Nouell.



ZENOBIA Queene of Palmyres, was a right famous Gentlewoman, as diuerse Historiographers largely do report and write. Who although she was no Christian Lady yet so worthy of Imitation, as she was for hir vertues and herocall facts of Immoxtall prayse.

By hir wysedome & stoutnesse she subdued all the empyre of the Orient, & resisted the invincible Romas. And for that it is meete & requisite to alleage & aduouch reasons by weight, & words by measure, I wil orderly begin to recite the History of that most famous Queene. Wherefore I say, & about the. 284. Olimpiade, no long tyme after the death of the vnhappy Emperour Decius, Valerian was chosen Emperour by the Senate, and (as Trebellius Pollio his Historian doth describe) he was a well learned prince, indued with manyfold vertues, that for his speciall prayse, these wordes be recorded of him. If all the World had bene assembled to chuse a good Prince, they woud not haue chuse any other but good Valerian. It is also wrytten of hym that in liberality he was noble, in words true, in talke wary, in promise constant, to his friends familiar, & to his enemies seuer, and which is more to be esteemed, he could not forget seruice, nor yet reuenge wronge. It came to passe that in the. 14. yere of his raygne, there rose such cruell Warres in Asia, that forced he was to go thither in his owne persō, to resist Sapor king of the Persians, a very valyaunt man of Warre & fortunate in his enterprises,

Zenobia Queene.

enterprises, which happinesse of his not long time after the arre-
uall of Valerian into Asia, hee manifested and shewed. For beeing
betwene them such hot and cruell warres, in a skirmish, through
the greate faulte of the General, (whych had the conduct of the ar-
mye) the Emperour Valerian was take, and brought into the pris-
son of King Sapor his ennemy, whych cursed tyrant so wickedlye
bled that victorie, as hee would by no meanes put the Empe-
rour to raunsome, towards whom hee bled such cruelty, that so oft
and so many tymes, as hee was disposed to gette by on horsebacke
hee bled the body of olde Valerian to serue hym for aduantage,
setting his feete vpon the throte of that aged gentleman. In that
miserable office and vnhappy captivity serued and dyed the good
Emperour Valerian, not with oute the greate sorowe of them that
knew him, and the rueful compassion of those that sawe hym which
the Romans considering, and that neither by offe of gold, or flatter
or other meanes, they were able to redeeme Valerian, they determi-
ned to choose for Emperour his owne sonne called Galienus: which
they did more for respect of the father, than for any minde or corage
they knew to bee in the sonne. Who afterwarde shewed himselve
to bee farre different from the conditions of his father Valerian,
being in his enterprises a coward, in his promises a lyer, in cor-
rection cruell, towards them that serued him vnhanchfull, (and
which is worse,) hee gaue himselfe to his desires, and prailed place
to sensuality. By meanes wherof, in his tyme the Romain Empry
more than in any others raigne, lost most prouinces and receiued
greatest shame. In factes of warre he was a coward, and in go-
uernement of common wealth, a very weake and feeble man. Ga-
lienus not caring for the state of the Empry, became so miserable
as the Gouernors of the same gaue ouer their obedience, and in
the tyme of his raigne, there rose by thyr tyrants, whych vsur-
ped the same. Whose names doe followe, Cyriades, Posthumus
the ponger, Lollius, Victorinus, Marius, Ingenius, Regillianus,
Aureolus, Macrianus, Machianus the younger, Quiet s, Odena-
rus, Herodes, Moenius Ballista, Valens, Piso Emilianus, Staturni-
us, Tetricus, Etricus the younger, Trebelianus, Heremianus.

Timo-

Timolaus, Celsus, Titus, Censorinus, Claudius, Aurelius, & Quintillus, of whom, 18, were captaynes and seruicers vnder the good Emperour Valerian. Such delight had the Romanes, in that ancient world, to haue good Captayns, as were able to bee preferred to be Emperours. Nowe in that tyme the Romanes had for their Captayne generall, a knight called Odenatus, the Prynce of Palmyres, a man truely of great vertue, and of passinge industry & hardinesse in facts of warre. This Captayne Odenatus married a woman that descended of the auncient linage of the Ptolomes, sometymes Kinges of Egypt, named Zenobia, which (if the historians do not deceiue vs) was one of the most famous Women of the World. Shee had the heart of Alexander the great, shee possessed the riches of Cræsus, the diligence of Pyrrhus, the trauel of Haniball, the warie foxe sighte of Marcellus, and the Justice of Traiane. When Zenobia was married to Odenatus, she had by hir other hulsband, a sonne called Herodes, and by Odenatus shee had two other, whereof the one was called Hyeronianus, and the other Ptolemus. And when the Emperour Valerian was vanquished and taken, Odenatus was not then in the Campe. For as all men thought, if he had ben there, they had not receyued so greate an ouerthrow. So sone as good Odenatus was aduertized of the default of Valerian, in great haste he marched to the Roman Campe, that then was in great disorder. Whych with greate diligence hee reasssembled, and reduced the same to order, and (holpen by good Fortune,) wythin .xxx. Dayes after hee recovered all that whych Valerian had losse, makinge the Persian kynge to flee, by meanes whereof, and for that Odenatus had taken charge of the army, hee wanne amonges the Romanes great reputation, & truely not without cause: For if in that good time he had not receyued the charge the name and gloze of the Romanes had taken ende in Asia. During all this tyme Galienus, lyued in hys delighes at Myilan, without care or thoughte of the Common wealth, consuminge in his wyfull vices, the Money that was leised for the men of war. Whych was the cause that the gouernours of the prouinces, and Captens general, seing him to be so vicious and neglygent, vsurped the prouinces and armies which they had in charge. Galienus

bopp

Zenobia Queene.

boyde of all obedience sauing of the Italians and Lombards, the first that rose by against him were Posthumus in Fraunce, Lollians in Spayne. Victorinus in Affrica, Marius in Britane, Ingenous in Germanie, Regillianus in Denmark, Aureolus in Hungarie, Macrianus in Mesopotamia & Odenatus, in Syria. Before Odenatus rose against Valerian. Macrianus enioied Mesopotamia & the greatest part of Syria, whereof Odenatus hauing intelligence, he marched with his power against him and killed him, and discomfited all his army. The death of the Tyrant Macrian being knowen, and that Galienus was so vicious, the armies in Asia assembled and chose Odenatus Emperour: which Election although the Senate publickly durst not agree vpon, yet secretly they allowed it, because they receyued dayly newes, of the great Exploites and deedes of armes done by Odenatus, and saw on the other side the great continued follies of Galienus. Almost three yeares and a halfe was Odenatus Emperour and Lord of all the Orient, duringe which time he recouered all the Lands and Prouinces lost by Galienus, and payde the Romane army all the arrearages of their wages due vnto them. But fortune full of inconstancy, suffred not this good Prince very long to reigne. For hauing in hys house a kinsman of hys, named Meonius, to whom he bare great good will, for that he sawe him to be a valiant man of warre, although Ignorant of his Enuy and couetousnesse: it chaunced vpon a day as they two rode on hunting, & gallopinge after the pursute of a wilde Boze, with the very same Boze Speare which Meonius caried to strike the brast, he killed by treason his good Cousin Odenatus. But that murder was not long time breuēged. For the Boze speare wherewith he had so cruelly killed the Emperour his Cousin, was instantly known by the hunters which followed Odenatus: wher vpon that day the head of Meonius was stricken off. And Galienus vnderstandinge the death of Odenatus, gaue great rewardes and presents to them that brought him the newes, beinge so topfull as the Romans wer angry to vnderstand those pitiful tydings, because through the good orde which Odenatus vsed in Asia, they had great tranquillity and peace throughout Europa. Now after the death of this good Emperour Odenatus, the Princes chose one of his

of his two Sonnes to be Emperour of the Orient: But for that he was younge, they chose Zenobia to be Protector of hir sonne, & gouerner ouer the sayd Orient Emprye. Who seeing that by on the deccesse of Odenatus certayne of the East Countreies began to reuolt, shee determined to open her Treasure, rismeble hir men of Warre, and in hir owne person to march into the fildes: where shee did such notable enterprises, as shee appalled hir enemies, and made the whole world to wonder. About the age of. xxxv. yeares Zenobia was widow, beinge the Turtrix of hir childzen, Regent of an Emprye, and Captayne generall of the army. In which weighty charge shee vsed hir selfe so wisely and well, as shee acquired no lesse noble name in Asia, than Queene Semiramis did in India. Zenobia was constant in that which shee tooke in hand, true in words liberall, mylde, and seuer where shee ought to be, discrete, graue, & secrete in her enterprises, albeit shee was ambitious. For, not content with hir title of Gouvernesse, or Regent, shee wrote and caused her selfe to be called Emperesse, shee loued not to ride vpon a Hule, or in a littoz, but greatly esteemed to haue great horse in hir stable and to learne to handle and ryde them. When Zenobia went forth of hir Tent to see the order and government of hir Campe, shee continually did put on her Armure, and was well guarded with a band of men, so that of a woman, shee cared but onely for the name and in the facts of Armes shee craued the title of valiaunt. The Captaynes of hir Army, neuer gaue battell, or made assault, they neuer skirmished or did other enterpryse of warre, but shee was personally sent in her owne person, and attempted to shewe hir selfe more hardy than any of all the troupe, a thinge almost incredible in that weake and feeble kinde. The sayd noble Queene was of Nature, bigge and well proportioned, hir eyes black and quicke, hir forehead large, hir stomack and Breastes fayre and byright, her face white, and ruddy, a little mouth, hir Teeth so whyte, as they seemed like a rancke of white pearles, but about all things shee was of such excellent Spirit and courage, as shee was feared for hir stoutnesse, and beloued for her beauty. And although Zenobia was inuend with so great beauty, liberality, riches, and puissance, yet shee was neuer flattered with the blemish of vnchaste lyfe, or with other

Zenobia Queene.

other banities: and as hir husband Odenatus was wont to say, that after shee felt hir selfe with childe, shee neuer suffered hym to come neare her, (such was hir great Chastity) sayinge that Women ought to marry rather for childre than for pleasure. Shee was also excellently well learned in the Greke and Latine tongue. Shee did neuer eate but one Meale a Day. Hir talke was verie lytle and rare. The Meale which shee vsed for hir repaste, was either the hanch of a Wilde Beere, or else the seide of a Deere. Shee could drinke no Wyne, nor abyde the sent thereof. But shee was so curpous in good and perfecte Waters, as shee would geue so great a Pyece for that, as is ordinarily giuen for Wyne bee it neuer so excellent. So soone as the Kinges of Aegypte of Persia, and the Greekes, were aduertized of the death of Odenatus, they sent theire Ambassadors to Zenobia, aswell to visite and comfort hir, as to bee hir confederats and frendes. So much was he feared and redoubted for her rare vertues. The affayres of Zenobia beinge in such estate in Asia, the Emperour Galienus died in Lombardie, and the Romanes chose Aurelian as to bee Emperour, who although he was of a base and obscure lineage, yet hee was of a great valiance in factes of Armes. When Aurelianus was chosen Emperour, he made great preparacion into Asia, to inferre warres vpon Queene Zenobia, and in all hys tyme hee neuer attempted greater enterpryse for the Romanes. When hee was arryued in Asia, the Emperour proceeded agaynst the Queene, and shee as valiantly defended hir selfe, continually being betwene them great Alarms and skirmishes. But as Zenobia and hir people were of lesse trauell and of better skyle in knowledge of the Country, so they did greater harme and more anioiunce vnto theire Enimy, and thereof receiued lesse damage. The Emperour seeing that hee should haue much adoe to vanquish the Zenobia by armes, determined to ouercome hir by gentle wordes and fayre promises: for which cause he wrote vnto hir a letter, the tenor whereof ensueith.

Aurelianus Emperour of Rome and Lord of al Asia, to the right honorable Zenobia sendeth greetynge. Although to such rebellious Women as thou art, it should seeme vncomely and not decen- te to make request, yet if thou wylt seeke ayde of my mercy, and rende thy selfe vnder myne obedience, bee assured that I will doe thee honor and

nour, & geue pardon to the people. The Golde, Siluer, and other riches, within the Pallace I am content thou shalt enioy, together with the kingdome of Palmyres, which thou mayest keepe duringe the life, & leaue after thy death to whom thou shalt think good, by condition notwithstandinge, that thou abandone all thine other Realmes and Countreys which thou hast in Asia, and acknowledge Rome to be thy superior. Of thy vassalls, and subiectes of Palmyres, we demaund none other obedience, but to be confederates, and frendes, so that thou breake by thy Campe, wherewith thou makest warre in Asia, and disobeyest the city of Rome, wee will suffer thee to haue a certayne number of men of warre, so wel for the tuition of thy person, as for the defence of thy kingdome, & the two Children which thou haddest by thy hūbande Odenarus. And he whom thou louest best that remaine with thee in Asia, and the other I will carry with me to Rome, not as Prisoner, but as hostage and pledge from thee, The prisoners which thou hast of ours, shalbe rendred in exchange for those which we haue of thine, without raunsome of eyther parts. And by these meanes thou shalt remaine honored in Asia, and I contented, will retourne to Rome. The Gods be thy defence, & preserve our mother the city of Rome from all unhappy fortune.

The Queene Zenobia hauinge read the letter of the Emperour Aurelianus, without feare of the contents, incontinently made such aunswere as followeth. Zenobia Queene of Palmyres, and Lady of all Asia, and the kingdomes thereof, to thee Aurelianus the Emperour, health, & consolation. &c. That thou do intitle thy selfe with, the Emperour of the Romanes I doe agree, but to presume to name thy selfe lord of the East kingdomes, I say there in thou doest offend. For thou knowest wel, that I alone am Lady Regent of all the Orient, & the only dame & maydresse of the same. The one part whereof descended vnto me by lawfull Inheritance from my predecessors, & the other part. I haue won by my prowesse & deedes of armes. Thou sapest that if I rendie obedience vnto thee, thou wilt do me great honor: To which I aunswere, that it were a dishonourable part of me, & a deepe most brutish, that the Gods hauing created Zenobia to commaund all Asia, she should now begin to be

I. haue &

Zenobia Queene

Haue and thzal vnto the city of Rome. **S**emblably, thou saiest that
 thou wilt geue and leaue me al the golde, siluer, and other ryches
 whych I haue: Whereunto I aunswer, that it is a wycked, & fond
 request, to dispose the goodes of another as they were thine owne.
 But thine eyes shall neuer see it, ne yet thy handes shal touche it,
 but rather I hope in the Gods aboute to bestow and crye a larges
 of that which thou haste at Rome, befoze thou sinder that whych
 I haue and possesse in Asia. **T**ruely Aurelianus, the warres which
 thou makest agarnst me, and thy quarell, bee most vniuste befoze
 the supernall Gods, and very vnreasonable befoze men, and I for
 my part if I haue entred or doe take armes, it is but to defend my
 self and myne. **T**hy comming then into Asia is for none, other pur-
 pose, but to spolie & make habocke of that which an other hath.
 And think not that I am greatly afrayde of the name of Romane
 Prynce, nor yet the power of thyne huge army. For if it bee in thy
 handes to geue battell, it belongeth onely to the gods to geue e-
 ther to thee or me the victozy. **T**hat I remaine in fiede it is to me
 greate fame, but thou to fight with a widdowe, oughtest truely to
 bee ashamed. **T**here be come vnto myne ayde and Campe the Per-
 sians, the Medes, the Agamennonians, the Irencees, and the Syrians,
 and with the all the Gods immortall, who be wont to chastice such
 proude princes as thou art, and to helpe pooze Widows as I am.
 And if it so come to passe, that the Gods doe permit and suffre my
 lucke to be such, as thou do bereue me of lpe and dispoyle me of
 goods, yet it will be byuted at Rome, and published in Asia, that the
 wofull wight Zenobia, was ouerthrowne and slayne, in defence of
 hir Patrimony, and for the conseruation of hir husbandes honoz.
Laboze no moze then Aurelianus, to flatter and pray me, nor yet to
 threaten me: requere me no moze to yeelde & become thy prisoner,
 nor yet to surrender that which I haue: for by doinge that I can,
 I accomplish that I ought. For it will be sayd & noysed thzough
 the world, (may it so come to passe as Fortune do not fauor mee)
 that if the Emperesse Zenobia be captiue, she was not yet banquished.
Now touchinge my son which thou demauest to carpe with thee to
 Rome, truely the request I cannot abide, and much lesse do meane to
 grant,

graunt, knowing full well that the house is stor'd full of manyfold
bices, where mine is garnished with many notable Philosophers:
whereby if I leaue vnto my Childre no great heapes of goods, yet
they shalbe wel taught and instructed: For the one halfe of the day
they spend in Learninge, and the other halfe in exercise of Armes.
For conclusion of thy demaund, and small aunswere thereunto, I
pray thee trauaile no moze by letters to write vnto mee, ne yet by
ambassage to spende any farder talke, but attend vntill our con-
trouerſie bee decided rather by force of Armes than by vttered
wordes. The Gods p̄serue thee.

¶ It is sayd that Aurelianus, receiuing that aunswere did re-
toyce, but when he had red it, he was greatly offended, which in-
continently hee made to bee known, by gathering together his Camp,
and besieginge the City wherein Zenobia was. And Aurelianus,
wroth and outraged with that aunswere, although his army was
wary and halfe in dispayre (by reason of the longe Warres,) yet
he vsed such diligence and expedition in the Siege of that place, as
the Queene was taken and the city rased: which done, the Empe-
rour Aurelianus retourned to Rome, carpyng with him Zenobia,
not to doe hir to death, but to triumph ouer her. At what tyme
to see that Noble Lady goe on foote, and marche befoze the tri-
umphinge Chariot bare footed, charged wth the burden of hea-
uy chaynes, and hir two childre by her side: truly it made the Ro-
mae Patrons to conceiue great pity, being wel knowen to al the
Romans, that neither in valorous deedes, nor yet in vertue or cha-
stity, any man or woman of hir time did excell hir. The dayes of
the triumph being done, all the noble Ladies of Rome assembled
and repayed to Zenobia, and vsed vnto her great and honorable
entertainment, giuing hir many goodly presentes and rewardes.
And Zenobia liued in the company of those noble Patrons the
space of. 10. yeares befoze she dyed, in estimation like a Lucretia,
in honour like a Cornelia. And if Fortune had accompanied hir
personage, so well as vertue and magnanimity, Rome had felt the
egrenesse of hir displeasure, and the whole world tasted the sweete-
nesse of hir Regiment. But now we leaue we of, any longer to speak
of Zenobia, that wee may direct our course, to the hard fate of

of Palmyres.

a Kings daughter, that for loue married a simple person bryed in his fathers house, whorn base parentage, and churlyste kynde couide not be altered: but shewed the fructs of brytishnesse: till Lady Fortune pityng the Ladies case: prouided for her better dayes, and chastized her unkinde companion with desertys condigne for such a marche.

Euphimia of Corinth.

EUPHIMIA the Kyng of **CORINTHS** daughter fell in loue with **ACHARISTO**, the seruant of her father, and besides others which required hir in mariage, she disdayned **PHILON** the King of **PELOPONESVS**, that loued hir very seruētly. **ACHARISTO** cōspiring against the Kyng, was discovered, tormented, and put in prison, and by meanes of **EUPHIMIA** deliuered. The King promised his daughter & kingdome to him that presented the head of **ACHARISTO**, **EUPHIMIA** so wrought, as hee was presented to the King. The King gaue him his daughter to wyfe and when he died made him his heyre **ACHARISTO** began to hate his wyfe, and cōdēned hir to death as an adulteresse. **PHILON** deliuered hir: and vpon the sute of hir Subiects, she is contented to mary him, & therby he is made Kyng of Corinth:

The XV. Nouell.



Constancy in honest loue, (being a perfect vertue, & a precious ornament to the beloued, mduinge ether, besides toy and contentacion, with immortal fame and Gloze,) hath in it selfe these onely marks & properties to be knowne by, Chastity, & toleration of aduersity: For as the mynde is constant in loue, not variable, or geuen to

new to chaunge, so is the body continent, comely, honest and patient of fortunes plagues. A true constant minde is moued with no sugred persuasions of frendes, is diuerted with no eloquence, terrified wth no threats, is quiet in all motions. The blustering blasts of parents wrath, cannot remoue the constant mayde from that which she hath peculiarly chosen to hir selfe. The rigorous rage of frendes, doth not dismay the louing man from the embracement of hir whom he hath amongst the rest selecte for his vnchanged seere. A goodly example of constant and noble loue this hystory ensuing describeth, although not like in both, yet in both a semblable constancy. For Euphemia a kings daughter, abandoneth the great loue borne vnto hir by Philon, a yong prince, to loue a seruant of hir fathers, with whom she perseuered in great constancy, for all his false and ingratefull dealings towards hir. Philon seeing his loue despised neuer married vntill he married hir, whom afterwards he deliuered from the false surmised treason of hir cancred and malicious husband. Euphemia fondly married agaynst hir fathers will, & therefore deseruedly afterwards bare the penance of hir fault: And albeit she declared hir selfe to be constant, yet duty to louinge father ought to haue withdrawen hir rashe and heady loue. What daungers doe ensue such like cases, examples be rife, and experience teacheth. A great dishonour it is for the Lady and Gentlewoman to disparage hir noble house with mariage of hir inferior. Pea and great grieve to the parents to see their children obstinate and wilfull in carelesse loue. And albeit the Poet Propertius describeth the vehement loue of those that be noble, and haue wheres with in loue to be liberall, in these verses:

Great is the fayth of Lone.

the constant mynde doth much anayle:

And hee that is well fraught with wealth,

in Lone doth much preuaile.

Yet the tender Damosell or louing childe, be they neuer so noble or rich, ought to attend the fathers tyme and choyse, and naturally incline to parents will & likinge, otherwise great harme and detriment ensue: For when the Parents see the disobedience or

Euphimia of Corinth.

rather rebellious minde of theyr childe, their conceiued sorrow for the same, so gnaweth the rooted plante of naturall loue, as either it hastneth their untimely death, or else ingendreth a heape of melancholic humors: whych force them to proclaim defiance and bitter curse against their propre fruit, vpon whom (if by due regard they had bene ruled) they would haue pronounced the sweete blessing that Isaac gaue to Iacob, the mothers best beloued **Woe**: yea and that displeasure may chaunce to dispossesse them of that, whych should haue bene the onely comfort and stay of the future age. So that negligence of parents best, and carelesse heede of Youthfull head, breedeth double woe, but specially in the not aduised Chylde: who tumbledeth himselte first into the breach of diuine lawes, to the curses of the same, to parents wrath, to orphans state, to beggers lyfe, and into a sea of manifold miseries. In whom had obedience ruled, and reason take place, the hearte myght haue bene satisfied, the parent wel pleased: the life ioyfully spent, and the posteritie successiuelly tast the fruits that elders haue prepared. What care and sorrow, nay what extremitie the foresayde Noble Gentlewoman sustained, for not yelding to hir fathers minde, the sequelle shall at large declare.

There was sometimes in Corioth, a Citty of Grecia, a Kinge, which had a daughter called Euphimia, very tenderly beloued of hir father, and being arriued to the age of mariage, many Noble men of Grecia made sute to haue hir to wife. But amongs al, Philon the yong king of Peloponessus, so fiercely fell in lone wyth hir, as he thought he could no longer liue, if he were married to any other: for which cause her father knowing him to be a King, and of singular beautye, and that he was far in loue wyth his Daughter, would gladly haue chosen him to be his sonne in lawe, perswading hir that she should liue wyth him a lyfe so happy as was possible for any noble lady matched wyth a Gentleman, were he neuer so honorable. But the daughter by no meanes would consent vnto hir fathers will, allcaging vnto him diuers and sundry consideracions wherby hir nature by no meanes would agree, nor heart consent to ioyne wyth Philon. The king aboute all worldly thynges leued his sayre daughter: althowbeit hee would fayne haue broughte to passe

paste, that she should haue taken him to husband, yet he would not vse the fathers authoritie, but desired that Loue rather than force, should match his daughter, and therfore for that tyme was contented to agree vnto htr will.

There was in the Court a young man borne of htr Fathers Bondman, whych heght Acharisto, and was manumised by the Kinge, who made him one of the Esquiers for hys body, and vied his seruyce in sundrye enterpryses of the warres, and bicause hee was in those affayres very skilfull, of bolde personage, in conflicts and battayles very hardy, the King did very much fauor him, as well for that he had defended him from manifold daungers, as also because he had deliuered him from the treason pretended against him by the King of the Lacedemonians. Whose helpe and baluance, the king vsed for the murder and destruction of the sayde Lacedemonian King. For whych valiant enterpryse, he bountifullly recompenced him wth honorable prefermentes and statelie reuenues.

Vpon this young man, Euphymia fixed htr amorous eyes, and fell so farre in loue, as vpon him alone she bent htr thoughtes, and all htr louing cogitations. Whereof Acharisto being certified, & well espying and marking htr amorous looks, nourished with like flames the fire, wherewith she burned. Notwithstanding his loue was not so feruently bent vpon htr personage, as his desire was ambitious for that she should be htr fathers onely heire, and therfore thought that he should be a most happy man, aboue al other of mortall kinde, if he myght possesse that inheritance. The king perceiuing that loue told his daughter, that she had placed htr minde in place so strange, as hee had thought htr wysdome would haue more warily foreseen, and better wayed htr estate and birth, as com of a princely race, and would haue demed such loue, farre vnworthy htr degree: requiringe htr wth fatherly words, to withdraw htr settled mynde and to ioyne with him in choyce of husbands, for that he had none other worldly heire but hir, and tolde hir how he ment to bestow hir vpon such a personage, as a most happy life she should leade, so long as the descentes wer disposed to weaue the Webbe of htr Predestined life: And therfore was resolved to Espouse hir vnto y noble Gentleman Philo. Euphymia hearkned to

Euphimia of Corinth.

this vnliked sale, and with vnliked wordes refused hir fathers beſt, proteſting vnto him ſutch reaſons to like effect as ſhee did beſore, therby to draw him from his conceiued purpoſe, wherunto the wiſe King hauing made replye, continuing his intended mynde, at length in ragging wordes, and ſtozmed mind, he ſayd vnto Euphimia: How much the ſweter is the wyne, the ſharper is the egred ſawce thereof. I ſpeake this Parable, for that thou not knowing or greatlye regarding the gentle diſpoſition of thy fathers nature, in the ende mayſt ſo abuſe the ſame, as where hitherto he hath bene curicous and benigne, he may become througħ thy diſordred deedes, righte ſowze and ſharpe: and without vtterance of further talke, departed. Who reſting euill content wpyth that ſonde fixt Loue, thoughte that the next way to remedy the ſame, was to tell Achariſto, how greuouſly he toke his preſumed fault, and in what heinous parte he conceiued his ingratitude, and how for the benefitis which liberally he had beſtowed vpon him, he had broughte and enticed hys daughter to loue him, that was farre vngreecable her eſtate. And therfore he called hym beſore hym, and wpyth reaſons firſte declared the due tyte of a faythfull ſeruaunt to his Soueraigne lord, and afterwards hee ſayd: That if the receiued benefitis were not able to lette him know what were conuenient and ſeemely for hys degree, but would perſeuere in that which he had begon, he would make him feeſe the iuſt diſpleaſure of a diſpleaſed Prince. whereby hee ſhoulde repent the tyme that euer hee was bozne of Womans wombe. Theſe woozdes of the King ſeemed greuouſ to Achariſto, and not to moue hym to further anger hee ſeemed as though that (being fearfull of the Kynge diſpleaſure) he did not loue hys daughter at all, but ſayd vnto him, that he deſerued not to bee ſo rebuked, for that it lay not in his power to wpythſtand hir loue, the ſame procedyng of hir owne good wyll and liberty. And that hee for his part neuer requyzed loue: if ſhe did bend hir mynde to loue hym, hee could not remedye that affection, for that the freewyll of ſutch vnbydded appetite reſſed not in hym to reforme. Notwpythſtandeng, becauſe he vnderſtoode hys vnwylleng mynde, he from that tyme forth would ſo indeuor hymſelfe, as he ſhoulde well perceyue that the vnſayde mynde of the young gentlewoman

Euphimia

Euphymia, was not incensed by him, but voluntarily concerned of hir selfe. Yet thou shalt doe well (sayde the King) if the effecte proceede accordinge to the promise. And the more acceptable shall the same bee vnto mee, for that I desyre it shoulde so come to passe. The king liked wel these words although that Acharisto had conceived within the plat of his intended mind, som other treason. For albeit that he affirmed before the kings owne face, that hee would not loue his daughter, yet knowing the assured wil of the louyng gentlewoman, hee practised the marriage, & like an unkind & wretched man, deuised conuenient tyme to kill him. And fully bet to execute that cruel enterpryse, he attempted to corrupt the chiefeſt men about him, promising promotions vnto some, to some he assured restitution of reuencwes, which by fathers fault they had lost before: and to other golden hilles, so that hee mighte attayne by slaughter of the King, to wyne a kingly state & kingdome. Which the sooner he perswaded himself to acquire, if in secrete silence, they coulde put by that which by generall voice they had agreed.

And although they thought themselves in good assurance, that theyr enterpryse could take no ill successe, by reason of their sounde and good discourse debated amonges themselves for the accomplishment thereof, yet it fortunied that one of the conspiracy (as commonly in such lyke trayterous attemptes it channeth) beeyng wyth hys beloued Ladye, and shee makinge mone that little Commoditye succeeded of hir Loue for hir aduancement, brake out into these wordes, Holde thy peace (sayde hee: for the tyme wyll not bee longe, before thou shalt bee one of the chiefeſt Ladies of this land. Howe can that bee (sayde hys Woman?) No more adoe? (quod the Gentleman:) Cease from further questions, and bee merrye: for wee shall enioye together, a verie Honourable and a quyet Lyfe. When hir Louer was departed, the gentlewoman went to an other of hir gossipys very iocunde, and tolde hir what hir Louer had sayd: and shee then not able to keepe Counsell, wente and tolde an other: In such wyse as in the ende it came to the eares of the Kings stewards wyfe & he imparted the same vnto hir husband, who marking those wordes, like a man of great wisdom & experience, did verily beleue that
the same

Euphimia of Corinth.

the same touched the danger of the kings person : And as a faythfull seruant to his loyde & maister, diligently harkned to the muttering talke murmured in the Court, by him which had tolde the same to his beloued Lady : and knowinge that it proceeded from Acharisto, which was an obstinate & sedicious varlet, and that he with thre or four other his familiars, kept secret company in corners, suged that which he first coniectured, to be most certayne and true. Wherefore determined to moue the king thereof, and vpon a day finding him alone, he sayd vnto him, that the fidelitie and good will wherewith he serued him, and the desyre which he had to see hym lyue in longe and prosperous State, made hym to attend to the safegard of hys person, and to hearken vnto such as should attempt to daunger the same. For which cause, marking and espying the doings of certayne of his chamber (whose common assemblies and priue whisperings mislyking) he feared least they conspiring with Acharisto, shoulde worke treason, for berieuinge of his life : and to th'intent their endeouours might be ppreuented, and his safety foreseene, he thought good to reueale the same to hys Maiesty. Then he tolde the King the words that were spoake by the first Gentlewoman, to one or two of hir companions, and disclosed the presumptions which he had seene & percepued touchinge the same. Amongst the ill conditions of men, there is nothinge more commo than Popson, Conspiracies, and Treason of Ppnces and great Loydes : And therefore euery little suspicion presuming such perill, is a great demonstration of lyke myschiefe. Which made the King to geue credit to the Words of hys Steward, hauing for hys long experience known him to be faythfull, and trusty. And sodaynly he thought that Acharisto attempted the same, that after hys death, by mariage of Euphimia, he might be the Inheritour of hys Kingdome. The beliefe whereof, and the singular credite which he reposed in hys Steward besides other thinges, caused hym to commaund the captayne of his Guard to apprehend those 4. of whom hys Steward told hym, and Acharisto, committinge them to seuerall Prisons. Then he sent hys Officers to examone them, and found vpon their confessions, the accusation of his Steward to be true. But Acharisto, although the whole effect of the

Treason

Treason was confessed by those foure conspiratozs that were apprehended, and aduouched to his face, and for all the Tormentes wherewith he was racked and cruciated, yet still denied, that eyther he was authour of the enterprise, or partaker of a treason so wicked. Then the king incontinently caused the foure Gentlemen of hys Chamber to be rewarded, accordinge to the worthinesse of their offence, and were put to death, and Acharisto to be reppued in sharpe and cruell prison, vntill with tormentes he should be forced to confesse that which he knew to be most certayne and true, by the euidence of those that were done to death. Euphimia for the imprisonment of Acharisto, conceiued incredible sorrow, & vneths could be perswaded, that hee would imagine, much lesse conspyze that abhominable fact, as well for the loue which Acharisto seemed to beare vnto hir, as for the great good wyl wherewith he was assured that she bare vnto hym, and therefore the death of the King to be no lesse grtfele vnto him, than the same woulde be to hir selfe, the King being hir naturall and louing father. Acharisto thought on the other side, that if hee might speake with Euphimia, a way would be founde eyther for hys escape, or else for hys deliuerie. Whereupon Acharisto beinge in this deliberation, found meanes to talke with the Taplozs wyfe, and intreated hir to shewe hym so much fauour, as to procure Euphimia to come vnto him. She accordingly brought to passe, that the yong Gentlewoman in secrete wise came to speake with this traitterous varlet, who so soone as he sawe hir, shedding from hys eyes floze of teares, pittifully complaininge, sayd vnto hir: I know Euphimia, that the Kinge your father doth not inclose me in this cruell prison, he yet afflicteth me with these miserable tormentes, for any suspection he conceiueith of me for any intended fact, but only for the loue which I beare you, and for the like, (for wherch I render humble thanks) that you do beare to me: and because that I am wepy of this wretched state, and know that nothing else can rid me from this paynfull life, but onely death, I am determind with mine owne proppre hands to cut the threed of life wherewith the destinies hitherto haue prolonged the same, that this my breathinge Ghost, which breatheth forth these doleful playntes, may flee into the Skyes, to tell it selfe
amongst

Euphymia of Corinth.

amonges the restfull spirites aboue, or wandze into the pleasaunte
hellish feldes, amonges the shadows of Creusa, Aeneas wyfe, or eise
weth the ghost of complaining Dido. But ere I did the same, I
made myne humble prayer to the maiesty diuine, that hee woulde
boughsafe to shew me so much grace, as before I dye, I myght fula
fill my couetous eyes with sight of you, whose ymage still appea
reth before those greedy Gates, and faulke representeth vnto my
myndfull heart. Which great desired thing, Alth God aboue hath
graunted, I reld him infinit thankes, and Alth my destiny is such,
that such must be the end of loue, I doe reioyce that I muste dye
for your sake, which only is the cause that the King your father so
laboureth for my death. I neede not to molest you with the false e
uidence giuen against me, by those malicious villaines, that be al
ready dead: which onely hath thus incensed the Kings Wrathe
and heauy rage agaynst mee: wherof I am so free, as worthylye
they bee executed for the same. For if it were so, then true it is, (as
as lightly you myght beleue) that I neuer knew, what Loue you
beare mee, and you likewise did neuer knowe, the loue I bare
to you: and th:efore you may thinke that so impossible is the one,
as I dyd euer meane, thinke, or ymagine any harme or peryll to
your fathers person. To be short, I humbly do beleeche you to beleue,
that so faithfully as man is able to loue a woman, so haue I loued
you: and that it may please you to bee so myndfull of me in this fa
ding Lyfe, as I shal be of you in that life to come. And in sayinge
so, with face all bathed in teares, he clippd hir about the myddle
and fast embracing hir said. Thus takinge my last farewell of you
(myne onely life and ioy) I commende you to the gouernement of
the supernall God, & my selfe to death, to be dysposed as pleaseth
him. Euphymia, which before was not perswaded that Acharisto,
was guilty of that deuised Treason, nowe gaue full helpefe and
credite to his wordes, and Weeping with him for company, com
forted him so wel as she could, & bidding him to bee of good there,
she sayde, that she would seeke such meanes, as for hir sake and
loue he should not dye. And that before longe time did passe, shee
would help him out of prison. Acharisto although he bitered by ru
foul voice that lamentable talke, for remedy to ridde himselfe from
pryson,

Person, yet he did but sayne all that he spake, adding further: **As**
 las Euphimia, doe not incurte your fathers wrath to please my
 minde, suffer me quietly to take that death, which sinister Fortune
 and cruell fate hath prouided to abide my dayes. Euphimia ha-
 quilled with inspeakable griefe and burning passion of loue, said:
 Oh Acharisto, the onely top and comfort of my lyfe, doe not pierce
 my heart with such displeasing wordes. For what should I do in
 this wretched world, if you for my sake should suffre death. What
 for put away y cruel thought, and be content to saue your lyfe,
 that hereafter in tope and myztly you may spend the same. Trusting
 that if meanes may be founde for your dispatche from hence, we
 shall liue the residue of our prolonged lyfe together, in sweete and
 happy dayes. For my father is not made of stone flint, nor yet
 was nouiced of Hircan Tigre, he is not so malicious but that in
 tyme to come hee may be made to know the true discourse of thine
 innocent life, and hope thou shalt attayne his sauour more than es-
 uer thou didst befoze, the care whereof onely leaue to me, and take
 no thought thy selfe. for I make promise vpon myne assured faith
 to byrge the same to passe: Wherefoze giue ouer thy conceyued
 griefe, and bende thy selfe to lye some tyme a life, as euery gentlemā
 did, inained by in court as thou hast bene. I am content sayd A-
 charisto thus to doe, the Gods forbide that I should decline my
 hearte and mynde from thy behest, who of thy wonted grace dost
 seeke continuance of my lyfe, but rather sweete Euphimia, then
 thou shouldst suffre any danger to performe thy promise, I make
 request (for the common loue betwene vs both) to leane vnto in this
 present dangerous state. Rather would I lose my lyfe than thou
 shouldst hazard the least hearte of thy head for my releefe. Wee
 shall be both false yneough (answered Euphimia) for my deuice
 proceedinge from a womans head, hath already drawn the plot
 of thy deliverance, and with those wordes they both did end their
 talke, whose trickling teares did rather finishe the same, than wil-
 ling myndes: and eyther of them geuing a kysse vnto the Tower
 Waile, wherein Acharisto was fast shutte, Euphimia depars-
 ed, turmoyled with a thousande amorous pyrricks, and cra-
 sed not but firste of all to corrupt and winne the Taylers Wyfe,
 whose

Euphimia of Corinth.

whose husband was sent forth on businesse of the Kings. The conclusion of which practise was, that when shee caried meate to Acharisto, according to the order appointed, she should sayne hirselfe to be violently dispoyled of the Prison Key by Acharisto, who taking the same from hir, should shut hir in the Prison and escape, & when hir husband did returne, shee should make complaynt of the violence done vnto hir: accordinge to which deuise, the practise was accomplished. And when hir husbände returned home, hearing his wyfe crie out within the Tower, was maruailously amazed, and vnderstandinge that Acharisto was fled, (ignoraunt of the pollicie betwene his Wyfe and Euphimia,) hee fell into great rage, & speedely repayed to the Kynge, and tolde him what had chaunced. The Kynge thinking that the breach of Prison was rather throughe the womā's simplicitie than purposed malice, did mitigate his displeasure, howbeit forthwith he set out Scouts to spy, & watch in to what place Acharisto was gone, whose secret flight, made all their trauaile to be in vayne. Then the Kynge when hee saw that he could not bee found, made Proclamation throughtout his realme, that who so would bringe vnto him the head of Acharisto, should haue to Wyfe hys onely Daughter, and after hys decease shoulde possesse his Kingdome for Dowrye of that marriage. Many Knightes did put themselves in redinesse to atchieue that enterpryse, and aboue al, Philon was the chiefe, not for greedinesse of the kingdome, but for loue which hee bare vnto the Gentlewoman. Whereof Acharisto hauinge intelligence, and perceyuinge that in no place of Europa hee could bee safe and sure from daunger, for the multitude of them which pursued him vnto death, caused Euphimia to vnderstand the miserable Estate wherein hee was. Euphimia which bent hir minde, and employed hir study for his safegarde, imparted hir loue which shee bare to Acharisto, to an aged Gentlewoman, which was hir nurse & gouernesse, and besought hir that she would intreat hir sonne called Sinapus, (one very well beloued of the King) to reach his help vnto hir deare, that Acharisto might retourne to the court agayn. The Nurse like a wyse woman leste no perswasion vnsoken, nor counsell vnto remembred, which she thought was able to dissuade the yong gentlewoman

the woman from hir conceiued loue: but the wound was so deeplye made, and hir hearte so greuously wounded with the three forked arrowes of the little blinde archer Cupide, that despising all the reasons of hir beloued nurse, shee sayde, how shee was firmlye bent eether to rume from hir father, and to seke out Acharisto, to sustaine with him one equall fortune, or else with hir owne hands to procure death, if some remedie were not found to recover the kings good grace for the returne of Acharisto. The Purse vanquished with pity of the yong mayden, feearinge both the one and the other daunger that myght ensue, sent for Sinapus and vpon their talke together, Euphimia and hee concluded, that Acharisto should be brought agayne vnto the Courte, and that he hir selfe should present him to the King: wherin should want no kinde of diligence vntill the King did entertaine him agayne for his faithfull seruant, as he was wont to do. Vpon which resolution, Acharisto was sent for, and beinge come, Sinapus and Euphimia together with the Purse tolde hym in what sort they thre had concluded touching his health and safegarde. Which of him beinge well liked, did giue them humble thanks: And then Sinapus went vnto the King, and told him, that there was one newlye arriued at Corinth to make a present vnto his grace of the head of Acharisto. At whiche newes the Kinge shewed hymselfe so ioyfull, as if hee had gotten an other Kingdome: and beinge placed vnder his cloath of state, with his Counsell and Princely trayne about hym, tellinge them the cause of that assembly, commaunded hym that brought those newes, to bringe the party forth newlye come vnto the City to present the head of Acharisto before the presence of the King, who no sooner looked vpon him, but fell into such a rage, as the fire seemed to flame out of his angry eyes, and commaunded him presently to be taken and put to death. But Acharisto fallinge downe vpon his knees, humbly besought his Maiesty to geue him leaue to speake: But the Kinge not suffering him to utter one word commaunded hym away. Then the Counsellours and other Lords of the Court, intreated his grace to heare him: At whose requestes, and supplications he seemed to be content.

Then Acharisto began to say: Most sacred Prince, and redoubted

Euphymia of Corinth.

doubted soverayne Lord, & cause of this my presumptuous repaire before your Maiesty, is not to shew my selfe guilty of the late devised conspiracy, ne yet to craue pardon for the same, but to satisfie your Maiesty, with that contented desire, whych by Proclamation ye haue pronounced through your highnesse Realmes and dominions: which is, to offer this heade for reuenge of the faulte vniuently laped vnto my charge by those foure, which worthily haue tasted the deserued payne of theyr offense. Wherefore I am come hither of myne owne accord, to shew the loue and greate desire, whych euer I had to serue and please your Maiesty: And for that I would not consume my lyfe in your displeasure, I make offer of the same to your mercifull will and disposition, chosynge rather to die, and leaue your maiesty satisfied and contented, than to lyue in happy state, your princely minde displeased. But despairing that your maiesty should know myne innocency, I humbly beseech your grace to heare what I can say, that my fidelity maye bee thoroughly vnderstanded, & the wickednesse of the Harlots mine accusers wel wayed and considered. Then he began to rehearse all the things done by hym for the seruyce of his crowne and maiesty, and finally into what danger he did put himself, when hee kyled the Lacedemonian king, that went about by treasō to murder him: whych enterpryse might appeare vnto him to bee a sure and euident testimony, that hee ment nothinge hurtfull or prejudiciall to his highnesse: And that hee esteemed not his life, when hee aduentured for his seruyce and sauegard to employ the same, & after these alleaged causes, he added briefly, that the loue whych his maiesty knew to be betweene him and Euphymia his Daughter, ought to haue perswaded him, that he had rather haue suffered death hym selfe, than commit a thing displeasing to Euphymia. And knowing that a more offenseuful thinge coulde not chaunce to hir, than the violent Death of her Father hee myghte well thyncke that hee woulde haue deuyld the death of a Thousande other, rather than that horrible and abhorrible dedde, such as bys greatest Enemy woulde neuer haue done, much lesse hee whych was bounde vnto hym by so many Receyued Benefittes, for
wholy

whose seruice and preferuacion he had dedicated and bowed his
 Lyfe and Soule. But if so be his maiesties rancor and displea-
 sure could not be mitigated, but by doinge him to death, hee des-
 red by none of his allaged reasons should bee accepted, and there-
 fore was there ready to sacrifice his life at his maiesties dispo-
 sition and pleasure. Acharisto by nature could tel his tale exceeding-
 ly well, and the more his tongue stode him in seruice, the greater
 appeared his eloquence: Which so pierced the minde of the King,
 and perswaded the Counsellers, and other of the Court, as he was
 deemed guiltlesse of the treason: and the matter was so debated, and
 the King intreated to graunt him pardon, as hee was accompted
 most worthy of his fauour. Then the King, by the aduise of his
 Counsell, was perswaded, that by force of his proclamation, his
 daughter should be giuen to Acharisto in marriage, and his Kinge
 dome for a dowrie, bicause hee had offered his owne heade, accord-
 yng to the effecte of the same. So the Kinge repentinge him selfe
 that he had offended Acharisto, in the end agreed to the aduise of
 his counsell, and gaue him his daughter to wife. Whereof Euph-
 mia was so ioyful, as they bee that attayne the same of their hearts
 desire. The Father liued one whole yeare after this marriage, and
 Euphymia so pleasant a life for a certaine tyme, as was possible for
 any Gentlewoman. His father was no sooner dead, but the unkinde
 man, nay rather brute beast, had forgotten all the benefites recei-
 ued of his kinde and louing wife: and hauing by his onely me-
 nes gotte a Kingdome, began to hate his forsaungely, as he could
 not abide his sight, (Such is the property of cancred obliuion,
 which after it creepeth into ambitious heads, neuer hath minde of
 passed amys, ne regardeth former benefite, but like a monster and
 deadly enuier to humane nature, ouerwhelmeth in his bottomlesse
 gulfe all pietie and kindnesse) and determined in the ende for re-
 compence of such great good turnes, to despoyle him of his Lyfe.
 Nowe thinke you saye Ladies, was not this a saye rewarde for
 the loue, the trauailes and sorrowes susteined for this ingrate &
 villanous man, by that royal lady, to saue his life, and to take him
 to husband: Here is manifest (probatum) that in a vile and seruple
 mind, no vertue, no duety, no receiued benefites can be harboured.

¶

¶

108

Euphimia of Corinth.

Here is a lesson for young Gentlewomen to beware howe they contemne and despise the good aduise of theiꝝ auncent fathers. Here they may see the damage and hurt that vnadvised youth incurreth, when neglecting theiꝝ Parents hollosome admonitions, they grue themselves to the loue of such as be vnworthy theiꝝ estate and calling. For what should ayle the Gentle yuella boꝝne of gentle blood but to match her selfe in like affinity, and not to care for curiꝝ the kind, or race of churle. Bee there no Gentlemen to be found of personage and beauty worthy to torne in loue with them? Bee they so precious in nature, or tender in education as they? I like can not be bouchsafed to couple in marriage yoke? Compare the gyltlesinge gold to yrosse durte, and such is the difference betwene gentle & vngentle. But perhaps bringing vp may alter nature, and cuscome transfoꝝme defect of birth: As Licurgus the lawemaker dyd trye betwene the Curriish whelp and the Spanpell kinde, both by trayning vp running to theiꝝ contraries, the Spanpel not vsed to hunt eitꝝe vpon the potage dish, the other noursed in that pastime pursuing his game. But that Metamorphosis is seldome scene amongs humane sort, & therfoꝝe I aduise the gentle kind, to matche themselves in equall lotte, and not to trust str Customs cartelle in choyse of feere. Wee turne we then to vnkind Acharisto, who now in full possession of his desired praye, reuertinge to his puddle of carlishe will and cancred nature, after many thousand wronges don to his most noble and gentle Queene, accused hir to be an adulteresse and as one indeede, (although most innocent) she was condemned to the mercilesse fire. Philon, King of Peloponnesus which (as we haue sayd befoꝝe) loued Euphimia as he did the ballis of his owne eyes, vnderstanding the crueltie that this wicked Man vsed towards hir, to whom both his life and Kingdome did belonge, moued with nobilitie of mynd, determined to declare to Euphimia the inward feruent loue which he bare hir, and to chastise Acharisto for his ingratitude with due coꝝrection. Wherefoꝝe depely debating with himselfe of this aduenture, thus hee sayde, Now is y time Euphimia, that Philon shew what faithful Loue he hath euer boꝝne vnto thee, and that he deliuer thee both from the present daunger

danger wherein thou art, and from the hands of that unkynde
 wretch, that is farre vnworthy of such a wife. For if thou hadst
 best agreed to thy fathers will, and yelded to the pursure of him
 that loued thee best, thou haddest no neede a rescue now, ne yet
 bene in perill of the wastfull flames of fire, which be ready to con-
 sume thy nesh a tender corpe, full tenderly sometimes beloued of
 thy deare father, and of thy louing friend Philon. When he had
 spoken those wordes, he earnestly disposed him self vpon that en-
 terpryse. There was in those daies a custome in Corinth, that they
 which were condemned to death, were caried fiftie miles forth of the
 City, and there the sentence pronounced againt them, were put to
 execution. Philon hauing intelligence herof did put in readinesse
 a good troupe of horsemen, and being secretly imbarcked, arriued
 at Corinth, & closely the night before Euphimia should be brought
 to the fire, hard by the place where the miserable Lady should be
 buried, into a woode he conueyed his People: and so soone as the
 Sergeants and officers were approached nere the place wth the
 lady, he issued forth, and did set vpon the throng, not suffering one
 of them to remayne aliue, to carpe names. When he had deliuered
 Euphimia from that present danger of his lyfe, and the compaignie
 disperced, he said to the Queene: Nowe thou mayst see (saye
 Queene) the difference, betwene the disloyaltie and vnkynednesse of
 Acharis, and the faith and loue of Philon. But for that I meane
 not to leaue his ingratitude vnreruenged, thou shalt stay here, vntill
 thou heare newes of the due chastisement which I shall geue
 him. Those dire and cruell wordes foretold of his husbands death
 moued his honer and princely heare that by no meanes coude
 bee altered from the gentle nature, which it first had tasted and re-
 ceiued: And although he had suffered Honour and Solempne
 iurye of his vnkynde husbande for manyfolde Benefites, yet
 (she good Gentlewoman) woulde permit no ductye of a trusty
 and faithfull Wofe vnderperformed. Wherefore she besought
 Philon vpon her knees, not to procede to further reuenge of Acharis,
 telling him, & enough it was for him to haue escaped that pre-
 sent perill, fro which he like a princely Gentleman had deliuered her,

My 2.

and

Euphimia of Corinth.

and therfore duering his life was most bounde vnto him . Philon greatly wondred at the goodnesse of this Ladie , howbeit the ingratitude of that Warlet by no meanes he would suffer to bee unpunished. And beeing aduertised that Acharisto remained in hys Palace without any suspicion of this aduenture , banded neyther with Guarde or other assurance, committed Euphimia to safe custodie, and sodainly assailed the Palace of Acharisto: And finding the Gates open, he entred the city, crying out vpon the Wickednesse and treason of Acharisto. At which wordes the whole City began to reyse, to helpe Philon in his enterpryse. For there was no state or degree, but abhorred the vnkind order of that Warlet , towards the noble woman their Queene, Philon aided with the people , assaulted the Palace, and in short space inuaded the same : and the Warlet beeing apprehended, was put to death. The Corinthians seeing the noble mind of Philon, and the loue which he bare to Euphimia , and knowing that their late King was disposed to haue matched her wth Philon, were very willing to haue him to be their Kinge, and that Euphimia should be his wife, supposinge that vnder the gouernement of a Prince so gentle and ballant, they might liue very happily and ioyfullie. Execution don vpon that molle vnkinde varlet. Philon, caused the Lady to be conueyed home into his roial Pallace. And the people with humble submission, began to persuaade him to marie wth that younge Prince Philon. But shee which had lodged his thoughts and fixed his mind vpon that captiue, who vnnaturally had abused him, would by no meanes, consent to take a new husband, saying , that the seconde marriage was not to bee allowed in any woman. And albeit that shee knewe howe greatly she was bounde to Philon, as duringe life not able to recompence his louing kindnesse and valiant exploitte performed for his safegard, yet for all his unhappy fortune, shee was minded still to remaine a widowe , and well contented that Philon should possesse his whole domynion and kingdome, and she pleased to lye his subiecte: Which state she sayd, did like her best. Philon, that not for desire of the Kingdome but for loue of the Lady had attempted that worthy and honourable enterpryse, sayd vnto his Euphimia, it was onely for youre sake that I aduentured this

red this dangerous induer, to ridde you from the slander that might haue ensued your innocent Death, and out of the cruel hands of hym, whom vnworthily you did so dearely loue. No desyre of kingdome or worldly glorie induced me herebynto: No care that I had to enlarge the boundes of my countrey soile pycked the courage of my mynde (that is altozether empty of ambition) but the passion of carelesse Loue: w^{ch} this long tyme I haue bozned you in your happy fathers dayes, to whom I made incessant sute: and to your selfe I was so long a Suter, vntyll I recepued extreame repulse. For which I bowed a perpetuall single Lyfe, vntyll this occasion was offered: the brute whereof when I hearde first, so stirred the mynde of your most louyng knight, that droue slepe or greedy hunger, could not force this restlesse body to tarry at home, vntyll I reuenged my selfe vpon that villaine bozner, which went about wth roasting flames to consume the innocent flesh of hir whom I loued best. And therfore mustred together my men of armes and in secret sort imbarcked our selues and arryued here. Where we haue accomplished the thyng we came for & haue settled you in quiet raygne, fress from perill of traitterous mindes, craving for this my fact nought else of you but wyllyng mynde to be my wife: which sith you do refuse, I passe not for rule of your kingdome, ne yet for abode in Corinth, but meane to leaue you to your choyse. For satisfied am I, that I haue manifested to y^e world the greatnesse of my loue, which was so ample as euer king could beare to vertuous Queene. And so fare well. At which wordes he made a signe to his people, that they shoulde shippe them selues for returne to Peloponesus. But the Senatours and al the people of Corinth seeing the curtesie of Philon, & how greatly their Queene was bound vnto him, fel downe vpon their knees, and with toynd hands besought hir to take him to husbände neuer ceasing from teares and supplication, vntyll she had consented to their requeste.

Then the mariage was solempned with great toy & triumph.

and the whole City after that time, lyued in great felicity

and quiet, so long as nature lengthned

the dayes of those two

Noble Princes.

¶ 3.

The

The Marchionisse of Monferrato

The Marchionisse of *MONFERRATO*, with a banket of Hennes, and certaine pleasant words, repressed the fond loue of *PHILIP* the French Kyng.

The XV I. Nouell.



God Euphimia (as you haue herde) did fondly apply hir loue vpon a seruile mā, who though bred vp in court where trauing & vse doth alter the rude conditions of such as be intertayned there, yet bope of all gentleness, & frustrate of Nature's sweetness in that curteous kinde, as not exchanginge natue fiercenesse for noble aduancement, returned to hys hoggish soyle, and walowed in h durty filth of Inhumanity, whose nature myght wel with Fork, or staffe be expelled, but hōe againe it would haue come, as Horace pleadeth in his Epistles. A noble Gentlewoman, that mildly suffred the displeasure of the goodd king hir father who would sayne haue dissuaded hir frō that vnseemely match, to toyne with a pong Prince, a king, a Gentleman of great perfection: And A pestilent Carle, being beloued of so honourable a pucell, that for treason discharged the head frō the block, & of a donghill slaue preferred thee to be a king, wouldst for those deserts in the ende frame sayned matter to consume hir. With iust harred then did the Noble Emperour Claudius Cæsar prosecute those of bond and seruile kinde that were matched with the free and noble. Right well knew hee h some taste of egrenesse would rest in such sauage fruite, & therefore made a law, that the issue of them should not haue like liberty and preheminence, as other had, which agreeably did couple. What harme such mariage hath inferred to diuers states & persons (I auoide other exāples) the former Nouell teacheth.

teacheth Wherfore to ende the same, with bewailling of Euphymia for hir unluckie lot, begin we now to glad our selues with the wise and soue answer of a chaste Marquesse, a Gentlewoman of singular beauty and discretion, made to the fond demand of a mighty Monarch, that fondly fell in loue with hir, and made a reckning of that, which was doubtfull to recouer. This King by Losing hir whome he neuer saw, fared like the man that in his slepe dreamed that he had in holde, the thyng furthest from him. For the King neuer saw hir, befoze he heard hir praised, and when hee hearde hir praised, for purpose to winne hir, he traualled oute of his way, so sure to enioy hir, as if he had neuer scene hir. This historie, although brieft, yet sheweth light to noble dames that be pursued by Princes, and teacheth them wth what regarde they ought to interteine such suiters.

The Marquesse then of Monferrato, a citie in Italy beyng a Gentlema of great prowesse and valiance, was appointed to transport the Seas in a generall passage made by the christians, wth an huge Armie & great furniture. And as it chaunced, vpon a day greate talke was had in the court of king Philip surnamed Luscus (bicause he was pozeblinde) who likewyse was making preparation to depart out of Fraunce in the said toyney. Report was made by a Knight which knewe the sayd Marquize, that in all the world there was not the like married couple, as the Marquize and his wyfe were, as well bicause the Marquize was byted to be an excellent Gentlema, as also for that his wyfe amonges al the troupe of Ladies, that liued in the world that time, was the fairest and most vertuous; which words so entred the French Kings head, as sodatnely (neuer seeing hir in all his life) he began to loue hir. And for that purpose determined to imbarke him selfe at Genoua, that by trauallyng that way by lande, he myght haue good occasion to see the Marchionisse, thinking that her husband being absent, hee might easily obtain that he desired. And as he had deuised, he began his enterpryse: who sending al his power befoze, toke his toyney wth a meane trayne of Gentlemen: and beyng wthyn one Dayes iourney of the Ladys House, hee sent hir worde that the nexte Daye hee would vssite her at Wymer. The sage and dis-

The Marchionisse

crete Lady soyfully answered the Messenger, that she would accept his coming for a great and singular pleasure, and sayd that hys grace should be most heartily welcome. Afterwards she marvelled why such a king as he was, would in hir husbands absence, come to hir house. And in that marvel & consideration she was no whit deceived, conjecturing that the same of hir beauty was the cause of hys cominge. Nevertheless, like a wise Lady & honest gentlewoman, she determined to do him honour, and caused the worshipfull of hir country such as remained behinde, to be assembled, for aduice in all thinges that were necessary for hys entertainment: But the feast and variety of meats that should be serued, she alone tooke vpon hir to dispose and order. Wherefore speedily sendinge about, and makinge prouision for all the Hennes that might be gotten throughout the countrey, commaunded hir cookes, of those Hennes without other thing what so euer, to prepare diuers seruices. The King sayled not the next day to come accordingly as he had set word: & was with great honour receiued of the Lady: & in beholdinge hir, she seemed vnto hym (besides hys imagination comprehended by the former wordes of the Knight) to be farre more faire, honest and vertuous, than hee thought, attributing vnto hir, singular prayse and commendation. And so much the more his desire was kindled, as she passed the estimation bured of hir. And after that the King had withdrawen him selfe into the chamber ordeined and made ready for him, as appertained to a Prince so greate, and that dinner time was come, the King and Madame the Marchionisse sat together at one boorde, and other according to their degrees were placed at seuerall tables. The King serued with many Dishes and excellent Wines, beholdinge sometymes the Lady Marchionisse, conceiued great delight, and pleasure. But beeing the seruice, and meates (although dressed in diuers sortes) to be but Hennes, he began to wonder, specially knowing the soyle wherein they were to be so rich and plentifull, as by little trauaile, great abundance of foule, and Wenison might haue bin prouided, and thought that shee had indifferent leysure to Chase and Hunt, after that hee had sent hir Word of hys comminge. Forwithstandinge he would not take occasion to enter into talke of those

of those wants of better Cheare (his Venies only excepted) who looking vpon hir, with mery Countenance hee sayde vnto hir: Madame were all these Venies bred in this Countrey without a Cock? The Marchionesse which full well vnderstande the cause of his demaunde, thinkinge that God had sent hir an apt tyme for aunswere as he desired, boldly answered the kinge: No and it please your grace, but of Women, albeit in honour and apparell there is some difference, yet they be all made in this Countrey as they be else where. The King hearing hir aunswere, right wel did know the occasion of the Banke of Venies, and wheretunto hir wordes did tend: and conspied that to bestow any further talke to so wise a Lady, it were in vayne, and that force there could take no place. Like as vnadvisedly he fell in loue, so it behoued him of necessity wisely to launch the fire for his honour sake, and without any more taunting wordes, fearing hir reuenge, he dined without hope to get other thinge of hir. And when hee had done, to the intent by his sodayne departure, he might couer his dishonest coming, thankinge hir for the honour which he had receiued, and she recommendinge him to God, he departed to Genoua.

Here may be proued the great difference betweene Wisdom and folly, betweene Vertue and Vice. The King more by Lust, than other desired by circumstances endeouored to sound the deapth of the Ladies minde. She by comely answer, payd him home for his folly. A liuely representation of a noble creature, so well bedecked with Vertue as with

Beauty.

Mistresse Dianora.

Mistresse *DIANORA* demaunded of Maister *ANSALDO* a Gardē so faire in Ianuary, as in the moneth of May. Maister *ANSALDO* (by meanes of an obligation which he made to a Nicromancer) caused the same to bee done. The husband agreed with the Gentlewomen that she should do the pleasure which maister *ANSALDO* required, who hearinge the liberality of the husband, acquitted hir of hir promise, & the Necromancer discharged maister *ANSALDO*.

The. XVII. Nouell.



All things commonly accompanying the manner and trade of mans life, nothinge is more circumspectly to be attended and provided for, than regard and estimation of honesty: which attre, as it is most excellent, and comely, so aboue al other bayne Toyes of outward apparell to bee preferred. And as honesty hath all other good Conditions included in it selfe, as the same by any meanes cannot stray out of that tract, troden before by the steppes of that most excellent vertue: Euen so, impossible it is for the party adornoed with the same, to wander one tote from that foetroden Path. Wherefore let ech wyght that traceth this worldly Lefe, foresee the due obseruation of all thinges incident to that which is honest. Nothinge in this lefe (sayth Tully in his oration, for the Poet Archias) is so much to bee regarded. Honesty, for the gettinge whereof all torments of body, all perills and daungers of death be not to be regarded. Honesty then beinge a Treasure so precious, what care not onely for the archieuinge but for the conseruation ought to bee employed? In the practise whereof, one speciall thinge ought to be attended, which is, how a vow or promise ought to be made, or how the estimation

matron of honesty ought to be hazarded for any thinge seeinge it neuer so impossible. For what is it that loue and Honer hath not brought to passe? What heard aduentures by Iason? what sleight by Alexander the Sonne of Kynges Pryamus? what Monsters slayne & labours sustayned by Hercules? what dangers & exploits some haue incurred & other attempted by diuers? To bre shott,

Nihil est quod non effreno captus amore, ausit.

As Ouide the Poet sayth:

Nothinge there is, but that the louing man doth dare,

Surprised wth frantike fit, eche deede he doth not spare.

Wherfore let euery wight beware how they gage their honesty for any enterprize (seeme it neuer so impossible.) Mistresse Dianora deerey beloued of a gentleman, & earnestly assayed, in the ende yielded vpon a condition: which if it could be brought to passe (which she thought impossible) was content to surrender to his loue. Who consulting with a Magitian, performed his request: then what followed, and what counsel his husband gaue him, after she had broken the effect of his promise to hym, and what Curtesse was vsed on all sides, the sequete hereof discloseth.

The Countrey of Frioli although it be colde, yet is it pleasaunt by reason of many faire mountaines, riuers, and cleere springes that are in the same: where there is a City called Vdina, and in the same sometime dwelling a faire gentlewoman called Mistresse Dianora, the wyfe of Gilberto, a notable rich mā, a very curteous personage, and of good behauiour. This Lady, for his graces and vertues, was intierly beloued of a Gentleman and great Lord, called maister Ansaldo Grandese, who for his liberality and valiance in armes, was famous and well knowen. And albeit that hee loued her feruently, seeking al meanes possible to be beloued of her, soliciting her many times by Ambassadors, yet his labour was in vayne. And the Lady being offended for his dayly sute, and trauaile, hee for at his refusal and disagreement to his desire, would not abstaine from louing her, but still mayntayne his importunate sute. She deuising with her selfe how to rid him away, made a request vnto him, so straunge and impossible, (in his iudgement) as he was not able to bring the same to passe. And vpon a day she sayd

vnto an

Mistresse Diandra.

vnto an old woman, (the which cam often tymes to sue vnto hir in
hys behalf) these words: Good wife, thou hast many times assured
me, that Maister Ansaldo doth loue me a'booue all other, and thou
hast offered vnto me maruellous giftes and presents in hys name:
Al which I haue refused, vpon consideration, that I mynd uot to
fauour or loue him for his goodys: but if thou canst iustify by war-
rantize, or other probable argument, that hee loueth me so much
as thou sayest, I will condescend without faile to loue him againe
and to doe the thing that it shal please him to commaund me. Thers
fore if he wil assure me to doe that thing which I shal require hym
to do, tel him that I am at his commaundement. What is that ma-
dame (said the old woman) that you desire? The thing which I de-
maund (answered the Gentlewoman) is, that he should cause to be
made here without the Citie, during the moneth of Januarie next
commyn, a Garden full of greene herbes, flowers and trees, bee
spred with leaues, euen as it were in the moneth of May: And if
so be that he do it not, then let him neuer send thee or any other vnto
me againe: for if afterwards he be vnhappie vpon me, like as
I haue hitherto kept it close from my husoande and parents, euen
so complaynyng vnto them, I will assaue to bee dispatched from
hys long and tedious sute. When the Knight vnderstoode that re-
quest, and the offer that hys Mistresse made him (although it ser-
med a thinge very difficulte and all most impossible to bee done)
knowinge very well that she did the same for none other purpose,
but onely to put him out of hope that euer hee should entoy hir, hee
determined notwithstanding, to proue what hee was able to do.
And for that purpose sent to seeke in many places of the Worlde
if there were any man that coulde assaie him and geue him Counsel
therin. In the end there was one found that offered to doe it (if he
were well wged thereunto) by the art of Necromancie, with whō
maister Ansaldo bargained for a great summe of Money. Then he
expected the moneth of Januarie with great deuotion, whych bee-
ing come, euen when the coldest wether was, & that all places were
ful of snow & yce, this Necromancer vsed his art in such sort, as in
the night after the holy daies of Christmasse, in a faire meadow adioy-
ning to the Citie, ther appered in the morning (as they can testify that saw
the same

same) one of the fairest gardens that ever any man saw, full of herbes, trees, and fruites of all sortes: which when Maister Ansaldo had seen, God knoweth if he were glad or not: & incontinently caused to be gathered the fairest fruites & flowers that were there, and secretly sent e the same to his friende, invitinge hir to come and see the Garden which she had procured him to make, to the intent thereby she might know the loue that he bare hir, and to remember the promise which she made him, and confirmed by othe that he might from that time forth esteeme hir a woman so good as his promise. When the Gentlewoman sawe the flowers and fruites and hearing tell by report of the straunge things that were in that Garden, began to repent hir selfe of the promise which shee had made: but for all her repentaunce, she like one desirous to se straunge things, wente with many other women to see the same. and hauing praised it, not without greate admiration, she returned home, the angriest woman that ever was, when she had considered in what sort she had abused hir self by meanes of that Garden. And hir rage was so greate, that she coulde by no meanes keepe the same so secret or close; but that hir husband muste perceiue the same, who woulde needes knowe of hir al the whole matter. The Gentlewoman a long time kepte it secrete: in the ende she was constrained to declare vnto him the same in order. His husbände hearing what she had promised was sodainly very angry: afterwarde considering the pure intente of his wife, hee wisely appeased hir, and sayd Dianora, it is not the acte of a wyse and vertuouse wife to encline hir eare to such messages as those be, and lesse honest to make any matter or bargain of hir honesty with any persō, vnder what condition soeuer it be. words which the hart receiveth by the eares, haue greater force than many do esteeme, and there is nothing so difficult, but by the amorous is brought to passe. first therfore thou hast done euil to giue eare vnto such ambassage, and afterwards for agreement to the bargaine. For the weight of chastity is so ponderous, as by no meanes it ought to be laid in balance, either by impossibilities to boast, & bragge thereof, or else by assurance of their conceiued thought to bring it into question, leasse in all places the same may be disputed

The Marchioniffe.

be disputed byon, and blemish with the note of lightnesse, the person tell that to me disposed: but because I know the party of thy heart, I will agree vnto thee for discharge of the promise, which peraduenture, some other would not doe, moued therunto for the feare I haue of the Necromancer, who if he see Myster Ansaldo to be offended because thou hast deluded him, may doe vs some displeasure: wherefore I will that thou go to master Ansaldo: and if thou canst by any means to vse thy selfe (as thou dost not faue) thou mayst discharge thy promise, I shall commend thee: but if there be no remedie otherwise, for that one time then lend forth thy Body and not thy will. The Gentlewoman hearing her husband so wisely speake, could doe nought elsse but Weepe, and sayd, that she would not agree to his requeste. Not withstanding, it pleased the husband (for at the deniall which his wife did make) that it should be so by means whereof, the next morning vpon the point of day the Gentlewoman in the honest attire she had, with two of her seruants before, and her mayde behinde, wente to the lodging of master Ansaldo who when he hearde tell that his Louer was come to see him, marvelled much, and rising by, called the Necromancer, and sayde vnto him: It well is, that thou see how much thyne arte hath preuailed, and going vnto her, without any disordinate lust, he saluted her with reuerence, and honestly receiued her. Then they entred into a faire Chamber, and sitte downe before a great fire, he sayde vnto her these Wordes: Madam, I humbly beseeche you, if the loue which I haue borne you of long time, and yet doe beare, deserue some recompence, that it please you to tell me vnfainedly the cause which hath made you to come hither thus early, and with such a company. The Chaste Gentlewoman, her eyes full of teares made answer: Sir the loue which I beare you, nor any promise faith hath brought me hither but rather the only commandement of my husband, who hath greater respect to the payne and trouble of your disordinate loue, than to his owne honour or my reputation, who hath caused me to come hither, and by his commandement am ready for this once to satisfie your pleasure. At Myster Ansaldo were abashed at the beginning, he much more did maruell when he hearde the Gentlewoman thus

thus to speak, & moved with the liberality of his husband, he began to change his heart into compassion, & said: *W*ist thou God defend if it be true that you do say, that I should forfeit the honour of him, which hath put upon my love, and therefore you may tarrie here so long as it shall please you with such assurance of your honesty as if you were my naturall sister, and franklin may repair w^hile you be disposed, vnto such condition, that you tender in my behalf those thanks vnto your husband which you shall thinke convenient, for the great liberality wherby he hath employed vpon me, decking my selfe henceforth so much bound vnto him, as if I were his brother or seruaunt. The Gentlewoman hearing those wordes, the while contented that euer was, sayd vnto him: *W*ill the Worlde could neuer make me belue (your great honesty considered) that other thing could happen vnto mee by my coming hither, than that which presently I see: For which I reckon my selfe perpetually bounde vnto you. And takinge his leave, honourably returned in the aforesayde company home to his husband, and tolde him what had chaunced, which engendred perfect loue and an pyce betwene hym and mayster Ansaldo. The Mercenancer to whom maister Ansaldo determined to geue the pyce, covenanted betwene them, seruing the liberality which the husbande had vsed towards mayster Ansaldo, and the like of mayster Ansaldo towards the Gentlewoman sayd: *G*od defend, that sith I haue secue the husband by bearing all of his honour, and you bountifull of your loue and curtesie but that I be likewise franke in my reward. For knowing that it is well employed of you, I purpose that you shall keepe it still. The King it was ashamed, and woulde haue forced him to take the whole, or part: but in offering the same, he lost his labour. And the Mercenancer the third day after, hauing vndon his Carden, and desirous to departe, tooke his leave.

Thus Ansaldo extinguishing the disyncell loue kindled in his heart, for intoying of his Lady, vpon consideration of honesty and rity, and regard of Curtesie, repressed his wanton minde, and absteined from that which God graunte that o-

thers by like Example may
refrayne.

Mithris

Mithridanes and Nathan.

MITHRIDANES enuious of the liberality of **NATHAN**, and goinge about to kill hym, spake vnto him vnknowne, & being infourmed by himself by what meanes he might do the same he found him in a little wood accordingly as hee had tolde him, who knowinge him, was alhamed, and became his friende.

The. X V I I I. Nouell.



Trauinge may seeme thys following hys toye, and rare amoniges those, in whom the vertue of liberality neuer florished. Whan we reade of, that haue kept Noble & boistifull houses, entertapninge Guestes, both for rayne and free borne, plentifully feasting them with variety of cheere, but to entertapne a Guest that aspyreth the death of his host, and to cherishe hym after hee

knew of it, or liberally to offer his life, seldome or neuer we reade, or by experiēce knowe. But what moued the conspirator to frowne at the state and life of Nathan? Euen that froward pestilent passion Enuy, the cosumer and deadly monster of all humanity: who imitatinge the sphe cost, and port of his deuout host Nathan, and seekinge after equall glozy and fame, was through enuies force for not attapninge the like, diuē to imagine how to kill a good & innocent man. For enuy commonly wayreth vpon the vertuous, as uen as the shadow doeth the body. And as the Cantharides (which similitude Plurarch bseth) delight in ripe and prosperous wheate, & crawle in spreadinge roses, so enuy chiesly them which in vertus and richesse do abound. For had not Nathan bene famous for hys goodnesse, and glortous for liberality, Mithridanes woulde neuer haue pro-

haue prosecuted him by enuy, nor gon about to berieue hys lyfe. He that enuieyth the vertuous and industrious person, may bee compared to Dedalus, whom the Poets sayne to murther Telon hys Apprentice for deuising of the Potters wheele. And Mithridanes disdainfull of Nathans hospitality, would haue slayne him. But how a hamed Mithridanes was of his practise, this example at large discourseth.

Very true it is (at least wylf if credite may bee giuen to the wordes of certayne Genoua Merchantes, and of others whych haue trauiayled that countrey (how in Cataya, there was sometimes a rich Gentleman without comparison, named Nathan, who hauing a place of Pallace forning vpon the high way, by which the trauiaylers to and from the West, and East, were constrained to passe, and hauing a noble and liberal heart, desirous by experience to haue the same to be knowen, and wylf what nature and quality, it was affected, he assembled dyuers maister Masons and Carpenters, and in short tyme erected there one of the stateliest Pallaces for greatnesse & costly furniture he euer was seene in that countrey, which afterwards he caused to be stozed with all things necessary, honourably to entertayne ech Gentleman that passed that way: & with a great trayne of seruants he welcomed & accepted such as iourneyed to & fro. And in this comendable custome he persevered so longe as both in the East and West partes, repute was bruted of his renoume and fame: and being come to auncient yeares, not for all that weary of his liberality, it chaunced that his fame flew to the eares of a yong gentleman called Mithridanes, who in a countrey not farre off from his, had his abode and residence. Mithridanes knowing himselfe to be so rich as Nathan, enuious of his vertue & liberality, purposed by some meanes or other to defame & obscure his neighbours good repute. And hauing builded a Palace like to that which Nathan did possesse, began to vse curtesies to those which passed to and fro, in outrageous & disorderd sort: wherby in litle time he purchased great fame. Now it chaunced vpon a day, as Mithridanes was alone in the court of his Palace, a poore woman entring in at one of the gates of his same, craued almes, & had it so succussuely eue to his twelfth & thirtieth time also she returned

Mithridanes and Nathan.

agayne, which Mithridanes perceluting, said vnto hir: Good wyfe you come hither very often. And yet he denied not hir almes. The old woman hearing those words, sayd: Oh how maruclous is the liberality of Nathan, whose Palace hath xxxii. entrees by seuerall gates, so greate as this, and daily begging almes there, neuer made semblance as though he knew me, and yet the same was not denied me: and being come hither but xiii. times, I haue bene marked & reppoued: and saying so, she went her way, and neuer after came thither agayne.

Mithridanes hearyng these wordes to proceede from the old womā fell into a great rage, deeming the same reported of Nathan to be a diminution of his own, & said: Whereth, when shal I be able to attayne the liberality of Nathans greatest things? And why then goe I about to excel him, when in litle matters I am not able to come neare him? Verily I labour all in vaine, If I my self do not seeke meanes to rid him of his life, A ch croked age is not disposed to dispatch hi, I must therfore do the same with myne own hands. And in that fury makeng no man priuy to his intent, he rode forth with a smal traine, & in thre dayes arriued where Nathan dwelte, and then commaunded his men in a vy wise not to be knowen that they came with him, and likewise that they knewe him inot, but to prouide lodging for themselues, vntill such time as they had further newes from him. Mithridanes then being arriued about euening, al alone, found Nathan walking by and downe befoze his faire Palace, without other company then himself, who in simple attire and garment went forth to meete him. Of whome Mithridanes, because he knew not Nathan, demaunded if he could tell him where Nathan dwelt. Nathan pleasantly made him answer: My sonne, ther is no mā in these quarters ꝑ cā better tel thee thā I, & therfore ꝑ thou please, I well bying thee thither. Mithridanes said, that he should doe hym a very great pleasure: but he would not if it were possible bee keene or known of Nathan. And that can I very wel do said Nathan, now ꝑ I know your mynd. Being then lighted of frō his horse, he wēt with Nathan, who by & by interteined him w diuersity of talk, to his faire Palace. And Nathan incōtinently caused one of his seruants to take Mithridanes horse, and said vnto him in hys
care

care that he should wyth all speede gine order to his houlsholde,
that none should tel the younge Man that he was Nathan, which
accordingly was done. But after they were in the Palace, Nathan
brought Mithridanes into a very fayre chambze, that none mighte
see him excepte such as he had appoynted to serue hym: and cau-
linge greates honour to bee done vnto him: hee hymselfe kepte him
company. As they two were together, Mithridanes asked
him (to whom hee vsed conuenable reuerence as to his father)
what he was? whom Nathan answered: I am one of Nathans poze
seruaunts, that from the time of my youth haue bene broughte vp
wyth him, and neuer aduanced me to any thing but to that which
you see. Wherefore, although euery man greatly prayseth him, yet
haue I no cause to commend hym. These wordes gaue some hope
to Mithridanes, by better aduise and surer to execute his wicked
intente. And Nathan asked him very curiously what he was, and
for what businesse he was come thither, offering him helpe and
counsel in that he was able to do, Mithridanes then paused a while
before he would make him answer: and in the ende purposing to
put his trust in him, required with great circumstance of wordes
his fayth and after that his counsell and adde. Then he wholy dis-
couered what he was, wherefore he was come, and the cause that
moued hym. Nathan hearing those wordes, and the mischieuous
determination of Mithridanes, was chaunged and troubled in
mynde, notwithstanding without making any semblance of dis-
pleasure answered him with bolde countenance. Mithridanes, the
father was a Gentleman, and of stoute stomacke, from whome so
farre as I see, thou wilt not degenerate, by attemptyng so great
an enterpryse as thou hast done. I intende to be lyberall to ech man
and praise greatly the Cnupe which thou bearest to the Vertue
of Nathan, because if there were many such, the Worlde which
is now myserable, would shortly become prosperous and happpe:
and doe make the promyse, that the intent thou goest about, shall
be kepte secreete, whereunto I can sooner geue Counsell than any
great helpe, and mine aduise is this: You may see from the place
where we now be a litle Croate, about a quarter of a Myle hence,

¶ 2.

where-

Mithridanes and Nathan.

whereunto Nathan in a maner walketh euery moynynge, and tarrieth there a long time: there you may easily finde him, and do your pleasure. And if you kill him, you may goe, (to the intent without daunger you may returne home to your owne House) not that way you came, but by that you see on the lefte hand leade out of the wood, which although it be not so common as the other, yet is the nearest way, and safest for you to passe.

When Mithridanes was thus informed, and that Nathan departed from him, he caused worde secretly to be sent to his Wif, which likewise lodged there, in what place they should waite for him the next day. And when the day was come, Nathan not altering the counsel he gaue to Mithridanes, ne chaunging any part of the same, went all alone into the little woodde, to receiue his Death. When Mithridanes was by, & had taken his bowe and sword, (for he had none other weapons) he mounted vpon his horse, and rode to the little woodde, where a farre off he espied Nathan, commynge thitherward all alone, and determining before he would set vpon him to see him and heare him speake, made toward him, & catching him by the hand vpon his head, said vnto him: Did choyse thou art dead. Whereunto Nathan made none other answer, but said I haue deserued it. When Mithridanes heard his voyce and looked him in the face, he knew by and by that it was he, which had curiously receiued him, familiarly kept him company, and faithfully had giuen him counsel. Whereupon, his fury asswaged, and his anger conuerted to shame: By meanes whereof, throwing downe his sword which he had drawn to strike him, he lighted of from his horse, and did prostrate himselfe at Nathan his fathers feete, & said vnto him weeping: I manifestly perceiue right louing father your great liberality, and by what pollicy, you be come hither to render to mee your life. Whereunto I hauing no right, declared my selfe desirous to haue the same. But our Lord god, more carefull of my deuoir than my self. hath euen at the very point, when it was most needefull, opened the eyes of myne vnderstandynge, which cursed spite and cancred enuy haue closed vp: and therefore, the more you were ready to gratify my desire, the greater punishment I knowe I ledge my selfe to deserue for my faulte. Take then of me if it please

please you such vengeance as you thinke meete for myne offence.

Nathan caused Mithridanes to rise vp, kissinge and embracinge hym tenderly, and sayd vnto hym: My sonne, thou needest not to demaund pardon, for the enterpryse done, good or euill as thou list to name it. For thou diddest not go about to rid me of my lpe for any hatred thou diddest bear me, but only to be accompted the better. Be assured then of me, and verily beleue, that there is no lying man, that I loue better than thy self, considering the greatnesse of thine heart not inclined to hoorde or gather together the drossy muck of Syluer, as the myserable do, but to spend that which is gathered. Be not ashamed for hauing a will to kill me, thereby to get renoume: For Emperours and greatest kings, neuer stretched forth their power, and racked their Realmes, and consequently aspired far, for no other purpose but to kyll, not by murdering one man as thou didst meane, but of infinit numbers, besides the burning of Countries, and raising of Cities. Wherefore, if to make thy selfe more famous, thou wouldst haue killed me alone, thyne enterpryse was not newely to be wondred at, but a thyng in daylye practise. Mithridanes no more excusinge hys wicked intent, but prayeing the honest excuse, which Nathan had deuised, dyed neare vnto hym to enter into further talke wth hym, which was, how he greatly maruelled, that he durst approach the place, with so litle rescue, where his death was swoyne, and what he meant him selfe to tell the way & meanes: wherein he required him to say his mynde, for disclosinge of the cause.

Whereunto Nathan replied: maruell not Mithridanes, of mine intent and purpose, for Athens I was at age disposed to myne owne free will, and determined to do that which thou hast gone about to do, neuer any came to me, but I haue contented them (so farre as I was hable) of that they did demaund. Thou art come hither with desire to haue my lpe, wherefore seeing that thou diddest craue it, I forthwith dyd meane to giue it, that thou alone mightest not be the man that should depart from hence without attendinge thy request: and to bring to passe that thou myghtest haue the same, I gaue thee the best Counsel I could, as wel for bereauing of my lpe, as for enioyinge of thyne owne. And therefore I say to thee agayne, and pray thee for to take it, thereby to content thy selfe,

¶ 3.

¶ thou

Mithridanes and Nathan.

If thou haue any pleasure therein. For I do not know whych was
 better to imploy it. I haue all ready kept it foure scoz yeares, and
 haue consumed the same in pleasures, and delights, and do know
 by course of nature in other men, and generally in all things, that
 long it cannot last in byrathing dayes. Wherefoze I think good,
 that better it is to geue, as I haue dayly done, and departe with
 my Treasures, than keepe it till nature cary it away in despite of
 my Teeth, and maugre that I haue. It is a little gift to giue one
 hundred yeares, how much lesse is it then to giue fixe or eyght of
 those I haue to liue? Take it then if it please thee, I thee beseech.
 For neuer yet found I man that did desire þe same, ne yet do know
 when I shall finde such one, if that thy selfe which didst desire it,
 do not take it. And if it chaunce that I do finde some one, I know
 full well that so much the longer as I shall keepe the same, the
 lesse esteemed it shall be, and therefore befoze the same be vile and
 of little price, take it I beseech thee. Mithridanes soze ashamed, sayd
 God forbid, that by separating so deare a thing as is thy life, that
 I should take it, or onely desire the same, as I did erst, from which
 I would not diminish yeares, but willingly would of myne owne
 ad thereto if I could. Whereunto Nathan by and by replied. And
 if thou couldest, wouldest thou geue them? And wouldest thou
 cause me do to thee that which I neuer did to any man, that is to
 say, to take of thy things which neuer I did of any living person?
 Pea verily answered Mithridanes. Then sayde Nathan: Thou
 oughtest there to doe that which I will tel thee: Which is to re-
 mayne here in my house so younge as thou art, and beare the name
 of Nathan, and I woulde goe to thine, and bee called Mithrida-
 nes. Then Mithridanes answered: If I had also so great experi-
 ence as thou hast, I woulde not refuse thine offer: but bicause I
 am assured, that my deedes woulde diminish the renoume of Na-
 than, I will not marre that in another, which I cannot redress
 in my selfe: & therefore I will not take it. After thys talke and
 a great deale moze betwene them, they repayed to the Palace, by
 upon the request of Nathan, where many dayes he did great honour
 to Mithridanes, incouraging and conselling him, so well as he could:
 dayly to perseuere in his high and great indenuour. And Mithri-
 danes desirous to returne home with his compeny, Nathan (after
 that he

that he had let him well to know, that he was not able to surpasse him in liberalitie) gaue him leaue.

Mistresse Katherine of Bologna.

Mayster *GENTIL* of *CARISENDI* being come from *MODENA*, tooke a woman out of hir Graue that was buried for dead, who after she was come agayne, brought forth a Sonne, whych Maister *GENTIL* redred afterwarde with the Mother to Mayster *NICHOLAS CHASSENEMIE* her Husband.

The. X I X. Nouell.



Reading this History, I consider 1. A strange and rare chaunces: the one a lyberall and courteous act of an earnest louer towards his beloued and hir husband, in leauinge hir vntouched, & not dishonored, although in full puissance to doe his pleasure: the other a lyke liberall offere by presentinge whom he dearly loued, and a newe borne Chylde: Both supposed to be dead by hir freendes, and therefore Intombed in Graue. Wherewithall is to bee noted the rare and Anguler desire of a gentlewoman, by humble sure for conseruation of hir honour, although longe time pursued by a Gentleman that reuiued hir almost from death, and thought her vnterly to be void of life. To praise the one, & to leaue the other not magnified, it were a part of discurrese: but to extol both with shoutes, & acclamations of infinite praise no dout but very commendable. If comparisong may be made to Princes of elder yeares,

¶ 4.

and not

and not to note those of later, truly Master Gentil by that his fact, seemeth not much inferiour to Scipio Africanus for sparing the wyfe of Indibilis, ne yet to King Cyrus Panthea the wyfe of Abadatas: although both of them not in equall state of loue, (as wholly estranged from that passion) like to maister Gentil, who in deed for subduing that griefe and motion, deserueth greater prayse. For sooner is that torment auoyded at the first assault and pinch, than when it is suffred long to flame and raigne in that yelding portion of man, the heart, which once fed with the bapty of loue, is seldome or neuer loosed. To do at large to vnderstand the prooue of those most vertuous persons, thus beginneth the history.

At Bologna a very notable Citie of Lombardy, there was a Knight of very great respect for his vertue, named maister Gentil Carissendi, who in his youth fell in loue with a Gentlewoman called maistresse Katherine, the wyfe of one mayster Nicholas Chaconemie. And because during that loue, he receiued a very ill counterchange for his affection that he bare vnto hir, he wet away (like one desperate) to be the iudge and potestate of Modena, whereunto he was called. About the time of his husband being out of Bologna, and the gentlewoman at hir Manour in the countrey, not past a mile & a halfe from the Citie (whither she went to remayne, because she was with childe) it chaunced that she was sodenly surprised with a sicknesse, which was of so great force, as there was no token of life in her, but rather iudged by all Physitians to be a dead Woman. And because that hir neerest kinne reported that they hearde hir saye, that shee coulde not bee longe time with Childe, but that the infante must be perfect in her wombe and ready to be deliuered, and therefore affected with some other disease and griefe that would bring hir to hir ende, as a Tympany or other swelling, rising of grosse humors, they thought hir a dead Woman, and past recovery: wherefore vpon a time she falling into a trauance, was verily supposed to be dead. Who after they had mourned hir death, & bewayled the sodayn expiratton of hir soule, caused hir to be buried without hope of recovery (euen as she was in that extasse) in a graue of a church adorning heaid by the house wher she dwelt. Which thing incontinently was aduertised maister Gentil

Gentil by one of his frends, who although he was not likely, as he thought, to attaine hir fauor and in vnter dispayre therof, yet it grieved him very much that no better heede was taken vnto hir thinking by diligence and time shee woulde haue reuied agayn, sayinge thus in the end vnto him selfe: How now madam Kaiherin, that Death hath wrought his will wth you, and I could neuer obteyne duryng your life one simple looke from those youre glistering eyes, which lately I beheld to my great overthrow and decay, wherfoze now when you cannot defend your self, I may bee bold (you being dead) to steale from you some desired kisse: When hee had sayd so, being already fflyght, and hauynge taken order that none should know of his departure, he gat vpon his Horse, accompanied with one only seruauant, and without taryinge anye where, arriued at the place where his Lady was buried, and opening the Graue, forthwith he entred in, and laying himself downe besydes hir, he approached neare hir face, and many times kissed hir, pouring forth the great abundance of teares. But as we see the appetyte of Man not to be content excepte it procede further (specially of such as bee in loue) being determined to tarye no longer there, and to departe, he sayd: Oh God why should I goe no further, why should I not touche hir, why should I not proue whether she be aloue or dead? Vanquished then wth that motion, hee felt hir beates, and holding his hand there for a certayne tyme, perceived hir Heart as it were to pant, and thereby some Lyfe remaining in hir. Wherefoze so softly as he could, wth the helpe of his man, he raised hir out of the graue: and settinge hir vpon his Horse befoze him, secretly caried hir home to his house at Bologna. The mother of maister Gentil dwelled there, which was a graue and vertuous Matrone, who vnderstanding by her sonne the whole effect of that chaunce, moued, wth compassion, vnkowne to anye man, placing hir befoze a great fire, and comforting hir wth a bathe prepared for the purpose, she recovered lyfe in the Gentlewoman that was supposed to bee deade, who so soone as she was com to hir self, threw forth a great sigh and said: Alas, wher am I now To whom the good old woman sayd: Be of good cheere sweet hart yett bee

Mistresse Katherine.

pee be in a good place. The Gentlewoman hauing w^holly reco-
 uered hir senses, and looking round about hir, not yet well know-
 ing where she was and seing maister Gentill befoze hir, prayed his
 mother to tell hir how she came thither. To whome maister Gentil
 declared in order what he had done for hir, and what meanes he be-
 sed to bying hir thither. Wherof making hir complaynt, and la-
 menting the litle regard and negligence of hir friends, she redjed
 vnto hym innumerable thanks. Then she prayed him for the Loue
 which at other times he bare hir a for his courtesse, that she might
 not receiue in hys house any thing that should be dishonorable to
 hir person, ne yet to hir husband, but so soone as it was Daye to
 suffer hir to goe home to hir owne House: whereunto maister Gē-
 cil answered. Madam, what soeuer I haue desired in time past, now
 am I fully purposed neuer to demaund any thyng specially in this
 place or in any other but the safety of your honour & that I would
 doe to mine owne Mother, Alth it hath pleased God to shewe me that
 pleasure, as by my meanes you are reuiued from death to life, and
 to deliuer you to mee, in consideration of the loue that I haue born
 you heretofore. But this good worke, which this Myghtie I
 haue done for you, well deserueth some recompence. Wherefoze
 my desire is, that you deny me not the pleasure which I shall de-
 maund, whome the gentlewoman curteously answered, that shee
 was very ready, so the same were honest and in hir power to doe.
 Then sayd Myster Georil: My Mistrisse, all your kin and al they of
 Bologna, doe beleue for a trowth that you bee deade, wherefoze
 there is none that loketh for your recovery agayne: and the plea-
 sure then whych I demaund, is that you will vouchsafe secretlye
 to tarry here wth my mother, vntill I retourne from Modena,
 which shal be with so great expedition as I can: and the cause why
 I desire the same, is, for that I intend to make a fayze and accep-
 table present of you vnto your husband in the presence of the prin-
 cipal of this City. The gentlewoman knowing hir self to be great-
 ly bound to the Knight, and that hys request was honest, was con-
 tent to doe what hee demaunded. Albeit shee desired earnestly to re-
 toyce hir frendes for hir recovered life, and so promised vppon hir
 faith. And binnerhes had she ended hir talke, but she felt the pain of
 chydbrith:

childbirth: whetfoze wpth the ayde of the mother of maister Gen-
cil; she carried not long befoze she was deliuered of a fayre Sonne
which greatly augmented the ioy of maister Genil and hir. May-
ster Genil commaunded that she should haue al thyngs that were
necessary to be ministred vnto hir, and that she should be bled as his
owne Wyfe. Then he ppylly returned to Modena, where when
he had a while supplid his office, he returned to Bologna, and
prepared a great feast at his house, the same mozning that he arri-
ued, for diuers gentlemen of the city, amongs whom Nicholas
Chafennemie was one.

When the company of the biddē guests wer come, (the gentlewo-
man in so good health and lpyng as euer she was, and hir Child
wel & lusty, he sat down amongs thē doing vnto thē incomparable
mirth and pastime, and serued them bountifullly wpth dyuers soz-
tes of meates. When dinner was almost done, hauing befoze told
the Gentlewoman what he ment to doe, and in what manner she
should behaue hir selfe, he began thus to say. My Maysters I do
remember that whilom I haue hearde tell that in the Countrey of
Persia, there was a goodly custome (as me seemeth) that whē som
one was disposed to do great honour vnto his friend, he bad hym
home to his house, and there shewed him the thing whych he lo-
ued best, were it wyfe, woman, or daughter, or what so euer it were
affirming that like as he disdayned not to shew hē same, which out-
wardly he loued best, euen so he would if it were possible, willing-
ly discover his owne heart: whych custome I purpose to obserue
in this City. Ye of your curtesie haue bouchsased to do me so great
honour, as to repayze vnto this my simple feast, which benefite I
wyl recompence after the Persian manner, by shewing vnto you the
thinge which I loue moste deere,ly aboue any in this world, or
hereafter shal be able to loue so long, as my life endureth: but be-
foze I doe the same, I pray you to tell mee your oppnyon in a
doubte whych I shall purpose. There was a certayne person
whych in hys house had a good and faythfull Serueunte who
became extremely sick. That Person without attending the end of
his diseased seruāt, caused him to be caried into hē midst of hē greate
without any further care for him. In the meane tyme there came a
straunger

Mistresse Katherine.

A stranger by, who moued by compassion of the sick seruant, bare
 him home to his owne house, where with great care and diligence,
 sparing no cost or charge, made him to recouer his former health:
 I would now sayne know of you, whither for retaining and vsing
 the seruice of that seruant, his first maister by good right mighte
 complayne vpon the seconde, if he should demaund hym agayne,
 or by demaunding of him agayne, the second not disposed to restore
 him, might suffer any damage. The gentlemen after many opini-
 ons and arguments debated too and fro amongeth them, and at
 lengthe all concluding in one mind, gaue charge to Nicholas Cha-
 sennemie, (because he was an eloquent talker) to make the answer:
 who first praising the Persians custome, said that he was, (with the
 rest) of this opinion, that the first maister had no further title in his
 seruant, hauing in such necessity not onely forsaken him, but
 throwen him into the street, and that for the good turnes which
 the second maister had don him, he ought by good right to be hys:
 wherefore by keeping him, he did no wrong, force, or intury to the
 first. At the rest at the Table (which were very discret & honest per-
 sons) sayd al together that they were of hys opinion. The knight
 content with that answer, and specially because Nicholas Chasen-
 nemie, had pronounced it, affirmed that hee was likewise of that
 minde, and afterwards he sayd: Time it is then that I render vn-
 to you the honor which you haue done me, in manner accordynge
 as I haue promysed. Then he called vnto him two of hys Ser-
 uants, and sent them to the Gentlewoman, whom hee had caused
 to be apparelled & decked very gorgeously, praying hir by hir pre-
 sence to content and satisfie al the company. And she taking in hir
 armes, hir little faire sonne, came into the hall, accompanied with
 the two Seruantes, and was placed (as it pleased the Knight)
 besides a very honest Gentleman, and then he sayde: Syes, behold
 the thing which I loue best, and purpos: to loue aboute all worldly
 things, and whither I haue occasion so to doe, your eyes may bee
 Iudges.

The gentlemen doing their reuerence vnto hir, greatly praised
 hir, & said to the Knight that ther was good reason why she oughte
 to be beloued. Vpon which commendations they began more atten-
 tually

sely to behold hir, and many of them would haue sayd & sworne
 that it had bin shee in deede if it had not bin thought y^e she had bin
 dead. But Nicholas beheld hir moze than the rest, who very desir-
 ous to know what she was, could not forbear (when he saw that
 the knight was a litle departed from the place) to aske hir why-
 ther shee was of Bologna, for a straunger. When the Gentlewo-
 man saw hir husband to ask hir that question, she could scarce for-
 beare fro making answer, notwithstanding to atcheue y^e which
 was purposed, she helde hir peace. Another asked her yf that lit-
 tle hope was hers: And another if shee were the wyfe of
 maister Gentil, or any kin vnto him: vnto whom shee gaue no
 answer at all. But when maister Gentil came in, one of the stra-
 ngers sayd vnto him. Saye thys gentlewoman is a very good crea-
 ture, but she seemeth to be dumbe. Is it true or not? Shee sayde
 maister Gentil, that is but a litle argument of hir vertue, for this
 time to hold hir peace. Tell vs then (sayde he) what is she? That
 wil I do very gladly sayd the knight, vnder condition that none of
 you shall remoue out of his place for any thing I speake, vntill I
 haue ended my tale: which request being graunted, & the table tak-
 en by maister Gentil which was set downe by the Gentlewoman,
 sayd: My maysters, this gentlewoman is the loyall & faithfull ser-
 uant, of whom earst I propounded the question, whom I haue res-
 leued from amids the streete, whither hir kin, litle caring for hir,
 threw hir as a vile & vnprofitable thing: & haue by my great care
 brought to passe, y^e I haue discharged hir from death, vpon, an af-
 fection which God knoweth to be so pure & perfect, as of a lump
 of dead lothsome flesh hee hath reuiued so fayre and freshe as you
 see: but to the intent you may moze playnly vnderstand how it is
 come to passe, I will open the same in few wordes. And beginning
 at the day when he fell in loue with hir, he particularly told them,
 what had chaunced till that time, to the great maruell and admira-
 tion of them that heard him, and then added these wordes: By
 meanes whereof, if your minde be not chaiged wth this litle time,
 & specially maister Nicholas, of good right she is my wyfe, & none by
 iust title can clayme hir. Wherevnto none at al made answer, lea-
 uing that he shoulde haue proceeded further. In the meane while

Nicho-

of Bologna.

Nicholas and the rest that were there, fell into earnest weeping.
But maister Gentil rising from the boorde, & taking in his armes
the little childe, and the gentlewoman by the hand, went towarde
Nicholas, and sayd vnto him: Rise vp sir gossip, I do not restore
vnto thee thy Wyfe, whom thy friends and household did cast into
the Street, but I will geue thee this Gentlewoman my Gossip,
with the litle childe, that is, as I am assured begotten of thee, for
whom at the chystening I made answere and promise, and called
him Gentil, and do pray thee that she be no lesse esteemed of thee
now (for being in my house almost three moneths) than she was be
fore. For I swere by the almighty God, who made me in loue with
hir, (peradventure that my loue might be the cause of hir prefer-
uation) that she neuer liued more honestly with hir father, mother,
or with thee, than she hath done in company of my mother. When
he had sayd so, he returned towards the Gentlewoman, and sayd
vnto hir: Waitresse, from this time forth, I discharge you of the
promise which you haue made me, and leaue you to your husband
franke and free. And when he had bestowed the gentlewoman, and
the chylde in the fathers armes, he returned to his place agayne.
Nicholas ioyfully receyued his Wyfe and childe, for the whych so
much the more he reioysed, as hee was furthest of from hope of
hir recovery, rendering innumerable thanks to the Knight & the
rest, and moued with compassion hee wept for company, greatly
praying maister Gentil for that act, who was commended of ech
man that heard the reporte thereof. The Gentlewoman was
receiued into hir house wyth maruellous ioye. And longe
tyme after she was gazed vpon by the Citizens of Bo-
logna, as a thing to their great wonder reuiued.
agayne. Afterwards Maister Gentil con-
tinued still a friend vnto Nicholas, &
vnto hys Wyfe and
Chyldren.
(.)

Of M. Thorello and Saladine.

Fo. 104

g *SALADINE* in the habite of a Marchaunt, was honourably receyued into the house of mayster *THORELLO*, who went ouer the Sea, in company of the Christians, and assigned a terme to his wyfe whē she should mary agayne. He was taken, and caried to the *SOVL DAN* to be his Faulconer, who knowing him, and suffering him self to be knowē, did him great honour. Mayster *THORELLO* fell sicke, and by *Magique Art*, was caried in a night to *PAVIE*, where he found his wyfe about to mary agayne, who knowinge him, returned home with him to his owne house.

The XX. Nouell.



Very comely it is (sayeth Cicero in the second booke of hys Offices,) that Noblemens houses should open, be open to Noble Guests and Straungers. A saying by the honourable & other Estates to be fixed in sure remēbraunce, and accordingly practised. For hospitality and household intertainment, heapeth vp double gayne and commodity. The Guest it linketh and knitteth in fast band of perfect friendship, common familiarity, dispozte of mynde and pleasant recreation, the poore and needy it feedeth, it cherissheth, it prouoketh in them deuout prayers, godly blessings, & seruice in tyme of neede. Hospitality is a thing so diuine, as in law of Nature & Chrest, it was well and brotherly obserued. Let disdaind not to receiue

Of Maister Thorello.

receiue the Hungels, which were straungers vnto him, and by reason of hys common vse thereof, and theer: frendly intertaynment, he and his houghold was deliuered from the daunger of the City, escaped temporat fire, and obtained heauenly rewarde. Abraham was a friendly host to straungers, and therefore in his old dayes, and in the barreiuage of his wyfe Sara, he begat Isaac. Ieroboam he was an Ethnicke and vnbeleuyng man, yet liberally intertained Moyfes, and married him to Sephora, one of his Daughters. The poore widow of Sarepta intertained Helias, and Symon the Currier dispayned not Peter, nor Lydia the purple like woman Paule and his fellowes. Forget not Hospitality (saith the said Apostle Paule,) for with the same diuers haue pleased Hungels by receiuing them into theer houses. If Paule the true preacher of eternall Healthe, hath so commended keepng of good Houses which by the former terme wee call Hospitality, then it is a thing to bee vsed amonges those that bee able to mainteine the same: who ought with liberall hand frankly to reach bread and victuals to their acquaintance, but specially to straungers, which wandering in fozein places, be utterly vn able to helpe themselves, and peraduenture in such neede, as without such curtesie, do perishe. For the further amplification of which vertue, what shall I neede to remember straunge and prophane Histories: as of Symon of Athens, who was so famous in the same, as the tyrant Crytius, when he wished for the ryches of Scopades and the victories of Agesilaus, forgot not also to craue the liberality of Cimon. Pacuius also, the Prince of Campania, so friendly entertained Annibal, as when his sonne to do the Romanes a good turne, would haue killed him as he sat at supper, was staied by his fathers request (whom he made priuy of his intent before they sate downe.) Pacuius had be not more regarded the office of hospitality, than the safety of his countrey, might ful wel by that murder, haue defended the same fro the destruction whereunto afterwards it fel. Homere reporteth, Menelaus fighting a combat with Paris of Troy. made inuocation and prayer vnto the Gods, that he might be reueged vpon him for the rape of his wife Helena, to the intet the posterity hearing of his punishment, mighte feare to polute friendly hougholde intertaynment

ment. Wherefore, such hospitality hath bene thus put in vse in el-
der tyme, practysed in all ages, and the poluters of the same de-
rested and accursed, and hath notorious commodities incident un-
to it, I deeme it so worthy to be frequented in noble men and all
degrees, as they? Palaces and great houses should swarme with
guests, and their gates lustring with whole multitudes of the
poore to be satisfied with relief. Such hath ben the sacred vse and
reuerent care of auncient tyme. Such hath bene the zealous loue
of those whose fields and barnes, closetts, and chests haue bene
stozed and stuffed with worldely wealth, that comparing that gol-
den age, glittering with piety and vertue, to these our worse than
copper days, canced with all corruption, we shal find the watch so
like, as darke and light, durt and Tungell golde. Ceasing then
of further discourse hereof, this history folowing shall elucidate &
dispayle the mutuall beneuolence of two noble personages, the one
a mighty Souldan, an enemy of God, but yet a frende to those that
fauored good entertainment and housekeeping, the other a Gen-
tleman of Paue, a rich and liberall marchaunt, and a friendly wel-
comer of straungers. The Souldan demanding the way to Paue,
somewhat digressing from the same, is not onely honourably con-
ueyed to Paue, and feasted there, but also sumptuously cheryshed,
banketted, and rewarded by the sayd Marchant before his com-
myng thither. The marchant man desirous to be one of the holpe
borage, intended by christian Princes, passed ouer the seas, who
put to his shifts there throughe the aduerse lucke, receyued by the
Christians, became the Souldans fawconer, and afterwarde
known vnto him by certaine markes and signes, is with greater
honor intertained of the Souldan, and more richly guerdoned, sent
home agayne by Magike Arte to anticipate the marriage of his
wife, vnto whom he had prefixed a certain date and terme to mar-
ry agayne if before that tyme, he did not returne. All which No-
ble entertainment, and the circumstances thereof, in this manner
do begin.

In the time of the Emperour Fredericke the firste, the Chry-
stians to recouer the Holy Lande, made a generall borage & pas-
sage ouer the Sea. Saladine a most vertuous Prince, t. e. Souldan
of Babylona

D.

of Babylona

Of Maister Thorello.

of Babylon, hauing intelligence thereof, a certayne time before, determined in his own person to see and espy the preparation which the Christian Princes made for that passage, the better to prouide for his owne, and hauing put order for his affayres in Egypt, making as though he would go on Pilgrimage, tooke his iourney in the apparel of a Marchant, accompanied only with two of his chiefest & wisest counsellors, & thre seruants. And whē he had searched and trauelled many christian prouinces, and riding through Lombardy to passe ouer the Mountaynes, it chaunced that betwene Millan and Paui, somewhat late he met wth a Gentleman named master Thorello de Itria of Paui, who with his houthoulde, his dogges and hawkes, for his pleasure went to sojorne in one of his Manours, that was delectably placed vpon the ruers of Tesino. And when maister Thorello sawe them come, thinckinge that they were certayn Gentlemen straungers, he desired to do the honour. Wherefore Saladine demaunding of one of master Thorello his men, how farre it was from thence to Paue, & whether they might come thither time inough to go in, master Thorello would not suffer his man to speake, but he himselfe made aunswere, saying : Sirs, yee cannot get into Paue in time, for that the Gates will be shut before your coming. Then sayd Saladine : tell vs then wee pray you, because we be straungers, where wee may lodge this night. Master Thorello sayd, that will I willingly do, I was about euen presently to send one of my men that be here, so far as Paue, about certayne businesse, him wil I appoint to be your guide : to a place where you shall haue very good lodging, and callinge one of this wisest men vnto him, he gaue him charge of that he had to do, and sent him with them, after whom he followed : where incontinently in so good order as he could, caused to be made redy a sumptuous supper, and the tables to be couered in a pleasant garden. Afterwards he went himselfe to entertayne them. The seruant talking with the Gentlemen of many thinges, conducted them at leysure somewhat out of the way to protract the time, to his masters house : and so soone as maister Thorello espied them, he with liberall heart and bountifull mynde had them welcome.

Saladine

Saladine which was a very wise man, well perceived that the Gentleman doubted that they would not have come unto him if he had intited them at their first meetinge, and for that cause, to the intent they should not refuse to lodge at his house, he had politiquely caused them to be conducted thither, and answeringe his greeting, sayd: *Syr*, if a man may quarell with them that be courteous, wee may complayne of you, who leauinge a part our way which you haue caused somewhat to be lengthened, without deseruinge your good will, otherwise than by one onely salutation, you haue constrained vs to take and receiue this your so great curtesie. The wise and well spoken Knight, sayd: *Syr*, this curtesie which you receiue of me, in respect of that which belongeth vnto you, as by your countenance I may well coniecture, is very small, but truely out of Paue ye could haue got no lodging that had ben good: and therefore be not displeased I pray you to be carried out of the way, to haue a little better intertaynement: and saying so, his men came forth to receiue those straungers, and when they were lighted, their horses were taken and conueyed into the stables, and master Thorello carped the three Gentlemen to their chambers, which he had prepared for them, where their Bootes were pulled of, and excellent wyne brought forth, somewhat to refresh them before supper: then he held them with pleasaunt talke vntill the houre of supper was com. Saladine and they which were with him, could all speake Latine, and therefore well vnderstanded, and they likewise vnderstode eche man, by meanes whereof euery of them, thought that the Gentleman was the most courteous and best conditioned Personage, indued with the most eloquent talke that euer they sawe. On the other side it seemed to master Thorello, that they were the noblest and Princelik personages, and far more worthy of estimation then he thought before. Wherefore, he was very angry wyth himselfe, that he had no greater company & better intertaynement for them that night, which he purposed to recompence the next day at dinner. Wherefore hee sent one of his men to Paue, being not farr from thence, to his wife, & was a very wise & noble gentlewoman, & afterwards he brought the into his garde

D 2.

where

where he courteously demaunded what they were. To whom Saladine answered, we be marchauntes of Cypres traauiling to Paris, about our businesse. Then said maister Thorello: I would to god that this country brought forth such gentlemen as the land of Cypres maketh marchants: and so passed the time from one talke to another, untill supper time came. Wherefore to honour them the better caused them to sit downe at the Table, euery of them according to his degree and place. And there they were exceedingly well intreated and serued in good order, their supper being farre more bountifull than they looked for. And they late not longe after that the table was taken away, but maister Thorello supposing them to be weary, caused them to be lodged in gorgeous and costly beds: as he likewise within a while after went to bed. The seruauent sent to Pauc, did the message to his mistresse, who not like a woman with a womanish heart, but like one of Princely Mind, incontinently caused many of hir husbands friends and seruants to be sent for. Afterwards she made ready a great feast, and inuited the noblest & chiefeest Citizens of the City: apparelling hir house with clothe of gold and silke, tapistrie and other furnitures, putting in order all that which hir husband had commaunded. The next day in the morning the Gentlemen rose, with whom maister Thorello mounted on horsebacke, and carrying vnto him his Hawks, he brought them to the Ryuer, and shewed them diuers sightes. But Saladine demaunding where the best lodging was in Pauc, maister Thorello sayd: I well shew you my selfe, for that I haue occasion to go thither. They beleeuing him, were contented, and rode on their way and being about nine of the clock, arrived at the City, thinking they should haue ben brought to the best Inn of the towne: but maister Thorello conueyed them to his owne house, where fiftie of the chiefeest Citizens, ready to receiue them, sodainly appeared before them. Which Saladine, and they that were with him perceiuing, coniectured by and by what that did meane, and sayd: Maister Thorello, this is not the request whych we demaunded, your entertainment yesternight was so sumptuous and more then we desired, wherefore giue vs leaue we praye you to departe. Whom maister Thorello answered: My masters, for that which ye receiued

ned yesternight I wil giue thanks to Fortune, and not to you : for
 I ouertaking you by the way, forced you in a maner to make you
 repaire vnto my homely house : but for these morninge hopeage, I
 haue my selfe prepared, and likewise the Gentlemen about you,
 with whom to refuse to dine, if you thincke it curtesie, doe as yee
 please. Saladine and his companions banquished wth such per-
 suasion, lighted, and being receiued by the Gentlemen in louing &
 courteous order, were conuied to their chambers, which were rich-
 ly furnished for them, and having put of their riding apparel, and
 somewhat refreshed themselves, they came into the Hall, where all
 things were in readinesse in triumphant soyte. Then Water was
 brought them to washe, and they placed at the Table, were serued
 with many delicate meats in magnificent and royal order, in such
 wise, as if the Emperour himselfe had bene there could not haue
 bene better entertained. And albeit that Saladine and his compa-
 nions were great Lordes, and accustomed to see marueilous
 thynges, yet they wondered very much at this, considering the de-
 gree of the Knight, whom they knew to bee but a Citizen and no
 Prince or great Lord. When dinner was done, and that they had
 talked a litle together, the weather waxing very hot, the Gentle-
 men of Paie, (as it pleased mayster Thorello) went to take their
 rest, and he remainyd wth his three Guests : with whom he went
 into a chāber, where to the intent y nothing which he had & lousd
 might be vnseene, caused his honest Wyfe to be called forth : who
 being very beautiful & wel fauored, clothed in rich & costly array,
 accompanied with her two yong sonnes, which were like to Angels,
 came before them, & graciously saluted them. When they saw her,
 they rose vp, & reuerently receiued hir, then they caused hir to sit
 downe in the mids of the, sporting & dauping wth hir 2. fayre sonnes.
 But after she had pleasantly entered in talk, she asked the of whēce
 they were, and whither they were going? To whom the Gentle-
 men made the same aunswere that they had done before to mayster
 Thorello. Then the Gentlewoman said vnto them with smilinge
 cheere: I perceiue then, that mine aduise being a woman, is come
 well to passe. And therefore I pray you, that of your special grace
 you will do me this pleasure, as not to refuse or rebaine y litle pre- =

Of Maister Thorello.

sent that I shall bring before you, but that you take it, in consideration that women according to their little ability, give little things and that wee regard more the good affection of the person which offereth the gift, then the value of the given thing. And causing to be brought before euery of them two sayre Roabes, the one lined with silke, & the other with Venetian, nor in fashion of a Citizen, or of a Marchant, but Noblemanlike, &c. 3. Turkey gownes with Sleeues of Cassata, lined with linnen cloth, she sayde vnto them: Take I pray you these roabes, with the like whereof this day I apparelled my husband, and the other things may also serue your turnes, although they be little worth, considering that wee be farre from your Wyues, & the greatnesse of your toynep, which you haue taken, & haue yet to make, & also for y^e Marchantmē loue to be near, and fine in things appertinent to their bodies. The Gentlemen much maruelled, and playnly knew that Maister Thorello was disposed not to forget any one part of curtesie towards them, and doubted (by reason of the beauty & riches of the roabes not merchantlike,) that they should not be knowne of maister Thorello, notwithstandinge one of them answered her: These be (Gentlewoman) very great gifts, and ought not lightly to be accepted, if your intreaty did not constrain vs, against which no denial ought to be made. That done, when maister Thorello returned into the chamber, the Gentlewoman tooke her leaue, and went hir way: & then she furnished the seruants with diuers other things necessary for them, and Maister Thorello obtayned by earnest request, that they should tary all that day. Wherefore after they had rested themselves a while, they did put on their roabes, and walked forth on horsebacke into the Citie: and when supper tyme was come, they were bountifullly feasted in honorable company: and when bed tyme appoched, went to rest. And so soone as it was day they rose, and founde in steade of their weary Hackneyes, three fat and sayre Pallfryes, and also the like number of fresh & mighty horses for their seruants; Which Saladine seeing, turned towards his companions, and sayd vnto them: I sweare by God that there was neuer a more liberall Gentleman, more courteous, or better conditioned than this is. And if Christian kings for their part be such, I

satch, I meane indued with satch kingly qualities as this Gen-
 tleman is, the Sooldan of Babylon shall haue enough to do to deale
 with onz, and not to attend for all those which we see to be in pre-
 paration for inuasion of his Countrey. But seeing that to refuse
 them or render them agayne, serued to no purpose, they thanked
 him very humble, and got vppon their horse. Master Thorello
 with many of his frends, accompanied them out of the Citie a
 great peece of the way: And albeit that it much greued Saladine
 to depart from master Thorello (so farre in he was already in
 loue with him,) yet being constrained to forgo his company, hee
 prayed him to returne, who although very loth to depart, sayd vn-
 to them: *Sirs, I will be gone, if it is your pleasure I shall so*
do, and yet I say vnto you, that I know not what you be, ne yet
demaund to know, but so farre as pleaseth you. But what soeuer
you be, you shall not make me beleue at this tyme, that you be Mar-
chauntes, and so I bid you farewell. Saladine hauing taken his
 leaue of those that accompanied master Thorello, answered him:
Sir, it may come to passe, that we may let you see our marchau-
nse, the better to confirme your beleefe: And so departed. Sala-
 dine then hauing thus taken his leaue, assuredly determined if he
 liued, and that the Warres he looked for did not let him, to do no
 lesse honoz to master Thorello, then he had done to him, and fell
 into great talke with his companions of him, of his Wife and of
 his things, acts and doedes, greatly praysing all his entertaynment.
 But after he had trauielled & bewed al þ west parts, imbarkeinge
 himselfe & his cōpany, he returned to Alexandria, throughtly infor-
 med of his enemies deuoyrs, prepared for his defence. Master
 Thorello returned to Paue, & mused a long tyme what these thye
 might be, but he coulde not so much as gesse, what they were.
 When the tyme of the appoynted passage for the Chyistians was
 come, and that great preparation generally was made, Master
 Thorello notwithstandinge the teares and prayers of his Wife,
 was fully bent to go thither, and hauinge set all thinges in order
 for that Voyage, and ready to get on horsebacke, he sayd vnto his
 whom he perfectly loued. *Sweete Wife, I am goinge as thou*
welst, this Journey, aswell for myne honour sake, as for health of
my soule

Of Maister Thorello.

my soule, I recomende vnto you our goodes and hono:
 " And because I am not so certayne of my retourne, for a thou-
 " sand accydents that may chaunce, as I am sure to goe, I
 " praye thee to doe mee thyg pleasure, that what so euer chaun-
 " ceth of mee, yf thou haue no certayne newes of my life, that
 " yet thou tarry one yeare, one Moneth, & one day the same terme to
 " begin at & day of my departure. The Gentlewoman wherch betterly
 " wept, answered: I know not dear husband how I shal be able to
 " beare the sorowe wherein you leane mee, if you goe awaye.
 " But yf my life bee more stronge and sharpe, than sorowe
 " it selfe: and whether you lyue or dye. or what so euer come
 " of you, I will lyue and dye the Wyfe of Maister Thorel.
 " lo and the onely spouse of hys remembraunce. Whereunto
 " Maister Thorello sayde: Sweete Wyfe I am more than as-
 " sured that touchyng your selfe, it will proue as you do pro-
 " mise. But you beyng a younge Woman saye, and well as-
 " lyed, and your Vertue greate and well knowne througheout
 " the Countrey: I am sure that many greate Personages and
 " Gentlemen (if any suspytyon bee conceyued of my Wrath)
 " will make requestes to your brethren and kindred, from whose
 " pursute (althoughe you be not disposed, you can not defende
 " your selfe, and it behoueth that of force, you please theyr wil,
 " wherch is the onely reason that moueth mee to demaunde that
 " terme, and no longer tyme. The Gentlewoman sayd: I will
 " doe what I can for fulfilling of my promise. And albeit in
 " the ende that I shall bee constrayned to doe contrary to my
 " kyng, bee assured that I will obey the charge wherch now
 " you haue geuen me: And I molle humbly thanke Almighty
 " God, that hee neuer brought vs into these termes before this
 " tyme. Theyr talke ended, the Gentlewoman weepynge embrac-
 " ed maister Thorello, and drawynge a Ring from hir fin-
 " ger, she gaue it hym, sayinge: If it chaunce that I dye be-
 " fore I see you, remember me when you shal beholde the same.
 " He receyving the ring, got vp vppon his horse, and takinge his
 " leaue, went on hys voyage, and arrived at Genoua shipped himself

in a Galley, and toke his way, whereunto wind and weather so fa-
 uored, as wpythin fewe dayes he landed at Acres, and toynd with
 the army of the Chyrysians: whereyn began a great mortallite
 and Plague, during which infection (what so euer was the cause)
 eyther by the industrie or fortune of Saladine the rest of the Chri-
 stians that escaped were almost taken and surprised by him, with-
 out any any sight or blowe stricken. All which were imprysoned
 in many Cities, and deuided into diuers places, amongs whych
 prysoners maister Thorello was one, who was carreyd captiue to
 Alexandria where beynge not knowne, and fearyng to be knowne,
 forced & necessitie, gaue hym selfe to the keepynge of Hawkes, a
 qualite wherein he had very good skyll, whereby in the ende hee
 grew to the acquaintance of the Souldan, who for that occasion (not
 knowing him that tyme) roke hym out of prysen, and retayned hym
 for his Fawconer. Maister Thorello which was called of the
 Souldan by none other name than Chyristar, whome hee neyther
 knewe, ne yet the Souldan hym, had none other thing in his mynde
 and remembraunce but Paue, and mange tymes assayed to escape
 and run away. But he neuer came to the poynt. Wherefoze dyuers
 Ambassadors from Genoua being come to Saladine, to raun-
 some certayne of the prysoners, and being ready to retorne, hee
 thought to wyrite vnto his wyfe, to let hir know that he was aliue,
 and that hee would come home so soone as he coulde, prayng hir
 to tarry his retourne. Which was the effecte of hys Letter: verie
 earnestly desiring one of the ambassadors of his acquaintance
 to doe so mucht for hym as safely to despyuer those Letters to the
 handes of the Abbot of S. Pietro in ciel Doro, whych was hys
 Uncle. And Maister Thorello standing vppon these termes, it
 chaunced vpon a day as Saladine was talking to hym of his Haw-
 kes, Thorello began to smyle and to make a Jesture with hys
 mouth, whych Saladine beynge at his house at Paue did very well
 note, by which act Saladine began to remember him, and earnestly
 to blesse hym, and thought that it was he in deede.

Wherefoze

Of master Thorello

Wherefore leauing his former talke, he sayd: Tell me Christian, of what countrey art thou in the West parts? Sir sayd Master Thorello, I am a Lombarde, of a City called Paue, a pooze mā and of meane estate. So soone as Saladine heard that, as assured wherof he doubted, said to himself: God hath giue me a time to let this man know how thankfull I accepted his curtesie that hee vsed towards me, and without any more words, hauing caused all his apparell in a chamber to be set in order, he broughte him into the same and sayd: behold Christian, if amonges al these roabes, there be any one which thou hast seene before, Master Thorello began to looke vpon them, and saw those which his wyfe had giue to Saladine: but he could not beleue that it was possible that they should be the same, notwithstanding hee answered: Sir I knowe them not, albeit my mind giueth me that these twayne do resemble the roabes which somtimes I ware, & caused them to be giuen to thye marchaunt men that were lodged at my house. Then Saladine not able to forbeare any longer, tenderly imbraced him, saying you be master Thorello de Istria, and I am one of the thye Marchants to whom your wyfe gaue those roabes: and now the time is come to make you certainly beleue what my marchaundise is, as I tolde you when I departed from you that it myght come to passe. Master Thorello hearyng those wordes, began to be both topfull and ashamed, topfull for that he had entertained sutch a guest, & ashamed, that his fare and lodging was so simple. To whom Saladine sayd: master Thorello, Sith it hath pleased god to send you hither, thynke from henceforth that you be Lord of this place and not I, and making great chere, and reioysing one wth an other, he caused him to be cloathed in royall vestures, and brought him into the presence of al the Noble men of his countrey: and after he had reherfed many thinges of his valor and commendation, commaunded him to be honoured as his owne person, of all those which desired to haue his fauor. Which thing euery Man ded from that time forth: but aboue the rest, the two Lords that were in company with Saladine at his house. The greatnesse of the sodain gloire wherewith master Thorello sawe himselfe, did remoue oute of his mind his affayres of Lombardie, and specially, because hee hoped &

his

William Richards 1690

his letters should trustely be deliuered in the hands of his vnckle.
Now there was in the camp of the Christians the day wherein
they were taken by Saladine, a Gentleman of Prouince, which dyed
and was buryed, called maister Thorello de Dignes, a man of
great estimatiō: wherby (maister Thorello of Istria known thorough
out the whole army for his nobility & prowesse) euery mā that heard
tell that maister Thorello was dead, beleued that it was maister
Thorello de Istria, & not he de Dignes, and by reason of his taking,
the truth whether of them was deade, was vnknoyn. Wherfore
many Italians returned with those newes, amongs whom some were
so presumptuous, as they toke vpon them to say and affirme that
they saw him deade, and were at his burial. Whych knowen to his
wyfe and his friends, was an occasion of very great and inestimable
sorrow, not onely to them: but to all other that knewe him.
Very long it were to tell what great sorrow, heauinesse, and la-
mentation his wyfe did vnder, who certain moneths after shee had
continually so tormented hir self, (and when hir grief began to de-
crease, being demaunded of many great personages of Lombardie)
was counselled by hir brothers, and other of hir kin, to mary again.
Which thing after shee had many times refused, in very great an-
guish and dolor, finally being constrained thereunto, shee yelded to
the minds of hir parents. But yet vpon condicion, that the nupti-
als should not be celebrated vntill such tyme as shee had performed
hir promise made to maister Thorello. Whylest the affaires of this
Gentlewoman were in those termes at Paue, and the tyme of hir
appoyntment within eight dayes approached, it chaunced that mas-
ter Thorello vpon a day espyed a man in Alexandria, (whiche hee
had seene befoze, in the company of the Ambassadors of Genoua,)
going into the galley that was bound with them to Genoua. wher
fore calling him to be called, he demaunded what voyage they had
made, and asked him when they arrived at Genoua. To whom he
sayd: Sir the Galley made a very ill voyage as I hard say in Cre-
ta, where I remayned behynd them, for being neare the coast of Si-
cilia there rose a maruellous tempest, which dyone the galley vnto
the shore of Barbarie, & not one of the within boord escaped, amongs
whiche I was the last that was left. I was then taken by the
Turkes, and sold for a slave.

whom two of my brethren were likewise drowned. Master Thorello giuing credite to the words of this fellow, which were very true, and remembryng himselfe that the terme whych he had counted vpon with his Wyfe was almost expired, and thinkinge that they could hardly come by the knowledge of any newes of hym or of his state, beleued verily that his Wyfe was married agayne, for sorrow whereof he fell into such melancholy, as he had no lust to eat or drinke, and laying him downe vpon his bed, determined to die: whych so soone as Saladine, (who greatly loued hym) did vnderstand, he came to visite him, and after that he had (through instant request) knowen the occasion of his heauinesse & disease, hee blamed him very much for that he did no sooner disclose vnto him his conceipt. And afterwards prayed him to be of good cheere, assuring him if he would, so to provide, as he should be at Paue, tust at the terme whych he had assigned to his Wyfe: and declared vnto him the order how. Master Thorello geuinge credit to the words of Saladine, and hauinge many times hard say, that it was possible, and that the like had bene many times done, began to comfort himselfe, and to vse the company of Saladine, who determined fully vpon his voyage and returne to Paue. Then Saladine commaunded one of his Necromancers, (whose scienc: already he had well experienced) that hee shoulde deuise the meanes how master Thorello might be bozne to Paue in one night, vpon a bed. Wherunto the Necromancer answered, that it should be done, but that it behoued for the better doing thereof, that he should be cast into a sleepe. And when Saladine had geuen order thereunto, he returned to master Thorello, and finding him fully purposed to be at Paue if it were possible at the terme whych he had assigned, or if not, to die: sayd thus vnto hym.

Master Thorello, if you do heartely loue your Wyfe & doubt least she be married to an other, God forbid that I should say you by any manner of meanes, because of all the Women that euer I saw, she is for maners, comely behauiour, and decent order of apparell, (not remembryng her beauty, which is but a fading floure) mee thyncke most worthy to bee prayfed and loued. I gladly some thynge it woulde haue bene to mee (As fortune sent you hither)

hither) that the tyme which you and I haue to liue in this worlde, we myght haue spent together, and liued Lordes of the Kingdome which I possesse, and if God be minded not to do me that grace, at least wylle sith you be determined either to dye or to returne to Palestine, at the terme which you haue appointed, my great desire is, that I myght haue knowen the same in time, to the intende you myghte haue bene conducted thither wth such honour and trayn as your Vertues do deserue. Which sith God wyl not that it bee brought to passe, and that you well needes be there presently, I wll send you as I can in manner before expressed. Whereunto maister Thorello said: Sir, the effect (bisides your worde) hath don me sufficient knowledge of your good will, which I neuer deserued, and that wherby you told me, I cannot beleue, so long as Lyfe is in me and therefore am most certayne to dye. But sith I am so determyned, I beseeche you to do that which you haue promised out of hand because to morrow is the last day of the appoyntment assigned to my wyfe: Saladine said, that for a truth the same should be don: And the next day the Souldan purposing to send him the nyght following, he caused to be made ready in a great hall a very fayre & rich bed, all quilted accordyng to their manner (wth bylvet and clothe of gold, and caused to be layed ouer the same, a Couerlet wroughte ouer with borders of very great pearles, and rich precious stones: which euer afterwarde was deemed to be an infinite treasure, & two pillowes of silke vnto that bed: that den, he commaunded that they should inuest maister Thorello, (who now was lustie) with a Sarazine robe, the richest and fairest thing that euer anye Man saw, and vpon his head one of his longest bands, wreathen accordyng to the same manner, and being already late in the Euenyng, hee and diuers of his Barons went into the Chamber wher Maister Thorello was, & being set down besides him, in weeping wise hee began to say: Maister Thorello, the time of our separation doth now approche, & because that I am not able to accompanie you, ne cause you to be waited vpon, for the qualite of the way which you haue to passe, I must take my leaue here in this chamber for which purpose I am come hither. Wherefore before I bid you farewell, I pray you for the loue & friendship that is betwene, vs that you
do re.

Do remember me if it be possible before our dayes do end, after you haue giuen order to your affaires in Lombardie, to come agayne to see me before I dye, to the end that I being reioyced with your second visitation, may be satisfied of the pleasure which I lose this day for your vntimely hast: and trusting that it shall come to passe, I pray you let it not be tedious vnto you to visite me with your letters, and to require me in thynges wherein it may like you to commaund, which assuredly I shall accomplish more frankly for you, than for any other liuing man.

Maister Thorello was not able to retaine teares: wherefore to save the same, he answered him in few wordes, that it was impossible that euer hee should forget his benefites, and his worthy friendship extended vpon him, and that without default he would accomplish what he had commaunded, if God did send him life and leysure. Then Saladine louingly embracing and kissing him, pouring forth many teares, bad him farewell, and so went oute of the chamber. And all the other Noble men afterwards tooke the same leaue likewise of him, and departed with Saladine into the hal where he had prepared the bed, but being already late, and the Accromancer attending, and hasting his dispatch, a Physician broughte him a drinke, and made him beleue that it would fortifie and strengthen him in his iorney, causing him to drinke the same: which being done within a while after he fell a sleepe, and so sleeping was bozne by the commaundment of Saladine, and layd vpon the fayer bed, whereupon he placed a rich and goodly crowne of passinge pryce and balow, vpon the which he had ingrauen so plaine an inscription, as afterwards it was knowne that the same was sent by Saladine to the wife of maister Thorello.

After that he put a ring vpon his finger whych was beset with a Diamonde, so shining, as it seemed like a flaminge Torche the Value whereof was hard to bee esteemed, Then he caused to be girt aboute him, a Sworde, the furniture and garnishing wherof coulde not easly be valued: and besides all thys, hee hong vpon his Necke a Tablet or Brooche so beset with Stones, and Pearles, as the like was neuer scene. And afterwards he placed
on either

on either of hys sides, two exceeding great Golden basens, full of double Ducates, and many cordes of Pearles and rings, girdeis, and other thinges to tedious to reherse, wherewith he bedecked the place about him. Which done, he kissed him againe, and wiped the Necromancer to make hast. Wherefore incontinently maister Thorello, and the bed in, the presence of Saladine was caried out of sight and Saladine tarted stil, deuising and talkeng of hym amongs his Barons. Maister Thorello being now laid in S. Peter Church at Paue, accordyng to his request, with al his Jewels and habilliments aforesayd about him, and yet fast a slepe, the Sexten to ring to Mattens, entred the Church with light in his hand: and chauncing sodenly to espy the rich Bed, dyd not onely maruel, therat, but also ran away in great feare.

And when the Abbot and the Monkes saw that hee made such hast away, they were abashed, and asked the cause why he ranne so fast: The Sexten tolde them the matter. Why how now sayde the Abbot: Thou art not such a Babe, ne yet so newly come vnto the Church, as thou oughtest so lightly to be afraide. But let vs goe and see what bughath so terribly frayd thee. And then they lighted many Torches. And when the Abbot and his Monkes were entred the Church, they saw that wonderfull rich bed, and the Gentleman sleeping vpon the same. And as they were in this doubte and feere, beholding the goodly Jewels, and durst not goe neare the bed, it chaunced that maister Thorello awaked, fetchyng a gret sighe. The Monkes so soone as they saw that, and the Abbot with them, ran all away crying out, God helpe vs, our Lord haue mercy vpon vs.

Maister Thorello opened his eyes, and playnly knew by looking round about him, that he was in the place where he demaunded to be of Saladine: whereof he was very glad, and rising vp, and viewyng particularly, what he had about him, albeit he knew before the magnificence of Saladine, now he thoughte it greater and better vnderstand the same, then before. But seeinge the Monkes run away, and knowinge the cause wherefore, he began to call the Abbot by hys name, and intreated hym not to be afraide. For he was Maister Thorello his Nephewe. The Abbot hearyng that
was

Of maister Thorello

was diuenc into a greater feare, bicause he was accompted to bee dead diuers moneths before: but afterwards by diuers arguments, assured that hee was maister Thorello, and so often called by hys name (makinge a signe of the Crosse) he went vnto him. To whō maister Thorello sayd. Whereof be you a frayed good father? I am aliuē I thanke God, and from beyond the Sea returned hys ther. The Abbot (although he had a great beard, and apparelled after the guise of Arabie) crossed hymselfe agayne, and was wel assured that it was he. Then he tooke hym by the hande, and sayde vnto hym as followeth.

My Sonne thou art welcome home, and maruell not, that we were afrayd: for there is none in all thys Citte, but doth certainly beleue that thou art dead. In so much as madam Adalicia thy Wyfe, vanquished with the prayers and theates of hir frinds and kin, agaynst hir will is betrouthed agayne, and this day the espousals shall be done. For the mariage, and all the preparation necessary for the feast, is ready. Mayster Thorello risinge out of the rich Bed, and reioysing weth the Abbot and all his Monks, praised euery of them not to speake one word of his comminge home, buttill he had done what he was disposed. Afterwards placing at his rich Jewels in surety and sauegard, hee discoursed vnto his vncle what had chaunced vnto hym, till that time. The Abbot forfull for his fortune, gaue thanks to God. Then maister Thorello demaunded of his vncle, what he was that was betrouthed to hys Wyfe. The Abbot tolde hym. To whom maister Thorello sayd: Before my returne be knowen, I am desirous to see what Countenaunce my Wyfe wyl make at the mariage. And therefore, albeit that the religious doe not vse to repaie to such feastes, yet I pray you for my sake take payne to go thither. The Abbot answered that he would willingly doe so. And so soone as it was Dape, hee sente woorde to the Byddogrome, that he, and a frende of hys, would bee at the mariage: whereunto the Gentleman answered that he was very glade thereof. When dinner tyme was come, maister Thorello in the habite and apparel wherein he was, went with the Lord Abbot to the weddinge dinner, where euery of them that saw him, did maruellously beholde

holde hym, but no man knew him, bicause the Abbot answered them that inquired, that he was a Sarazene, sent Ambassadors fro the Soudan to the French King. Master Thorello was then placed at a table which was right ouer agaynst his Wyfe, whom he beheld with great pleasure and delight, and percepued very wel by hir face that she was not well content with that marriage. She likewise beheld him sometimes, not for any knowledge she had of hym, for hys great beard and straunge attyre: the firme credite & generall opinion also that hee was deade, chiesly hindered it. But when master Thorello thought tyme to proue whether she had any remembraunce of him, he secretly conuayed into hys hande, the ring which she gaue him at hys departure, and called a little Boy that wayled vpon hir, and sayd vnto him: Go tell the Wyde in my behalfe, that the custome of my countrey is, that when any Stranger (as I am here) is bydden by any new married woman (as she is now,) for a token of his welcome, she sendeth vnto him the cup wherein she drinketh full of Wyne, whereof after the Straunger hath dronke what pleaseth him, he couereth the cup agayne, & sendeth the same to the Wyde, who drinketh the rest that remaineth. The Page did his message vnto the Wyde, who like a wise Gentlewoman wel broughth vp, thinking he had ben some great personage, to declare that he was welcome, commaunded a great cup all gilt, standing befoze hir, to be washed cleane, and to be filled full of Wyne, & caried to the Gentleman, which accordingly was don. Master Thorello hauing put into hys mouth the aforesayd ring secretly let fall the same into the Cup as he was drinking, not percepued of any man, to the intent that she drinking the latter draught, might espy the ringe. When he had dronke, he returned the cup vnto the Wyde, who thankfully recepued the same. And for that the manner of his countrey might be accomplished, when the cup was deliuered vnto hir, she vncouered the same, and picadging the rest of the Wyne, beheld the ring, and without speaking any word, wel viewed the same, & knowing y it was the very Ring which she had geuen to master Thorello, whē he departed, tooke it out. And suddenly did marke & looke vpon him, whō she supposed to be a Stranger, and already knowinge him, cryed out as though she had bene

Of mayster Thorello.

fraught of his wittes,throwing downe the Table before him: this is my Lord and husband, this is of grouch Master Thorello: and running to the table without respect to his apparell of Cloath of Gold, or to any thinge that was vpon the table, prestinge so nere him as she could, embraced him very heerd, not able to remoue his handes from about his Necke for any thing that could bee sayd or done by the company that was there, vntill mayster Thorello required him to forbear for that present, for so much as she shoulde haue leasure inough to ble him further imbracements. Then she left him, and contented his selfe for the tyme: but the bydale and marriage was wholly troubled & appalled for that sodayne chaunce, and the most part of the Gaeles exceedingly reioysed for the return of that Noble knight. Then the company beinge intreated to sit and not to remoue, Master Thorello rehearsed in open audience what had chaunced vnto him from the day of his departure vntill that tyme, concluding with a petition to the Bridegrome, that had newly espoused his Wyfe, that he woulde not be displeased if he took his agayne. The newe married Gentleman, albeit it greeued hym very sore, and thought himselfe to be mocked, answered liberally and like a frende, that it was in his power to do with his owne what hee thought best. The Gentlewoman drawing of the Rings and Garland which shee had receiued of her newe Husbande, did put vpon his finger the Ring which shee founde within the Cup, and likewise the Crowne that was sent vnto him by Saladine. And the whole rroupe and assembly leauing the house where they were, went home with mayster Thorello and his wife, and there the kin and frends, and all the Citizens which haunted the same, and regarded it for a myracle, were with long feasting & great cheare in great ioy and triumph.

Master Thorello departing some of his precious Jewels to him that had bene at the cost of the marriage, likewise to the Lord Abbot and diuers others, & hauing done Saladine to vnderstand his happy repayre home to his Countrey, recommending himselfe for ever to his commaundment, issued with his Wyfe afterwards many prosperous yeares, vntill the vertue of curtelie more than
ever hee

mer he did before. Such was the ende of the troubles of maister Thorello, and his welbeloued Wyfe, and the recompence of their franke, and honest curtesies.

Anne the Queene of Hungary.

Of A Gentleman of meane callinge and reputation, doth fall in loue with *ANNE*, the Queene of *HUNGARIE*, whom shee very royally requited.

The. X X I. Nouell.



Following the preceding arguments treated in certayne of the former Nouelles: I will now discourse the princely kindnesse and curtesie done to a poore Gentleman, by a Lady of later daies, Anne the Queene of Hungary, wherby Gentleman, though beyonde his reache to catch what he aspired, fell in loue to that bountifull and vertuous Gentlewoman, thinkinge (by like) that she in end would haue abased her Maiessty, to recline to his poore and dooting trauaile. But she like a Queene, not despisinge the poore mans loue, boughsated by familiar speech to poure some drops of comfort into his lousinge minde, and once to proue, on whom he fixed his fance, reached him a Rosegar, and prayed him to bestowe it vpon whom hee liked best. All which familiar deauises she vied, to keepe the poore patient from despayre, that so she had placed hym selfe. But in end perceyuinge his continuance, would not reiect and geue hym ouer, or with Scornes and flouts condemne the Amorous Gentleman: and that longe loue might gayne some deserued guerdon, she neuer left hym untill she

¶ 1.

had pre-

Anne Queene.

had preferred him to a Noble office in Spayne. The noble disposition of this chaste and gentle Queene, I thought good to adioyn next to that of maister Thorello and Saladine: who for curtesie & passinge mutuall kindnesse, are worthy of remembraunce. And for you noble Dames for a Christall to sharpen your sightes, and viewe the recompence of loue, done by a Queene of passing beauty, and yet most chaste and vertuous, that it might somewhat touch your squeemish stomaches and haughty hearts, and lenisse that corrosiue humoz, which with frowning face, forceth you to ouerperke your humble suppliants. I helpinge preseruatiue I hope this Discourse shalbe to imbolden you, in suites and petitions to their prince and soveraigne. In incouragement (I hope) to be mediators for such, as by seruite and warfare haue consumed their faithfull deuoirs for defence of their Countrey. Remember the care the Roman matrones had for those that deserued well of their Common wealth: as how they mourned for Lucius Brutus one whole peres space, for his good reuenge ouer the rauishers of Lucrece: and for Martius Coriolanus, for his piety and mothers sake, discharging his Countrey from the enemies siege. Let mistress Paolina of the priuy Chamber to this Queene Anne, render example for preferment of such as be worthy to be cherished and esteemed. O how Liberality besee meth a Queene, no lesse (as one maketh comparison) than the bright beames of the Sunne, or the twinkling starres in the firmament. O how diligence in Gentlewomen, aduanced to Princes Chambers, no lesse than the greene leaues to brashch'd Trees, or diuers coloured floures in Rosegardes. So flourishing be the fruites that bud from liberality, and fralpe the benefites that succede of the payneful trauayles sustayned in the suites of seruiteable Gentlemen. This Philippo whom the Queene preferred, and liberally rewarded, was a meane Gentleman, but yet learned and well furnished with commendable qualities. His deserued aduancement may stirre by ech Gentle heart, to merite and serue in Common wealth. His warninge and other vertues may awake the sluggish Courtier, from loytering on Carpets, & dooinge thinges vnseemely: His diligence also reuise the slothfully sprytes of some that rout their tyme in sluggish sleepe, or waste the day

the day in harlotrie and other filthy exercise. Whose example of
 thep practise, or imitate such commendable life as becommeth their
 estates, then glorie will followe their deedes, as the shadow doeth
 the body. Then welfare and liuelihooe abundantly shal bee in-
 mised to supply want of patrimonie or defect of parents portion.
 And thus the Hystory doth begin.

Not long Athens Queene Anne, the sister of Leues, that was
 king of Hungarie, and wife to Ferdinando Archduke of Austriche,
 (which at this day is parcel of the kingdome of Hungary and Bo-
 eme,) together with the Lady Mary daughter of Philip king of
 Spayne, and wife of the sayd Leues, went to keepe hir abode, and
 soloyne in Hispurg, a Countrey among the Dutch very famous,
 where many tymes the Court of the Hungarian Prynces longe
 space remaigned. These two Noble Queenes remained within
 the Palace of king Maximilian, Emperour at that time elected,
 which Palace is so neare adioyning to the Cathedral Church, as
 without sight of the people at their pleasure they mighte by a se-
 crete Gallerie passe to the Church to heare diuine seruyce accus-
 tomedly celebrated there, Which vse they dayly obserued with the
 Ladies and Gentlewomen, and other Loppes and Gentlemen of
 the Court. In which church was made and erected a high place in
 manner of a Closet gorgeously wrought, and in royall manner ap-
 parcelled of such amplitude as it was hable to receyue the whole
 train and company attendant vpon the Persons of the two Que-
 nes. Now it came to passe that a Gentleman of Cremona in Ita-
 ly called Philipppo di Nicuoli, whych in those dayes by reason of
 the recovery of the Duchie of Milane, by the French, departed
 Lombardie, and went to Hispurg, and was Secretary to Signor,
 Andrea Borgo, bicause he was well learned, and could wyte very
 fayne, and therewithall a proper and very haundsome man. This
 young Gentleman very much frequenting the Church, & seeing the
 beauty of Queene Anne, to excell all the rest of the Ladies, ad-
 orned & garnished with princely behauiour & Queene-like qualities
 not foreseeing (when he beheld hir) the nature of loue whych once
 being possessed, neuer leaueyth the patient till it hath infected his state

Anne Queene.

like the quality of popson, distilling through the baynes, euen to the heart. Which louing venim this Gentleman did drinke with the lookes of his eyes, to satisfie and content his desired minde by beeing and intentife considering his wonderful beauty, that rape beyond measure, he was miserably intangled wth the snares of blind and deceiptfull loue, wherewith he was so cruelly inflamed, as he was like to sorte out of the bounds of reason & Wyt. And the more he did beholde the hyghnesse of his Majesty, and the excellency of so great a Lady, and therewithall did weigh and consider his bale degree and Lignage, and the pooze state whereunto frowarde fortune that tyme had brought him, the more he thought hymselfe frustrate and boyde of hope, and the more the perillous flames of loue did assaile and fire his amorous heart, kindlinge his inward partes with loue so deeply ingrafted, as it was impossible to be rooted out. After Philippo then in this manner (as you haue heard) knotted and intrapped within the fillets and laces of loue, supposing all labour which hee should imploy to be lost and consumed, throughly bent himselfe with all care and diligence to atchieue this hygh and honorable enterprise, whatsoeuer should come of it: which effectually he pursued. For alwayes when the Queenes were at church to heare deuine seruice, he failed not to bee there. And hauinge done his due tyfull reuerence, which very comely he could do, he vsed to bestow himselfe dyrectly ouer agaynst hir: where delitinge in the beauty of the Queene which dayly more and more inflamed his heart, would not depart from thence, till the Queenes were disposed to goe. And if perchance for some occasion, the Queenes went not to Church, after Philippo for all that (were his businesse neuer so great and needefull) would vouchsafe at least wile to visite the place, where he was wont to see his Lady. Such is the ordinary force of loue that although liberty of sight and talke be depriued from the patient, yet it doeth hym good, to treade in the Steps of that Ground where his Mistresse doth vsually haunt, or to see the place hypon which she eased his tender corps, or leaned his delicate elbowes. This young man bayted, and fed in amorous Toyes and Drugges, now armed wth hope, and by and by disarmed by despayre, re-

uolur.

noted in hys mynde a thousand thoughts and cogitations. And
 although he knew that hys Ladder had not steps maw to clime
 so hygh, yet from his determined purpose hee was not able to res-
 moue: but rather the more difficult, and dangerous hys enter-
 pryse seemed to bee, the more grew desire to prosecute and obiect
 hymselfe to all daungers. If peraduenture the Queenes for their
 disport & pastime were disposed to walke into the fieldes or gardes
 of the Citty of Hispurg, he feared not in company of other Cour-
 tiers to make one of the troupe, beinge no houre at rest and quiet
 if he were not in the sight of Queene Anne, or neere h place where
 shee was. At that time there were many Gentlemen departed
 from Lumbardy to Hispurg, which for the most part followed the
 Lord Francisco Sforza the second, by whom they hoped, when the
 Duchy of Mylane was recovered, to be restored to their countrey.
 There was also Chamberlayne to the sayd Lord Francisco, one
 mayster Girolamo Borgo of Verona, betwene whom and mayster
 Philippo, was very neere freendship and familiarity. And bicause
 it chaunseth very seldome, that seruent loue, can be kept so secreete
 and couert, but in some part it will discover it selfe, mayster Bor-
 go easily did perceiue the passion wherewith mayster Philippo
 was inflamed. And one mayster Philippo Baldo, many times be-
 ing in the company of mayster Borgo and Philippo, did marke &
 perceiue his loue, and yet was ignorant of the truth, or worde of
 coniecture with what Gentlewoman he was inamored. But see-
 ing him contrary to wonted custome altered, and from vsual mirth
 transported, fetchinge many sighes and strappings from his sto-
 make, & marking how many times he would steale from the com-
 pany he was in, and withdraw himselfe alone, to muse bygon hys
 thoughts, brought thereby into a melancholy and meane estate, ha-
 uing lost his sleepe, and stomack of eating meate: iudged that the
 amorous Wormes of loue did bitterly gnaw and teare his heart
 with the nebbis of their forked heades. They thre then being by-
 pon a tyme together, debatinge of diuers things amongethem-
 selues, chaunced to fall in argument of loue, and mayster Baldo, &
 Borgo, the other Gentlemen, sayd to mayster Philippo, how they
 were wel assured that he was straungly attached with that passion,

marking exceeding & new life, which lately he led contrary to for-
mer use, intreating him very earnestly, & he would manifest his love
to them, that were his deere and saythfull friends, telling him & as
in weighty matters otherwise he was already sure what they were,
euen so in this he might hardily repose his hope & confidence, promi-
sing hym all their helpe & sauiour, if therein their indouour & tra-
uayle might minister ayde and comfort. Hee then like one rased
from a trance, or lately reuiued from an extasse, after he had com-
posed his Countenance and Gesture, with teares and multitude
of sobbes, began to say these wordes: My welbeloued frendes,
and trusty companions, being right well assured that yee (whose
fidelity I haue already proued, and whose secret mouthes be re-
commended amongst the wise and vertuous,) will keepe close and
conuert the thinge which you shall heare me utter, as of such im-
portauces, that if the yong Romane Gentleman Papyrus had bene
here, for all his silence of graue matters required by his Mother,
I woulde bnnethes haue disclosed the same vnto hym. In
deede I cannot deny but must needes confesse that I am in loue,
and that very ardently, which I cannot in such wyse conceale, but
that the blinde must needes clearly & evidently perceyue. And al-
though my mouth woulde fayne keepe close, in what plight my pas-
sions do constrain my inward affection, yet my face & straung
manner of life, which for a certayne tyme and space I haue led, doe
wittnesse, that I am not the man I was wont to bee. So that if
honestly I doe not amend, I trust to arrive to that ende whereunto
every Creature is bozne, and that my bitter and painful life shall
take ende, if I may call it a lyfe, and not rather a lyuing death. I
was resolu'd, and thoroughly determined, neuer to discover to any
man the cause of my cruell torment, being not able to manifest the
same to hyr, whom I doe only loue, thinking better by concealinge
it through loue, to make humble sute to Lady Atropos, that shee
would cut of the thred of my dolorous lyfe. Neuerthelesse to you,
from whom I ought to keepe nothyng secret, I will dysgar-
byle and vnlace the very Secretes of my Wynde, not for
that I hope to finde comfort and reliefe, or that my passions by de-
claration of them, will lessen and diminish, but that yee, knowing
the oc-

the occasion of my death, may make report thereof to hir, that is
the only mistresse of my life, that shee vnderstandinge the extreme
panges of the truest loue that euer stued, may moune and wape
hys losse: which thinge if my feely Ghost may knowe, no doubt
where foruer it do wander, shall receiue great toy and comfort. Be
it known vnto you therefore, the first day that myne Eyes behelde
the diuine beauty and incomparable fauor of that superexcellent
Lady Queene Anne of Hungary, and that I (more than wysedom
required) did meditate, and consider the singular behauiour and
notable curtesie and other innumerable giftes wherewith shee is
indued, the same beyond measure did so inflame my heart, that im-
possible it was for me to quench the seruent loue, or extinguishe the
least parte of my conceyued torment. I haue done what I can to
macerate and mortifie my vnbridled desire, but all in vayne. My
force and puissance is weake to match with so mighty an aduer-
sary. Alas eyes, I knowe what yee will object agaynst mee, yee
will say that mine ignobility, my byrth and stocke be no meete mat-
ches for such a personage, and that my loue is to highly placed, to
sucke reliefe: And the same I do confesse so wel as you. I do ac-
knowledge my condition and state to base, I confesse that my loue
(may rather I may terme it folly) doth presume beyond the boundes
of order: For the first tyme that I felt my selfe wrapped in those
Snaires, I knewe her to beare the Port amonges the chiefeest
Queenes, and to bee the peerlesse Princesse of Christendome.
Agayne, I knew my selfe the poorest Gentleman of the Worlde,
& the most miserable exile. I thought mozeouer it to be very vn-
seemely for me to direct my mynde vpon a wight so honorable, & of
so great estate. But who can rayne the Bridle, or prescribe lawes
to loue? What is he that in loue hath free wil and choyse? True-
ly I beleue no man, because loue the moze it doth seeme to accorde
in pleasure and delight, the further from the mark he shooteth his
bolte, hauing no respect to degree or state. Haue not many excellēt
and worthy personages, yea Dukes, Emperours and Kings, bin
inflamed with the loue of Ladies, & Womē of base & vile degree?
Haue not most honorable dames, and Womē of greatest renoume
despised

Anne Queene

despised the honoz of thez states, abandoned the company of thez
 husbands, and neglected the loue of thez Chyliden, for the ardent
 loue that they haue bozne to men of inferiour sort. All Histories
 be full of examples of that purpose. The memoyses of our aun-
 cestozs be yet in fresh remembraunce, whereof if they were igno-
 rant vnto you that be of great experiece, I could aduouche assured
 testimony. Yet thus much I say vnto you, that it seeme no newe
 thing for a man to be overcome by his owne affectyon: It is not
 the stobility of his state, oz for that thee is a Queene, it is not the
 consideration of one parte oz other, that moued me first hereunto.
 But loue it is, that is of greater force than we our selues bee of,
 which many tymes maketh that to seeme lawfull, which altogether
 is vnlawful, and by subduing reason maketh the great potentate
 loyde tributarie to his wyl and pleasure, whose force is farre grea-
 ter then the lawes of Nature. And albeit that I neuer hope to at-
 tayne to prosperous end of this magnifike and statelie loue, which
 moze and moze doth seeme infortunate, yet I can not for my Lyfe
 else where applye the same, oz alter it to other place. And consumprige
 still through faithfull & feruent loue bozne to the Queene, I haue
 forced & constrained my self by al possible meanes to gyue ouer that
 fond & foolish enterpryse, and to place my mynde else where: but mine
 endeuour and all my labour and resistance is employed in vayne.
 Yea and, if it were not for feare of eternall damnation, and the losse
 of my pooze afflicted soule (which God forbid) myne owne Han-
 des before this time had ended my desires. I am therefore deter-
 mined (tho that I can attaine no successe of Loue, and that God
 doth suffer me to be inspyred wyth that most honourable and cur-
 teous Lady, beyond all order and estimation) to content my selfe
 with the sight of those hir fayre and glistering eyes, farre excellling
 the sparkling glimpe of the Diamonde oz Saphyre, and to serue lo-
 ue & honour hir, so long as life doth last within this feeble corpes.
 Upon whose radiant and excellling beaurie, my hope shall continu-
 ally feede: and yet I am not so far boyd of vnderstanding, but that
 I do most euidently know none other to be the guide of this di-
 measurable loue, but folly most extreme. And the end of those wordes
 be let fall many teares, & being staied w sobbs & sighes he was able
 to speake

to speake no more. And in very deede he that had seene him, would haue thought that his heart had bene tormented with most bitter and painfull passions. Now they being very attentue to his pitifull oration, were attached with incredible sorrow, thinking that they had ben in a dreame by hearing of this discourse, & soode slept a while one loking vpon an other, without speaking word. Afterwards comming to themselves, distrught almost, for the great admiration and wonder to heare him speake those words, master Girolamo and Baldo, with suauable arguments went about to counsel him to withdraw his sonde and foolishly mind, praying him to place the same elsewhere, shewing him the impossibility of hys enterpryse, and the great peril that might succede thereof. But they spake to a man that seemed to be deaf, who replied, that hee neither coulde or would giue ouer his loue, that had already made so depe impression, what so euer came of it. Notwithstanding they ceased not still with sharp admonitions to beate into his head, the sonde beginning of his foolishly loue: and not onely at that tyme, but continually when they were together, they did thep best by oft repetition of his vayne conceipt, to let him vnderstande his manifest error: but thep labour and friendly lessons were to no purpose.

Wherefore master Borgo, determined to giue him ouer, and to attende what would succede therof. Master Philippo continuing hys pursute, neuer sayling to be at church when he knew the Queenes to be ther, at length it chanced that they began to espy his loue for that both of them did mark his order, gesture and demeanure, and did note his oft frequentation of the places where they continually haunted and his manner in placing himselfe at the church directly ouer agaynst them, and his common vse in beholding & loking vpon their faces, iudging thereby that without doubt he was in loue w one of them, or at least mith some Gentlewoman of their trapne whereof the two Queenes began to vse some talk, although not certain vpon whom his loue was bent. Neuerthelesse they wer desirous to know the troth, & expected oportunitie sometime to discouer that doubt. In the meane while master Philippo thought by gazing on thep beauty, to remoue the fire that miserably did consume the such & marow of his bones, seeking cōfort & relief for hys afflicted

afflicted heart, the more I say he sought for ease, the greater he felt his pain. And truely all they that feruently do loue, aspire to that, which otherwise they woulde eschue, by sight of them whome they do loue, not remembryng that the more they doe contemplate the beloved beauty, the more increaseth desyre, and with desyre extreme and bitter smart. Maister Philippo then lost no occasion of time till to behold Madame, & Queene, were it in the church or courte, or were they disposed for disport and recreation to walke abrode. It chauned now while toyinges wer at this point, & ladies very desirous to know vpon whom maister Philippo did expend his loue, that fortune opened vnto the a meane to vnderstand the same. It was then about that time of the yere, wherein all floures and roses were by Titans force constrained to adorne and decke ech garden & place of pleasure, & with their fragrant smells & odors, to sent the same in the moneth of May it was when the Twinnes were disposed to shroud themselves amongs the hawthorn boughs and hollybuckles that yeld to euery wyght greatest store of delygths, at what time roses & other floures at theyr first budding be very rare and scant, sauing in Kings Courtes and pynces Palaces, where such variettes by art and industrie be most abundant, and all men haue delight to present such nouelties to the principall ladies. Vpon a day Queene Anne had in hir hands certayne floures in due order couched in a Rosagay, and for hir disport walked by and down a very fayre & gorgeous garden, in the company of Queene Mary, & other Ladies & gentlewomen, about that tyme of the day the Sun wearie of traualle, went to hide him self in the backe of the western mountaine, wher amongs other of the Courte was maister Philippo. Queene Anne when she had espyed him, determined to make proufe with what Lady amongs them all, maister Philippo was in loue, and sportyng hys self with soft and piete walks by and downe the garden, pleasantly iesting with diuerse there attendant, as the maner is of like Ladies, with trimme and pleasant talk, at length happed vpon maister Philippo, who although he was in communication with certain Italian Gentlemen neuertheless his mynde and eyes were fixed vpon the Queene that whē so euer she appeared before him, his eyes and face were so firmly bent vpon hir, as the beholder might easily perceiue, that the Wy-

sage

Age of the Quene was the vnboubted harborough of his thought
 Philippo, seeing the Quene come toward him, did bowe hit with
 gentle and dutifull reverence, in such humble wise, as he seemed
 at hir hands pittifull to craue mercy, And cruse who former doth
 loue with letter and perfect heart, seemeth so bitter more words to
 his Lady with his eyes, than he is able to speak with his tongue.
 The Quene being come vnto him with a grate right graue and
 demure, sayd vnto him: Pat Gentleman of Lombardie, yf these
 shoures which we haue in our hands wer giuen vnto you liberally
 to vse at your pleasure, and requyred to make some curteous pre-
 sent of the same to one of vs the ladies here that liked you best, tell
 mee I pray you, to whether of vs would ye giue the same, or what
 would you do or say? Speake frankly we pray you, and tell your
 mynde wythout respect: for thereby you shall doe to vs very great
 pleasure, and we shal know to whether of vs you beare your chie-
 fel loue. For it is not to be supposed, that you being a young man,
 can spende your time without loue, being a naturall qualite in e-
 uery creature. When master Philippo felt the swete voyce of the
 Quene pleasantly to pierce his eares, and heard that he was com-
 manded for the loue of hir that he loued, not onely to tell whome
 he loued best and most enterly, but also hir whom he worshipped
 and serued in heart, was almost belied hymselfe, such was the
 tickling ioyntie that he felt in his heart, whose face was taryed
 with a thousand colozs and what for superfluous loue and loy,
 wherof the like he neuer tasted before, fell into an extasse, not able
 to render answer. But when he had recouered stomack, so wel as
 he coulde with soft and trembling voyce, he answered the Quene
 in this wise: Such your matesty (to whom I vnde myne humble
 thanks for that curtesie) hath vouchsafed to commaund me belied
 the infinite pleasure and honour, for w^{ch} eternally I shal stande
 bound to your highnesse) I am ready secretly and troely to be-
 close my mind, being promised by your matesty in opening of the
 same, to deserue great thanks. Wherfore your pleasure being such
 I do say then, with all due reuerence, that not onely here at this
 tyme, but at all times & places wher it shal please god to appoint me
 being not able to bestow the in other sort than they be, but w^{ch} they
 more preti-

Anne Queene.

precious and rare, the more sofull I should bee of them. These
floures I say shall of me right humbly be presented to your mai-
esty, not because you be a Queene and of a royall Race (whych not-
withstandinge is a great vertue) but because you bee a Phoenix, a
rare Lady, and of all the troupes the farrest, garnished with infinite
gifts, a passinge vertues, for your merites worthy to be honoured
with farr more excellent gifts, than these simple floures be, as she
that (aboue all other Ladies that liue at this day) is the honour
and onely gloze of all womanhoode of our age, as shee that is the
Paragon peerlesse of the vniuersal world: whē he had sayd those
words, he held his peace. The Queene with great delight hearing
the ready answer of the pong Gentleman, sayd vnto hym: And
we do giue you thanks for the great honoz and cōmendation done
vnto vs. Whē she had sayd so, without further talke, she went forth
vnto pleasant talke and sport with diuers that waited vpon hir.
Queene Anne now vnderstode, & so likewise Queene Mary, which
of the pong Lombard Gentleman did accept for his soueraign
Lady, whose loue she disdaind not, but in her mynde rather com-
mended, esteeming him better than euer she did before: and like a
discreet and wise Lady gaue him infinite prayse. She did not now
as other women wont to do, who when they see the selues of birth
more noble, or of degree more ample than their louers be (whych
gift they receiue through the fauor of the heauens) do not only de-
spise them, but mock them, & their faithfull seruice, & many tymes
with fayned countenance and dissembled words do extol them and
set them by aloft, and by and by almost with one breath, exchang-
ing their fayned prayse into rebuke, they thrust them downe head-
long from the tye of hope and comfort, to the bottomlesse pit of
despayre: and the fuller she is of floutes, the finer she is esteemed.
But farre better is she to be regarded, & not findinge in hir hart to
loue hir suter, will frankly tell him at the first, that she cannot like
hym, nor fashion hir mynde to loue him, and requirring him not to
feede his minde with vayne hope, or contriue the tyme with words
and lookes, and pray him to seeke some other that can better fauor
his person thā she. And although perchāce a man do very seruile-
ly loue

yfoue a woman, & that it wer grete sorrow & griefe vnto him to bee
 cast of, and receiue such refusall, yet in mine opinion it were lesse
 griefe openly to receiue that repulse, than to be fawned vppon, and
 suffered with fained talke, and for the time choaked with the
 baite of vaine hope, and afterwards become ridiculous, and gired
 by the scorneful. I am assured, that the woman which giue by hir
 seruant such repulse, shall bee counted much more cruell, than
 Mistresse Helena was to the scholler of Paris, after he was re-
 turned from the vniuersite, to Florence, written by Boccaccio in
 his Decamerone and hereafter in place described. But let vs re-
 tourne to maister Philippo, who although he coude not imagine
 he conceiue the intent, wherfore Queene Anne made that demand,
 yet the same was very deare and acceptable vnto him, vppon the
 which he neuer thought, but felt great contentation in his mynde
 and was more iocund & pleasant then he was wont to be before. On
 the other side the Queene, which was very discret & wise when she saw
 maister Philippo at the church or other place to make obeysance vnto
 hir very carterously requited the same, bowing hir head in the againe,
 (which she neuer vsed but to Barons & Knights of great reputa-
 tion) declaring thereby how wel in worth she regarded his reue-
 rent made vnto hir. Whereat he receiued marvellous pleasure &
 delight, hoping for none other recompence at hir handes, than the
 continuance of such curtesies and honourable entertaynement. Among
 certaine Italians that were vppon a Day assembled in the presence
 chamber of Queene Anne, waiting there vpon Madonna Barbara
 the wyfe of Maister Pietro Martire Stampa, who with hir two
 daughters were gone to salute the two Queenes that were the time
 together. There was also maister Philippo, with whom Borgo &
 Bildo, reasoned of diuerse matters: And as they wer in talke, both
 the Queenes came forth which was the occasion, that all the lordes
 and Gentlemen, attended, vppon whose approach, each man rose by,
 and bareheaded expetied whither the Queenes would goe. Queene
 Anne perceiuing a company of Italians together, lest Queene Ma-
 rie, and went streight to them and very gently inquired of diuerse
 of the Gentlemen, their names, and of what parties of Italy they
 were, then she came to the place where they, all, were standing to-
 gether

ther, and curteously asked first maister Girolamo, what his name
 was, of what countrey, and whether he were a Gentleman: To
 whom reuerently he said, that his name was Girolamo Borgo, a
 Gentleman of Verona. Maister Baldo likewise being demaunded
 the same, answered so well as he coude, that he was a Gentleman
 borne of an auncient house in Milane, and that his name was Phi-
 lippo Baldo. When the had receiued theyr answer with cheereful
 and smiling countenance he returned to maister Philipppo, inqury-
 yng of him also his name and countrey, and whether he were a
 Gentleman or no: Whom maister Philipppo after his duty done
 reuerently answered: Madame, my souerain Lady & only mistresse
 I am a Gentleman, and am called by the name of Philipppo dei Ni-
 cuoli, of Cremona. The Queene making no further demaundes
 of any of the other Gentlemen, sayd to Maister Philipppo: You say
 true Sir, I dare warrant you to be a Gentleman in deede, and hee
 that sayd the contrary, should declare himself to be boord of Judge-
 ment, what a Gentleman is. She sayde no more, but from thence
 with Queene Mary and the whole trayne she went to Church.
 All they that hard the Queene speake those words, dyd wonder,
 and could not deuise what shee meant by them, notwithstanding ech
 man thought that the Queene bare to maister Philipppo singular
 good will and fauour. He (as it was his custome) full of diuerse
 cogitations, whose head was building of great cities, wet to church
 bestowing himselfe in his wonted place, reuoluing in hys mind the
 Queenes words spokē vnto him. And although he could not per-
 ceue to what end that honorable lady had spoken them: yet hee
 thought that hir maiesty had done him great honour. And verily
 the humanity and curtesy of a Lady, so excellent and noble is way-
 the to be extolled with infinite prayes, who being of high estate &
 lineage, and the wife of a Prince that proceded of the stirpe Impe-
 rial, not only did not disdain to be beloued of a man of so base de-
 gre, banished from his own Country, but also with great care &
 diligence did deuise, & in effect declare that she was the same whom
 the Italiau yong gentlemen did loue as partly it was euidently to be
 perceived, not for other purpose doubtlesse, but to do some good
 beede couenable for the greatness of hir estate, and incident to the
 seruient

frequent loue of the amorous yong Gentleman, which afterwarde
 in very deede she accomplisshed. But howe many be there in these
 dayes, I doe not speake of Queenes and Princesses, but of sim-
 ple and priuate Gentlewomen, that being of meane worship, indu-
 ed with some shew of beautie, be without good conditions and ver-
 tue, who seeing themselves beloued of some Gentlemen, not so en-
 riched with the goods of fortune as they be, do scorne and mocke
 them, thinking themselves to good to be looked vpon, or to be once
 moued of vertuous loue, scornfully casting their face at one side,
 as though the suiters were unworthy their company. Howe many
 likewise be possessed and ouerwhelmed with pryde by reason of fa-
 ture more propitious vnto them then other, be descended of some
 great parentage, that will accompt a great iniurie done vnto them,
 if any gentleman except he be rich, do make sute to loue them? A-
 gain a great number of women (I speake of them whose minds do
 not so much aspire to fame or honour as they seeke their de-
 lights and brauerie to be maintained) bee of this trampe, & they care
 not whether they louers bee discrete, well condicioned, vertuous
 and gentle, so that they purses be full of money, or they shapen a-
 miable, not waiping the valour and good conditions of the minde,
 ne yet a thousand other qualities that ought to garnish a Gentle-
 man, whereby all vertuous Gentlemen daily do growe beautiful,
 and be enriched wth greater perfections. Some there be that fixe
 their minds vpon those, that be of goodly personage, although void
 of good behauiour, louing rather a piece of flesh with two eyes, thā
 an honest man well furnished w vertue. Think not yet for al thys,
 that herein men ordinarily bee moze wise than women, although
 they ought to bee accomplished with greater witte: but to say the
 truth, they be all spotted with one kind of pitch, that warfare here
 in the large campe of this present worlde: whereof it commeth to
 pass, that light loue as we see to beare no good foundation, end to
 hve no longe continuance, euen so the end and conclusion to consu-
 me like the beauty of the floure. And therupon many times it chañ-
 ceth, that when loue is not grounded but vpon transitorie beauty,
 which doth dissolue like a windy cloude, the little heat thereof doth

Anne Queene

not way moze hote, but rather congealeth to frost, and many times
 conuerteth into hatred and mischief most cruel. A worse thing yet
 than this is in common practise. There be many that will needes
 bee counted and called gentlemen, because they come of Ancient
 and Noble race, and being growen by to mans state, doe appeare
 in shapen of men, but are altogether without approued manners,
 bitterly ignozant what the nature of Gentle is, accompting them
 selues to be toly fellows, when in company of other as bigge
 beasts as them selues, they contriue theyr ryme and make their
 bragges, vaunting that Such a woman is at my commaundment,
 and such a mans wyfe I do keepe, such a one is my companions
 friende, whereby they bying many women, yea & of the best sort, in-
 to slaunder and infamie. Diuerse Gentlewomen also bee so fond,
 and of so simple discretion, that although they know and clearly
 perceiue thys to be true, yet allured with the personages and beau-
 ty of such Rosters, passe not to geue the rayne to these vnbridled
 Iades, not foreseeing (lyke ignozant Woodcocks) that in fewe
 dayes throughe their owne temeritie, they incur the common shame
 of the vulgar people, being pointed at in the streets as they go:
 where such as be wyse and discrete, doe dayly feare the least sus-
 pition that may be conceined. There is no woman that is wyse,
 but so neare as she can, will shunne and auoyde all occasion where-
 by slaunder may aryse, and will chose vnto hir amongs a number,
 such one as can best please hir fanse, and as with whome for hys
 vertue and honestie she purposeth to match hir selfe in maryage,
 which is the final ende of all honest loue. Howe be it Nature hath
 not framed euery creature of one metall, ne yet Minerva infused
 lyke byayne into euery head. And truely this our age dothe breede
 many fayre and worthy Women, whose condicions bee good and
 honest, adorned with comely qualittes, the Generositie, stoutnesse
 and Valoure of whose myndes doe deserue syngular prayse and
 estymatyon. And what is hee, chauncenge vppon a courteous
 and Vertuous Dame, that will not geue ouer the Loue of all o-
 ther, to honour and loue hir for euer? But wee haue digressed to
 long from our bestowe, and therefore, retourning to the same a-
 gayne, I say, that Fortune the guide of maister Philippo, was ful-
 ly deter,

he determined to bestow his fauor vpon him. For besides that the Queene dearely esteemed his loue, it seemed that allthings wer vnted and agreed to soe his enterpryse to happy successe.

The Queene had to his Gouvernesse Madonna Paola de i Caua- li, a Gentlewoman of Verona, very auncient and graue (aduanced to the calling, by Madonna Biauca Maria Sforza the wife of the Emperour Maximilian) whom Queene Anne requyred diligently to procure for him, such Rithmes in the Thuscane language and other Italian workes, as were to be found, because his disposition was to be conuersant and familiar in that tongue, and employed great diligence to learne and exercise the same, wherein shee attained such perfection, as all Italians coulde very well vnderstande her. Now (as the good lucke of master Philippo would haue it) he that day went to the Courte alone, continuallye deuisinge if it were possible, at all tymes to be in presence of the Queene: Whome so soone as Madonna Paola espied, because she familiarly knew him went vnto him, and sayd: My welbeloued friend master Philippo, because the Queene hath great delight to learne our tongue, and therein already hath some towardnesse, as by his common speaking of the same you may perceiue, this morning at his busying shee gaue me a great charge to procure for him, certayne Italian Rithmes, who besides those booke in that tongue already printed, gladly desireth to see some trymme deuises of deuote learned men that make in oure Dates: specially his mind is earnestly disposed vpon Rithmes cunningly composed, whereof I thinke you haue some store by reason of your delight in that exercise.

Wherefore I thought good to repaire vnto you and doe heartily pray you, to make his Maiesty partaker of such as you haue, wherein you shal do him great and grateful serulce, & I shal remain continually bound vnto you, besides that I doe purpose when I present them vnto him, to make him proue that I receyued them at your hands, which because of the loue she beareth to our Mayron, she wil fauorably accept, and the same no doubt when oportunitie serueth, liberally reward. Master Philippo in courteous wise thanked the gentlewoman, and said, that he was soe not able:

A.

better.

better to satisfie hir request, bicause in that countrey he had smal
 Noze of such desired things, neuerthelesse he would make diligent
 search, to get so many as were possible to be found, either among
 the Gentlemen that folowed the Court, or else where they were to
 be gotten. In the meane time he sayd that he would deliuer those
 few hee had, and bring them vnto hir that night, praying hir to com-
 mend hym to the good grace, and fauour of hir maiesty. And so
 he tooke hys leaue, and went straght to hys Lodging, where di-
 ligently he began to search among his writings (the gladdest man
 in the Worlde for that occasion offered) and founde amonges the
 same diuers rithmes which hee thought vnwoorthy to passe into o-
 handes of so great a Lady, sauing the third Rithme or Chapter,
 as we commonly call it, made by a notable Doctoz of the lawes, &
 excellent Poet called M. Niccolo Amanio, of Crema, who no
 doubt for making of vulgar rithmes, thereby expressing the amo-
 rous affections of Louers, was in our time without comparison.
 And bicause the same was so apt for the purpose of myster Phi-
 lippo his loue, as could be desired: he wrote the same fayre (being
 in deede a very fayre sheete of Paper, which soundeth to this ef-
 fect.

Quanto piu cresce (Amor) Paspro tormento. &c.

The more (O Loue) thy bitter pangs augment,
 Melting by times my sad accens'd sprete,
 The more to burne, I feele my selfe content:
 And though ech day a thousande times I fleete
 Twixt hope and dreade, all dolour yet & smart
 My glorious prooffe of enterprife makes sweete.
 The fire so high, which kindled hath myne hart,
 As by loues flames, none euer had (I know)
 So lofty source of heate in any part,
 Sweete then my torment is, sweete is my woe,
 Sweete eke of loue the light, sweete the conceyte
 From so high beames, fallen in my breast, growe.
 Sutch

Sutch power of porte, sutch maiesty most gret
 I tremble to beholde, and do confesse
 My lot to base, so worthy a blisse to get.
 But will herein, my Reason doth suppressse,
 And those fayre eyes, where loue himselfe ny lies
 Armed with lookes, of ioy and gentlenesse,
 Lookes that vpliftes my soule aboue the Skies,
 And in each coast al cloudes expelling cleane,
 Do teach ten thousand pathes to Paradise,
 My Goddesse braue, Angelicall Sirene
 Fayrenesse it selfe, Dame Beauties sacred heire.
 What mou'ts of ioy may match my happy paine
 VVhose scaling hope, how so ensue dispeire
 Leues vaüt of thoughts, which once so highly flew
 As honour all that earth besides doth beare,
 Comparde to this, but baggage were to vew,

When M^{as}ter Philippo had written out these verses, immediately he returned to the court, and caused Madona Paola, to be called vnto him by one of the Gromes of the Chamber, to whom he said: M^{as}stress Paola, I haue brought you a ditte, that is very trim & pretty, which I pray you deliuer to the Queene, and I will do what I can to get other. M^{as}stress Paola tooke them, and went into the chamber, and findinge the Queene alone, said to hir: Madame, this morning yee commaunded me to get you some Italian Rithmes, and vpon inquirie I haue receiued these few verses of m^{as}ter Philippo, secretary to the Lord Andrea Borgo, who hath promised to bring me other. The Queene hearing hir speake those words, smilinge receiued the Paper, and read the same: the sense whereof she liked very well, thinking that m^{as}ter Philippo had bene the compositor of the same, and that of purpose he had made them for hir, whereby shee was out of doubt that it was shee that m^{as}ter Philippo so feruently loued, and the better hir opiniõ was confirmed, bicause some of the words tēded to the state of hir personage. And cōsidering the valoz of her minde, she prayed Nature,

¶ 3.

for that

Anne Queene.

foz that in a man so basely borne shee had sowne the seeds of a gentlemanlike and noble heart, greatly to his selfe commendinge the yong man. Then she conferred the whole matter wth his Cousin Queene Marie; which was a wise and comely Ladye, and vpon that loue they vsed many discourses, moze and moze hauing in regard the behauiour of that yong Gentleman. Queene Anne determined, when conueniently shee might, to rendze to mayster Philippo, foz his great loue condigne rewarde: and studying still how to requite his curtesie, euer when she saw maister Philippo, she besed him with her wonted chere & grateful salutation (which thing onely euery honest gentleman ought to expect that is indued wth reason. at the hands of a pynesse so noble & worthy, as a rewarde sufficient, the inequality of the parties considered) Whereof mayster Philippo was the best contented man of the world, and durst not hope foz greater guerdon, continuing his wonted lyfe fed hym self still with that beloued sight in such wyse as many Gentlemen enuied the fauor borne vnto him by the Queene, who foz none other cause did vse that curtesie, but foz that she saw him to be Vertuous and well learned: continually esteemyng such as wth learning or other gifies of the mynd were indewed: and when occasion chaunced, shee vouchsafed to bestowe vpon them curteous intertaynment and lyberall rewardes. It fortuned about that time that the Emperoz Maximilian died, Charles his nephew (which was the Emperoz Charles, the fifth) then beyng in Spayne: by reason of whose death the Lord Andra Borgo, purposed to send one of his Gentlemen to kyng Charles, foz the confirmation of that lpyng he entoyed, giuen vnto him foz his long and faythfull seruyce by the said Maximilian. Amongst al the chose this maister Philippo, foz his wisdom and experience in such affayres. Which don, he wente to the Queenes, and gaue them to vnderstand that shortly he would sed his Secretarie into Spayne, and told them the cause, humbly prayng them both, that they would write their fauorable letters in his behalf. The Queenes knowing what payne and trauell hee had sustayned in the seruice of Maximilian, and what daungers he had passed, were very willing therunto. Now Queene Anne remembred that she had conuenient time to recompence maister Philippo foz
hys

his longloue born vnto hir. And bicause she was the most curteous Lady of the world, and therewithal most bountifull and liberal, and not onely with comely talke and gesture: but also in effecte willing to do them good, whome she honoured in minde, concluded what to do, requiring the Lord Andrea to send his Secretarie vnto hir, when he was ready to depart, for that besides Letters, she would be mouth commit certain buisnesse for hir to do in the Courte of Spayne. When the Lord Andrea was gone, Queene Anne began to deuise with the other Queene what she mighte doe for mayster Philippo who prayed Queene Anne, after she had commended him in letters, to suffer hir to make the ende and conclusion of the same. Whereupon both the Queenes wrote many letters into Spayne, to king Charles, and to the Lord Chancellor and other Noble men, whome they thought to be apte and mete ministers to bring the effect of their letters to passe.

When the Lord Andrea had put all thinges in order for that dispatch, he said to mayster Philippo (which was now furnished with all thyngs necessary and apertinent for that long voyage) Philippo remembre this day that you goe to Queene Anne, and tell her; that I require you to come vnto hir, to know if she would commaund you any seruice to the Catholike Kyng, where you shall humbly offer your seruice, in what it pleaseth hir to commaunde: you shall also tel hir, what thinges I haue geuen vnto you in charge by speciall commission. Neuer could moze pleasant talke sound into the eares of maiester Philippo, than this, who for that he should bothe see and speake vnto his Lady before his departure, and for that she would comit vnto him the doing of hir affayres in Spayne, was the gladdest and best contented man of the world. The houre come when he thought good to repaie to the Queene, he went vnto hir, & gaue hir to vnderstand by one of his priuy Chamber, that he was attendane there to know hir pleasure. The Queene certified of his readinesse to depart, by and by toke order that he should come into hir chāber who entering the same with trembling heart & after he had done his humble reuerence, with great feare & bashfulness, said: Pleaseth your Maiesty, that my Lorde Borgo, being about to addresse mee his

D. 4.

Secretarie

Anne Queene

Secretarie into Spayne, to the Catholike King there, hath commaunded me to waite vpon your hyghnesse, to knowe your pleasure for certain affayres to be don for your maiesty. Wherfore may it please the same to employ mee, your humble seruaunte, I shall thinke my self the happiest man of the world: A thing so blessed and ioyfull vnto me, as no benefite or commoditie can render vnto me greater felicitie. Then he disclosed vnto her the rest of his message, which was committed vnto hym by his lord and maister. The Queene beholding hym with mery countenaunce gently sayd vnto hym: And we for the trust we haue in you to do our message and other affayres in Spayne, haue requyred you to come hither. And because we knowyng you to be a Gentleman, and assured that you wyl gladly do your endeouour in any thing that may do vs pleasure, haue chosen you aboue any other. Our wyl and commaundement is, that fyrrst you deliuer these letters, conteining matters of great importance to the hands of the catholike King, and that you do our humble commendations to his maiesty. Then al the rest accordingly as they be directed, which principally aboue other things we pray you to dispatch vpon your arriual. And if we bee able to do you any pleasure, eyther for your preferment, or for other commodity, spare not to write vnto vs your mynd and (we doe assure you) the same shalbe effectually accomplished, to the vtermoste of our indeuour, wherby we do of our owne motion frankly offre vnto you, in consideration of the fidelitie, worthinesse, & honeste behauiour alwayes knownen to be in you. Mayster Philippo hearynge these wordes was replenished with such ioy, as he thought hymselfe rapt into the heauens, and his heart felt such pleasure, as it seemed to flicke in some depe sea of delights: and after the best maner he coude, thanked hir for hir curtesie: and albeit (he sayd) that hee knew hymselfe vnworthy of that fauor, yet he dedicated the same to hir commaundement, surrendring hymselfe as a slaue and faithfull seruant to hir maiesty. Then vpon his knees, to his great contentation he kissed hir hands, which of hir selfe she offred vnto him, & then reuerely he toke his leaue. When hee was gone oute of the chamber, he met with the Queenes Coserer, that attended for him, who taking him aside, did put into his hand a purse w. 500. crowns, and

and the maister of the horſſe preſented vnto him a very goodly and beautifull horſe, wherewith maister Philippo, was ſo well pleaſed, as he was like to leape out of his ſkin for ioy. The he took his iorney & arriued at the Courte in Spayne, where at oportunitie, he deliuered his Letters to King Charles, and accompliſhed other buſſines & meſſage preſcribed vnto him by Queene Anne. And when he had diſpatched the Queenes other letters, he attended the buſſineſſe of his Lord Andrea Borgo. The king peruſed the Contentes of the letters ſent vnto him by his Maſter and kynſwoman, ſo did the Lord Chauncellour, (which at that time was the Lord Mercurino Gattinara,) and other: to whom the Queenes had written: wherby the king was ſollicited to ſtand good Lord, to ſay Lord Andrea Borgo, and ſikewiſe exorted him to be beneficiall to maſter Philippo, whom for his good condicions & experience they had ſent vnto him in the amballaſſage. Vpon a day the king moued by the Lord Chancellor, cauſed maister Philippo to come before him, to whom kneeling before his maieſty, the king ſaid theſe wordes. The teſtimony & report ſo honozably made of you by the two Queenes, from whom you brought vs letters, and the hope which we haue to find you a faithfull & proſſitable ſeruant, & ſo be correſpondent in effecte to the tenor of thoſe letters, moueth vs to accepte you into the number of one of our Secretaries, wherein before our preſence you ſhal ſwear vnto vs to be faithfull and true. Maister Philippo that expected for no ſuch dignity, marvelled at the Kings wordes, and there by oth miniſtered vnto hym by the Lord Chauncellour was receyued into his ſeruite, and exercyſed that office, in ſingular fauor of the King, to the great ſatysfaction of all men. And after that King Charles was elected Emperour, knowing the experience that maister Philippo had in the affaires of Italy, and ſpecially in Lombardie, he committed vnto hym all matters touchyng the ſtate of the region, which ſo happily came to paſſe to maister Philippo, as beſides the ornaments of vertue and wiſedom, he acquired greate riches, and yet he continually ſerued and worſhipped the Queene as his noble paygonelle and worthy myſtreſſe. Tell me now ye faire Ladies and Gentlewomen: What ſhall we ſay of the princely behauiour and noble diſpoſition of this Queene? Truly in my iudgment

ment, he deserueth that prayse and commendation that may be attributed to the moſte excellent Ladye of the Worlde, who neuer gaue ouer hir faithfull ſervant tyl ſhe had boſomfully with hir owne hands and commendation, rendred vnto hym a moſt Princely rewarde. And as the ſunne in beautie and brightneſſe doeth ſurmounte the other furniture of the Skies, euen ſo Magnificence, and liberality in eche Ladye doth excell all other vertues, ſpecially in thoſe perſonages, that keepe the ſtate of Princes. But to conclude, mete & requiſite it is, that yet beautifie this moſt curtuous & liberall Queene with due praifes. For ſurely in my iudgement, if all Women would confer their heades & Wittes together, and deuote Hymnes, and Sonnets of Liberality, they can neuer ſufficiently be able to celebrate the prayſe & glory of this Queene.

Alexander de Medices.

Duke of Florence.

The gentle and iuſt act of *ALEXANDER* de *MEDICES* Duke of *FLORENCE*, vpon a Gentleman whom he fauoured, who hauing rauished the Daughter of a poore Myller; cauſed him to mary hir, for the greater honour and celebration whereof, he appoynted hir a rich and honourable Dowry.

The. XXII. Nouell.



If the force of Vertue were apparant at the ſight of eye, it would be deemed to be of leſſe value than the greatneſſe thereof deſerueth (for ſundry cauſes riſing in the mindes of men) & that by performinge the little which reſſed for the entier perfection of hir whole buſied glory. Now becauſe that hir effects be diuerſe, and by

diuersly they be vsed, the examples also of such diuersity, do va-
 riare & make diuerse h^e affections of men: some to follow that qua-
 lity & other that part, proceeding from the whole & perfect body of
 vertue, which hath caused some to win the price of modesty & tem-
 perance in their deedes, other full of magnanimity (not familiar to
 many) haue resisted the assaults of fortune. Many other haue em-
 braced that only hono^r which is h^e nourice of ech good act, wheres
 by they haue either wel ruled the state of free citties, or guided the
 armies of mighty Monarchs. And such whilom h^e citties of Rome
 Athenes, Sparta, and the ancient Monarchs of the Medes, Persi-
 ans, and the Assyrians did see. I will omit a good cōpany of the sage
 and wise, which haue appayed the troubles of Citties, the inqui-
 etations of Palaces, the cries of Iudgement seates, the dissimu-
 lation & deceitfull flatteries of Court, the carefull griefs which
 the householder by governmēt of his house & family doth sustaine &
 feele, of purpose moze frāklly to retire to h^e study of sapience, which
 alone is able to make a man happy, & worthy to be partaker of the
 diuinity. But aboue al, I will prayse him which not subiect to the
 law lyueth neuertheless like him that is most thral thereunto, or
 without respect of bloude or frendship shall exercise Justice vpon
 his dearest & best beloved: as in olde tyme Manlius & Torquatus at
 Rome, h^e people of Athenes towards one Timagoras, who beyond
 the duty of the Ambassado^r of a frank citty, fel down on his knees
 & worshipped the Persian king. And in our tyme the Marquize of
 Ferrara, by doing to death his own son for adultery cōmitted wth
 his mother in Law. And yet Justice may sauour of some cruelty,
 which rather turneth to shame than praise: as Ihon Maria Visconte
 Duke of Milan, whē he caused a couetous prest to be buried quick
 wth h^e corps of him whō he had refused to bury wthout money, the
 hystory wherof is hereafter remēb^{red}. So as mediocrity of punish-
 mēt ought to be yoked wth the rigoz of law, for h^e mitigation therof.
 And beholde, wherefoze h^e great Dictator Iulius Cesar loued bet-
 ter to gayn h^e heart of his enemies wth mercy, than vanquish & bying
 thē to obediēce, with massy manacles & giues of Iron. Mozeouer
 in our age Alphonfus of Aragon (the true Sampler of a iust and
 Righteous Prince) d^{yd} not hee esteeme (when hee straghtly
 besieged Gaette) the Victory to be moze Glozyous and better
 gotten,

gotten, which is done by composition and gentleness. Upon the blous
 by conquest, colored with teares and blood of a poore simple peo-
 ple: And truly princes, & great lordes, specially they which newly
 (without succession receiued from their ancestors) arrive to the go-
 uernment of some commonwealth, ought continually to haue before
 their eyes, an honest severity for the holines of the law, and a graue
 mildenesse, to moderat the rigour of their duety. For by y^e meanes
 right is maintained, y^e heart of man is won, so wel as by violence: &
 the state of government taketh so good footing, as the winde of no
 sedition afterwards can remove the same, bringe founded vpon a
 sure stone, & framed vpon a rock durable for a long tyme. Where-
 of wee haue an example of fresh memory of a kinde act, full both of
 wisdom & of gentle severity, in a prince of our time, who with-
 out effusion of blood punished with rigor enough, a trespasse com-
 mitted, and sweetely remitted the payne vpon him, which merited
 grievous, nay mortall punishment, as at large you shall see by the
 discourse that followeth. Alexander de Medices, fauoured by the
 Church of Rome, and armed with the Papall standard) was hee
 that first with great activity and Wisdom inueyed the Senitory
 of Florence, immediately vsurping the name, title, & prerogative of
 Duke. The same albeit vpon the prime face, he was odious to the
 people of Florence, wroth for losing of their ancient liberty, & dis-
 pleasant to the Senatours and potentates, to see them selues de-
 priued of the souerainety of Iustice, and of the authority they had
 to command ouer all the Citizens, yet for all that was he indued
 with so good qualities, & gouerned so wel his principality, as that
 which at the beginning was termed Tyranny, was receiued as iust
 domination, & that which was supposed to be abused by force, seem-
 ed to be done as it were by lawfull succession. And they counted
 themselves happy (when they saw their lucke to bee such as their
 common wealth must needs obey the aduice & pleasure of one Prince
 aloner) to haue a soueraygn lord, so wise, so vertuous & so full of cur-
 tesie; and albeit in all other things he shewed himselfe praple wor-
 thy, noble, and of gentle kinde, yet in this he vanquished himselfe in
 himselfe, by that indifferent iustice, which made him wonderful de-
 nyng the same to none, & in no one toke shewed himselfe partial to
 any, wherby

any, which thought by hym to bee supported in their follies. And that which is more to bee wondred in him, and doth augment the prayse of his integrity in iudgement, was, that he punished in another the thyng, which hee ought to haue pardoned and remitted, hee hymselfe beinge attaynted wyth that dysease. But this good Duke applyed to Reason, to tyme, and to the Grauity of the fact and quality of the offended persones. For where the greatnesse of a deede surpasseth all occasion of pardon and mercie there the Prynce, Iudge, or Magistrate ought to dyspoyle and put of his sweetest affections, to apparell himselfe with rigor, whych reacheth the knyfe into the hand of the Ruler, of purpose that pryncely familiaritie, do not in ende rayse in the subjects hearte a contempt of superiours, and vnbeylded licence, lawlesse to liue at their pleasure. Now the thing which I meane to tell, consisteth in the prooue of a rare and exquisite Prynce, which seldome or neuer, harboureth in yong age, the heates whereof, can not but wth greate difficultie, feeble the coldnesse and correction of reason: And likewise the causes from whence wisdomes force procede, do rest in longe experience of things, whereby men waxe olde in ripenesse of witte, and their deedes become worthy of prayse. This Duke Alexander ordeed so wel his estates, and kepte such a goodly and plentifull Court, as the same gaue place to no Prynce of Italy, how great or rich so euer it was, which noble court he kept aswell for his owne garde & hono^r as to shew the naturall stoutnesse of his corage, not bling for all that any inselencie or vnseemely dealing agaynst the haynous and auncient enemies of his familie. Amongst his gallant troupe of Courtiers, which ordinarily attended, there was a Florentine gentleman, very neare the Duke, and the beste beeloued of them all. This yong Gentleman had a Maner hard by Florence, where he was very well & stately lodged, which caused him many times to forsake the City, wyth two of his companions, to recreate himselfe in that pleasant place. It chaunced vpon a time, he being in his fieldish house, besides the which there was a Myll, the matter of the sayd Myll had a passing fayre daughter, whom this Gentleman did well marke and beholde, and with hir beauty became straungely in loue, in whom also appeared some Noble port,
that excels

Alexander de Medices.

that exceeded the blood and race whereof he came. But what? The heauens be not to spare distributors of theſe gifts; but ſometimes they diuide them with the leaſt meaſure, and at ſome other times in equall weight or greateſt heape, to them that be of the baſeſt ſoyte and popular degree, ſo wel, as to the greateſt & of moſt noble race, Rome ſometimes hath ſeen a bondma & ſlaue, ſometimes a Rungates ſonne, for his wit and Courage to beare the Scepter in his hand, and to decide the cauſes of that loſty people, who by ſlepyghts and practiſes, aſpired the Emperre of the whole worlde. And he & within our fathers remembrance deſtreth to knowe what great Tamberlane of Tartarie was, the aſtoniſhment and ruine of al the Eaſt partes, ſhall well perceiue that his originall ſoyred from the bulgar ſoyte, and from the loweſt degree that was amongs all eſtates: whereby muſt be confeſſed, that the goodneſſe of nature is ſutch and ſo great, as ſhe will helpe hir nourice children (whaſſo they be,) the beſt ſhe can. Not that I meane to infer hereby, but & the blood of Predeceſſors, with the inſtitution of their Poſterity, much augmenteth the force of the ſpirit, & accompliſheth that more ſincerely whereunto nature hath giuen a beginninge. Now to com to our purpoſe, this yong Courtier, taken & chained in the bands of loue, ſettred and clogged wth the Beautie & good grace of that Countrey wench, forſought the meanes how he might inioy the thinge after which hee hoped. To loue hir he deemed it unworthe of his degree. And yet he knew hir to be ſutch (by report of many) as had a very good Wit, tongue at well, and which is more eſteemed, a Paragon and mirrour of chaſte life and modeſty. Which tormented this amorous *Mouſier* beyond meaſure, and yet chaunged not his affection, aſſuring himſelfe that at length he ſhould attayne the end, of his deſires, and glut that his vnſatiabie hunger, which preſſed him from day to day to gather the ſoote & ſauorous frute which Louers ſo egerly ſue for at maydens handes of ſeable age, who then was betweene. 16. and. 17. yeares. This Louer ded to vnderſtand to hys companions his grieve and frenſie, who ſore for the ſame, aſſayed by all meanes, to make him forget it, telling hym that it was unſeemely for a Gentleman of his accōpt, to make himſelfe a ſable to the people, which would come to paſſe if they

they knew how vnder discretely hee had placed hys loue: & that there were a number of fayre & honest gentlewomen moze to whom belovs conuenably & with greater contentation he might adressed the same. But he which much lesse saw, than blind loue himselfe that was his guid, & he that was moze bare of reason & aduice than the Poets fayre Cupido to be naked of apparell, would not harken to the good counsell, which hys companions gaue him, but rather sayd that it was lost time for them to vse such spech, for had rather dy, and endure all the mocks, & scoffs of the world, than lose the most delicate pray (in his mynde,) that could chaunce into the hands of man, adding mozeouer, that the humylenesse & rudenes of the country, had not so much annoyed his new beloued, but she deserued for hir beauty to be compared with the greatest Myrion & finest attyred gentlewoman of the City. For this mayden had but the ornamēt & mynionnesse which nature had enlarged, where other artificially force by trumperies, to vsurpe that which the heauens deny them. Touching hir vertue let it passe in silence, although that she (quod he sighinge) is to chaste & vertuous for one whom I would choose to delyt wal. My desire is not to make hir a Lucrece, or some of those ancient Matrones, which in elder peres builded the temple of womans Fortune at Rome. The companions of this louer seeing how he was bent, promysed him what they were able to doe, for accomplishment of his will, for the which he thanked the very heartely, offering like duty, where fortune should prepare the prooofe of their affliction & neede of his amorous seruice. In the meane time, conceiuing in his minde some new deuice, which so soone as he had found out was not able to be brought to passe, & knowing that the duke seldom would haue him out of his sight, began to inuent leys, doing hym to vnderstand that he had necessary occasion, for a certain time to remain & be at his country house. The duke which loued him, & who thought either he had some secret sickness, or els some wench which he was loth to discouer before his companions, gaue him leaue for a month, which so pleased this amorous Gentleman, as he lept for ioy, and was not able to rest 1. hour before he had found out his frends & companions, to mooue on horseback to visit hir that had vnder hir power & obsequie the best portio of him, which was his hart & his most secret thought.

Alexander de Medices,

thought. When he was come to his Countrey house, hee began to
stake abroad, and daunce a round about the Mill, where his belo-
ued did dwell, who was not so foolish, but by & by suspected where-
unto those goings and commings of the Pilgrim tended, and for
what pray he led his Dogs in leafe, and caused so many Nets and
Cords to be displayed by hunters of euery age & sexe, who to disco-
uer h Countrey, assayed by beating the Bushes, to take the Beastie
at forme. For which cause she also for hir part, began to fly h snares
of those Byrds, and the raunging of the Dogs that bented af-
ter hir, strayinge not from the house of the good man hir Father:
whereof this poore louer conceived great dispayre, not knowinge
by what meanes he might rouse the Game after which he hunted,
he finde the meanes to do hir vnderstand his playnts and vnmea-
sured grieffe of heart, the firme loue, and sincere mynde where-
with he was so earnestly bent, both to obay and loue hir aboue all
other. And that which most of all increased his payne, was, that of
so great a troupe of messages whych he had sent, with giftes and
promisses the better to atchieue his purpose, no one was able to
take place or force (neuer so little) the chastity of that sober and
modest mayde. It chaunced one day as this Gentleman was wal-
king a long a woode side newly felled, hard adioynning to his house,
by whych there was a cleare and goodly fountayne shadowed be-
twene two thick and lofty Maple trees, the Myllers Daughter
went thither for water, and as she had set downe hir payles vpon
h fountaine brink, hir Louer came vnto hir, litle thinking of such a
topful meeting, which he wel declared by these words: Praise be
God, h whē I hoped least of this good hap, he hath set me hither,
to see the onely substance of my toy. Then turninge his face to-
wards the mayden, sayd vnto hir. Is it true that thou art heere
(or do I dreame) and so neare to him that most desireth to grati-
fie thee in any thyng wherewyth it may please thee to commaunde
him? Wilt thou not haue pity vpon the paynes and griefs which
continually I indure for the extreme loue I beare thee? And say-
ing so, he would haue embraced hir. But the mayde which cared
no more for his flatteries, than before she did for his presents and
messages, seeing the same to tend to nothing else but to hir ruine &
great dis-

great dishonour, with frowne countenaunce, and by his liuely colour
 declaring the chaste and vertuous motion of his blood, sayd to this
 balliant Gentleman: How now say, do you thinke that the vilenesse
 of myne apparell, holdeth lesse vertue, than is vnder the rich and
 sumptuous Dynames of greatest Ladies? Do you suppose that
 my bringing vp hath bred in me such grosse blood, as for your on-
 ly pleasure, I shoulde corrupt the perfection of my minde, & blot
 the honour which hitherto so carefully I haue kept & religiously
 preserued? Be sure that sooner death shall seporate the soule from
 my body, than willingly I would suffer the ouerthrow & violatio-
 of my virginity. It is not the part of such a Gentleman as you
 be, thus to espy and subtilly pursue vs poore Countrey maydens
 to charme vs with your sleights and guilfull talks. It is not the
 duty of a Gentleman to subboorne such baunte curroys to disco-
 ur and put in perill, the honour of chaste maydens and honest
 Wives, as heretofore you haue done to me. It ought to suffice,
 that you haue receiued shame by repulse of your messengers, and
 not to come your selfe to bee partaker of their Confusion. And
 that is it, that ought to moue you sweete heart (answered he) to
 take pittie vpon my griefe, so playnly seeing that vnspayedly I doe
 loue you, and that my loue is so well planted, as rather had I suf-
 fer death, than occasion of least offence that may displease you. On-
 ly I beseech you, not to shew your selfe so cruel vnto him, who dis-
 dapning all other, hath made you so frank an offer both of himselfe
 and of al that he hath to commaund. The maide not greatly trusting
 his words, feared that he prolonged time to make his stay till his
 seruants came to steale him away. And therefore without further
 answer, she taking by his payles, and half running till she came
 nere the Wyll, escaped his hands, telling his father no part of that
 talk betwene them: who began already to doubt the treason, deu-
 sed by the Gentleman, agaynst the pudicity of his daughter, vnto
 whom he neuer disclosed his suspicion, were it that he knew him to
 be vertuous enough, & constant to resist the luring assaults of loue,
 or could see the imbecillity of our flesh, & the malice of himselfe, which
 daily aspireth things thereunto defended, and by lawes limited &
 prescribed, which lawes it ought not to exceede, & yet therof it with-

Alexander de Medices.

eth the abolishment. The Gentleman seeinge that the mayden had forsaken hym, and little esteemed hys amorous onser, outraged for loue, and chased wth choler spake these wordes to hymselfe. Th foolish and dastard louer, what didst thou meane when thou hadst hir so neere thee, in place so commodious, where thee durst not gape say thee? thou didst no better pursue hir? And what knowest thou if she came of purpose to ease thy payne and to finish the troublesome trauels? Surely I suppose she did so, but that shame and duty forced hir to vse those wordes, to make mee thinke, that lightly she would not bee overcome by persuasions. And put the case that it were not so, who coulde haue let mee to take by force that, whereunto willingly she would not accorde. But what is she to be reuenged of such an iniury? She is for conclusion the daughter of a Miller, and may make hir haunte, that she hath mocked a Gentleman, who beinge alone wth hir, and burninge wth loue, durst not staunch hys thirst (although full dry) so neere the fountayne. And by God (sayd he, rising from a greene banke neere the fountaynes side) if I dy therefore, I will haue it eether by loue or force. In this wicked and tyrannicall mynde, hee returned to hys place, where his companions seeing him so out of quiet, sayd vnto him: Is thys the guise of gentle minde, to abase it selfe to the pursute of so simple a Wench? Doe not you know the malice of that sexe, and the guiles wherewith those Serpents poyson men? Care you so little for a woman as she doth for you, & then will she embrace you and make much of you, whose only study is (which I beleue) to frame herselfe agaynst all that, for which humble sute is made. But admit, that women hath some qualitties to draw men to loue them, to honour & serue the, which if it so be truly that office & dutifull deuoyze ought to be employed in seruice of the, that be honourable & in sprite & iudgement of gentle kinde, which no doubt will counterwaile the merite of such a suter. And certesse I am of opinion that a man may vayneely consume a yere or two in pursute and seruice of this mealy Countrey wench, so well as addresse his loue in the obedience of some fayre & honest Gentlewoman: which courteously & with some fauour will recompence, the traualles of hir seruauant, where that rude & foolish gyple, by pryde will haunt &

looke a

looke a loſt, at the honoz done vnto hir, deſpiſe theym, whoſe woꝝ-
theneſſe ſhe knoweth not, and whom neyther ſhe noꝝ the beſt of her
ſeede, be worthy to ſerue in any reſpect: will you know then what
I thinke beſt, foꝝ you to do: myne aduice is then, that one of theſe
euenings, ſhe be truſſed by in a Waile & brought hither, oꝝ in ſome
place els where you thinke good, that you may enjoy at pleaſure ſhe
beauty of hir whom you do praife & wonder at ſo much. And af-
terwards let hir diſſemble if ſhe liſt, and make a Jewell of hir cha-
ſtity when ſhe hath not to triumph ouer you, by bearing away the
victory of your purſutes. Wh my good friend, aunſwered the deſpe-
rate louer, how rightly you touch the moſt dangerous place of all
my wound, and how ſoueraygne a ſalue & pleaſure you apply there-
vnto. I had thought truly to intreate you of ſhe, whereof euen now
you haue made the ouerture, but fearing to offend you, oꝝ to much
blurpe vpon your friendſhip, rather had I ſuffer a death continu-
all, than raple one point of offence, oꝝ diſcōrentation in them, which
ſo frankly haue offered to doe me pleaſure, whereof (by Gods aſſi-
ſtaunce) I hope to be acquitted with all duty & office of friendſhip.
Now reſteth it, to put in prooſe, the effect of your deuife, and that
ſo ſhortly as I can. In like manner you ſee that the terme of my
heere a bode, will ſhortly expire, and if wee be once at the Courte,
impoſſible it is foꝝ me to recouer ſo good occaſion, and peraduenture
ſhe will be married, oꝝ ſome other ſhal carry away the pray, after
which I haue beaten ſhe Buſh. The plot the of this maydis rape,
was] reſolued vpon, & the firſt eſpied occaſion taken. But the louer
which feared leaſt this heat of his companions would coole, ſolli-
cited them ſo much, as the execution was ordayned the following
night: which they did, not ſo much foꝝ the pleaſure of their friend,
to whom in ſutch aduentures they ought to deny all helpe, (ſith
friendſhip ought not to paſſe, *Sed vñq; ad aras*, a Pericles the Atheni-
an ſayd, ſo far as was ſufferable by the lawes of God) as foꝝ that
they wer of nature of the ſelf ſame traupe, which their paſſionate
cōpanion was, & would haue made no conſcience to enterpreſe the
ſame foꝝ themſelues, although the other had not tolde them his
affections. Theſe bee the fruites of vnrul'd Youth, wherein
only the Verdure and greenneſſe of the Age beareth grea-

Alexander de Medices.

rest sway, the will wherof reason can not restrayne, which sooner
 reclineth to the carnall part, than to that which tendeth to the ho-
 nest repast and contentment of the mynd. The next night, they thre
 accompanied with, v. or. vi. seruants (so honest as theyr masters)
 gaue the onset in armie and weapons well appoynted to defende
 and hurt, if any resistance were made, they myght be able to repell
 theyr aduersaries. Thus about two of the clocke in the night they
 came to the Hill, the Heauens hauing throwne theyr mantell ouer
 the vaporous earth, and drummed hir Face with theyr baple ob-
 scure and darke, and yet not sutch, but that the ayre was cloude
 cleere, and when no man doubted of so great offence, and of sutch
 vnhappie rape, they brake into the pooze Millers House, betwene
 whose armes they toke away his daughter deare, and almost dead
 for feare, piteously began to cry for help, defending herself so well
 as she could from those Theeves and Murderers. The desolate
 father ragging with no lesse fury then the Hircanian Tigre, when
 hir Faucons be kyled or taken away, ran first to one, and then to
 another, to slay them fro carping of hir away, for whom they came.
 In the end the amorous ravisher of his daughter sayd vnto hym:
 Father, Father, I adurle thee to get thee hence if thou loue thy
 life, for thy force is too weake to resist so many, the least of whome
 is able to coole this thy foolish heart and choler, for the whrch I
 would be for, for the great Loue I beare vnto thy daughter, who
 (I hope) before she depart my company, shall haue wherewith to be
 contented: and thou cause to pacifie this thine immoderate rage
 which in bayne thou palpest forth agaynst this troupe. Th false
 knaue and theefe, (sayd the honest poze man) it is thou then, which
 by thine infamous stithincse and insatiabie knauerye, doest disho-
 nor the commendable fame of my daughter, and by like meanes
 shoznest the hoped yeres of me hir pooze vnhappie father, loosinge
 through thy wickednesse, the staffe and stay of myne olde aged life.
 Thynekest thou Traytor that liuing till this day (for all my pouer-
 ty) in reputation of an honest Wen in myne olde Dayes, will be-
 come an vnshamefast vyle Minister and Chapman of my daugh-
 ters maidenhoode and virginitie: No knaue thinke not that I for-
 get the wrong receiued of thee, for which by some meanes or other,
I will

I will purchase lust reuenge vpon thee or thyne. The Gentleman
 caring little or nothing for the old mans wordes, hauing in hys
 hand his desired spoyle, commaunded his Men to marche before
 with the Hayden, leauing behind the poore olde Man which thun-
 dred against them a thousand bitter curses, threating and reu-
 ling them, by all the termes he could deuise, desirous (as I thinke)
 to haue them turne backe to kyll him. But therunto they gaue so
 little heede, as when he wylled them to leaue his daughter behende
 them: to whome the amorous courtier addressing himselfe, began
 to kysse hir, and assayed by all meanes with pleasaunt Wooordes
 and many swete promises to comfort hir: but the poore Wenche
 knowng full well, that they wente aboute to playe the Butchers
 with her Chastitee, and to commit Murder with the floure of
 hir Virginitie, began to cry so piteously with dolorous voice, as she
 would haue moued to compassion the hardest Hartes that euer
 were, excepte the Heart of hym which craued nothing more than
 the spoyle of that his sweetest Enemy. When the poore Wenche
 saw hir Vertue ready to be spoiled by one, who (not in Harpage
 torped) wente aboute to brolate and possesse the same, and knewe
 that afterwardees hee would haunte hymselfe for the Victoie of
 such a precious pryce, Alas (quod she) is it possible that the So-
 uerayne Iustyce of God can abyde a Myschiefe so greate and
 cursed, and that the Voyce of a poore Wretched afflicted, Mayde
 cannot be heard in the presence of the Myghty Lord aboue? Why
 may not I nowe rather suffer Deathe, than the Infamy whych I
 see to wander before myne Eyes? O the good olde Man my deare
 and louing Father, how farre better had it bene for thee to haue
 slayne mee with thy Dagger, betwene the Handes of these moste
 wicked Thecues, than to let mee goe to bee the praye of those my
 foes that seeke the spoyle of Vertue, and the blotte of thy reputa-
 tion. Ohappy a hundred hundred tymes bee ye, whych haue al-
 ready passed the ineuitable tract of Deathe when ye were in cradle,
 and I poore unhappy Wench no lesse blessed had I bene if perta-
 ker of your Joy, where now I rest alyue to feele the smarte and
 Anguish of that Deathe more egre to suppozt, than that whych des-
 updeth the body and soule. The Gentleman offended with those co-

Alexander de Medices.

playntes, beganne to threaten, that hee woulde make hir forget hir disordered behaitour, sayinge that shee must change an other tune, and that hir playnts were to no purpose amongst them which cared not, nor yet were bent to stay vpon hir Womanish teares Lamentations and cries. The poore Harden hearinge there resolution, and seeing that shee vanely dysparckled hir Voyce into the Ayre, began to holde hir peace, whych caused the Louer to speake vnto hir these wordes: And what my Wench: Dost thou thinke it straunge, that for the heate of loue I beate to thee that I should force such violence? Was it is not malice nor cuill will that causeth me to doe the same, it is loue whych cannot bee inclosed, but must needes breake forth to manifest his force. Ah that thou hadest felt, what I doe suffer and indure for loue of thee. I beleue then thou wouldest not bee so hard hearted, but haue put vpon the griefe whercof thou shouldest haue proued the vehemence. Whereunto the mayde answered nothinge but Teares and Syghes, wryning hir Armes and Handes, and sometymes makinge Warre vpon hir saye Haire. But all these feminine Waytinges nothinge moued thys Gallant, and lesse Remoued hys former desire to haue hir, which hee atcheued in despite of hir Teeth, so soone as hee arryued at his owne House. The remnant of the Night they lay together, where hee vsed hir with all such kinde of flatteringe and louinge Speech, as a Louer (of longe tyme) a Suter could deuise to do to hir, whom at length he dyd Possesse. Now, all these flatteringe follies tended onely to make hir his owne, to keepe hir in hys Countrey House for hys Pleasure. Shee that for hir Age (as before is sayd) was of condition Sage, and of gentle mynde, began subtilly to dissemble and sayne to take Pleasure in that which was to hir moze bitter than any Aloes or Woode of Myrrha, and moze agaynst hir heart than remembraunce of Death, whych still shee wryshed for remedy of hir grefe, and Voluntaryly woulde haue killed hir selfe lyke a Lucrece, if the feare of God, and dreadfull losse of Body, and Soule had not turned hir mynde, and also hoped in God that the Baufher should repaie the fault whych he committed, and beare the penaunce for his temerity, whercof she was no whit deceiued,

as ye

as yee shall perceyue, by that which presently doth follow.

Now whilest the Rautsher tooke his pleasure with his Rape, the miserable father made the Ayre to sound with his complaints, accusing fortune for letting the Whorish varlet so to passe, without doing him to feele the lustinesse of hys age, and the force that yet reasted in his furrowed face, and corple withered with length of yeares. In the end knowing that his playnes, curses, and desire were throwne forth in vaine, perceiving also his force unequal to deale with such an Enemy, and to get agayne by violence hys holme Daughter, or to recouer hir by that meanes where by she was taken away, he determined the next day to go and complaine to the Duke: and vpon that determination he layd him downe to sleepe vnder the trees, which toynd to the fountayne, where sometimes the Courtier had com nued with his daughter. And seeing that the Element began to shewe some splendent hue Interpaled with colouris of White, Yealow, and Red, Signes preceedinge the risinge of fresh Aurora, started from his sleepe, and tooke hys way to Florence whither he came, vpon the openinge of the Cittie Gates. Then going to the Pallace of the Duke, hee taried vntill he saw the Prynce goe forth to seruite. The good man seeing him of whom he attended to receyue succour, fauour, and iustice, began to freat, and rage for remembraunce of his receyued wronge, and was ashamed to see himself in place not accustomed: and although it grieved his heart with hardy speach to presume in presence of so many, yet the iust anger and desire of vengeance emboldned him so much, as kneeling vpon his knees before the Chastely of the Duke, aloud he spake these wordes: *Alas* (my Soueraigne Lord) if euer your grace had pity vpon a desolate man, full of dispayre, I humbly beseech the same that now you do regard the misery which on euery side assaileth me. Haue pity vpon the penury of that vnfortunate olde man agaynst whom one hath done such wrong, as I hope by force of your vertue and accustomed iustice, you wil not leaue a sin so detestable without deserved punishment, for respect of mischances that may issue where such wickednesse shalbe dissembled without due correction: Saying so, the great

Alexander de Medices.

teares ran downe his hory Bearde, and by reason of his interrupted sighes and continual sobbes, the panting of his stomack might easily haue bene perceiued all riueld for age, and Sunneburned with heate and continuall Countrey trauaile: and that which moued most the standers by, was the ruefull loke of the good old man who casting his lookes heare and there, beheld eche one with hys holowe and dolorous Eyes, in such wise as if he had not spoken any word, hys countenance would haue moued the Lords to haue compassion vpon his misery, and his teares were of such force, as the Duke which was a wyse man, and who measured thinges by reasons guide, prouided with wisdome, and foreseeinge not without timely iudgement, would know the cause whych made that mā so to make his plaint, and notwithstanding assailed (with what suspition I know not) would not haue him openly to tel hys tale, but leading him aside, he sayd vnto him: My frend, albeit that greuous faultes of great importance, ought grieuously and openly to be corrected, yet it chaunceth oftentimes, that he which in a heate & choler doth execution for the guylt, (although that lustly after hee hath disgessed his rage, at leasure hee repenteth his rigour and ouer sodaine feuerittis, offence being naturall in man) may sometyme where slaunder is not euident) by mild and mercifull meanes forget thesame without infringing or biolating the holy and still constitutions of Lawmakers. I speake thus mucht bicause my heart doeth throbbe that some of my house haue don some filthy faulte against thee or some of thine. Now I would not that they openly should be slaundered, and yet lesse pretend I to leaue theyr faultes unpunished, specially such as by whose offensue cryme the common peace is molested, wherein I desyre, that my People shoulde lyue. For which purpose God hath constituted Princes and Potestates as shepherdes and guides of hys flocke, to the ende that the Tyrannicall fury of the vicious, mighte not destroy, deuoure, and scatter the impotent flocke, of no valoure if it be forsaken and lefte forlozne by the mighty Armes of Principallities and Monarchyes. A singular modestly doubtlesse, and an incredible example of Clemence in hym, whome hys Cytizens thought to be a Tyrant and vniust vsurper of a free Segnoorye, who so

pynile

yfully, and with such familiarity, as the friend could wish of his
 companion, hearkened to the cause of the poore Countrey man, and
 moreover his modesty so great, as hee would it not to be knownen
 what fault it was, or else that the offenders shoulde publikely bee
 accused, offering for all that to be the reuenger of the wronge done
 vnto the poore, and the punisher of the iniury exercised agaynst
 the desolate, a worke certainly worthy of a true Chyrstian Prince,
 and which establissheth kingdomes decayed, conserueth those that
 be, rendring the Prince to be beloued of God, and feared of his
 Subiects. The poore olde man seeing the Duke in so good mynde,
 and that accordingly hee demaunded to know the wrong don vnto
 him, the Name of the factor, and that also he had promised him his
 help and ryghtfull correction due vnto the deserued fault, the good
 olde man I say conceyting courage, recited from poynt to poynte
 the whole discourse of the rape, and the violence done, vppon his
 poore vertuous Daughter, declaring besides the name and sur-
 name of those which accompanied the Gentleman, the authoz of
 that conspiracy, who (as we haue already sayd) was one that was
 in greatest fauor with the Duke: who notwithstanding the Loue
 that he bare to the accused, hearing the vnworthinesse of a deede so
 execrable, said: As God liueth this is a detestable facte, and well
 deserueth a sharpe, & cruell punishment: Notwithstanding freend
 take good heede that thou doe not mistake the same, by ac-
 cusing one for an other, for the Gentleman whome thou haste na-
 med to be the rauisher of thy daughter, is of all men deemed to bee
 very honest, and doe well assure thee that if I finde thee a lyer, thy
 heade shall answer for example to eche false accuser and' slaunderer
 in time to come. But if the matter be so true as thou hast sayd, I
 promise thee by my faith I beare to God, so wel to redresse thy wrong,
 as thou shalt haue cause to be throughly satisfied with my iustice.
 To whome the good olde man thus answered. My Lord the mat-
 ter is so true, as at this day hee keepeth my Daughter (like a com-
 mon strumpet) in his house. And if it please your highnesse to send
 thither, you shall know that I doe not falsely accuse or bitter lying
 wordes before you, my Lord and Prince, in presence of whom as
 before the mynistre and Aduocatenante of God, Man oughte not
 to

Alexander de Medices,

to speake but truly and religiously. Sith it is so, sayd the Duke get thee home to thy house where God willing I will be this day at dinner, but take hede vpon thy life, thou say nothing to any man what so euer he be: for the rest let me alone, I will prouide according to reason. The good man almost so glad for his good exploit, as the day before he was sorrowful for his loss, to fully went home to his homely house and Countrey Cabane, whych he caused to be made ready so wel as hee could, attending the coming of his desiruer, succor, support, and iudge, who when he had heard seruite, commaunded his Horse to be made ready: for (sayd he) I heare say there is a wilde Beare haunting hereby, so well lodged as is possible to see, wee will goe thither to wake hym from his sleepe and ease, and vse that pastime til our dinner be ready.

So departing from Florence, he rode straight vnto the Hill wher his dinner was prepared by hys Seruauntes. There he dined very soberly, and vsing fewe wordes vnto his company, sate still al perdue, musing vpon that he had to doe: For on the one side the grauitie of the facte moued him rigorously to chastise him which had committed the same. On the other side the loue which he bare him (mollifying his heart) made him change his minde, and to moderate his sentence. The Princes nunde, thus wandering betwene loue and rigor, one brought him worde that the Dogs had rousse the greatest Hart that euer he sawe: which newes pleased him very much, for by that meanes he sent away the multitude of his Gentlemen to follow the chase, retaining with him his moste familiar friends, and those that were of his priue and secrete counsel, whom he would be witnesses of that which he intended to doe, and calling his hoast to come before him, he sayd: My friend, thou trauersinge vs to the place whereof thyng Horneyge thou toldst me, that I may discharge my promise. The Courtiers wondred at those Wordes, ignorant wherunto the same were spoken: but the good Man whose Heart leapt for ioy, as already feelinge some greates Benefyte at Hand, and Honour prepared for the beautifyinge of hys House, seeinge the Duke on Horsebacke, ran besydes hym in steade of hys Lackey

Lackey, with whome the Prince held much pleasant talke all along the way as they wente together, but they had not gone farre, but the Gentleman the Raupher, with his Companions, vnderstanding that the Duke hunted there aboutes, came to doe hym reuerence: and his Fortune was such, as hee nor any of his frends perceiued the olde man: by meanes whereof they nothing suspected what did insue. For that cause the said Raupher said to his prince: My Lord, if fortune had so much fauored me, as I mighte haue knowen of your coming into these quarters, I would haue don my duettie to entertaine you, not as appertayneth to the greatnesse of your excellency, but according to the ability of the least, and yet the most obedient of your seruants. To whom the Duke dissembling his anger sayd: Sir, I dined heere hard by within my tents, not knowing that your house was so neare vs, but sith that I haue met you vpon your owne Marches and Confines, I will not goe hence before I see your lodging: for so farre as I can iudge by the outward parte of this goodly building, me thinkes my workman hath not forgotten any thing that should serue for the setting forth and ornament of this parte of the house, which for the quantity is one of the fairest plottes that I haue serue.

So appproching the Castell, the Duke lyghted to view the commodities of the place, and specially the image, for whych alone hee was departed from his City, whereof the Mayster of the House (vponke with the sodaine pleasure to see the Duke there) thought nothing. So descending into the base Court, they saw a Marble fountaine that discharged the water in foure greate gutters, receiued by foure naked Nymphes, and by them poured into Vessells, richely wrought with Damaskyne, where was an armed Knight, lying vnder an hygh and broade tree, that overshadowed the fountaine. And hard by, they espied a litle dooze whych shewed the way into so singular and well planted a Garden, as euer the delectous and pleasant Gardens were of Alcinoe: For in the same (besides the Artyficiall Workmanship, and ordinarie Trauell of the Gardener.) Nature produced foure fountaynes in the foure Corners, makinge the place and
playne

Alexander de Medices.

plaine of Garden equally parted in fouresquare foyme. Now these fountaynes watered all the fayre knots of the same, wythout any payne to the Gardener, except to open certayne little Conduits, whereby the water sprange & ran to what part he thought it needfull. I will heere leaue to speake of the Trees & fructes deu- ded in due foyme order, the Laberynthes subtilely & finely wrought the sweete Herbers yelding such contentation to the eye, as if the Duke had not respected the wrong done to the Millers daughter, the gentlenesse of the mayster of the house, and the Angularity of the place, perchaunce might haue made him forget himselfe within that little earthly Paradise. And to perfoyme the excellency of the Garden, the workinge hand & industry of man, holpen by the ben- efit of Nature, had formed within the Ground wherein were be- stowed a number of Antiquities, and wherein the immortal voice of an Echo answered their talke with a triple sounde in that pro- found and earthy place: which moued the Duke to call the Gen- tleman vnto him, vnto whom he said: If it bee so, that the rest of the house doe match wyth that whych I haue already seene, I am out of doubt it is one of the fayrest and most delectable houses that this day wythin the compasse of all Italy. Wherefore my frende, I pray thee that wee may see the whole, both for the contentation of our Mindes, and also that I may make some haunt that I haue seene the rarest and best furnished little House that is within the iurisdiction of Florence. The Gentleman bathed in ease and full of pleasure, seeinge that the Duke lyked so well his House, brought hym from chamber to chamber, which was enryched ey- ther with stately tapissarie of Turkey making, or with riche Ta- bles diuinely wrought, btenis so neate and fit, as the Duke coulde cast his eye vpon none of them, but he was drituen into an admiration and Wonder. And the further he went, the grea- ter hee sawe the increafe, and almost a Regeneration, or as I may say, a newe Wyth of rare thinges, which made the little- nesse of the Place moze Stately and wonderfull: Wherefore hee greatly esteemed hym in hys Wynde whych had deupled the Magnificence of such a Furnytur. After then that hee had viss-

he had visited the Portals, Galleries, Parlors, Chambers, Garrets, Wardrobes, Closets, and chiefest Homes of that house, they came into a Gallerie, which had a direct prospect vpon the Gardē, at the end wherof there was a chamber shut, ouer which such Antike and Imbossed worke, as it was marvell to behold, and vpon the garden side in like workmanship, yee mighte haue viewed a troupe of Nymphes (a long the side of a woode a diorning vpon a great Riuer) lying from an herd of Satires, that made as though they would haue ouerrunne them: a pleasure it was to see their gaping mouthes, they eyes fixed vpon the place where they clownd-footed pursuters were, and the countenance of them, which so well expressed they feare, as there wanted nothing but speache. Whereouer a better sight it was to beholde the Satire Bucks, with displayed throte, and they fingers pointing at the haile of those poore fearfull runawayes, as though they mocked they sodaine flight. Within a while after yee might haue scene Hercules lyinge a Bed with his wife, towards whom a Faunus came thinking to enioy the beauty and embracements of the sleeping dame. But sayre it was to see how that Strong Amphitrionian gaue him the mocke, and strained him so hard, as he thought his belly would burst. The Duke beholding as he thought, the fairest Chamber of the house so shut, by and by suspected the truth of the cause. For the Gentleman knowing the comming of the Duke, had withdrawn his woman into the same for that it was the most secreete of his house, and the furthest from all ordinary seruice. Vpon surmise the Duke demaunded: wherefore that Chamber was not opened so wel as the rest, I suppose the same to be your treasure house, (quod hee) and the storehouse of your most delicate things: Wee pray you let vs looke into it. My Lord (sayd the Gentleman) the place is so farre out of order, at this time to shew your grace. Whereouer I knowe not where the Keyes be, for this morning the keeper of my house is gone into the city, and I can not tell to whom hee hath deliuered them. The Duke which heard the end of his excuse, not accepting the same for the pryce which the Courtier would a thoughte to haue solde it, was sure then of that which before he did suspect. Wherefore with furious countenance he sayd vnto him: Goe to Goe

too, goe too, either with the key, or without the key, let this doore
 be opened, that I may see all thy secretes within. The raulther see-
 ing the Duke to be earnest, could not tell at the first face, of what
 Woode to make his arrowes. Hee stil a stomed, and was surpris-
 sed wth a newe feare. In the end notwithstanding, playinge the
 good fellowe, hee went vnto the Duke, in whose eare smilinge hee
 whispered (because he knew right well that the Duke was an in-
 different good companion, and loued so wel his neighbors wth
 as his owne:) And sayd: My Lord there is a pretie wenche within,
 whome I do keepe, and would not shewe hir to any tpying man but
 to you. That is the cause I aske (sayd the Duke) let vs see hir that
 I may geue iudgement of hir beauty, and tell you whither shee bee
 worth the keeping or nor. The mayster of the house opened h^{is} cham-
 ber doore, thinking to haue gained much, and supposed to insinuate
 himselfe the better into the fauor of the Duke, but immediatlye hee
 saw himselfe farre deceiued of his accompt. For the rauished and
 shamefast maiden comming forth of the Chamber with hir happe
 about hir eyes, and hir garments berent and torne, hir stomake and
 breast all naked and discouered, hir face and eyes all blubbered
 wth Teares, lyke a desperate woman threw hir selfe at the Prin-
 ces feete, crying out. Oh (my Lord) beholde h^{er}e, and haue pity v-
 pon the most vnfortunate Wenche of all moste wretched captiue
 Women, who shamefully and Trayterously hath bene abused and
 deflowred by him, whych impudently dareth to bring you into the
 place the wytnesse of hys abhominable and wicked Lye. The
 Duke seeing this sight, and hauing compassion vpon the Maiden,
 turned his face towardes the Gentleman and hys Companions
 which (by chance wer come thither, as the Duke was entred into
 the Gallerie) not with milde and pleasant countenance (as hee she-
 wed from the beginning, but with a looke so graue and seuer, as
 the hardiest of the company could not tell what to do, or what an-
 were to make hym. Upon them than began the ryghteous Prince
 to vomit his dyspleasure, sayinge: Is this the innobling of the
 Bloud whereof thou arte descended, to rauishe thy Neighbors
 and my subiectes Daughters, that duetyfully lye vnder mynt
 obsefance and protection? Dost thou thus abuse the familiaritie
 whych

wherh hitherto I haue shewed vnto thee? Thinkest thou that the
 Lawes be perueried together with the chaunge of the common
 Wealth of Florence? No I assure thee, for so long as the Soule
 shal abyde within my body, I will be he that shal pursue the wye-
 sed wyth all extremitie, and shall not indure the oppresyon of the
 poore, enough afflicted with their owne proper misery. O God could
 I haue thought that a Gentleman of my House, woulde haue bene
 so prodigall of his honour, as to soyle his Hands so filthily by ra-
 uishing of them which ought to be required, and to dishonour them
 in place where their Vertue ought to shine for generall example? I
 cannot tell what sayeth me from cutting those cursed Heades of
 yours from of your Shoulders like arrant Traytors and Thieves
 as you be. Get ye hence ye infamous villaynes and beastly Ruffi-
 ans, the troublers of your Nepphboys rest, and the spoylers of the
 fame of hir, that is moze worth than all ye together. Then spea-
 king to the Mayde hee sayd: Rise vp my wench, and once me repose
 thy comfort, for I promise the by the faith of a Gentleman, that I
 will do thee such reason, and vse thee so vpryghtly as bothe my
 Conscience shal be quieted, thou contented, and thine honour resto-
 red for the wrong and iniury wherh it hath receiued of these Gal-
 lantes, And by and by he commaunded the Miller to come before
 him, and all those whom he had brought wyth hym to assist his do-
 ings, before whom he caused to be brought both the rauished mai-
 den, and the condemned of the rape: vnto whom he said. This is
 the pray my friends that I sought after, wherh I haue takē with-
 out toyles, nets, or chaunting of the Dogs. Beholde, I pray you
 the Honoure wherh my Housholde Seruantets doe vnto my
 House, who ouerrunne the Symple Countrey People, and rau-
 ishe theyr Daughters betwene the Armes of theyr propre pa-
 rentes, who breake, beate downe, and ouerthrowe the Doores of
 theyr Houses, that vnder the Lawes of our City and ought to en-
 ioy lyke Pryuiledge of Libertye and Franchyse. If one
 respect (wherh I will not disclose) dyd not impeache and
 stay mee.

Alexander de Medices.

say mee, I would doe such cruell iustice vppon the offenders, as the posterity should make reporte thereof. Notwithstanding it shal suffice that they receiue this shame before you all, by seeing themselves banquished of a crime, which for expiation and reuenge, deserueth most shamefull death, and to receiue of mee for prooue of mercy, an vnderfuerd pardon of their fault, with condition neuertheless that thou (speaking to the Gentleman Banisher) shalt take this mayden to Wyfe: (for otherwise thou art not able to repayre the honour thou hast taken from hir) and shalt loue hir so dearsly, as fondly heere tofore she was beloued of thee to esteeme and loue hir so much, as if she were the very Sister of me the Duke of Florence, who commaundeth thee for the ransom and redemption of thy head, presently to marry hir. I will moreouer, and ordayne by reason of hir fathers pouerty, that for the wrong which he hath receiued of you three, that his daughter shall bee indowd with two thousand Crownes by him that marieth hir, & with a thousand of eether of the two other, to th'entent that if hir husband be (withour heire,) shee haue wherewith honestly to maintayne hir degree, & the honest port of hir house. And hereof I will that without delay a contract be made, and a publike instrument of good record inrolled, swearing once agayne before thee, that if I vnderstand, thou vse her otherwise, than a Wyfe ought to be of hir husband, I will deale such punishment and correction ouer thee, as all men in time to come shal take example. The Gentleman which expected no better meede than death, ioyfull of that sentence, fell downe prostrate before the Duke in signe of consent, and the lyke did his Companions. But the toy of the Miller and his daughter cannot be expressed, who extolled the vertue and iustice of their Prince vp into the heauens: to whom with such humillity they rendred hee humble thanks, as he would doe that saw himselfe in so great calamity, and brought to such dishonour as earli they were scene to be, by meanes of him that acknowledged one of them for his sonne, and the other for hir lawfull Spouse. Thus was this marriage consummat in presence of the Duke, with so great ioy, and content of all partes, as there was rage and trouble for the Kings of the Wynde. The Duke beinge returned to Florence, the Wynde

the Brute of this act incontinently was disparkled almost through
 out the Region of Italy, and this iudgement no lesse praysed, than
 the sentence which Kyng Salomon gaue vppon the Controuersie
 of the two Harlots for the liuing childe, which eether of them clai-
 med for hir owne. And for this cause was hee extolled about any
 other Prince or Lorde that in tymes passed did commaund or rule
 the Common wealth wethin the Countrey of Thuscane. In thes
 wyse that modesty made him worthy of the Principallity, which al-
 most against all ryght he had vsurped, and of a prayse which shall
 no lesse continue, than the Memory of man is able to extende the
 same from one generation to an other, and which those that be Co-
 uetous of the prayse of a Prince so vertuous, iust and modest, shal
 not cease to illustrate and gloriouly aduance him in open eui-
 dence, to the ende that hys like may exercise like things, or of grea-
 ter consequence, by not sufferinge venemous & vnprofitable hearbs
 to grow within the Garden of their Common wealth. Wethin the
 which, a little mildew or vntimely rayne, is able to marre and cor-
 rupt all the good Seedes and Plantes sown, and gristed there
 before. For commonly wicked Weedes and Bastard Impes take
 deeper roote than those that beare a good and sauorous
 fruite, for conseruation whereof, the diligent hus-
 bandman imployeth his labour through-
 out all the Seasones of the
 yeare.

(..)

S.

The

The Duchesse of Malfi:

The Infortunate marriage of a Gentleman, called *ANTONIO BOLOGNA*, wyth the Duchesse of *MALFI*, and the pitifull death of them both.

The XX ij. Nouell.



The greater Honor and authoritie men haue in this World, and the greater their estimation is, the more sensible and notorious are the fautes by them committed, and the greater is their slander. In lyke manner more difficult it is for that Man to tolerate and sustayne Fortune, which al the dayes of his life hath lyued at his ease, if by chaunce he fall into any great necessity than for hym which neuer felt but woe, mishap, and aduersity. Dyonisius the Tyrant of Scicilia, felt greater payne when he was expelled his Kingdome, than Milo did, beinge banished from Rome. For so much as the one was a Souerayne Lorde, the sonne of a Kinge, a Iusticiary on Earth, and the other but a simple Cittizen of a City, wherein the People had Lawes, and the Lawes of Magistrates were had in reuerence. So lyke wyse the fall of a high and lofty Tree, maketh greater noyse, than that which is low and little. High Towers, and stately Palaces of Princes bee seene further of, than the pooze Cabans, and homely Sheepeheardes Sheepecotes. The Wallis of lofty Citties more a loose doe Salute the Viewers of the same, than the simple Caues, which the Pooze doe digge belowe the Mountayne Rocks. Whetefore it behooueth the Noble, and such as haue charge

charge of Common wealth, to lye an honest Life, and beare their poore byright, that none haue cause to discourse vppon their wicked deedes and naughty life. And aboue all modesty ought to be kept by Women, w^ho in as their race, Noble birth, aucthority and name, maketh them moze famous, euen so their vertue, honesty, chastity, and continencie moze praysse worthy. And behouefull it is, that like as they wishe to be honoured aboue all other, so their life do make them worthy of that honour, without disgracing their name by deed or word, or blemishing that brightnesse which may commend the same. I greatly feare that all the Princely factes, the exploitres and conquests done by the Babylonian Queene Semiramis, neuer was recommended wth such praysse, as hir vice had thame, in records by those whic^h left remembrance of auncient acts. Thus I say, because a woman being as it were the Image of sweetenesse, curtesie and chastenesse, so soone as she steppeth out of the right tract, and abandoneth the sweete smel of hir duty and modesty, besides the denigratioⁿ of hir honour, thrusteth herselfe into infinite Troubles causeth ruine of such whych should be honoured and praysed: if Womens Allurementes solicited them not to folly. I will not heere Endeavour my selfe to seeke for examples of Samson, Salomon or other, which suffred themselves fondly to be abused by Women: and who by meane of them be tumbled into great faults, and haue incurred greater perils. Contentinge my selfe to recyte a right pitifull History done almost in our tyme, when the French vnder leadinge of that notable Capitayne Gaston de Foix, vanquished the force of Spayne and Naples at the Journey of Rauenna in the tyme of the French kynge called Leues the twelfth, who married the Lady Mary, Daughter to kynge Henry the seventh, and Sister to the Victorious Emperour of worthy memory kynge Henry the eighth, Wife (after the death of the said Leues) to the puissant Gentleman Charles, late Duke of Suffolke.

In the very tyme then was a Gentleman of Naples called Antonio Bologna, who hauing bin master of household to Fredericke of Aragon, so nymed king of Naples, after the French had expelled hys of Aragon out of that Citie, the said Bologna retired into

France,

France.

The Duchesse of Malfi.

France, and thereby recouered the goods, which they possessed in
 his countrey. The Gentleman besides that he was valiant of his
 person, a good man of Warre, and wel esteemed amongst the best
 had a passing number of good graces, which made him to beloued
 and cherished of euery wight: a for riding and maneing of great
 horse, he had not his fellow in Italy: he could also play exceedyng
 well and trim vpon the Lute, whose sayning voyce so wel agreed
 thereunto, that the most melancholike persons would forget their
 heauinesse, vpon hearing of his heauenty nops: and besides these
 qualitties, he was of personage comely, and of good proportion. To
 be short. Nature hauing traupled and dispoled his Treasure
 House for enriching of him, he had by Arte gotten that: which made
 him most happy and worthy of prayse, which was, the knowledge
 of good letters, wherein he was so well trayned, as by talke and
 dispute thereof, he made those to blush that were of that state and
 profession. Antonio Bologna hauing left Fredericke of Aragon in
 France, who expulsed out of Naples: was retired to King Lerne,
 went home to his house to lye at rest and to auoyd trouble, for
 getting the delicacies of Courtes and houses of great men, to be
 the only husband of his owne reueneue. But what? It is impos-
 sible to eschue that which the heauens haue determined vpon vs:
 or to shunne the unhappe which sermeth to follow vs, as it were
 naturally proceeding from our mothers Wombe: In such wise
 as many times, he which seemeth the wisest man, guided by misfor-
 tune, hasterh himself with slooping head to fall headlonge into his
 death and ruine. Euen so it chaunced to this Neapolitane Gen-
 tleman: for in the very same place where he attained his aduance-
 ment, he receiued also his diminution and decay, and by that house
 which preferred hym to what he had, he was depriued, both of his
 estate and life: the discourse whereof you shall vnderstande. I haue
 tolde you already, that this Gentleman was Master of the kinge
 of Naples household, and being a gentle person, a good Courtier,
 wel trayned vp, and wise for gouernment of himself in the Courte
 and in the seruice of Princes, the Duchesse of Malfi thought to in-
 treat him that he would serue hir, in that office which he serued
 King. This Duchesse was of the house of Aragon, and after to
 the

the Cardinall of Aragon, which then was a rich and puissant personage. Being reioyced, and perswaded, that Bologna was deuotedly affected to the house of Aragon, as one brought up there from a Child. Shee sent for him home to his House, and vpon her request vsed vnto him these, or like Wordes: Master Bologna, Sith your ill fortune, nay rather the vnhap of our whole House is such, as your good Lord and Master hath forgon his state and dignity, and that you therewithall haue lost a good Maister, without other recompence but the payre which every man giueth you for your good seruice, I haue thought good to intreate you to doe me the honor, as to take charge of the gouernment of my House, and to ble the same, as you did that of the King your maister. I know well that the office is to vnworthy for your calling: notwithstanding you be not ignorant what I am, and how neare to him in blood, to whom you haue bene a Seruaunte so faithfull and Loving: and albeit that I am no Queene, endued with greatest reuenue, yet with that litle porcyon I haue, I beare a Princely heart: and such as you by experience do knowe what I haue done, and dayle do to those which depart my seruice, recompensing them according to theyr paine and trauaile: magnificence is obserued, as well in the Courts of poore Princes, as in the stately Palaces of great Kings and monarches. I do remembre that I haue red of a certain noble gentleman, a Persian borne, called Ariobarzanes, who vsed great examples of curtesie and stoutnesse towards King Artaxerxes, wherewith the king wondred at his magnificence, & confessed himself to be vanquished: you shal take aduise of this request and in the meane time do thinke you will not refuse & same, as well for that my demand is iust, as also being assured, that our House and race is so well imprinted in your heart, as it is impossible that the memory thereof can be defaced. The gentleman hearingge that courteous demand of the Duchesse, knowing himselfe how deeply bound he was to the name of Aragon, and led by some unknowen monition to his great ill luck, answered hie in this wise: I would to god I were able, that with so good reason and equity, I were able to make the depaile of your commandment, as fullie you may require the same: wherfore for the bounden duty which I owe to the

Dj.

name and

The Duchesse of Malfi:

name and memorie of the house of Aragon, I make promise that I shall not only sustaine the travell, but also the danger of my life, daily to be offered for your service: but I feele in mynd I know not what, which commaundeth me to withdraw my selfe to Ioue alone at home within my private house, and to be content with that I have, forgoing the sumptuous charge of Princes houses, which I yet would be well liked of my self, were it not for the feare that you madame should be discontented with my refusall, and that you should conceive, that I disdaind your offered charge, or contempne your Court for respect of the great Office I bare in the Courte of the King, my Lord and Master. For I cannot receiue more honour, than to serue hir, which is the paragon of that stock and royal race. Therfore at all adventures I am resolu'd to obey your will, and humbly to satisfy the duety of the charge wherein it pleaseth you to employ me, more to pleasure you for auoiding of displeasure: the for desire I haue to Ioue an honorable life in the greatest Princes house of the world, although I am discharged from him in whose name resteth my comfort and only stay, thinking to haue liued a solitarie life, & to passe my yeres in rest, except it were in the poore abillity of my service to that house, wherunto I am bound continually to be a faithfull seruant. Thus Madams, you see me to be the readiest man of the world, to fulfill the request, and accomplishe such other seruice wherein it shall please you to employ me. The Duchesse thanked him very heartily, & gaue him charge of all hir household traine, commaunding ech person to do him such reuerence as to hir self, & to obey him as the chief of al hir family. This Lady was a widow, but a passing faire Gentlewoman, fine & very yong, hauing a yong sonne vnder hir guard & keeping, left by the deceased Duke hir husband, together with the Duchy, the inheritance of hir child. Now consider hir personage being such, her easie life and delicate bringing vp, and hir daily view, of the youthfull trade and manner of Courtiers life, whether she felt hir self prickt with any desire, which burned hir heart the more incessantly, as the flames were hidden and couert from the outward shew whereof she stayed hir self so well as shee could. But shee followeinge best aduise, rather esteemed the prooue of Marriage, than to burne with so private fire.

are, or to incurre the exchange of louers, as many vnthamefast
 strumpets do, which be rather giuen ouer, than satisfied with plea-
 sure of loue. And to say the trueth, they be not guided by wisdoms
 love, which suffer a maiden ripe for mariage to be long hurried
 as long wife long to liue in widowes state, what assurance so euer
 they make of their chaste and slayed life. For bookes be to full of
 such enterpyres, and houses stozed with examples of such stolne
 and secrete practises, as there neede no further prooofe for assur-
 ance of our cause, the daily experience maketh plaine and manifest.
 And a great folly it is to build the fantasies of chastitee amid the
 follies of worldly pleasures. I will not goe about to make those
 matters impossible, ne yet will iudge at large, but that there be som
 maidens and Wpues, which wiselpe can contelne themselves a-
 monge the troupe of amorous luters. But what the experience
 is very hard, and the prooofe no lesse dangerous, and perchaunce
 in a moment the mind of some perueried, which all their leuynge
 dayes haue closed thepp Cares from the Suite of those that haue
 made offer of louyng seruitce. And hereof we neede not run to for-
 rayne the stories, ne yet to seeke records that be auncient, As wee
 may see the daily effects of the lyke, practised in Noble houses, and
 Courtes of Kyngs and Princes. That this is true, Example of
 this fayre Duchesse, who was moued with that desyre which pat-
 rned others that bee of Flesh and Bone. This Lady waxed
 very weary of lying alone, and greiued hir hearte to be withoute
 a match, specially in the Nyght, when the secrete silence & darke-
 nisse of the same presented beefore the Eyes of hir mind, the I-
 mage of the Pleasure which she felt in the lyfe tyme of hir decea-
 sed Wyf and Husband, whereof now feeling hir selfe despyred,
 she felt a contynual Combat, and durst not attempte that which
 she desired most, but eschued the thing whereof hir Mynd loked
 best. Thus sayd shee, is it possible after the taste of the Value
 of honest obedience which the Wyfe oweth vnto hir Husband,
 that I should desyre to suffer the heat which burneth and al-
 tereth the married Wpnds of those that subou: themselves to
 loue. Can such attempt pierce the heart of me to become amo-
 rous by forgetting and Craying from the Remembrance of honest liue?

But what desire is this? I haue a certayne vnacquainted lust, yet very well knowe not what it is that moueth me, and to whom I shall bowe the spoyle thereof. I am truely more fond and foolishlye than euer Narcissus was, for there is neither shadow nor booke, by which I can well say my sight, nor yet simple Imagination of any worldly man, whereupon I can arrest the concept of my vnsayd heart, and the desires which prouoke my mynde Pygmalion loved once a Marble Piller, and I haue but one desire, the colour whereof is more pale than death. There is nothing which can geue the same so much as one spot of bermillion red. If I do discover these appetites to any wight, perhaps they will mock me for my laboz, and for all the beauty and Noble byrth that is in me, they will make no conscience to deeme me for their usling stock, & to solace themselves with rehersall of my fond conceits. But sith there is no enemy in the field, and that but simple suspicion doth assaile me. Why breake I not the same, & deface the entier remembrance of the lightnesse of my byrth. It appertayneth vnto me to shewe my selfe, as issued from the Noble house of Aragon. To me it doeth belonge to take heede how I erre or degenerate from the royall blood whereof I came. In this sort that sayre Apolow and young Princeesse fantasied in the night vppon the discourse of hir appetites. But when the day was come, seeing the great multitude of the Neapolitan Lords and Gentlemen that marched by and downe the City, eynging and beholdinge their best beloued, or vsing talke of loue with them whose seruauents they were, all that which she thought vpon in the night, vanished so sone as the flame of burned Straw, or the Powder of Canon shot, and purposed for any respect to liue no longer in that sort, but promised he conquest of some frend that was iolly and discrete. But the difficulty related in that she knew not, vpon whom to fixe hir loue, fearing to be slandered, and also that the light disposition and maner of most part of youth were to be suspected, in such loile as giuing ouer al them which baued vpon their Venetians, Turkey Dalfreis, and other Courtesers, alonge the City of Naples, she purposed to take repast of other Menison, then of that fond and wanton troupe. So hir misshap began already to spin the threede which choked the

choked the Ayre and Breath of his unhappie life. We haue heard
 before that Master Bologna was one of the wisest and most per-
 fect Gentlemen that the land of Naples by tyme brought forth, and
 for his Beauty, Propozition, Galanthee, Valiaunce, and good
 Grace, without comparison. His fauour was so sweete & pleasant,
 as they which kept him company, had somewhat to do to abstayne
 their affection. Who then could blame this sayre Princeesse, if
 (puffed wth desire of match, to remoue the richlish instigations
 of his waton flesh, and hauing in his presence a man so wise) shee
 did set his minde on him, or fantasy to marry him? would not that
 party for calming of his thirst and hunger, being set at table be-
 fore sundry sorts of delicate viands, ease his hunger? We thinke
 the person doth greatly forget himselfe, which hauing handfast vpon
 occasion, suffreth the same to banish and fly away, sith it is
 not known that she being bald behinde, hath no place to sease vpon
 when desire moueth vs to lay hold vpon her. Which was the cause
 that the Duchesse became extremely in loue with the master of his
 house. In such wise as before al men, she spared not to praise the
 great perfections of him, whome she desired to be altogether hers. And
 so she was inamored, & it was as possible to see by night to be holde
 of darknesse, as by Duchesse without the presence of his Bologna,
 or els by talke of words to set forth his praise, & continuall reme-
 mbrance of who (for that shee loued him as herselfe) was his onely
 mindes repast. The Gentleman that was full wise, and had at o-
 ther times felt the great force of the passion which proceedeth from
 extreme loue, immediatly did mark the countenance of the Du-
 chesse, and perceiued the same so neere, as vnfaignedly hee knew &
 very ardently the Lady was in loue with him: and albeit he sawe
 the inequality & difference betwene them both, she being so rich out
 of the royall blood, and himselfe of meaner calling, yet knowing
 loue to haue no respect to state or dignity, determined to follow his
 fortune, and to serue his which so louingly shewed his selfe to him.
 Then sodaynely repprouing his fond conceit, he sayd vnto himselfe:
 What folly is that I enterpryse, to the prejudice and pritt of mine
 honer and life? Dught the wisdom of a Gentleman to stray and
 wandre through the assaults of an appetite rising from sensuality, &
 that rea-

The Duchesse of Malfi.

that reason gien place to that which doeth participate with brute
beasts deprived of all reason by subduinge the minde to the affec-
tions of the body? No no, a vertuous man ought to let shine in him
selfe the force of the generosity of his minde. This is not to liue
according to the spirite, when pleasure shall make vs forget our
duty & safeguard of our Conscience. The reputation of a wise Ge-
ntleman resteth not only to be balliant, & skillfull in feates of armes,
or in service of the Noble: But needefall it is for him by discrea-
tion to make himselfe prayse worthy, and by vanquishinge of him-
selfe to open the gate to fame, whereby he may euerslastingly make
himselfe glorious to all Posterity. Loue pricketh and prouoketh
the spirite to do well, I do confesse, but that affection ought to be
addressed to some vertuous end, tending to marriage, for otherwise
that vnspotted Image shall be soyled with the villany of Beastly
pleasure. Alas sayd he, how easie it is to dispute, when the thing
is absent, which can both force and violently assaile the Bulwarke
of most constant hearts. I full well doe see the troth, and doe feele
the thing that is good, and knowe what behoueth mee to follow:
but when I view the perelous beauty of my Lady, hir graces, wis-
dome, behauiour and curtesie, when I see hir to cast so louinge an
eye vpon me, that she vseth so great familiarity, that she forgetteth
the greatnesse of hir house to abase herselfe for my respect: how is
it possible that I should be so foolish to dispise a duty so rare and
precious, and to set light by that which the Noblest would pursue
with all reuerence and deuorze? Shall I be so boorde of wisdom
to suffer the ponge Princesse, to see herselfe contempned of mee,
thereby to conuert hir loue to teares, by setting hir mynde vpon an
other, that shall seeke mine ouerthrow? Who knoweth not the fu-
ry of a woman? specially the Noble dame, by seeing herselfe despi-
sed? No, no, she loueth me, and I will be hir seruauant, and vse the
fortune proffered. Shal I be the first simple Gentleman that hath
married or loued a Princesse? Is it not moze honourable for mee
to settle my minde vpon a place so high, than vpon some simple
winch by whom I shall neyther attayne profit, or aduancement?
Baldouine of Flaunders, did not he a Noble enterprise when he saw

ried a

ried away Iudith the Daughter of the French King, as she was
passing vpon the Seas into England, to be married to the King
of that Countrey? I am neither Pirat nor Aduenturer, for the
Ladys loueth me. What wronge doe I then to any person by ren-
dinge loue agayne? Is not she at libertie? To whom ought shee
to make account of hir deedes and doinges, but to God alone
and to hir owne Conscience? I will loue hir, and care like affec-
tion for the loue which I know and see that shee beareth vnto me,
beinge assured that the same is directed to good ende, and that a
Woman so wise as she is, will not hazard the blemish of hir ho-
nor. Thus Bologna framed the plot for intertainment of the Du-
chesse (albeit hir loue already was fully bent vpon him) and for-
rified hym selfe agaynst all perillous mishap and chaunce that
might succede, as ordinarily you see that Louers conceiue all
things for their aduantage, and fantasie dreames agreeable to
their most desire, resemblinge the Mad and Bedlem persons
which haue before their eyes, the figured fables which cause
the conceyt of their fury, and slay themselves vpon the vision of
that, which most troubleth their offended Reason. On the other
side, the Duchesse was in no lesse care of hir Louer, the will of
whom was hid and secret, which more did bere and torment hir,
than the fire of loue that burned hir seruently. She could not tell
what way to hold, to do him vnderstand hir heart and affection.
She feared to discouer the same vnto hym, doubtinge eyther that
some fond and rigorous aunswere, or the reuealinge of hir minde
to hym, whose presence pleased hir more than all of the
men of the World. Alas sayd shee am I happed into so straunge
misery, that with mine owne mouth I must make request to him,
which with all humility ought to offer mee his seruice: Shall a
Ladys of such bloud as I am, be constrained to sue, where all o-
ther be required by importunate instance of their Suiter? Wh
loue, loue, what so euer he was that clothed thee with such puil-
saunce, I dare say he was the cruell enemy of mans freedom. It
is impossible that thou hadst the being in heauen, with the clemency
and curteous influence of the same, inuesteth man with better bene-
fits, than to suffer hir nurse children to be intreated with such rigor.

He lieth

The Duchesse of Malfi.

My selfe which sayth that Venus is the mother, for the sweetenes & good grace that resteth in that pitifull Goddesse, who taketh no pleasure to see louers perced with so egre traunples as that which afflicteth my heart. It was some fierce cogitation of Saturne, that brought thee forth, and sent thee into the worlde to breake the case of them which liue at rest without any passion or griefe. Pardon me Loue, if I blaspheme thy maiesty, for the stresse & endlesse grief wherein I am plunged, maketh me thus to roue at large, and the doubts which I conceiue, do take away the health and soundnesse of my mynde, the little experience in the schole causeth this amaze in me, to be sollicit with desire that countersayeth the duty, honor, and reputation of my state: the party whom I loue, is a Gentleman, vertuous, valiant, sage, and of good grace. In this there is no cause to blame Loue of blindnesse, for all the inequality of our houses, apparant vpon the first sight and shew of the same. But from whence I see Monarchs, Princes & great Lords, but from the naturall and common Masse of Earth, whereof other men do come? what maketh these differences betwene those that loue ech other, if not the sottish opinion which we conceiue of greatness, and preheminnence: as though naturall affections bee like to that ordained by the fantasie of men in their lawes extreme. And what greater right haue Princes to ioyne with a simple Gentlewoman, than I Princesse: to marry a Gentleman, & such as Anthonio Bologna is, in whom Heaue and Nature haue forgotten nothing to make him equall with them which march amongst the greatest. I thinke we be the dayly slaues of the fond & cruell fantasie of those Tyrants, which say they haue puissance ouer vs: and that straininge our will to their tyranny, we be still bound to the chaine like the Galley slaue. No, no, Bologna shall be my Husband, for of a freend I purpose to make my loyall & lawfull Husband, meaning thereby not to offend God & men together, & pretend to liue without offence of conscience, whereby my soule shal not be hindred for any thing I do, by marrying him whome I so craungely loue. I am sure not to be deceyued in loue. He loueth me so much or more as I do him, but he dareth not disclose his name, fearing to be refused & cast of shame. Thus 2. buited wills, & 2. hearts tied together with equal knot cannot

cannot chuse but bying forth fruites worthe of such society. Let men say what they list, I will doe none otherwise than my heade and mynd haue already framed. Semblably I neede not make account to any person for my fact, my body, and reputation bringe in full liberty and freedome. The bond of mariage made, shall couer the faulte whych Men woulde fynde, and leauyng myne estate, I shall do no wrong but to the greatnesse of my house, which maketh me amongs men right honorable. But these honours be nothing worth, where the Mynd is voyd of contentation, & wher the hearte pyckte forwarde by desire leaueth the Bodye and Mynde restlesse without quiet. Thus the Duchesse founded hir enterpryse, determining to marry hir household Chapler, seeking for occasion and time, meete for disclosing of the same, and albeit that a certayne naturall shamefastnesse, which of custome accompanieth Ladies, did close hir mouth, and made hir to deferre (for a certain time) the effect of hir resolved minde: Yet in the ende vanquished with loue and impatience, she was forced to bryake of silence, and to assure hir self in him, reflecting feare conceiued of shame, to make hir waye to pleasure, which she lusted more than mariage, & same seruyng hir, but for a Maske and couerture to hide hir follies & shamelesse lusts, for which she did the penaunce that hir folly deserued. For no colozable deue or deceyful trompety can serue the excuse of any notable wyckednesse. She then thzoughly perswaded in her intent, dreampyng and thinking of nought else, but vpon the embracement of hir Bologna, ended and determined hir conceits & pretended follies: and vpon a time sent for him by into hir chāber, as commonly she did for the affaires and matters of hir house, and taking him a side vnto a window, hauing prospect into a garden, she knew not how to begin hir talk: (for the heart being sealed, the minde troubled, and the witts out of course, the tongue fayled to do his office,) in such wise, as of long time she was vnable to speak one onely woord. He surprised with like affection, was more astonished by sceing the alteration of his Ladie. So the two Louers doode still like Images beholding one another, without any moving at all, vntill the Lady the hardiust of them bothe, as feelinge the most vehement and greatest greif, tooke Bologna by the hand, and

The Duchesse of Malfi.

and dissembling what she thought, bled this of such language: If any other besides your selfe (Gentlemā) should vnderstand & secret which now I purpose to disclose, I doubt what speech were necessary to colour, what I shall speake: But being assured of your discretion and wisdom, and with what perfection nature hath indued you, and Arte, hauing accomplished that in you, which nature did begin to worke, as one bred and brought vp in the royal court of the seconde Alphonse, of Ferdinando, and Frederick of Aragon my cousins, I will make no doubt at all to manifest to you the hidden secretes of my heart, being well perswaded that when you shall both heare and see my reasons, and talke the light which I bring forth for me, easily you may iudge that mine aduise cannot be other than true and reasonable. But if your conceits shall Grape from that which I determine, I shall be forced to thinke and saie that they which esteeme you wise and sage, and to be a man of good and ready witte, be maruelously deceiued. Notwithstanding my heart forgetteth that it is impossible for Master Bologna, to wandre so farre from equitie, but that by and by he will enter the lyes a discerne the White from Blacke, and the Wronge from that which is Iust and Righte. For so much as hitherto I neuer saw thinge done by you, which Preposterated or perueried the good iudgement that all the world esteemeth to shine in you, the same well manifested and declared by your tongue, the right iudge of the Mynde: you knowe and see how I am a Wydow through the Death of that Noble Gentleman of good remembrance, the Duke my Lord and husband: you be not ignorant also, that I haue lured and gouerned my self in such wise in my Widow state, as there is no man so hard and seuer of iudgement, that can blasfoum reproch of mee in that which appertayneth to the honestie and reputacion of such a Lady as I am, bearyng my pozt so righte, as my conscience yeldeth no remorse, supposinge that no Man hath wherewith to byte and accuse me Touchyng the order of the goods of the Duke my Sonne, I haue bled them with diligence and discretion, as besides the Duties, which I haue discharged Sithens the Death of my Lord: I haue purchased a goodly Manor in Calabria, and haue annexed the same to the Dukedome of his heire:

ant

and at this day doe not owe one peny to any creditor that lent money to the Duke, which he took vp to furnish the charges in the warres, which he sustayned in the seruice of the Kinges our soueraine Lords in the late warres for the Kingdome of Naples. I haue as I suppose by this meanes stopped the slanderous mouth and giuen cause vnto my sonne, during his life to accompt himself bound vnto his mother. Now hauing till this time liued for other, and made my selfe subiect more than Nature could beare, I am intended to chaunge both my life and condition. I haue till this time run, trauailed, and removed to the Castles and Lordes ships of the Dukedome to Naples and other places, being in mind to tary as I am a widow. But what new affayres and new coun- cel hath possesed my mynd I haue trauailed and payned my selfe enough, I haue to long abidden a widowes life, I am determined therefore to prouide a Husbande, who by louing me, shall hono- re cherysh me. according to the loue which I shall beare hym, and my desert. For to loue a man without marriage, God defend my hearte should euer thinke, and shal rather dye a hundred thousand deathea, than a desire so wicked should soyle my conscience, knowing well that a woman which setteth hir hono- re to sale, is lesse than nothing, and deserueth not the common ayre should breathe vpon hir, for all the reuerence that men do beare vnto them. I accuse no person, al- beit many noble women haue their foreheads marked, with the blame of dishonest life, and being hono- red of some, bee neuerthe- lesse the common fable of the Worlde. To the intente then that such myshapen happen not to me, and perceyuing my selfe vnable still thus to liue, being younge as I am, and (God bee thanked) neyther deformed nor yet paynted, I had rather bee the louing Wyfe of a simple feere, than the Concubine of a Kinge or greate Prince. And what is the myghty Monarche able to walke away the faulte of his Wyfe which hath abandoned him contrary to the duety and honestie which the vndefyled Bed requy- reth, no lesse then Princelies that whilom trespassed with those which were of baser stuffe than themselves. Messalina with hir im- periall robe could not so wel couer hir faults, but that the His- torians

The Duchesse of Malm.

Wang do defame hir with the name and title of a common woman.
Faustina the Wefe of the sage Monarch Marcus Aurelius, gayned
like reports by rendyng hir selfe to others pleasure, byfides hir
lawfull Spouse. To mary my selfe to one that is myne equall, it
is impossible, for so much as there is no Lorde in all this Coun-
trei meete for my degree, but is to olde of age, & rest being dead in
these later Warres. To mary a husband that yet is but a childe,
is folly extreme, for the incoueniencies which daily chaunce there-
by, and the equal intreaty that Ladies do receiue when they come to
age, when their nature waxeth cold, by reason whereof, imbrace-
ments be not so favourable, and their husbandes glutted with or-
dinary meate, vse to run in exchange. Wherefore I am resolu'd
without respite or delay, to choose some well qualittid and renou-
med Gentleman, that hath more vertue than richesse, that is of bet-
ter fame and hute, then of wealth and reuenue to the entent I
may make him my Lord, Spouse, and Husbande. For I cannot
employ my loue vpon treasure, which may bee taken away from
him, in whom richesse of the minde doth faile, and shall bee better
content to see an honest Gentleman with little liuing, to be praised
and commended of ech Degree for his good Deedes, than a rich
Carle, cursed and detested of all the World. This much I say,
and it is the summe of all my secretes, wherein I pray your coun-
sell and aduice. I know that some wil be offended with my choise,
and the Lords my Brothers, specially the Cardinall will thincke
it straunge, and receiue the same with ill Digestion, that much I
do shall I haue to bee agreed with them and to remoue the grife
they shall conceiue againe mee for this myne attempt: wherefore
I would the same should secretly be kept, vntill without peril and
dauager eether of my selfe or him, to whom I pretende to marry, I
may publish and manifest, not my loue but the marriage which I
hope in God shall soone bee consummate and accomplished with
one, to whom I doe loue better then my selfe, and who as I ful well
do know, doeth loue me better than his owne propre life. Nayster
Bologna, which till then hearkened to the Oratyon of the Duchesse
without mouing, feeling himselfe touched so neare, and hearinge
that this Lady had made hir approche for marriage, stode still a-
stonned,

astonished, his tongue not able to frame one word, onely satished a thousand Chimeras in the Ayre, and formed like number of imaginations in his minde, not able to coniecture what hee was, to whom the Duchesse had bowed his loue, and the possession of his beauty. He could not thinke that this toy was prepared for himselfe for that his Lady spake no word of him, and he lesse durst open his mouth, and yet was wel assured that she loued him beyond measure. For with standing knowing the sicklenesse and vnsstable heart of women, he sayd vnto himselfe that she would chaunge his mynde, for seeing him to be so great a Coward, as not to offer his seruice to a Lady by whom hee saw himselfe so many times both wantonly looked vpon, and intertayned with some secrelle more than familiar. The Duchesse which was a fine and subtile dame, seeing his friend rapt with the passion, and standing still vnmoveable through feare, pale and amazed, as if hee had bene accused and condemned to dye, knew by that Countenance and astonishment of Bologna, that she was perfectly beloued of him: And so meaning not to suffer him any longer to contynue in that amaze, he yet to further feare him, with dissembled and fained marriage of any other but with him, she tooke him by the hand, and beholding him with a wanton and luring eye, (in such sort as the curious Philosophers themselves would awake, if such a Lampe and Torch did burne within theyr Studies,) she sayde thus vnto him: Seignior Antonio, I pray you be of good cheere, and torment not your selfe for any thing that I haue sayd: I know well, and of long time haue perceyued what good and faithfull loue you beare mee, & with what affection you haue serued me, sithens you first came into my company. Thinke me not to bee so ignorant, but that I know full wel by outward signes, what secret thoughts be hid in the inner heart: and that coniectures many times do geue me true and certayne knowledge of concealed things. And am not so foolish to thinke you to be so vndiscrete but that you haue marked my Countenance and maner, and thereby haue knowen that I haue bene more affectioned to you, thanto any other: For that cause (sayde shee, strappinge him by the hand very iouingly, and with cheerefull colour in his face) I sware vnto you, and doe pro-

E.

mise.

The Duchesse of Malfi:

promise that if you thinke, meete it shalbe none other but your self
 whom I with hart and desire to take to husband and lawfull spouse
 beyng assured, so much of you, as the loue which so longe
 time hath ben hidde and couered in our hartes, shall appeare by
 so euident prooffe, as onely death shal end and vndo the same. The
 Gentleman hearing such sodain talke, and the assurance of that
 which he most wished for albeit he saw the daunger extreme wher-
 unto he launched himself by espousing this great Ladie, and the en-
 nimities he should get by entering such alliance: notwithstanding
 building vpon vaine hope, and thinking at length that the choler of
 the Aragon brother would passe a way if they vnderstood the ma-
 rriage, determined to pursue the purpose, and not to refuse y^e greate
 preferment, being so prodigally offered: for which cause hee answer-
 ed his Lady in this manner. If it were in my power madame, to
 bying to passe that, which I desire for your seruice by acknowl-
 edging the benefits & fauours which you depart vnto me, as my mind
 presenteth thanks for the same, I would thinke my self the happiest
 Gentleman that liueth, and you the best serued Pryncesse of the
 world. For one better beloued (I dare presume to say, and so long
 as I liue wil affirme) is not to be found. If till thys time I de-
 layed to open that which now I discover vnto you, I beseeche you
 Madame to impute it to the greatnesse of your estate, and to the du-
 ty of my calling and office in your house, being not seemely for a
 seruante to talk of such secrets with his Lady and mistresse. And
 truly the payne which I haue indured to hold my peace, and to
 hyde my grief, hath ben moze noysom to me than one hundred thou-
 sand like sorowes together, although it had bene lawfull to haue
 revealed them to some trusty friend: I do not deny madame, but of
 long time you did perceiue my follie and presumption, by addres-
 sing my minde so high, as to the Aragon blood, and to such a prin-
 cesse as you be. And who can beguile the eye of a Louer, specially
 of hir, whose Paragon for good minde, wisdom and gentleness
 is not? And I confesse to you brides, that I haue most euidently
 perceined how a certain loue hath lodged in your gracious heart,
 wherewith you bare me greater affection, than you dyd to any o-
 ther within the compasse of your family. But what Great Ladie
 hear, is

heartes be fraught with secretes and conceites of other effects than the Minds of simple Women, which caused me to hope for none other guard on of my loyal and faithful affection, than Death, and the same very short and, Such that little hope accompanied with great, nay rather extreme passion, is not able to giue sufficient force, both to suffer and to stablish my heart with constancie. Nowe for so much as of your motion, grace, curtesie and liberality the same is offered, and that it pleaseth you to accept me for yours, I humbly beseeche you to dispose of me not as husband, but of one which is, & shalbe your Seruant for euer, and such as is more ready to obey, than you to commaund. It resteth now Madame, to consider how, and in what wise our affaires are to be directed, that thynges being in assurance, you may so liue without perill and bruite of slanderous tongues, as your good fame & honest report may continue without spot or blemish.

Beholde the first Acte of this Tragedy, and the prouision of the fate which afterwarde sent them bothe to their graue, who immediatly gaue their mutual faith: and the houre was assigned the next day, that the late Princeesse should be in hir chamber alone, attended vpon with one onely Gentlewoman which had be brought vp with her from the cradle, and was made pitup to the heauy marriage of those two louers which was consummate in hir presence. And for the present time they passed the same in Words, for ratification whereof they went to bed together. But the pain in the end was greater than the pleasure, and had ben better for them bothe, yea and also for the third, that they had shewed themselves so wise in the deede, as discrete in keeping silence of that which was don. For albeit their marriage was secrete, and thereby politickely governed themselves in their selthes and robberies of Loue, and that Bologna more ofte helde the state of the Steward of the house by Wape, than of Lord of the same, and by Myghte supplied that place, yet in the ende, the thyng was perceived which they desired to bee closely kepte. And as it is impossible to tyll and culture a fertile Grounde, but that the same muste yelde some frugte, euen so the Duchesse after many pleasures

The Duchesse of Malfi:

pleasures (being ripe and plentiful) became with Child, which at the first assumed the married couple: neuertheless the same so well was provided for, as the first Childbed was kept secret, and none did know thereof. The Child was nourced in the Towne, and the father desired to haue him named Frederick, for remembrance of the parents of hys Wyfe. Howe fortune whych lieth in dayly waite & ambushment, & lyketh not that men should longe Loyter in Pleasure, and Pastetime, being enuious of such prosperitie, cramped to the Legges of our two Louers, as they must needs chaunge their Game, and learne some other practise: so much as the Duchesse beinge great with childe agayne, and deliuered of a Girl, the businesse of the same was not so secretly done, but that it was discouered. And it sufficed not that the brute was nosed through Naples, but that the sound flew further of. As eche man doth know that Rumor hath many mouthes, who wryth the multitude of hys Tongues, and Trumps, Proclameth in diuers and sundry places, the things which chaunce in all the Regions of the Earth. Euen so that bablinge foole, caried the newes of that second Childbed to the Eares of the Cardinall of Aragon the Duchesse Brother, being then at Rome. Think what Joy, and Pleasure the Aragon brothers had, by hearinge the report of their Sisters fact. I dare presume to say, that albeit they were extremely wroth wryth this happened Slander, and wryth that dishonest Fame which the Duchesse had gotten throughout Italy, yet farre greater was their sorrow and griefe, for that they did not know what hee was, that so curteously was allied to their house, and in their loue had increased their Ligneage. And therefore swelling wryth despise, and rapt wryth fury to see themselves so defamed by one of their Bloude, they purposed by all meanes whatsoeuer it cost them, to know the lucky Louer that had so well tilled the Duchesse their Sisters field. Thus desirous to remoue that shame from before their Eyes, & to bee reuenged of a wrong so notable, they sent Espials round about, and scouts to Naples, to view and spy the behaviour and talke of the Duchesse, to settle some certayne Iudgement of him, which heaリングly was become their Brother in lawe. The Duchesse Courte beinge in this
trou

in this trouble, shee dyd continually perceiue in his house, his bro-
thers men to marke his countenance, and to note those that came
thither to visite him, and to whom she vsed greatest familiaritie, be-
cause it is impossible but that the fire, although it be raked vnder
the ashes, must giue some heat. And albeit the two Louers vsed
eche others company, without shewing any Syme of their affec-
tion, yet they purposed to chaunge thei estate for a tyme, by yelding
truce to their pleasures: Vea, and although Bologna was a wise
and prouident personage, fearing to be surprised vpon the facte, or
that the Gentlewoman of the Chamber corrupted with money, or
forced by feare, should pronounce any matter to his hinderance or
disauantage, determined to absent himself from Naples, yet not so
sodainly but that he made the Duchesse his faithfull Lady & com-
panion partur of his intent. And as they were secretly in their cha-
ber together, he vsed these or such like wordes: Madame, albeit the
right good intent and vnsained conscience, is free from faulte, yet
the iudgement of men hath further relation to the exterior appa-
rance, than to Vertues force and innocency it self, as ignoraunt of
the secrets of the thought: and so in things that be well done, wee
must of necessity fall into the sentence of those, whom beastly affec-
tion rauisheth more, than ruled reason. You see the solempne watch
and garde whych the Seruaunts of the Lordes your Brothers
do within your house, and the suspition whych they haue conceiued
by reason of your second Childbed, and by what meanes they La-
bor truely to know how your affaires procede, and things do passe.
I feare not death where your seruice may be aduanced, but yet
herein the Maiden of your Chamber be not secrete, if she bee cor-
rupted, and if she keepe not close that which shee ought to doe, it is
not ignoraunt to you that it is the losse of my Lyfe, and shall dye
suspected to bee a Whoremonger and barlot, euen I, (I say) shal
inurre that Perill, whych a n your true and Lawfull Husband.
The separation chaunceth not by Iustyce or desert, sth the cause
is to ryghteous for vs: but rather your Brethren will procure my
Death, when I shall thinke the same in greatest assurance. If I
had to do but wth one or two, I would not chaunge the place, ne
march one step from Naples, but be assured, that a great band, and

The Duchesse of Malfi.

the same well armed will set vpon me, I pray you madame suffer me to retire for a time, for I am assured that when I am absent, they will neuer soile their hands or imbue their swordes in your Bloud. If I doubted any thing at all of Perill touching your owne person, I had rather a hundred hundred tymes die in your Company, than lyue to see you no more. But out of doubt I am, that if our affaires were discouered, and they knew you to be begottē with Chylde by me your safety would be prouided for where I should sustain the penaunce of the fact, committed without fault o: Anne. And therfore I am determined to goe from Naples, to order mine affaires, and to cause my Reuenue to be brought to the place of mine abode, and from thence to Ancona, vntyl it please God to mitigate the rage of your brethren, and recover their good wills for consent to our mariage. But I meane not to do or conclude any thing without your aduise, And if thys intente doe not like you, geue me Councell Madame, what I were best to doe, that both in Lyfe and Death you may knowe your faythfull seruant and louing Husband is ready to obey and please you.

This good Lady hearing hir husbands discourse, vncertayne what to do, wept bitterly, as well for grief to lose his presence, as for that she felt her self with childe the thirde time, The sighes and teares, the sobbes and heauy lookes, which she threwe forth vpon hir sorrowfull husband, gaue sufficient witness of hir payne and Grief. And if none had hard hir, I thinke her playntes would haue well expressed hir inward smarte of mynde. But like a wise Ladye seing the alleaged reasons of hir husbände, licensed him although agaynst hir minde, not wythout bitterance of these fewe Words, before hee went out of hir Chamber: Deare husband, if I were so well assured of the affectyon of my Brethren, as I am of my Wifes fidelity, I would entreat you not to leaue me alone: specialllye in the case I am, beinge wyth Chylde. But knowing that to be iust and true whych you haue sayde. I am content to force my will for a certayne tyme, that hereafter we may lyue at rest together, toyrnyng our selues in the Companye of our Chyliden and famylie, vnder of those troubles, whych
great

great Courts ordinarily beare within the compasse of their Palaces. Of one thing I must intreat you, that so often as you can by trusty messenger, you send me word and intelligence of your health and state, because the same shall bring vnto me greater pleasure & contentation, than the welfare of mine owne: and because also, vpon such occurrentes as shall chaunce, I may prouide for myne owne affaires, the surety of my self, and of our Children. In saying so, she embraced him very amozously, and he kissed her with so greatesorrow and grief of heart, as the soule was ready out of his Body to take her flight, sorrowful beyond measure so to leaue her whome he loued, for the great curtelles and honoz which hee had receiued at her hands. In the end, fearing that the Aragon espials would come and discerie them in those priuities, Bologna tooke his leaue, and bad his Lady and spouse Farewell.

And this was the second Acte of this Tragicall Historie, to see a fugitive husband secretly to marry, especially her, vpon whome hee ought not so much as to looke but with feare and reuerence. Behold here (O ye foolish louers) a Glasse of your lightnesse, and yee Women, the course of your fond behauour. It behoueth not the wife sodainly to execute their first motiōs and desyes of their heart for so much as they may be assured that pleasure is pursued so neare with a repentaunce so sharp to be suffered, and hard to be digested, as their voluptuousness shall bitterly discontent them.

True it is, that mariages be don in heauen and performed in earth but that saying may not be applied to fooles, which gouerne them selues by carnall desires, whose scope is but pleasure, and the reward many times equall to their follie. Shall I be of opiniō that a household seruauent oughte to sollicite, nay rather suborne the Daughter of his Lorde without punishment, or that a vyle and abiect Person dare to mount vpon a Princes Bed? No no. pollicpe requyreth order in all, and eche wight ought to bee matched according to theyr qualite, without makinge a Pastyme of it to couer theyr follies, and knowe not of what force Loue and Desire be, except the same be resisted. A goodly thinge it is to Loue, but where reason looseth place, Loue is withoute
C.4. his

The Duchesse of Malfi.

his effect, and the sequelle rage and Madnesse. Leave we to discourse of those which beleue that they be constrained to followe the Force of theyr Wynde, and may easilie subdue themselves to the Lawes of Vertue and Honesty, like one that thrusteth his Heade into a Sack, and thynkes he can not get out: such People do please themselves in theyr losse, and think all well that is noysome to their Health. daily following theyr owne delyghtes. Come we againe then to Sir Bologna, who after he had left his Wyfe in his Castell, went to Naples, and hauing leased a Rent vpon his lands, and leuyed a good summe of Money, he repayed to Ancona a city of the patrimonie of the Romane Church, whither hee carped the two Chylidzen, which he had of the Duchesse, causing them to be brought vp wth suche Diligence & care, as it is to be thought a Father well affected to his Wyfe would doe, and who delighted to see a Branch of the Tree, that to hym was the best beloued Fruct of the World. There he hired a House for his trayne, and for those that waited vpon his Wyfe, who in the meane tyme was in great care, and could not tell of what Woode to make his arrowes, perceyuing that his Belly began to swell, and grow to the tyme of his deliuary, seeing that from Day to Day, his Brothers seruants were at his back, boide of Counsel and aduise, if one euening he had not spoken to the Gentlewoman of his chamber, touching the doubts and perill wherein she was, nor knowing how she might be deliuered from the same. That maiden was gentle and of a good mind and stomake, and solied his mistresse very derely, and seeing him so amazed and tormenting his self to death, mynding to fray him no further, ne to repproue him of his fault which could not be amended, but rather to proude for the daunger wherunto she had hedlong cast his self, gaue him this aduise: How now Madame (sayd she,) is that Wisdom which from your Childehode hath ben so famliar in you, dislodged from your brest in time when it ought chiefly to rest for incountring of those mishaps that are comming vpon vs? Think you to auoid the dangers, by thus tormenting your self, except you set your Hands to the work thereby to geue the repulse to aduerser fortune? I haue heard you many tymes speake of the Constancie and Force of Wynde: whych ought

ought to shine in the bedes of Princesses, moze clerely than amōgs
those dames of baser house, and w^hych ought to make them ap-
peare like the sunne and the little starres. And yet I see you nowe
assonned, as though you had neuer forseene, that aduersity chaun-
ceth so wel to catch the great within his clouches, as the base and
simple sort. Is it but now, that you haue called to remembraunce
that wh^{ic}h might insue your mariage with Sr Bologna? Did hys
onely presence assure you against the waits of fortune, and was it
the thought of paines, feares and frights, wh^{ic}h now turnioleth
your dolorous mind? Dught you thus to bere your self, when nede
it is to think how to saue both your honoz, and the fruite w^{ithin}
your intrailles? If your sorow be so great ouer Sr Bologna, and
if you feare your childbed will be descried, wh^y seeke you not mea-
nes to attempt some voyage, for couering of the fact, to beguile the
eyes of them wh^{ic}h so diligently do watch you? Doth your Hearte
saile you in that matter? Whereof do you dreme? Wh^y sweat and
treat you before you make me answer? Ah sweete hearte (answered
the Duchesse), if thou feltest the payne wh^{ic}h I do suffer, thy ton-
gue would not be so mutch at w^{ill}, as thou shewest it now to bee
for repproofe of my small Constancie. I do sorow specially for the
causes wh^{ic}h thou alleagest, and aboue all, for that I know well,
that if my W^{er}thzen had neuer so litle intelligence of my beyng
with Chylde, I were vndone and my Lyfe at an end, and perad-
uenture pooze Wench, thou shouldest beare the penaunce for my
sinne. But what way can I take, that stil these Candelis may not
glue light, and I voided of the Trayne wh^{ic}h ought to wayghte
vpon my W^{er}thzen? I thinke if I should descend into Hell, they
would know, whither any shadowe there were in loue with me.
Now gesse if I should trauayle the Realme, or retire to any other
place, whither they would let me liue in peace? Nothyng lesse, for
suspect they would, that the cause of my departure proceeded of de-
sire to liue at liberty, to dallye w^{ith} hym, whom they Iudge to bee
other than my lawfull husbāde. And it may so be, that as they bee
Wicked and suspicious, so will they doubt of my beyng w^{ith}
Chylde and thereby shall I be farre moze infortunate by trauay-
ling, than here in miserie amōdde myne anguylhe: and you the resse
that

The Duchesse of Malfi.

that be keepers of my Countsell, fall into greater Danger;
 vpon whome no doubt they will bee reuenged: and kesse the-
 selues for your unhappie waiting and attendance vpon vs: Ma-
 dame sayd the bolde Maide, be not afraide, and followe mine ad-
 uise, for I hope that it shall be the meanes both to see your spouse,
 and to rid those troublesome verlets out of your House, and in like
 maner safely to deliuer you into good assurance. Say your mind
 quod the Ladye, for it may bee, that I will gouerne my self accor-
 ding to the same. Mine aduise is then, sayd the Gentlewoman, to
 let your Household vnderstand, that you made a Vowe to visite the
 Holy Temple of our Lady of Loretto, (a famous Pilgrimage
 in Italy) and that you commaund your Trayn to make themselves
 ready to waite vpon you for accomplisment of your deuotion, and
 from thence you shall take your Journey to sojourn at Ancona,
 whither before you goe hence, you shall send your Houseables and
 Plate, with such Moneye as you thinke necessarie for furni-
 shing of your Charges. And afterwards God will performe the
 rest, and through his holy merce will guide and direct al your af-
 faires. The Duchesse hearing the mayden speake her good aduise
 and amazed of her sodaine inuention, could not forbear to embrace
 and kesse hir, blessing the houre wherein she was borne, and that e-
 uer she chaunced into hir Companie, to whome afterwarde she
 sayd. My Wench, I had well determined to geue ouer myne
 estate and Noble porte, to fully to iue a simple Gentlewoman
 with my deare and welbeloued Husband, but I could not deuise
 how I should conueniently departe this Countrey without sus-
 pition of some folly: and sith that thou hast so well instructed mee
 for bynging that same to passe, I promise thee that so diligentely
 thy counsell shall be performed, as I see the same to be right good &
 necessary. For rather had I see my husband, beinge alone with-
 out title of Duchesse or great Lady, than to liue without him beau-
 tified with the graces and Names of Honor and preheminece.
 This deuised plot was no sone grounded, but she gaue order for
 execution of the same, and brought it to passe with such dexterity
 as the Ladye in lesse than fifti. Dayes had conueyed and sente the
 most part of hir Houseables, and specially the chiefeest and beste to
 Ancona,

Ancona, taking in the meane time hir way towards Loretto after she had bzuted hir solempne vow made for that Pilgrimage . It was not sufficient for this folysh Woman to take a Husband more to glint hir libidinous appetite, than for other occasion, except shee added to hir Anne an other excreable impietie, making holy places and dueties of deuotion, to be as it were the shadowes of hir folly. But let vs consider the force of Louers rage, which so soone as it hath sealed vpon the minds of men, we see how maruellous be the effects thereof, and with what straint and puissaunce that madnesse subdueth the wise and strongest worldlings. Who would thinke that a great Lady besides the abandoning hir estate, hir goodes & Chyld, would haue mispyssed hir honoz and reputation, to follow like a vagabond, a poze and simple Gentleman, and him besides that was the houlthold seruauant of hir Courte? And yet you see this great and mighty Duchesse trot and run after the Male, like a female Wolfe or Lionesse (when they goe to sault,) and forget the Noble bloud of Aragon whereof she was descended, to couple hir self almost with the simplest person of all the trimmest Gentlemen of Naples. But turne we not the example of follies, to bee a matter of consequence: for if one or two become bankrupt of thez honoz, it followeth not good Ladyes, that thez fact should serue for a matche to your deserts, and much lesse a patron for you to follow. These Hystories be not wyten to trayne and trap you to pursue the thousand thousand slippery sleights of Loues gallantry, but rather carefully to warne you to behold the semblable faultes, and to serue for a drugge to dyscharge the Popson which gnaweth and fretteth the integrytie and soundnesse of the soule. The wyse and skilfull Apothecary or compositor of drugges, dysfecteth Wipers flesh to purge the patient from hote corrupted bloud whych concepueth and engendzeth Leprosse within hys Body. In lyke manner, the fonde Loue and wycked rybauldry of Semiramis, Pasiphae, Messalina, Faustina, and Romilda is shewed in wyrt, that euery of you maye feare to bee numbzed and recorded amongs sutch common and dishonorable women. You Princes and great Lordz read the follies of Paris, the adulteries of Hercules, & Dainy

The Duchesse of Malfi.

deinty and effeminate life of Sardanapalus, the tyranny of Phalaris Busiris, or Dyonisius of Sicile, and see the Horre of Tiberius, Nero Caligula, Domitian, and Heliogabalus, and spare not to recompte them amongst our wanton pouthes which soile themselves villaines moze filthily than the swine do in the dirt. At this intendeth it an instruction for your youth to follow the infection & whose dome of those Monsters? Better it were all those boies were dyed in bottomlesse depth of seas, then christian life by their meannes should be corrupted: but the example of the Wicked is induced for to eschue and auoid them, as the life of the good and honest is remembred to frame and address our behauior in this world to be praise worthy and commended. Oherwise the holynesse of sacred writ should serue for an argument to the bawdy and luxurious to confirm and approue their beastly and licentious wickednesse. Come we againe then to our purpose: the good Pilgrime of Loretto went forth his voyage to atchieue his deuotions, by visiting the Saint for whose Reliques he was departed the Countrey of the Duke his sonne. When he had done his suffrages at Loretto, his people thought his voyage to be at an end, and that he would haue returned again into his Countrey. But he said vnto them: that forsomuch as he was so neare Ancona, being but .xv. miles off. he would not retyre but he had seen that auncient and goodly city, which diuers Emperors do greatly recommend, as wel for the pleasant seat therof. All were of his aduise, and went forward to the antiquities of Ancona, and he to renew the pleasures which he had before begon with his Bologna. who was aduertised of all his determination, resting now like a God, possessed with the Jewels and riches of the Duchesse, and had taken a fayre palace in the great Street of the City, by the gate whereof the traine of his Lady must passe. The Harbinger of the Duchesse posted before to take vp lodging for the train: but Bologna offered vnto him his Palace for the Lady. So Bologna which was already well beloued in Ancona, and newly entred Amitye and greates Acquaintaunce with the Gentlemen of the Cytie with a goodly Croupe of them, wente forth to meete his Wyfe

Wife, to whom he presented his house, and besought hir that she and hir Trayne would vouchsafe to lodge there. She receiued the same very thankfully, and with drew her selfe vnto his house, who conducted hir thither, not as a Husband, but like him that was hir humble and affectionate seruau^t. But what needeth greates discourse of Woozdes? The Duchesse knowing that it was impossible but eche man must be priuie to hir facts, and know what secretes hath passed betwene hir and hir Husband, to the ende that no other opinion of hir Childebed should bee conceyued, but that which was good and honest, and done sⁱn^ce the accomplishment of the Marriage, the Morrow after hir arryual to Ancona, assembled all her Trayne in the Hall, of purpose no longer to keepe close that Sir Bologna was hir Husb^{an}de, and that already shee had had two Chyl^dren by him, and agayne was great with childe, with a thir^d. And when they were come together after dinner, in that presence of hir Husb^{an}de, shee vsed vnto them these Woozdes: Gentlemen, and al ye my trusty and louyng Seruantes, hege tyme it is to manifest to euery of you, the thing which hath ben done befoze the Face, and in the presence of hym who knoweth the most obscure and hydden secrets of our thoughts. And needefull it is not to keepe silent that which is neyther euill done ne hurtfull to any person: If things myght be kept secretes and kept remaine vnknownen, except they were declared by the doers of them, yet would not I commit the wrong in conceal^yng that, which to discouer vnto you doth greatly delite me, and deliuereth my mind from exceeding grief, in sutch wise as if the flames of my desire could breake out with sutch violence, as the fire hath taken heate withⁱn my mind, ye should see the smoke mount vp with greater smoulder than that which the mount Gibel doeth vomit forth at certayne seasons of the yeare. And to the intent I may not keepe you long in this suspect, this secret fire withⁱn my Heart, and that which I shal cause to flame in op^en app^er, is a certain opinion which I conceiue for a marriage by me made certain yeares past, at what tyme I chose and wedded a husband to my fantasie and liking desirous no longer to lue in Widow state, being vnwilling to do the thing that should preiudice and hurt my conscience: The same is done, and yet in one thing I haue offended, which is by long keep^yng

The Duchesse of Malfi.

Being secrete the performed marriage: for the wicked haine disappeared through the realme by reason of my childbed, one yeare past, hath displeased some howbeit my conscience receiveth comforte, for that the same is free from fault or blot. Now shall ye know therefore what he is, whom I acknowledg for my Lord and spouse, and who it is that lawfully hath me espoused in the presence of this gentlewoman here present, which is the witness of our Nuptials and accorde of marriage. This gentleman also Antonio Bologna, is he to whom I have sworn and given my faith, and hee againe to mee hath ingaged his. He it is whom I accompt for my spouse and husband, (and with whome henceforth) I meane to rest and continue. In consideration whereof, if there be any heere amongst you all, that shal mislike of my choyse, and is willing to waite vpon my sonne the Duke, I meane not to let them of their intent, prayinge them faithfully to serue him, and to be careful of his person, and to be vnto him so honest and loyall, as they haue bene to me so longe as I was their mistresse. But if any of you desire still to make your abode wth me, to be partakers of my Wealth and woe, I will so entertayne them as they shall haue good cause to be contented, if not let the departe hence to Malfi, the steward shal prouide for the according to their degree: for touching my self I do mind no more to be termed an Infamous Duchesse: rather would I be honored wth the Title of a simple Gentlewoman, or wth that estate whych shee can haue that hath an honest husband, and wth whom she holderth faithfully and loyall company, than reuerenced with the glory of a Princess, subiect to the despite of slanderous tongues. Ye know (said she to Bologna) what hath passed betwene vs, and God is the witness of the integrity of my Conscience, wherefore I pray you bring forth our Children, that eche shal may beholde the fructes, rayled of our aliance. Hauynge spoken those wordes, and the Children broughte forth into the Hall, all the Company stood still so astonied wth that newe successe and tale, as though hornes sodainly had started forth their heads, and rested vnmoueable and amazed, like the great marbie pillar of Rome called Pasquile, for so much as they neuer thought, he consecretured by Bologna was the successor of the Duke of Malfi in his marriage bed.

This

This was the preparatiue of the Catastrophe and bloudy end of this Tragedie. For of all the Duchesse seruants, there was not one that was willing to continue with thei sunctent mistresse, who with the faithfull maiden of hir chamber remained at Ancona, enjoying the ioyful embracements of hir Husbande, in all such Pleasure and Delights as they doe, which hauing lyued in fear, be set at libertie, and out of al suspition, plunged in a sea of ioy, and sitting in the quiet calme of al passetime, where Bologna had none other care, but how to please his best beloued, and she studied nothing else but how to loue and obey him, as the wyfe ought to doe hir Husband. But this fayre Weather lasted not longe, for as the Joies of men do not long endure but wast in litle tyme, So bee the delights of louers lesse firme and stedfast, and passe away almost in one moment of an houre. Now the seruants of the Duchesse which wer retired, and durst tary no longer with hir, fearing the fury of the Cardinal of Aragon brother to the Lady, the verie Day they departed from Ancona, deuised amongs themselves that one of them should ride in post to Rome, to aduertise the Cardinal of the Ladyses maryage, to the intente that the Aragon Brethren myght conceiue no cause to seke reuenge of thei dysloyalty. That determination speedily was accomplished, one posting towardes Rome, and the rest galloping to the countrey Castels of the duke. These newes reported to the Cardinal and his Brother, it may bee coniectured how greuously they toke thesame, and that they were not able to digest them with modestie, the pongest of the brethren, palped forth a Thousand Curses ann despytes, agaynst the simple sexe of Womankind. He saide the Prince (transported with choler, and driuen into deadly furie) what law is able to punish or restrayne the folgh indiscretion of a Woman, that yeldeth hir self to hir own desires: What shame is able to bydle and with drawe a Woman from hir mind and madnesse? Or with what fear is it possible to snaffle them from execution of thei filthynesse. Ther is no beast be he neuer so wilde, but man sometime may tame, and bring to his lure and order. The force and diligence of Man is able to make Wyde the Stronge and Proude, and so ouertake the swiftest Beast and Foule, or otherwyle to attayne the hyghest
and

The Duchesse of Malfi.

highest and deepest things of the world: but this incarnate diuellish
beast the Woman, no force can subdue hir, no swiftnesse can
approch hir mobetytie, no good mind is able to preuent hir sleightes
and deceites, they seeme to bee procreated and borne againste
all order of Nature, and to liue withoute Lawe, which
gouerneth al other things indued with some reason and vnderstan-
ding. But howe great abhominacion is this, that a Gentlewoman
of such a house as ours is, hath forgotten hir estate, and the great-
nesse of hir deceased husband, with the hope of the toward younge
of the Duke hir sonne and our Nephew. Oh false and vile hyrch, I
swear by the almighty God and by his blessed wounds, that if I
can catch thee, and that wicked knaue thy chosen mate, I wil pepe-
re both such a woofull galliard, as in your embraces ye neuer
felt like ioy and mirth. I wil make ye daunce such a bloudy bar-
genet, as your whorish heate for euer shall be cooled.

What abuse haue they committed vnder title of mariage, which
was so secretly don, as their children do witnesse their Lecherous
Ioue, but they promise of faith was made in open ayre, and serueth
for a cloke and bisarde of their most filthy whozedom. And what if
mariage was concluded, be we of so litle respect, as the carib beast
could not vouchsafe to aduertise vs of hir entent? Or is Bologna a
man worthy to be allied or mingled with the roial blood of Aragon
& Castille? No no, be he neuer so good a gentlemā, his race agreeth
not to kingly state. But I make to god a vow, that neuer will I
take one sound & restful slepe, vntill I haue dispatched this infamous
fact from our blood, & that this cattif whozenger be vyled according

to his desert. The Cardinal also was out of quiet, grinding his
teeth together, chattering forth of his Spanish mosel Jack an Asses
Pater noster, promising no better vsage to their Bologna than his
ponger brother did. And the better to intrap the both (without fur-
ther sturre for that time) they sent to the Lord Gismondo Gonza-
go the Cardinal of Mantua than Legate for Pope Iulius the se-
cond at Ancona, at whose hands they entoyed such friendship, as
Bologna and all his familie were commassaded speedily to auoid the
City. But for al that this Legat was able to do, of long time he could
not preuaile, Bologna had so greates intelligence wythin Ancona

Peuerthelesse

Nevertheless whyles hee deferred his departure, hee caused the
 most part of his trayne, his Children and goods to be conveyed
 to Siena, an aunient Citie of Thoscane, which for the state and li-
 berties, had lōg time bin at warres with the Florentines, in such
 wise as the very same day that newes came to Bologna that hee
 should depart the Citie within 15. daies, hee was ready, and
 mounted on horseback to take hys flight to Siena, which brake for
 sorrow the hearts of the Aragon brethren, seeinge that they were
 deceived, and frustrate of their intent, bicause they purposed by
 the way to apprehend Bologna, and to cut him in peeces. But
 what? The tyme of his hard lucke was not yet expired, so they
 marche from Ancona, serued not for the Theatre of those two in-
 fortunate louers ouerthrow, who certaine moneths liued in peace
 in Thoscane. The Cardinall night no day did sleepe, & his Bro-
 ther still did waite to perforce hys othe of reuenge. And seeinge
 their Ennemy out of feare, they dispatched a Post to Alfonso
 Castruccio, the Cardinall of Siena, to entreat the Loyd Borgliese,
 cheefe of the Signiory there, that their Syster, and Bologna
 should be banished the Countrey, and limits of that Citie, which
 with small suite was brought to passe. These two infortunats,
 Husband, and Wife, were chased from all places, and so unlucke
 as whilom Achaus was when he was accursed, or Oedipus, af-
 ter his Fathers death, and incestuous marriage with his mother,
 uncertayne to what Sainct to bow themselves, and to what place
 to take their flight. In the ende they determined to goe to Venice,
 but first to Ramagna, there to imbarke themselves for to rettye in
 sault to the Citie, environned with the Sea Adriaticum, the ri-
 chest in Europa. But the poore soules made their reconinge there
 without their hoare, saylinge halfe the pryce of their banket. For
 being vppon the Territory of Forly, one of the trayne a farre of,
 did see a troupe of horsemen galloping towarde their company,
 which by their countenance shewed no signe of peace or amity at
 all, whych made them consider that it was some ambush of theyr
 Ennemies. The Neapolitan Gentleman seeing the onfet bendinge
 vppon them, began to feare death, not for that hee cared at all for
 his mishap, and ruine, but his heart began to cleaue for heautnesse

The Duchesse of Malfi,

to let his Wyfe and little Chyldezen ready to bee murdered, and
 serue for the pastetime of the Aragon Brethrens eyes, for whose
 sakes he knew hymselfe already predestinate to dy, and that for de-
 spite of him, and to accelerate his death by the overthrow of hys
 Wyfe & Chyldezen, he was assured that they woulde dispatch them
 all before his face & presence. But what is there to be done, where
 counsell & meanes to escape do faile? Full of teares therefore, as
 astonishment and feare, he expected death so cruell as a man could de-
 uise, & was already determined to suffer the same with good cou-
 rage, for any thing that h^e Duchesse could say vnto him. He might
 well haue saued himselfe & his eldest sonne by flight, being both wel
 mounted vpon two good Turkey hories, which ran so fast, as the
 quarrel out of a Crossbow. But he loued to murther his wyfe & chil-
 dzen, & would kepe them company both in lyfe & death. In th'ende
 the good Lady sayd vnto him: Sir for all the toyces and pleasures
 which you can do me, for Gods sake saue your selfe & the litle In-
 fant next you, who can well indure the galloping of the horse. For
 sure I am, that you being out of our company, we shall not nerde
 to feare any hurt. But if you do tary, you will be h^e cause of the ru-
 tine & overthrow of vs all, & we shall receiue thereby no profit or ad-
 uantage: take this purse therefore, & saue your self, attending bet-
 ter fortune in time to come. The pooer gentleman Bologna know-
 ing that his wife had pronounced reason, and fearing that it was
 impossible from that time forth that she or hir Traiue could escape
 their hands, taking leaue of hir, and kissing his chyldezen not for-
 getting the money which she offered vnto him, willed his seruants
 to saue themselves by such meanes as they thought best. So gi-
 uing spurs vnto his horse, he began to fly awayne, and his eldest
 sonne seeing his father gone, began to followe in like sort. And so
 for that time they two were saued by breaking of the intended ill
 lucke lyke to light vpon them. And where he thought to rescue him-
 selfe at Venice, he turned another way, and by great Iourneys ar-
 rived at Millan. In the meane time the horyemen were approached
 neere the Duchesse, who seeing that Bologna had saued himselfe,
 very courttrously began to speake vnto the Lady, were it that the
 Aragon Brethren had geuen them that charge, or feared that the

Lady

Lady would trouble them with hir importunate Cries, and Lamentations. One therefore amongst the Troupe sayde thus vnto hir: *W*adams, we be commaunded by the Lordes your brethren, to conduct you home vnto your house, that you may receiue agayns the Gouernment of the Duchy, and the order of the Duke your Sonne, and be maruell very much at your folly, for giuing your selfe thus to wander the Countrey after a man of so smal reputation as Bologna is, who when he had glutted his insatiable Lecherous minde with the comelines of your noble Personage, wil despoile you of your goods and honour, and then take his Legs into some straung countrey. The simple Lady, albeit grieuous it was vnto hir to heare such speech of hir husband, yet helde hir peace & dissembled what she thought, glad and wel contented with the curtelie done vnto hir, fearinge before that they came to kill hir and thought hirselfe already discharged, hopinge vpon their courteous Dealinges, that she, and hir Chylde from that tyme forth should lyue in good assurance. But she was greatly deceived, and knewe within short space after, the good will that hir Brethren bare hir. For so soone as these Gallants had conducted hir into the kyngdome of Naples, to one of the Castells of hir sonne, she was committed to prison with hir chylde, and she also that was the secretary of hir importunate marriage. Till this time Fortune was contented to proceede with indifferent quiet agaynst those Louers, but henceforth yee shall heare the Issue of the little prosperous loue, and how pleasure hauing blinded them, neuer forsooke them vntill it had giuen them the ouerthrow.

It booteth not heere to recite any Fables of Heliothes, contenting my selfe that fables do reade without to many weeping teares, the pittifull end of that miserable princesse, who seeinge hir selfe a Prisoner in the company of hir little chylde & welbeloued Wadams, patiently liued in hope to see hir Brethren appayled, comforting hir selfe for the escape of hir husband out of the hands of his mortal foes. But hir assurance was chanced into an horrible feare & hir hope to no expectation of surety, when certayne dayes after hir imprisonment, hir Goueler came in, & sayde vnto hir: *W*adams I do aduise you henceforth to consider and examine your Conscience, for so much as I suppose that euen this very day your

Life ſhall be taken from you. I leave for you to thinke what hoz-
 rour, and traunce aſſailed the feeble heart of this pooze Lady, and
 loſt what eares ſhe receiued that cruell meſſage, but hir cries, &
 moanes together wth hir ſighes & lamentations declared wth what chere
 ſhe receiued & aduertilemet. Was (ſayd ſhe) is it poſſible & my bre-
 thre ſhould ſo far forget themſelues, as for a fact nothing preiudi-
 cial vnto the, cruelly to put to death their innocent Siſter, & to im-
 burie the memozy of their fact, in & bloud of one which neuer did
 offend them: Muſt I againſt al right and equity be put to death
 before the Iudge or Maiſtrate haue made triall of my life, and
 knowne the righteouſneſſe of my cauſe? Ah God moſt rightfull,
 and bountifull Father, beholde the mallice of my Brethren, and
 the Tyrannous cruelty of thoſe which wrongfully doe ſeek the
 bloud. Is it a ſinne to marry? Is it a fault to fly, and auoyde the
 ſinne of Whoredome? What Lawes be theſe, where marriage
 Bed, and loyner Marritome is purſued wth like ſeuerity, that
 Murder, Theft, and Adultery are? And what Chriſtianity in a
 Cardinal, to ſhed the bloud which hee ought to defend? What
 profeſſion is this, to aſſaile the innocent by the hygh way ſide, and
 to reue them of life in place to puniſh Theeves, and Murderers?
 O Lord God thou art iuſt, and doſt al things in equity, I ſee now
 that I haue treſpaſſed againſt the Maieſty in ſome moze noto-
 rious crime than in marriage: I moſt humbly therefore beſeech thee
 to haue compaſſion on mee, and to pardon myne offences, accep-
 ting the confeſſion, and repentaunce of mee thine humble ſeruant
 for ſatiſfaction of my ſinnes, which it pleaſed thee to waſhe away
 in the precious bloud of thy ſonne our Saujour, that being ſo pu-
 riſhed, I may appeare at the holy habet in thy glorious kingdom.
 When ſhe had thus finiſhed hir prayer, two or thre of the mini-
 ſters which had taken hir biſſes Forly, came in, and ſaid vnto hir:
 Now Madame make ready your ſelfe to goe to God, for beholde
 your houre is come, Prayed be that God (ſayd ſhe) for the wealth
 and woe that it pleaſeth hym to ſend vs. But I beſeech you my
 Friendes to haue pity vpon theſe little Babes, and Innocent
 Creatures. Let them not feeſe the ſmarte which I am aſſured
 my Brethren beare againſt theſe Pooze unhappy Father.

Well

Well wel Madame sayd they, we will conuey them to such place, as they shal norwāt. I also recommend vnto you (quod she) this poore imprisoned mayden, and entreate hir well, in consideration of hir good seruice done to the infortunate Duchesse of Malfi. As she had ended those words, the two Ruffians did put a Coarde about hir neck, and strangled hir. The mayden seeing the pitious Tragedy commensed vpon hir maystresse, cried out a maine, cursing the cruell malice of those tormenters, and besought God to be witness of the same, & crying out vpon his diuine Maiesty, she humbly prayed vnto him to bend hys iudgement agaynst them which causelesse (being no Magistrates,) had killed so innocent creatures. Reason it is (sayd one of the Tyrants) that thou be partaker of thy maystresses innocency, sith thou hast bene so faythfull a Minister, & messenger of hir fleshy follies. And sodaynly caught hir by the hayre of the head, and in steade of a Carcanet placed a Roape about hir necke. How now (quoth she,) is this the promised fayth you made vnto my Lady? But those words flew into the Ayre wth hir Soule, in company of the myserable Duchesse.

And now hearken the most sorrowfull scene of all the Tragedy. The little Chyldezen which had seene all this furious game executed vpon their mother and hir mayde, as nature prouoked the, was some presage of their myshap might leade them thereunto, kneeled vpon their knees before those Tyrants, and embracinge their Legges, wailed in such wyle, as I thinke that any other, except a pitiless heart spoyled of all humanity, would haue had compassion. And impossible it was for them, to vnsolde the embracesmentes of those innocent creatures, whych seemed to forgettudge their death by Strange loakes and Countenance of those Rouerers. Whereby I thinke that needes it must be confessed, that nature hath in hir selfe, and in vs imprinted some signe of diuinitation, and specially at the Houre and tyme of death, so as the very Brastres doe feele some forewarninges, although they see neyther Sworde, nor Staffe, and endeavour to auoyde the cruell Passages of a thynge so fearefull, as the Separation of two thynges so nerely vnited, euen the Body, and Soule, which for the

The Duchesse of Malfi,

motion that chaunceth at the very instant, sheweth how nature is constrained in that monstrous diuision, and moze than horrible ouerthrow. But who can appease a heart determined to worke mischief, and hath sworne the death of another forced thereunto by some special commaundment? The Aragon brethren went hereby nothing else, but to roote out the whole name and race of Bologna. And therfoze the two ministers of iniquity did like murder and slaughter vpon those two tender babes, as they had done befoze vpon their mother, nor without some motion of horror, for an act so detestable. Behold here how far the cruelty of man extendeth, when it coueteth nothing else but vengeance, and marke what excessive choler the mind of them produceth, whych suffer themselves to be forced and overwhelmed with surp. Leaue we apart the cruelty of Eucherates, the Sonne of the King of Bactria, and of Phraates the Sonne of the Persian Prince, of Timon of Athens, and of an infinit number of those which were rulers and gouerners of the Emperie of Rome: and let vs match with these Aragon brethren, one Vitoldus Duke of Lithuania, the cruelty of whom, constrained his own subjects to hang themselves, for feare leasse they should fall into his furious and bloudy hands. We may confesse also these byrtall brethren to be moze butcherly than euer Otho erle of Monferrato, and Prince of Vrbino was, who caused a yeoman of his chamber to be wrapp'd in a sheete pouder'd with sulphur and brimstone, and after wards kindled with a Candle, was scalded & consumed to death, because he waked not at an hour by him appointed. Let vs not excuse them also from some affinity with Manfredus the sonne of Henry the second Emperour who smoldered his own father, being an old man, betwene it. Couerlets: These former furies might haue some excuse to excuse their cruelty, but these had no other color but a certain beastly madnesse which moued them to kil those little Childre their neptewes, who by no means could presudice or annoy the Duke of Malfi or his title, in the succession of his Duchie, the mother hauing withdrawen hir goods, and had her dowrie assigned hir: but a wicked hart wrapt in malice must needs bring forth semblable workes. In the time of these murders the infowunate Louer kept himself at Millan with his sonne Federick, and bowed himself to the Lord Siluio Sauello, who that tyme be-
Arged

tleman his name was Delio, one very well learned, and of trim
invention, who very excellently hath endited in the Italian vulgar
tongue. This Delio knowing the Gentleman to be husband to the
deceased Duchesse of Malfi came vnto him, & taking him aside, said :
Sir, albeit I haue no great acquaintance with you, this being the
first time that euer I saw you, to my remembrance, so it is, that ver-
tue hath such force, & maketh gentle myndes so amorous of their
like, as when they doe beholde ech other, they feelee themselves cou-
pled as it were in a bande of mindes, & impossible it is to diuide &
same. Now knowinge what you be, and the good and commenda-
ble qualities in you, I count it my duty to reueale that which may
chaunce to breede you damage. Know you then, that I of late was
in company with a Noble man of Naples, whych is in this Citty,
banded with a certaine company of horsemen, who tolde mee that
he had a speciall charge to kill you, and therefore prayed me (as it
seemed) to requyre you not to come in his sight, to the intent he
might not be constrained to doe that, which offend his Conscience,
and grieue the same all dayes of his life. Whereouer I haue worse
tidings to tell you: the Duchesse your Wyfe is deade by vio-
lent hand in prison, and the most part of them that were in hir com-
pany. Besides this assure your selfe, that if you doe not take heede
to that which this Neapolitane Capitayne hath differred, other
will doe and execute the same. This much I haue thought good
to tell you, because it would very much grieue me, that a Gentle-
man so excellent as you be, should be murdered in that miserable
wyfe, and I should deeme my selfe unworthy of life, if knowing
these practises I should dissemble the same. Whereunto Bologna
answered: Syr Delio I am greatly bound vnto you, and geue
you hearty thanks for the good will you beare me. But in the con-
spiracy of the Brethren of Aragon, and of the death of my Lady,
you be deceyued, and some haue giuen you wrong intelligence. For
within these two dayes I receyued letters from Naples, wherein
I am aduertised, that the right honorable and reuerend Cardinal
and his Brother be almost appeased, and that my goods shall bee
reindred agayne, and my deare Wyfe restored. Ah Syr sayde
Delio, how you bee beguiled and sedde with floures, and
nourished

The Duchesse of Malfi,

and nourished with sleights of Court. Assure your selfe that they which write these trifles, make such shamefull sale of your life, as the Butcher doth of his flesh in the Shambles, and so wickedly betray you, as impossible it is to inuent a treason more detestable: but bethinke you well thereof. When he had sayd so, he tooke hys leaue, and ioynd hymselfe in company of fine and pꝛegnant Wettes, there assembled together. In the meane tyme, the cruell Spirit of the Aragon Biethzen were not yet appeased wth the former murders, but needes must finish the last act of Bologna hys Tragedy by losse of hys Life, to keepe hys Wfe, and Chylde in company so well in an other Worlde, as hee was vnited with them in Loue in this fragile and transitory passage. The Neapolitan Gentleman before spoken of by Deleo, whych had taken this enterpryse to satisfie the barbarous Cardinall, to berieue his Countreyman of life, hauinge chaunged his mynde, and differring from day to day to sorte the same to effect, it chaunced that a Lōbarde of larger Conscience than the other, inueigled with Couetousnesse, and hired for ready Monney, practised the death of the Duchesse poore husband. This bloudy beast was called Daniel de Bozola that had charge of a certayne bande of footemen in Millan. Thys newe Iudas and pestilent manqueller, who wthyn certayne dayes after knowinge that Bologna oftentymes Repayred to heare Seruice at the Church, and couent of S. Fraunces, secretly conueyed himselfe in ambush, hard besides the church of S. Iames, (being accompanied wth a certayne troupe of Shouldeours) to assaile infortunate Bologna, who was sooner slayne than hee was able to thinke vpon defence, and whose mishap was such, as hee whrch kylled hym had good leysure to saue himselfe by reason of the little pursuite made after hym. Beholde heere the Noble fact of a Cardinall, and what sauer it hath of Christian purity, to cōmit a slaughtꝛ for a fact done many yeares past vpon a poore Gentleman which neuer thought him hurt. Is thys the sweete obseruation of the Apostles, of whō they vaunt themselves to be the Successours and Followers? And yet we cannot finde nor reade, that the Apostles, or those that kept in their trade of life, hyed Rustians, and Murderers to cut the

cut the Throates of them which did them hurt. But what? It was in the tyme of Iulius the second, who was moze martiall than Christian, and loued better to shed bloud than giue blessing to the people. Such ende had the infortunate marriage of him; wherby ought to haue contented himselfe wth that degree and honoz that he had acquired by the deedes and glozy of his vertues, so much by ech wight recommended. We ought neuer to clyme higher than our force permitteth, ne yet surmount þ bounds of duty, & lesse suffer our selues to be haled fōdly forth with desire of brutall sensuality. Which Anne is of such nature, that he neuer giueth ouer the party whom he mastereth, vntill he hath brought him to the shame of some Notable Folly. You see the miserable discourse of a princeesse loue, that was not very wyse, and of a Gentleman that had forgotten his estate, which ought to serue for a lookinge Glasse to them which bee ouer hardy in makinge Enterpryses, and doe not measure their Ability wth the greatnesse of their Attemptes: Where they ought to maintayne themselves in reputation, and beare the title of well aduised: foreseeing their ruine to be example for all posterity, as may bee scene by the death of Bologna, and by all them which sprange of him, & of his infortunate Spouse his Lady and Maistresse. But wee haue discoursed Enough

hereof, wth diuersity of other Hystories
do call vs to bring the same in place,
which were not much moze happy
thē þ bloudy end of those,
whose Hystory ye haue
already heard.

(..)

The

The Countesse of Celant.

¶ The disordered Lyfe of the Countesse of *C E. LANT*, and how shee (causinge the County of *MASINO* to bee murdered,) was becheaded at *MILLAN*.

The XX iiij. Nouell.



¶ **N**Ot without good cause of long tyme haue the wise, and discrete, Prudently gouerned their Childzen, and taken great heede ouer their Daughters, and those also whom they haue chosen to bee their Wyues, not in vsing them lyke Bondwomen, and Slaues, to beereine them of all Liberty, but rather to auoyde the murmur, and secrete slaunders rous Speech of the common people, and occasions offred for infection, and marryng of Youth, specially circumspect of the assaults bent agaynst Wardens, being yet in the first flames of fire, kindled by nature in the hearts, yea of those that be the worst, and best brought by. Some doe deeme it very straunge, that solempne Guard bee obserued ouer those which ought to leue at liberty, and doe consider how Liberty and the bydle of Licence let slip vnto Youth, they bzeede vnto the same most strong and tedious Bondage, that better it had bene for Youth to haue bene chayned, and closed in obscure Prison, than marked with those Blottes of Infamy, which sutch Licence and Liberty doe conduce. If England doe not by experience see Wardens of Noble Houses Infamed throughe to much vnbzideled, and frank manner of Lyfe, and their Parents desolate for sutch villanyes, and the name of their houses become fabulous and Ridiculous to the people. Surely that manner of Espiall and watch ouer Chil-

dren,

then, may be noted in Nations not very farre differing from vs,
 where men be Ielous of the very faine of them, whom they
 think to be indued with great vertues, and of those that dare with
 their very Lookes geue attaynt, to behold their Daughters. But
 where examples be euident, where all the World is assured of that
 which they see by daily experience, that the fructs of the disordered,
 breake out into light, it behoonieth no more to attend the daunge-
 rous customes of Countreies, to condescend to the sottish Opi-
 nions of those, whych say that youth to narrowly looked vnto, is
 trayned vp in such grossenesse, and blockishnesse of spryte, as im-
 possible it is afterwarde the same shoulde doe any thinge prays-
 worthy. The Romayne maydens whilom were Cloysterd with-
 in their fathers Pallaces, till at their Mothers Elbowes, and
 notwithstandinge were so wel brought vp, that those of best ciu-
 lity and finest trayned vp in our age, shall not be the seconde to one
 of the least perfect in the City. But who can learne ciuility and
 vertue in these our dayes? our Daughters noursed in companies,
 whose mouthes run ouer with Whorish and filthy talke, with be-
 haviour full of Ribauldrie, and many fraughted with facts lesse
 honest than Speech is able to expresse. I doe not pretend heereby
 to deprive that sexe of honest and seemely talke, and company, and
 lesse of exercise amonges the Noble Gentlemen of our English
 Boye, ne yet of the Liberty receyued from our Tuncesours, on-
 ly (me thynke) that it were to contemplate the manners and in-
 clination of wils, and refrayne those that be prone to wantonnesse,
 and by lyke meanes to reioyce the mindes of them that be bent to
 beautynesse, deuised from curtesie and Ciuility, by attendinge of
 whych choyse, and consideringe of that difference, impossible it is
 but vertue must shyne more bright in Noble houses than homely-
 nesse in Cabanes of Desautes, and Countrey Charles: who of-
 tentymes better obserue the Discipline of our Predecessours in
 Education of their Chyliden, than they which presume to prays-
 themselves for good skill in vse and Government of that age, more
 troublesome and payneful to rule, than any other within the com-
 passe of mans Lyfe.

Therefore the good & wise Emperour Marcus Aurelius would
 not haue

not have his Daughters to be trapped by in Courts. For (quod he) what profit shall the Nurse receive by learning hir mayden honesty and vertue, when our wozkes intice them to dalliance and vice, apprehending the folly of those that bee amozous? I make this discourte, not that I am so rigorous a Judge for our maydens of England, but that I wish them so reformed, as to see and be seene should be forbidden, as assured that vertue in what place so euer she be, cannot but open things that shall sauoz of hir excellency. And now to talke of an Italian Dime, who so long as hir first husband (knowing hir inclination) kept hir subiect, liued in reputation of a modest and sober wfe. Nothing was seene in hir that coulde defame hir renowme. But so soone as the shadow of that free captiuitie was made free by the death of hir husband, God knoweth what pageant she played, and how shee soyled both hir owne reputation, and the honour of hir second Mate, as yee shall vnderstande it with patience yee vouchsafe to reade the discourte of this present Heliope.

Casal, (as it is not knownen) is a Citie of Piedmont, a subiect to the Marquize of Montferrato, where dwelled one that was very rich, although of base birth, named Giachomo Scappardone, who being growne wealthy, moze by wicked art, a vsure, to much manifest, than by his owne diligence, toke to Wife a yong Greeke mayden, which the Marchioness of Montferrato mother of Marquize Guglielmo, had brought home with her from the Voyage that shee made into Græcia with hir Husbände, when the Turkes ouerran the Countrey of Macedonia, and sealed vpon the Citie of Modena which is in Morea. Of that mayden Scappardone had a Daughter indifferent fayre, and of behauiour liuely and pleasant, called Bianca Maria. The Father dyed with in a while after hir birth, as one that was of good yeares, and had bin greatly turmoyled in getting of riches, whose value amounted aboue one hundred thousand Crownes. Bianca Maria arrived to the age of threene, or seuentene yeares, was required of many, as well for hir Beauty, Gentleness, and good grace, as for her goods, and riches. In the ende she was married to the Viscount Hermes, the Sonne of one of the chiefe Houses in Millan, who

in con.

Incontinently after the marriage, conveyed his home to hys house,
 leauing his Greeke Mother to gouerne the vsuries gotten by his
 dead Husband. The Gentleman which amongsts two greene, knew
 one that was ripe, hauing for a certayne tyme well knownen, and
 learned the maners of hys Wyfe, saw that it behooued hym ra-
 ther to deale wth the Bit, and Wydle than the Spur, for that she
 was wanton, full of desire, and coueted nothing so much as fond
 and disordered liberty, and therefore without cruell dealing, dis-
 quiet, or trouble, hee vsed by little and little to keepe hir in, and
 cherished hir more than his nature willingly would suffer, of pur-
 pose to holde hir wthyn the Boundes of duty. And although the
 Millan Dames haue almost like liberties that ours haue, yet the
 Lord Heimes kept hir wthyn Dozes, and suffered hir to frequent
 none other house and company, but the Lady Hippolita Sforcia,
 who vpon a day demaunded of him wherefore hee kept in his
 Wyfe so shyrt, and perswaded hym to geue her somewhat more the
 Wydle bicause diuers already murmured of this order, as to
 strypte and frowwarde, esteeming hym eyther to be to much fond
 ouer hir, or else to ielous. Madame sayde the Millanoisei, they
 whych at pleasure so speake of me, know not yet the nature of my
 Wyfe, who I had rather should be somewhat restrayned, than run
 at Rouers to hir dishonour, and my shame. I remember wel Ma-
 dame the proper saying of Paulus Emilius that Notable Romane,
 Who being demaunded wherefore he had put away his Wyfe be-
 ing a Gentlewoman so sayre and Beautifull. O (quod he and lift-
 ed by his Leg whereupon was a new payre of Buskins) yee see
 this sayre Buskin meete, and seemely for this Leg to outward ap-
 paraunce not greuous or nopsome, but in what place it hurteth
 me, or where it wryngeth yee doe neyther see nor yet feele. So I
 Madame, do feele in what place my Hoase doeth hurt and wryng
 my Legge. I know Madame what it is to graunt to so wan-
 ton a Dame as my Wyfe is, hir will, and how farre I ought to
 let slip the Reine: Ielous I am not vpon the sayth I beare vn-
 to God, but I feare what may chaunce vnto mee. And by my
 trouth Madame, I geue her Lycence to Repaire to you both
 Day and Nycht, at whatsoeuer hour you please being assured of
 the ver-

the vertuous company that haunteth your house : otherwise my
 Pallace shall suffice his pleasure for the common toy of vs both, &
 therefore I willy no more talk hereof, least to importunate suites
 do offend my nature, and make me thinke that to be true whych of
 good will I am loth to suspect, contenting my selfe with his chas-
 tity, for feare least to much liberty do corrupt him. These wordes
 were not spoken without cause, for the wyse husband saw wel that
 such beasts, albeit rudely they ought not to be vsed, yet stilly to be
 holden thort, and not suffered to much to wander at will. And verily
 his Prophecy was to true for respect of that which followed.
 Who had not bene married full 6. yeares, but the Vicecount
 Hermes, departed this World, whereof she was very sorry because
 she loued him deuely, hauing as yet not tasted the licentious baites
 of such liberty, as afterwards she drank in Gluttonous draughts
 when after his husbands obsequies, she retired to Montferrato, &
 then to Casal to his fathers house, his mother being also dead,
 and she a lone woman to toy at pleasure the fruit of his desires,
 bindinge his only study to gay and trimme apparell, and imploy-
 ed the mornings with the Vermillion red to colour his Cheekes
 by greater curiostie than the most shameless Cartisan of Rome,
 fixing his eyes vpon ech man, gazing, and laughing with open
 mouth, and pleasantly disposed to talk and reason with euery gen-
 tleman that passed by the streete. This was the way to attayne
 & glorious feast of his triumpphant stichines, who wan & pryse above
 the most famous Women whych in his tyme made profession of
 whose armes, wherewith Venus once dispoyled Mars, & toke fro him
 the strongest and best Steele armure of all his furniture. Thinck
 not fayre maydes, that talk and clattering with Pouth is of small
 regarde. For a Citty is halfe won when they within demaunde
 for Parle as loth to indure the Canon shot. So when the eare of
 a yong Wyfe or mayde is pliant to lasciuious talk, and desisteth
 in wanton wordes, albeit his chastity receiue no damage, yet occa-
 sion of Speech is ministred to the people, and perchance with
 such disadvantage, as neuer after his good name is recovered.
 Wherefore needfull it is, not only to auoide the effect of euill, but
 also & least suspicion; For good fame is requisite for the woman, as
 honest

honest life. The great Captain Iulius Cesar, (which first of al re-
duced the common wealth of Rome in forme of Monarchie) be-
ing once demanded wherefore hee hadde refused his wife
before it was proued that she had offended with Clodius, the night
of the sacrifices done to the Goddesse Bona, answered so wisely as
truely, that the house of Cesar ought not onely to be voyd of whoz-
dome, but of suspition therof. Behold therfore what I haue sayd,
and yet doe say, againe that ye ought to take greate heede to your
selues, and to laugh in tyme, not reclinng your eares to vncomely
talke, but rather to follow the nature of the Serpent, that stoppeth
his eare with his tayle, to auoid the Charmes and Sorceries of
the Enchaunter. Now this Bianca Maria was sued vnto, and pur-
sued of many at Casall that desired hir to wyfe, and amonges the
rest two did profer themselues, which were the Lord Gismondo
Gonzaga, the neere kinsman of the Duke of Mantua, and the Coun-
ter of Celant, a great Baron of Sauoy, whose Landes lie in the vale
of Agosta. A great pastyme it was to thys fyne Gentlewoman to
feede hir self with the Orations of those two Lordes and a tope it
was to hir, to vse her owne discourse and aunswers expresse-
ling with righte good grace sundry amorous countenances, interming-
ling therewithall sighes, sobbes, and alteration of cheere, that full
well it mighte haue bene sayde, of loue trickes that shee was the
only dame and mistresse. The Marchyonesse of Montferrato de-
uours to gratify the Lord of Mantua his sonne in law, endeouored
to induce this wanton Lady to take for spouse Gismondo Gonzaga,
and the sute so well proceeded, as almost the mariage had bene
concluded if the Sauoy Earle had not come betwixte, and shewed
forth his Noblenesse of minde, when he vnderstode how things did
passe, and that another was ready to beare away the pryse, and re-
couer his mistresse. For that cause he came to visite the Lady, who
intertapned him wel, as of custom she did al other. And for that he
would not employe hys tyme in vayne, when he founde hir alone
and at conuenient leasure, began to preache vnto hir in thys wise
with sateh countenance, as she perceyued the Counte to be far in
loue with hir.

The Countesse of Celant

The Oration of the Counte

Of Celant to his Ladye.

“ I Am in doubt Madam, of whome chiefly I ought to make com-
“ plaint, whether of you, or of my selfe, or rather of fortune which
“ guideth and byngeth vs together. I see wel that you receiue some
“ wrong, and that my cause is not very iust, you taking no regards
“ vnto my passion which is outrageous, and lesse heartkente vnto
“ my request that so many times I haue giuen you to vnderstand one
“ ly grounded vpon the Honest loue I beare you, But I am belidde
“ this more to be accused for suffering an other to marche so far o-
“ ver my game and soyle, as I haue almost lost the tracte of the way
“ after which I most desire, and specially doe condemne my for-
“ tune, for that I am in daunger to lose the thyng which I desire,
“ and you in perill to passe into that place where your captivity shal
“ be worse than the slaues by the portugales condemned to the mines
“ of India. Doeth it not suffice you that the Lord Hermes closed you
“ by the space of v. or vi. yeares in his Chamber, but wil you needes
“ attempt the rest of your youthly daies amid the Mantuanes, whose
“ suspicious heads are full of hammers working in the same? Better it
“ were madame, that we approchenge neerer the gallante guile of
“ Fraunce, should lye after the liberty of that Countrey, than be
“ captiue to an Italian house, which will restrain you with like bon-
“ dage, as at other tymes you haue felt the experience. Moreover re-
“ ce what opinion is like to be conceiued of you, when it shalbe by-
“ tered that for the Marquize feare, you haue married the Mantuan
“ Lord. And I know well that you like not to be esteemed as a pri-
“ uil, your nature cannot abyde compulsion, you be free from his au-
“ thority, it were no reason you should be constrained. And not to
“ stay in framing of orations, or stand vpon discourse of Words, I
“ humbly beseeche you to behold the constant loue I beare you, and
“ being a Gentleman so Wealthy as I am, none other cause indu-
“ ceth me to make this sute, but your good grace and byngenge by,
“ which

The Countesse of Celant. Fo. 164

which force me to loue you about any other Gentlewoman that is
 noth. And although I might alleage other reasons to proue my
 saying, yet referre I my self to the experience and bounty of your
 mynd, and to the equity of your Iudgement. If my passion were
 not belement, and my torment without comparisson, I would wish
 my fained griefs to be laughed to scoone, and my dissembled payne
 rewarded with flouts. But my loue being sincere and pure, my tra-
 uail continuall, and my griefs endlesse, for pity sake I beseeche you
 madame to consider my faithfull deserts with your duettful cur-
 tesie, and then shall you see how much I ought to be preferred be-
 fore them, which vnder the shadow of other mens puissance, do seke
 to purchase power to commaund you: where I do faithfully bend
 and tie my word and deede continually to loue and serue you, with
 promise al the dayes of my Life to accomplish your commaunde-
 ments. Beholde if it please you what I am, and with what affecti-
 on I make mine humble playnt, regard the Messenger, loue it is
 himself that holdeth me within your snares, and maketh mee cap-
 ture to your beauty and gallant graces, which haue no piere. But
 if you refuse my sute, and cause me breath my words into the aire,
 you haibe accused of cruelty, ye shall see the entier defeat of a ge-
 ntleman which loueth you better then loue himselfe is able to yelde
 flame and fire to force any twight to loue mortal creature, But be-
 lieue I beleue the heauens haue departed in me such aboundance,
 to the intent in louing you with behemence so greate, you may as-
 so thinke that it is I which ought to be the friend and spouse of,
 that gentle and curteous Lady Bianca Maria, which alone may cal-
 her self the mistresse of my heart. The Ladye which before was
 clothed and flouted with the Countes demands, hearing this
 last discourse, and remembryng his first marriage, and the natural
 valoure of Italyans, half womne without making other countenance
 answered the Counte in this manner: My Counte, albe it that I
 am obedyente to the will and commaundemente of Madame the
 Marchionesse, and am loth to displease hir, yet wil I not so farre
 gage my libertye, but still referre one poynte to saue what resteth
 in my thought. And what shoulde I see me to chose such one,

to whome I shal be both his life and death: And whereof beinge
once possed, it is impossible to be rid and acquitted: I assure you, if
I feared not the speech, and suspicion of malicious mindes, and
the venime of slanderous Tongues, neuer husband should bring
me moze to bondage. And if I thought that he whom I pretend to
chose, would be so cruel to me, as others whom I know, I would
presently refuse mariage for euer. I thanke you neuerthelesse, both
of your aduertisements giuen me, and of the honoz you doe me, your
self desyring to accomplish that honoz by marriage to be celebrated
betweene vs. For the fidelitie of which your talke, and the little dis-
simulation I see to bee in you, I promise you that there is no gen-
tleman in this countrey to whome I giue moze puiſſance ouer me,
than to you, if I chaunce to mary, and thereof make you so good
assurance, as if it were already done. The Counte seeing so good
an entry would not suffer the tyme to slip, but bearing the Bushe
vntill the praye was ready to spring, replied. And sith you know
(madame) what thing is profitable, and what is hurtfull, and that
the benefite of Liberty is so much recommended, why doe you not
performe the thinge that may redounde to your honoz: Assure mee
then of your word, and promise me the faith and loyalty of mar-
riage, then let me alone to deale wth the rest, for I hope to attayne
the effect without offense and displeasure of any, And seeing hit to
remaine in a muse without speaking word, he toke hir by the hand
and kissing the same a million of tymes added these Words: How
now Madame be you appalled for so pleasaunt an assault, wherein
your aduersary confesseth himselfe to be vanquished: Courage ma-
dame, I say courage, and beholde him heere which humbly praierh
you to receiue him for your lawfull husband, and who sweareth vnto
you all such Amity and reuerence that husband oweth to his
loyall spouse. Wherupon the Counte sayd she, and what will the Marquize
say, vnto whom I haue wholly referred my self for marriage: Shal
not she haue iust occasion to frowne vppon mee, and frowardly to
vse me for the little respect I beare vnto hir: God be my witness
if I would not that Gonzaga had neuer come into this countrey:
for although I loue him not, yet I haue almost made him a pro-
mise

ere: for although I loue him not, yet I haue almost made him a
 promise, which I can not kepe. And (such there is nothing don) said
 the Sauiour Lord what nede you to torment your self? & What the
 Marquise wreake his tyrannie ouer the will of his subiects, and
 force Ladies of his Lande to marrie againste their luste? I thinke
 that so wise a princeesse, and so well nurtured, will not so far forget
 his self, as to straine that which God hath left at liberty to euery
 wight. Promise me onely marriage and leaue me to deale wth the
 rest, other thynges shalbe wel provided for. Bianca Maria banquet-
 ted with that importunity, and fearing againe to fall into serui-
 tude, hoping that the Counte would mainteine such liberty as he
 had assured, agreed vnto hym and plegghed vnto him her faith, &
 for the tyme bled mutuall promises by Wordes respectiuelly one
 to another. And the better to confirme the fact, and to let the
 knotte from breaking, they bedded themselves together. The
 Counte very ioyfull for that encountre, pelded such good begin-
 ning by his countenance, and by familiar and continuall haunte
 with Bianca Maria, as shortly after the matter was knownen and
 came to the Marquesse eares, that the Daughter of Scappar, done
 had married the Counte of Celant. The good lady albeit that shee
 was wroth beyond measure, and willingly would haue ben reuena-
 ged vpon the bride, yet hauing respect to the Counte, which was a
 noble man of great authority, swallowed downe that pille with-
 out chewing, & prayed the Lord Gonzaga not to be offended, who
 seeing the right behauiour of the Ladye, laughed at the matter, and
 praised God for that the thing was so wel broken off: And he did
 foresee already what issue that Comedye would haue, beyng be-
 re familiar for certayne Dapes in the House of Bianca Maria.
 Thes marriage then was published, and the solemnity of the
 nuptials were done very princely, according to the Nobility
 of hym which had married hir: but the augurie and presage was
 heauy, and the melancholike face of the season (which was obscu-
 red and darkened about the tyme they should go to church) declared
 that the mirth & ioy should not long continue in the house of the
 Counte, according to that comon saying: He that loketh not before he leapeth

The Countesse of Celant

may chance to Stumble before he sleepe. For the Lord of Celant being retired home to his valleys of the Sauoy mountains, began to looke about his businesse, and perceived that his wife surpassed all others in light beliauz and vnbideled desires, whereupon hee resolved to take order and stop hir passage before she had won the field, and that frankly she should goe seke hir venturers where shee list, if she would not be ruled by his aduise. The foolish Countesse seeing that hir husband well espied hir fond and foolish behauior, and that wisely he went about to remedie the same, was no whit astonished, or regarded his aduise, but rather by forging complaints did call him in & receiue sometimes with hir riches that she brought him, sometime with those whom she had refused for his sake. and with whō farre of she liued lyke a sauage creature amid the mostaine deserts and baren dales of Sauoy, and tolde him that by no meanes she minded to be closed and shut vp like a tamelesse beast.

“ The Counte which was wise, and would not breake the Cheere
“ upon his knee, prouidently admonished hir in what wise a Ladye
“ ought to esteeme hir honor, and how the tightest faults of Noble
“ sorts appeare mortal sinnes before the world. And that it was not
“ sufficient for a Gentlewoman to haue hir body chaste, if hir speech
“ were not accordyng, and the minde correspondent to that outward
“ semblance, and the conseruation agreeable to the secret conceipts
“ of Mynde: and I shall be full for my sweete Wife (sayd the Counte) to
“ giue you cause of discontent: for wher you shalbe vexed and mo-
“ lested, I shall receiue no toy or pleasure, you being by Gods grace
“ to keepe my promise, & vse you like a wyfe, if so be you regard me
“ with due ty semblable. For reason will not that the head obey the
“ members, if they shew not themselves to be such as depend vpon
“ on the health and life of it. The husband being the Wyues chiefe,
“ ought to be obeyd in that which reason forbiddeth: as shee referring
“ her selfe to the pleasure of hir head, forceth him to whom she is ad-
“ iorned, to do and assay all trauayle and payne for hir sake. Of one
“ thinge I must needes accuse you, which is, that for trifles you
“ frame complaint. For the mynde occupied in folly, lusteth for no-
“ thinge more than vayne thinges, and those that be of little profit,
“ specially

specially where the pleasure of the Bodye is onely considered: where if it follow reason, it dissembleth his griefes, with wordes of wysedome, and in knowing mutch, sayneth notwithstanding a subtle and honest ignozaunce: But I may bee mutch decepued herein, by thinking that a Woman fraught with sickle Opinions may recline hir eares to what so euer thing, except to that whych belitteth hir mynde, and pleaseth the desires framed wth in hir foolyshe fantasie. Let not thys speech be straunge vnto you, for your woozdes vttered without discretion, make me vse thys language. Finally (good Madame) you shall shew your selfe a wise and louing Wyfe, if by takinge heede to my requests, you saythfully follow the aduise thereof. The Countesse whych was so fine and malicious as the Earle was good and wise, dissembling her griefe, and coueringe the venome hidden in hir mynde, began so well to play the hypocrite before hir husbände, and to counterfayte the simple Dame, as albeit he was right politike, yet he was with in hir Snare inrappt, who flattered him wth so sayre Woozdes, as she won him to goe to Casal, to visite the lands of hir Inheritance. We see whereunto the intent of this false Woman tended, and what checkmate she ment to geue both to hir husband, and hir honour: Whereby we know that when a Woman is disposed to giue hir selfe to wickednesse, hir mynd is boyd of no malice or inuention to sort to ende any daunger or perill offered vnto hir. The factes of one Medea (if credite may be giuen to Poets) and of Phædra, the Woman of Theseus, wel declare with what beastly zeale they began and finished their attempts. The Eagles flight is not so high, as the foolyshe desires, and Conceiptes of a Woman that trusteth in hir owne opinion, and treadeth out of the tract of duety, and way of Wysedome. Pardon me good Ladies, if I speak so largely, yet thinke not I mean to display any other but sutch, as forget the degree wherein their Iuncestours haue placed them, and whych digresse from the true path of those that haue immortalized the memozy of themselves, of their husbonds, and of the houses also whereof they came. I am very lothe to take vppon mee the office of a slaunderer, and no lesse do mean-

The Countesse of Celant.

to flatter those, whom I see to their great Shame, offende openly in the sight of the world: But why should I dissemble that which I know your selues would not conceale, yf in conscience yce were requyred? It were extreame follye to decke and clothe vice wth the holy garment of Vertue, and to call that Curtesse and Cynisity, whych is manifest whozedom and Trechery: Let vs terme ech thyng by his due Name, and not deface that whych of it selfe is faire and pure, let vs not also staine the renoume of those, whome their owne Vertue do recommende. This gentle Countesse being at Casal, making much of hir husbände, and kissing him with the kisse of treason, and of him being vnfaignedly beloued and cherished, not able to forget his sermons, and much lesse hir own filthy lyfe, seeyng that with hir Counte it was impossible for hir to liue and glut hir Lecherous lust, determined to runne away and secke hir aduenture: for the bynging to passe, wherof she had already taken order for money, the interest wherof growing to hir daily profite at Millan. And hauynge leuied a good summe of Ducates in hande, vntill hir other rents were ready, she fled away in y night in compaignie of certayne of hir men which were pruiue to hir doings: Hir retire was to. Pavia, a City subiecte to the state and Duchy of Millan, where she hired a princely Pallace, and apparelled the same accordyng to hir estate and Trayne of hir husband, and as her owne reuenue was able to beare. I leaue for you to thinke what buzzings entred the Countes head, by the sodayne sight of his wife, who would haue sent and gone him selfe after to seke hir out, and byng hir home agayne, had he not well considered and wayed his owne profite & aduantage, who knowing that hir absence would rid out of his head a fardell of suspitions which he before conceiued, was in the ende resolued to lette hir alone, and suffer hir remaine in what place so euer she was retired and whence hee neuer minded to cal hir home agayne. I were a very foole (said hee) to keepe in my House so pernicious and fearefull an enemy, as that arrant whoze is, who one day before I beware will cause some of her ruffians to cut my throte, besides the Apolatyon of hir holye Maryage Bed: God defende that
such

such a Strumpet by his presence should any longer profane the house of the Lord of Celant, who is well rewarded and punished for the excessive loue which he bare him. Let him goe whether hee list, and leaue a Gods name at his case, I do content my self in knowing what Women be able to do, without further attempt of fortune or other prooue of his wicked Life. He added further that the honoz of so Noble a personage as he was, depended not vpon a womans mischief: and assure your selfe the whole race of woman kind was not spared by the Counte against whom he then inuaded more through rage than reason, he considered not his honest sort of women, which deface the byllany of those that giue themselves ouer to their owne lusts, without regarde of modesty and shame, which ought to be famylar, as it were by a certain Naturall inclynation in all degrees of Women and Maydens. But come we again to Bianca Maria, holding now his Courte and open house at Paue wher she got so hole a fame, as mistresse Laïs of Corinth did, whose trumpry was neuer more common in Asia than that of this fayre dame, almost in euery corner of Italy, and whose conuersation was such, as his frank liberty and famylar demeanoz to ech weychie, well witnessed his horryble Life. True it was that her reputacion ther was very small, and she hired not his selfe, ne yet toke pains by setting his body to sale, but for some resonable gayne and earnest pain. Howbeit she (of whom sometimes the famous Greke ozas to would not buy repentaunce for so high a pryce) was more excessive in Sale of his Marchaundise, but not more wanton. For she no sooner espyed a comely Gentleman that was youthly, and well made, but would presently shew him so good countenance, as he had ben a very foole, that knewe not what prouender this Colt did neigh: whose shamelesse Gesture Messalina the Romane princess dyd neuer surmount, except it were in that she visited and haunted common houses: and this dame bled his dispozt within his owne, the other also receiued indifferently Carters, Gallies slaves, and Porters: and this halfe Grecke did his pastyme with Noble Men that were braue and lusty. But in anything she well resembled him, which was, that Messalina was loeuer wearye with trauaile, than she satisfied with pleasure, and the

The Countesse of Celant.

With vſe of his body, like vnto a ſink that receiueth al filth, without diſgorgeng any, throwne into the ſame. This was the chaſte yfe which that good Lady led, after ſhe had taken flight from his huſband. Marke now whether the Milanois that was his firſt huſbande, were a groſſe headed perſon or a ſoole, & whether hee were not learned and ſaiſful in the ſcience of Phiſiognomy, and time for him to make ready the rods to make his know his duty, therewith to correct his wanton youth, and to cut of the luſty things & proud ſciences that ſoked the moiſture and hart of the ſtock and bzaunches. It chanced whyles ſhe liued at Pauie, in this good and honozable port, the Counte of Maſſino called Ardizzino Valperga came to the Emperours ſeruiſe, and thereby made his abode at Pauie with one of his brothers: the Counte being a goodly Gentleman, young and gallant in apparel, giuen to many good qualittes had but one onely fault, which was a mayme in one of his legges, by reaſon of a certain aduenture and blow receiued in the wars, although the ſame toke away no part of his comelineſſe and ſyne behauior. The Counte I ſay, remaining cerraين dapes at Pauie beheld the beauty and ſingularity of the Counteſſe of Celant, and ſtayed with ſuch deuotion to view and gaze vpon his, as many times he romed by and down the ſtreate wherein ſhe dwelt to find meanes to ſpeak vnto his. His firſt talke was but a Bon iour: and ſimple ſalutation, ſuch as Gentlemen commonly vſe in company of Ladies, and at the firſt byuente Valperga coulde ſettle none other iudgment vpon that Goddeſſe, but that ſhe was a wiſe and honeſt dame, and yet ſuch one as needed not the Emperours camp to force the place which as he thought was not ſo well flanked & rampſred but that a good man of Armes might eaſily winne, and the breach ſo liuely and ſautable, as any ſouldier might paſſe the ſame. He became ſo ſampliar with the Lady, and talked with his ſo ſecretly, as vpon a day being with his alone, hee courted in this wiſe: Were not I of all men moſte blame worthy, and of greateſt folly to be reprimed, ſo long time to be acquainted with a Lady ſo faire and curteous as you be, and not to offere my ſeruiſe life and goodes to be diſpoſed where you pleaſed? I ſpeake not thus of Adams for any euill and ſiniſter iudgement that I conceiue of you

you, for that I prayse and esteeme you aboue any Gentlewoman
that euer I knew til this day, but rather for that I am so won-
derfully attached with your good graces, as wrong I should doe
vnto your honoz and my loyal service towards you, if I continu-
ed dumbe, and did conceale that whych incessantly would consume
my heart with insynpte numbre of ardent desires, and wast myne
intrailes for the extream and burning loue I beare you. I do re-
quire you to put no credite in me, if I refuse what it shall please
you to commaund me. Wherfore Madame, I humbly beseech you
to accepte me for your owne, and to saue me as such one, whych
with all fidelitie hopeth to passe hys Tyme in your company. The
Countesse although she knew ful wel that the fire was not so liue-
ly kindled in the stomacke of the Counte as hee wente aboute to
make hir beleue, and that his wordes were to eloquent, and coun-
tenance, to toyfull for so earnest a louer as hee semed to be: at thys
first uncountrie yet for that he was a valiant Gentleman, yong, lusty,
and strongly made, minded to retaine him, and for a tyme to stape
hir stomacke by appeasing hir gluttonous appetite in matters of
loue, with a morsell so dainty, as was thys Opinion and lustye
younge Lord: and when the Courage of hym began to coole, ano-
ther shoulde enter the listes. And therefore she answered hym
in thys wise: Although I knowng the vse and manners of men,
and with what Waies they shoke for Ladies, if they take not heede,
hauing proued their malice and little loue, determined neuer to
loue other than mine affection, ne yet to fauoure Man excepte it
bee by shewing some familiar manner to heare theyr talke,
and for pastime to hearken the braue requests of those which say
they burne for loue, in the midg of some dellyghtsome brooke. And
albeit I think you no better than other bee, ne more saythfull,
more affectionate, or otherwys moued than the rest, yet I
am contente for respects of poure honoure, somewhat to be-
leue you and to accepte you for myne owne, lish your discretioun
in sarch (I truste) as so Noble a Gentleman as you bee,
will hym selfe declare in those Whayes, and when I see the
effecte of my hope, succede I cannot be so vnkynde, but wyth
all

effect of my hope, succcede I cannot be so vnhinde, but with all honesty shall assay to satisfie that your loue. The Countess seeing hir alone, and receyuing the Ladies language for his advantage, and that hir countenance by alteration of hir minde did ad a certayne beauty to hir face, and perceyuing a desire in hir that he should not be delay, or be to squeimish, she demaunding naught else but execution, tooke the present offered time, forgetting all Ceremonies, & reuerence, he embraced hir and kissed hir a Hundred Thousand times. And altho she made a certayne simple and prouoking resistance, yet the Louer noting them to be but preparatiues for the sport of loue, he strayed from the bounds of honesty, and threw her vpon a sleide Bed wch in the Chamber, where hee solaced hymselfe with hys long desired suite. And finding hir worthy to be beloued, and she him a curteous gentleman, consulted together for continuance of their amity, in such wise as the Lorde Ardizano spake no more but by the mouth of Bianca Maria, and dyd nothinge but what she commanded, being so bewrapped with the heauy Mantell of hir Beastly Loue, as hee still abode night, and day in the house of his beloued: Whereby the brute was nosed throughout the City, and the songes of their Loue more common in ech Citizens mouth, than Stanze or Sonnettes of Petrarch, Plaged, and Raped vps the Gittone, Lute, or Lyra, more fine and witty than those vsuauery Ballets that be tuned & chaunted in the mouthes of the common sort. Beholde an Earle well serued, and dressed by entoying so false a Woman, which had already falsified the fapth betrouthed to hir husband, who was more honest, milde, and vertuous, than she deserued. Beholde also see Noble Gentlemen, the Implicitie of this good Earle, how it was deceyued by a false & filthy Trampler, whose stinking lye & common vse of body woulde haue withdrawn ech simple creature from mixture of their owne with such a Carrion. Flesson to learne al youth to refrayne the Whorish looks of lighte conditioned Dames, a number (the more to bee pittied) shewinge forth themselves to the Portale of euery Cheapener, that till demaunde the pryce, the grossenes whereof before considered, were worthy

worthy to be desired and loathed. This Ladys seeinge hir Loner
nourished in hir lust, dandled him with a thousand trumperyes, and
made hym holde the Whyle, while other enioyed the secret spoyle
which earst hee bled hymself. This acquaintance was so dangerous
to the Counte, as she hir selfe was Hamelle to the Counte, of
Celant. For the one bare the armes of Cornwall, and became a se-
conde Acheon, and the other wickedly led his life, and lost the chi-
fell of that hee looked for by the seruice of great Princes, through
the treason of an arrant common quene.

Whiles this Loue continued in al Pleasure and like contenta-
tion of either parts: Fortune that was ready to mounte the Stage,
and shew in sight that her mobyltyre was no moze stable than a
womans Wyll: (For vnder such habite and sexe Painters and
Poets describe hir) made Ardizzino suspecte what desire she had
of chaunge: and within a while after, sawe hym selfe so farre mist-
ked of his Lady, as though he had neuer bene acquainted. The
cause of which recoile was, for that the Countesse was not conten-
ted with one kind of fare, whose Eyes were moze greedy than
hir stomake able to digest, and aboue al desired chaunge, not seking
meanes to finde him that was worthy to be beloued and interap-
ned of so great a Lady, as she esteemed hir selfe to be, and as such
of their owne opinton thinke themselves, who counterfaite moze
graustie and reputation than they doe, whome Nature and vertue
for theyr maiesty and holynes of life make Noble and praise wor-
thy. That desire deceiued hir nothing at all: for a certayne time af-
ter that Ardizzino possessed the foyle of this fayre Countesse, there
came to Pavia, one Roberto Sanseuerino Earle of Gaiazzo, a yōg
and ballaunte Gentleman, whose Countrey lyeth on this side the
Mountaines, and was verye famylar wth the Earle of
Massino.

This vnfaithful Alcina and cruel Medea had no soner cast hir
Eye vppon Signor di Gaiazzo, but was pierced wth loue in such
wise, as if forthwith shee had not attayned hir desires, she would
haue run mad, because that Gentleman bare a certayne Natlyre
representatyon in hys face, and promysed such dexteritie in hys
deedes,

The Countesse of Celant.

Deedes as sodainly he thought him to be the man that was able to slay hie sitting thus. And therfore so gently as he could, gaue ouer hie Ardizzino, with whom he vterly refused to speake, and shunned hys company when he saw him, and by shutting the gates agaynst him, the Noble man was not able to forbear from throw- ing forth some words of choler, whereby he tooke occasion both to expell him, and also to beare hym such displeasure, as then he con- spired his death, as afterwards you shall perceyue. This greate hatred was the cause that he fell in loue as you haue harde with the Counte of Gaizzo, who shewed vnto him all signe of Amity: and seeing that hee made no greate sute vnto hie, she wrote vnto him in this manner.

The Letter of Bianca Maria.

to the Counte of Gaizzo.

SIR I doubt not by knowing the state of my degree, but that ye blush to see the violence of my mind, which passing the limites of modesty, that ought to guard such a Lady as I am, forceth me (vncertain of the cause) to doe you vnderstand the grief that doeth torment me, which is of such constrainnt, as if of curtesie ye do not bouchsafe to come vnto me, you shall commet two faults the one leauing the thing worthy for you to loue and regard, and which deserveth not to be cast of, the other in causing the Death of hie, that for Loue of you, is bereft of rest. Whereby loue hath very lit- tle in me to sease vpon, either of heart or liberty. The ease of which grief proceedeth from your only grace, which is able to banquish hie, whose victorions hap hath conquered all other, and who atten- ding your resolat answer, shall rest vnder the mercifull refuge of hope, which deceiteth hie, that se by that very meanes the wretched end of hie that is al your owne.

Bianca Maria Countesse of Celant.

The Countesse of Celant. Fo170.

The yong Lord much marvelled at this message, were it for that already hee was in loue with hir, and that for loue of his friend Ardizzino, durst not be known therof, or for that he feared he wold be straught of wits, if she were despised, he determined to goe vnto hir, and yet stayed thinking it not to be the part of a faithfull companion to deceiue his friend: But in the end pleasure surmounting reason, and the beauty iorned with the good gract of the Lady hauing blinded him, and bewitched his wits so wel as Ardizzino, he toke his way towards hir house, who waited for him with good deuotion, whither being arriued, he failed not to vse like spech that Valperga did, either of them (after certain reuerences and other fewe words) minding and despyninge one kinde of intetaynement. This practize dured certayn months, and the Countesse was so farre rapt with her new loue, as she only employed hir self to please him, and he shewed him self so affected as therby she thought to rule and gouerne him in all things: wherof she was afterwards deceiued as you shall vnderstand the maner.

Ardizzino seing himself wholly abandoned the presence and loue of his Lady, knowing that she railed vpon him in all places where she came, departed Pavia halfe out of his wittes for Anger, and so strayed from comely order by reason of his rage, as hee displayed the Countesse thre times more liuely in hir colours, than she could be paynted, and repproued hir with the termes of the vilest & most common Trumpet that euer ran at rouers, or shot at randon. Bianca Maria vnderstode hereof, and was aduertised of by vile report by Ardizzino spread of hir, throughout Lombardie which chafed hir in such wyse as she fared like the Bedlem fury, ceasing night or day to playne the vnkindnes and folly of hir reiecte d loue: Sometimes saying, that shee had iust cause so to do, then flattering hir selfe, alledged, that men were made of purpose to suffer such follies as were wrought by hir, and where they termed themselves to bee Womens Seruauntes, they oughte at thes Mistris Handes to endure what pleased them. In the end, not able any longer to restrayne hir choler, he vanquish the appetite of reuenge, purposed at all aduenture to prouide for the death

The Countesse of Celant.

death of her ancient Enemy, and that by meanes of him whome she had now tangled in her Nettes. See the vnsheamefastnesse of this masleife bliche, and the rage of that female Tiger, howe she goeth about to arme one friend against an other, and was not content onely to abuse the Counte Gaiazzo, but deuised how to make him the manqueller. And as one night they were in the midst of their embracements, she began pitifully to weepe and sigh, in such wise as a man would haue thought (by the vexation of hir hearte) that the soule and body would haue parted. The younge Lorde louingly enquired the cause of hir heauinesse: and sayd vnto hir, that if any had done hir displeasure: hee would reuenge hir cause to hir contentment. She hearing him say so, (then in studie vpon the deuice of hir Enemies death) spake to the Counte in this manner:

" You know Sir, that the thing whych moste tormenteth the Gentle
 " heart and minde that can abide no wronge, is defamacion of hon-
 " noure and infamous repoyte. Thus much I say for that the lord
 " of Massino, (who to say the trouth, was fauored of me in like sorte
 " as you be now) hath not bene ashamed to publike open slaunders
 " agaynst me, as though I were the arrantest Whore that euer had
 " giuen her self ouer to the Galley slaues alongs the shore of Scicile.
 " If he had haunted the fauour which I haue done him but to cer-
 " tayne of his priuat friends, I had incurred no slaunder at all
 " much lesse any litle suspition, but hearing the common repoytes,
 " the wrongfull Wordes and wretched byutes that he hath rapied on
 " me: I beseeche you say, to do me reason that he may feele his offence
 " and the smart for his committed fault against hir that is al yours
 " The Lord Sanseuerino hearing this discourse, promised hir to do
 " hys best, and to teache Valperga to talke moze soberly of hir, whom
 " he was not worthy for to serue, but in thought. Notwithstanding
 " he sayde moze, than he ment to do, for he knew Ardizzino to be so ho-
 " nest, sage, and courteous a personage, as hee would neper doe nor
 " say any thing without good cause, and that Ardizzino had iustler
 " quarell agaynst him, by taking that from hym whych hee loued (al-
 " though it was after his discontinuance from that place, and vpon
 " the onely request of hir) Thus he concluded in mind hel to remain
 " the

quest of hir.) Thus hee concluded in mind still to remayne the friend of Ardizzino, and yet to spend his time with the Countesse, which he did the space of certayn months without quarelling with Valperga, that was retired to Pauc, with whom he was conuersant, and liued familiarly, and most commonly vsed one table and bed together. Bianca Maria seeing that the Lord of Gaiazzo cared not much for hir, but onely for his pleasure, determined to vse like practise against him, as she did to hir former louer, and to banish him from hir House. So that when he came to see hir, either she was sick, or hir affaires were such, as she could not keepe hym company: or else hir gate was shut vpon him. In the end (playing double or quit) she prayed the sayd Lord to shewe hir such pleasure and friendship, as to come no more vnto hir, because she was in termes to goe home to hir husband the Counte of Celant, who had sent for hir, and feared least hys seruants shoulde finde her house full of suiters, alleaging that she had liued long inough he in a most sinful life, the lightest faultes whereof were to heynous for dames of hir port and calling, concluding that so long as she lyued she would beare him good affection for the Honest Company and conuersation had betwene them, and for hys curtesie towards hir. The pong Carle, were it that he gaue credit vnto hir tale or not, made as though he did beleue the same, and without longer discourse, forbare approche vnto hir house, and droue out of his heades all the Amorous affection which he caried to the Piedmont Circes. And to the ende he might haue no cause to thinke vpon hir, or that his presence should make hym claue againe to hir that first pursued him, he retired in good time to Millan: by which retiree hee auoided that mishap, wherewith at length this Desolent woman would haue cut him ouer the shynnes, euen when his mind was least thereon. Such was the malice and mischief of hir heart, who ceasing to play the whore, applied hir whole pastime to murder. Gaiazzo being departed from Pauc, thys Venus once agayne assayed the embracements of hir Ardizzino, and knew not wel how to recouer him agayne, because she feared that the other had discovered the Enterpryse of his Murder. But what rare not shee attempte

V.

whole

The Countesse of Celant,

what dare not she attempt, whose mynde is slave to sinne? The first assaies be harde, and the minde doubtfull & conscience gnaweth upon the worme of repentance, but the same once newled in vice, and rooted in the heart, it is more pleasaunte, and glad some for the wicked to execute, than vertue is familiar to those that follow hir: So that shame separate from before the eyes of youth, ripper age nourished in impudency, their sight is so daseled, as they can see nothing that eyther shame or feare can make them blush, which was the cause that this Lady continuinge still in hir mischief, so much practised the freendes of hym whom she desired to kill, and made such fit excuse by hir Ambassadors, as hee was content to speake to hir, and to here hir Justifications, whych were easy enough to doe, the Judge being not very guilty. Shee promised and swoze that if the fault were proued not to be in him, neuer man should see Bianca Maria, (so long as she lyued) to be other thā a friend and slave to the Lord Ardizzino, wholly submitting herselfe vnto his will and pleasure. See how peace was capitulated betweene the two reconciled Louers, and what were the articles of the same, the Lord of Massino entringe Possession agayne of the Fort that was revolted, and was long tyme in the power of another. But when he was seized agayne, the Lady saw full well, that hir recovered friend was not so hard to please, as the other was, and that wth hym she liued at greater liberty. Continuing then their amorous Daunce, and Ardizzino hauing no more care but to reforce himselfe nor hys Lady, but to cherishe and make much of hir friend, beholde eitsoones the desire of Bloud and well ol murder, newly reuiued in that new Megera, who incited (I knowe not with what rage,) fanned to haue him slayne, whych refused to kill hym, whom at this present, shee loued as herselfe. And he that had inquired, the cause thereof, I thinke none other reason, coulde be rendred, but that a braynelesse heade and reasonlesse minde, doe thinke most notable murders, and myschiefe be easie to be brought to passe, who so strangely proceeded in disordred Affaires, which in fine caused their miserable shame, and ruine, wth the death of herselfe and hym, whom she had stirred to the fact, boldeninge hym by perswasion, to make him believe

believee These to bee Vertue, and Gloriously commended hym in
hys follies, whych you shall heare by readinge at length the dis-
course of this History.

Bianca Maria seeing herselfe in full possession of hir Ardizzino,
purposed to make hym chiefe executioner of the murder by hir in-
tended, vpon Gaiazzo, for the doing whereof one night holdinge
hym betwene hir armes, after shee had long time dalged with him,
like a cunninge Maistrisse of hir Art, in the ende weauinge and
traping hir treason at large, she sayd thus vnto him: *Syr* of long
time I haue bene desirous to require a good turne at your hands,
but fearing to trouble you, and thereupon to be denied, I thought
not to be importunate: and albeit the matter toucheth you, yet did
I rather holde my peace then to here refusall of a thinge, which
your selfe ought to prefer, the same concerning you. *Madame* sayd
hir Louer, you know the matter neede to be hapnous and of great
importance, that I should deny you, specially if it concerne the
Pleasur of your honoz. But you say the same doth touch mee
somewhat neerely, and therefore if ability be in me, spare not to
bitter it, and I will assay your satisfaction to the bittermost of my
power. *Syr* sayd she, is the Counte of Gaiazzo one of your very
friends? I thincke (answered Valperga) that he is one of the su-
rest freends I haue, and in respect of whole friendship, I will ha-
zarde my selfe for him no lesse than for my Brother, being certaine
that if I haue neede of him, he will not fayle to do the like for me.
But in herefoze doe you aske me that question? I will then tel you
sayd the Traipresse (kissing him so sweetely as euer he felt the like
of any Woman,) for somutch as you be so deceyued of your opi-
nion, in him who is wicked in dissembling of that, which malici-
ously lieth hidden in hys heart. And byesly to say the effect. As-
sure your selfe hee is the greatest and most mortall Ennemy that
you haue in the Worlde. And to the intent that you do not thinke
this to be some forged Tale, of light inuention, or that I heard
the report of some not worthy of credit, I will say nothinge but
that whych hymselfe did tell me, when in your absence he bled my
company. He sware vnto me without declaration of the cause,
that hee coule neuer bee mery, nor hys mynde in rest, befoze hee

The Countesse of Celant,

saw you cut in pieces, and shortly would giue you such assault,
 as all the dapes of our lyfe, you shoulde neuer haue lust or mynde
 on Ladies loue. And albeit then, I was in choller against you, &
 that you had ministred some cause, and reason of hatred, yet our
 first loue had taken such force in my hart, and I besought him not
 to do that enterpryse, so long as I was in place, where you did re-
 mayne, because I cannot abide (wpythout present death) to see your
 finger ake, much lesse your lyfe berieued from you. Vnto which
 my sute his Care was deafe, swearing still and protestyng that ei-
 ther he would be slayne himselfe, or else dispatch the Countee Ar-
 dizzino. I durst not (quod she) ne weI could as then aduertise you
 thereof, for the smal accesse y^e my seruants had vnto your lodgyng,
 but now I pray you to take good heede by preuentinge his dis-
 like purpose. For better it were for you to take his lyfe, than he
 to kill, and murder you, or otherwysely woꝝk you mischief, and you
 shall be esteemed the wiser man, and he pronounced a traptoꝝ to
 seeke the death of him, that bare hym such good will. Doe then
 accordyng to myne aduice, and befoze he begin, doe you kill hym,
 by the which you shall saue your selfe, and doe the part of a valy-
 aunt knight, besides the satisfyng of the mynde of hir that aboue
 all pleasures of the World doth chiefly desire the same. Experience
 now will let me proue whether you loue me or not, and what you
 will do for hir that loueth you so dearely, who openeth this con-
 spired murder, aswell for your safety, as for lengthening of the lyfe
 of hir, which wpythout yours cannot endure. Graunt this my sute
 (O friend most deare) and suffer me not in sorrowfull plight to
 be despoyled of thy presence. And wilt thou suffer that I shoulde
 dy, and that ponder Proude, Trayterous, and vnfaithfull barlet
 should liue to laugh mee to scoꝝne? If the Lady had not added
 those last woꝝds to hir foolish sermon, perchance she might haue
 prouoked Ardizzino to folow hir Counsell: but seeing hir so ob-
 stinately continue hir request, and to prosecute the same with such
 violence, concluding vpon hir owne quarell, his conscience throb-
 bed, and his minde measured the malice of that Woman, with the
 honesty of him, against whom y^e tale was told, who knew his frend
 to be so

to be so sound and trusty, as willingly he would not do the thinge that should offend him, and therefore would geue no credit to false report without good, and apparant pꝛoofe. For which cause hee was perswaded that it was a malicious tale deuised by some that went about to sowe debate betweene those two frendly Earles.

Notwithstanding vpon further pause, and not to make hir chafe, or force hir into rage, he promised the execution of hir cursed wil, thanking hir for hir aduertisement, and that he would pꝛouide for hys defence and surety. And to the intent that shee might thincke he went about to perfoꝛme his promise, he tooke his leaue of hir to goe to Millan, which hee did, not to follow the abhominable will of that rauenous Wastife, but to reueale the matter to his companion, and direct the same as it deserued. Being arrined at Millan, the chiefe Citty of Lombardy, he imparted to Caiazzo from poynt to poynt the discourse of the Countesse, and the petition shee made vnto hym, vppon the conclusion of hir Tale.

O God (sayd the Lord Sanseuerino,) who can beware the traps of Whoores, if by thy grace our hands be not forbidden, and our hearts, and thoughts guided by thy goodnes? Is it possible that the Earth can bꝛede a Monster more pernicious than this most Pestilent Beast? Thys is truly the grist of hir Fathers vsury, and the stench of all hir Predecessours villanies. It is impossible of a Kyte or Cormorant to make a good Sparhawk, or Terle gentle. This carion no doubt is the Daughter of a Wilayne, sprung of the basest race amongs the common people, whose mother was more fine than chaste, more subtle than sober. This minion hath forsake hir husband, to erect bloudy Shaffoldes of murder amid the Nobles of Italy. And were it not for the dishonour which I should get to soyle my hands in the bloude of a Beast so corrupt, I would teare hir with my Teeth in a hundred Thousand peeces. How many times hath she entreated mee before: in how many sundry sortes with toynd handes hath shee besought mee to kill the Lorde Ardizzino? Ah my Companion, and right will beloued freende, can you thincke mee to bee so Trayterous, and Cowarde a Ranae, as that I dare not tell to them to whom I beare displeasure, what mallice lurketh in my heart?

The Countesse of Celant.

By the sayth of a Gentleman (sayd Ardizzino,) I would be soze
my mynde should seaze on such Folly, but I am come to reucale
thys vnto you, that the Seng might sound no moze wpyhin myne
eares. It behoueth vs then, sith God hath kept vs hitherto, to a-
boyde the aye of that infection, that our byaynes be not putrified,
and from hencefozth to fly those Bloudsuckers, the Schollers of
Venus. And truely great dishour would redound to vs, to kill one
an other for the onely pastime and sottish fanle of that mynton. I
haue repented me an hundred times when she first mooued mee of
the deuice to kill you, that I did not geue a hundred Poignala-
does wpyth my Dagger, to stop the way by that example for all o-
ther to attempt such Butcheries. For I am well assured that the
mallice whych she beareth you, proceedeth but of the delay you
made for satisfaction of hir murderous desire, whereof I thanke
you, and yelde my selfe in all causes to imploy my lyfe, and that I
haue, to do you service. Leauw we of that talke (sayd Gaiazzo) for
I haue done but my duety, and that whych ech Noble heart ought
to euery wight doing wrong to none, but prone to helpe, and doe
good to all. Whych is the true marke and Wadge of Nobility.
Touching that malignant Strumpet, hir owne lyfe shall reuenge
the wrongs whych she hath gone about to venge on vs. In meane
whyle let vs reioyce, and thincke the goods, and richesse she hath
gotten of vs, wil not cause hir Wagges much to serout a Swel.
To be short, she hath nothing whereby she may greatly laugh vnto
scozne, except our good entertainmet of hir night, a day do prouoke
hir. Let other coyne the pence hencefozth to fill hir Coasers, for of
vs so (farre as I see) she is deceyued. Thus the two Lordes pas-
sed forth their tyme, and in all Companies where they came, they
spent their Talke, and Communication of the disordered lyfe of
the Countesse of Celant. The whole Citty also rang of the sleights
and meanes she vsed to trappe the Noblemen, and of hir pollicies
to be rid of them when hir thirst was stanchd, or diet grew loth-
some for want of change. And y whych greued hir most, an Italya
Epigra blased forth hir prowes to hir great dishonour, whereof
Cope I cannot get, and some say that Ardizzino was the author,

For it was composed, when he was dispossessed of patience. And if shee could haue wreaked hir will on the Knights, I beleue in hir rage she would haue made an Anathomy of their Bones. Of which hir two enemies Ardizzino was the greatest, agaynst who hir displeasure was the moze, for that he was the first with whom she entered skirmish. Nothing was moze frequent in Pauy, than villanous Jestes, and Blazes vppon the filthy Behaviour of the Countesse, which made hir ashamed to goe out of her Gates. In the ende shee purposed to chaunge the Wyze and place, hoping by that alteration to stay the Infamous Write, and Slander. So she came to Millan, where first she was inuested wth state of Honour, in honest Fame of Chaste life so longe as Vicount Hermes liued, and then was not pursued to slaunch the thirst of those that did ordinarily draw at hir Fountayne.

About the tyme that she departed from Pauy, Dom Pietro de Cardone a Scicilian the Bastard Brother of the Counte of Coslino, whose Lieutenant he was, and their father slayn at the Battayle of Bicocca wth a band of horsemen arrivd at Milan. This Scicilian was about the age of one or two and twenty yeres somewhat black of face, but well made and sterne of countenance. Whiles the Countesse sojourned at Milan, this Gentleman fell in loue with hir, and searched all meanes he could to make hir hys friende, and to enioy hir. Who perceyuing him to be young, and a flouice in Skirmishes of Loue, like a Pigeon of the first coate, determined to lure him, and to serue hir turne in that which shee purposed to doe on those agaynst whom shee was outrageously offended. Now the better to entice this younge Lorde vnto her fantasie, and to catch hym wth hir Bayte, when hee passed through the Streete, and saluted hir, and when he syghed after the manner of the Spaniard, rominge befoze hys Lady, shee shewed him an indifferent merry Countenance, and sodaynely restrained hys Cheere, to make hym taste the Pleasure mingled with hys soure of one desire, which he could not tel how to accomplish. And the moze saynt was his hardines for hys he was neuer practised in falsitie & service of Lady of noble house or calling, who thincking

The Countesse of Celant,

that Gentleman was one of the Principall of Millan, he was
straungely vexed, and tormented for his loue, in such wise as in
the night he could not rest for fantasie, and thinkinge vpon his
and in the Day passed by and downe before the Dooze of her
lodging. One eueninge for his dispozt hee went forth to walke in
company of another Gentleman, which well could play vpon the
Lute, and desired him to giue awake vnto hys Lady, that then
for Jealousie was harkeninge at his window, both of the sounde
of the Instrument, and the Dittie of his amorous Knight, where
the Gentleman song this Sonet.

THe death with trenchant dart, doth brede in brest such il,
As I cannot forget the smart, that thereby riseth stil,
Yet neerthelesse I am, the ill it selfe in deede, (breede,
That death with daily dolours deepe, within my brest doth

*I am my Mistresse thrall, and yet I doe not know,
If she beare me goodwill at all, or if she loue or no.
My wound is made so large, with bitter wo in brest,
That still my heart prepares a place to lodge a carefull guest.*

*O Dame that hath my lyfe and death at thy desire. (fire,
Come ease my minde, wher fancies flames doth burne like Ethna
For wanting thee my life is death and doleful cheere,
And finding fauour in thy sight, my dayes are happy heere.*

Then he began to sigh so terribly, as if already he had geuen
sentence, and disinitiuie Iudgement of his farewell, and disputed
with his fellow in such sort, and with Opinion so assured of hys
contempt, as if he had bene in loue with some one of the Infantes
of Spayne,

of Spayne. For which cause he began very pitifully to sing these
Verses.

T HAI God that made my soule, & knows what I haue felt,
Who causeth sighes and sorowes oft, the sely soule to swelt,
Doth see my torments now, and what I suffer still,
And understands I tast mo griefs, than I can shew by skill.

Hee doth consent I wot, to my ill hap and woe,
And hath accorded with the dame that is my pleasaunt foe,
To make my boyling brest abound in bitter blisse,
And so bereue me of my rest, when heart his hope shall misse.

O what are not the songs, & sighs that louers haue, (grane,
Whē night and day with sweete desires, they draw vnto their
Their grief by friendship growes, where ruth nor pity raynes,
And so like snow against the Sun, they melt away with pains.

My dayes must finish so, my destiny hath it set,
And as the candle out I goe, before hir grace I get.
Before my sute be heard, my seruice thoroughly knowne,
I shal be layd in Tounbe ful low, so colde as Marble stone.

To thee fayre Dame I cry, that makes my senses arre,
And plaicest peace within my brest & then makes sodain war.
Let at thy pleasure still, thou must my sowre make sweete,
In granting me the fauour due, for faythfull Louers meete.
which

The Countesse of Celant.

*Which fauor giuen me now, and to thy Noble mynde,
I doe remayne a Galley slaue, as thou by prooffe shalt finde.
And so thou shalt release my heart from cruell bandes,
And haue his freedom at thy wil that yelds into thy handes.*

*So rendring all to thee, the Gods may ioine vs both (trist,
Within one lawe and league of loue, through force of constat
Then shalt thou mistresse be, of lyfe, of Limme and all,
My goods, my golde, and honour loe! shall so be at thy call.*

Thys gentle order of loue greatly pleased the Lady, and there-
fore opened hir Gate to let the Scicilian Loyde, who seeing hym
selfe fauoured (beyond all hope) of his Lady, and cheerefully in-
tertayned, and welcommed with great curtesie stode so still aston-
nied, as if hee had bene fallen from the Cloudes. But she which
coude teache hym good manner, to make hym the Minister of his
myschiefe, takinge hym by the hande, made hym sit downe vpon
a greene Bed besydes hir, and seeing that he was not yet imboldes-
ned, for all hee was a Shoulour, she shewed hir selfe more har-
dy than hee, and firste assayed hym with talke, sayinge: Sir,
I praye you thinke it not straunge, if at this houre of the nyght,
I am bolde to cause you enter my house, beinge of no greate ac-
quayntaunce with you, but by hearinge your curteous saluta-
tions: And wize of this Countrey bee somewhat more at liberty
than they in those partes from whence you come. Besides it ly-
keth mee well (as I am able) to honour straunge Gentlemen, and
to retayne them with right good willinge heart, Alth it pleaseth
them to honour mee with repayre vnto my house: so shall you be
welcome still when you please to knocke at my Gate, whych at all
tymes I will to be opened for you, with no lesse good will than
if yet were my naturall Brother, the same with all the thinges
therein, it may please you to dispose as if they were your owne.
Pom. Pietro of Cardoane well satisfied, and contented with
this

they vnlooked for kyndnesse, thanked her very Courteously,
 humbly praying hir besides to dayne it in good parte, if he were so
 bolde to make requeste of loue, and that it was the onely thinge
 which hee aboue all ether, desired moste, so that if shee would re-
 ceue him for hir friende and Seruaunt, shee shoulde vnderstande
 him to be a Gentleman, which lightly woulde promise nothing ex-
 cepte the accomplishment did followe: she that sawe a greater onset
 than she looked for, answered hym smiling with a very good grace:
 Sir I haue knowne very many that haue deached Cupperie pro-
 mises, and proffered lordly seruices vnto Ladies, the effect wherof
 if I might once see, I would not thinke that they could vanishe so
 soone, and consume like smoake. Madame (sayde the Scicilian) yf
 I sayle in any thing which you commaunde mee, I praye to God
 neuer to receiue any fauor or grace of those Curtelles which I
 craue: If then (quod shee) you wyl promise to employ your selfe a-
 bout a businesse that I haue to do when I make request, I wyl
 also to accept you for a friende, and graunt such secrecie as a faith-
 ful loue can desire of his Lady. Don Pietro which would haue
 offered hym selfe in Sacrifice for hir, not knowyng hir demaunde,
 tooke an othe, and promised hir so lightly as madly after wardes
 he did put the same in prooofe. Beholde the preparatiues of the ob-
 sequies of their first loue, and the guages of a bloudie Wed: the
 one was prodigall of hir honour, the other the torment of his re-
 putation, and neglected the duety and honor of his State, which the
 house wherof he came, commaunded hym to kepe.

Thus all the while he remained with Bianca Maria, who made
 him so wel to like hir good entertaynement and imbracements, as
 he neuer was out of hir Company. And the waric Circea sayned
 her self so fare in loue with hym, and vsed so many toyes and game-
 tricks of her filthy science, as he not onely esteemed hym selfe the
 happiest Gentleman of Scicilia, but the most fortunate wight of all
 the Worlde, and by bibbing of hir Wyne was so straungely char-
 med with the Pleasures of his sape Wyf, as for hir sake he
 would haue taken vpon him the whole ouerthrowe of Milan, so
 he was Bloke of Cumes to sette the Citie of Rome on fire.

if Ty.

If Tyberius Gracchus the sedicious, would haue giuen it him in charge. Such is the manner of wilde, and foolish youth, whych suffreth it selfe to be caried beyonde the boundes of reason. The same in time past did ouerthrow many Realmes, and caused the chaunge of diuers Monarchies. And truely vnseemely it is for a man to be subdued to the will of a common Strumpet. And as it is vncome to submit him selfe to such one, so not requisite to an honest and vertuous Dame, his married Wyfe. Which vnruly deedes, be occasions that diuers foolish Women commit such filthy factes, with their inspekeable trumperies begiling the simple man, and perchance through to much losing the Wilde raynes to the lawfull Wyfe, the poore man is strangely decepued by some adulterous barlet, whych at the Wifes commaundement, when she seeth oportunitie, will not shyinke to hazarde the honour of them both; in such wise as they serue for an example vppon a common Scaffold to a whole generation and Posterity. I will not seeke farre of for examples, being satisfied with the folly of the Barlet Cardonne, to please the cruelty and malice of that infernall fury the Countesse, who hauinge lulled, flattered, and bewitched with hir louetricks (and peraduenture with some charmed drinke) her new Pigeon, seeinge it time to sollicite his promise, to be reuenged of those, whych thought no more of hir Conspiracies and traitorous deuises, and also when the time was come for punishinge of hir Whoredome, and chastising of the breach of fayth made to hir husbände, and of hir intended murders, and some of them put in execution, she I say, desirous to see the ende of that, which she thought she had contriued, vppon a day tooke Dom Pietro aside, and secretly began this Oratton: I take God to witnes (sir) that the request which I pretend presently to make, proceedeth of desire rather that the Worlde may know how iustly I seeke meanes to maintayne myne honour, than for desire of reuenge, knowinge very well, that there is nothing so precious, and deere vnto a woman, as the preservation of that inestimable Jewell, specially in a Lady of that honourable degre whych I maintayne amonge the best. And to the intent I seeme not Tedious with prolixity of words, or vse other than direct circumstances befoze him that hath offered

offered lust reuenge for the wrongs I haue receyued: Knowe you
 Sir, that for a certain tyme I continued at Paue, keepinge a house
 and Trayne so honest, as the best Lords were contented with
 myne ordinarie: It chaunced that two honest Gentlemen of No-
 ble House haunted my Palace in lyke sort, and with the same in-
 tertainment whych as you see, I doe receiue ech Gentleman, who
 beyng well intreated and honoured of me, in the ende forgot them-
 selues so farre, as without respect of my state and callinge, with-
 out regard of the race and family wherof they come, haue attem-
 pted the slaunder of my good name, and bitter subuersion of my re-
 noume: and sufficient it was not for them thus to deale with mee
 pooze Gentlewoman, without desert (excepte it were for admyt-
 ting them to haue access vnto my house) but also to continue their
 Blasphemies, to myne extreame reproach and shame: and howe
 true the same is, they that know me can well declare, by reason
 whereof, the vulgar people prone and ready to wicked reportes,
 haue conceiued such oppynion of me, as for that they see me braue
 and fine in Apparell, and specially throughe the slaundersous
 speache of those gallantes, do deteme and repute me for a common
 Whore, wherof I craue none other wptnesse than your selfe and
 my conscience. And I sweare vnto you, that sith I came to Mila,
 it is you alone that hath vanquished, and made the Triumphe of
 my Chastitye. And yf you were absent from this Citie, I as-
 sure you on my faith that I would not tarry heere, xxiij. houres.
 These infamous ruffians I say, these persecuters and termagants
 of my good name, haue chased mee out of all good Cityes, and
 made me to be abhoyred of ech honest company, that weare I am
 of my lyfe, and lothe to lyue any longer except spedye redress be
 had for reuengement of thys wronge. Wherefore except I finde
 some Noble Champion and Walpaunte Personage to requyte
 these Wyllyains for their spitefull Speech blased on me in euery
 Corner, of Towne and Countrey end to paye them theyr re-
 warde and hire that I may lyue at Libertye and quyet, Soz-
 rowe well eether consume mee or myne owne Handes shall
 hasten spedye Death. And in speakyng those Wordes, she be-
 ganne to weepe with such abundance of teares streaming downe
 hir

The Countesse of Celant.

hir Cheekes, & Pecke of Alabaſter hewe, as the Scicilian whych
 almoſt had none other God but the Counteſſe, ſayd vnto hir: And
 what is he, that dare moleſt and ſlaunder hir that hath in hir pur
 ſuance ſo many ſouldiers and men of Warre? I make a vow
 to God, that if I know the names of thoſe two arrant vilaynes,
 the whiche haue ſo defamed my Wyſeſſe name, the whole worlde
 ſhall not ſaue their liues, whoſe carrton Bodieſ I will hew into
 ſo many gobbets, as they haue Members vpon the ſame. Where
 foze Madame (ſayd he, embracing hir) I pray you to grieue your
 ſelfe no more, commit your wronges to me, only tell me the names
 of thoſe Gallantes, and afterwards you ſhall vnderſtande what
 difference I make of woozde and deeſe, and if I doe not trimme
 and dzeſſe them ſo ſinely, as hereafter they ſhall haue no neede of
 Barber, neuer truſt me any more. Shhee, as reuiued from death to
 lyfe, kiſſed and embraced him a thouſande tymes, thankinge hym
 for his good will, and offering him all that he had. In the ende
 he tolde him that hir enemies were the Countieſ of Maſſino, and
 Gaiazzo, which but by theyr death alone were not able to amend
 and repaize hir honour. Care not you (ſayde hee) for befoze that
 the Sunne ſhall ſpreade his Beames twice. 24. houres vpon the
 Earth, you ſhall heare newes, and know what I am able to do for
 the chaſtiſement of thoſe Drulls. As he promiſed, hee ſayled not to
 do: for wythin a while after, as Ardizzino was goinge to ſup
 per into the Citty, he was eſpyed by hym, that had in company at
 tendaut vppon hym foue and twenty men of Armes, which wait
 ed for Ardizzino, in a Lane on the left hand of the Streete called
 Merauegli, leading towards the church of Sanct Iames, through
 which the Counteſſe muſt needes paſſe. Who as he was going be
 ry pleaſantly diſpoſed with his Brother, and 5. or 6. of his men,
 was immediatly aſſayled on euery ſide, and not knowinge what
 it ment, woulde haue fled, but the Wayes, and Paſſages
 were ſtopped rounde aboute: To defende himſelfe it awayled
 led not hauing but their ſingle Swords, and amid the troupe of
 ſutch a bande that were thoroughly armed, which in a moment had
 murdred, and cut in peeces all that company. And although it was
 late, yet the Countieſ Ardizzino many times named Don Pietro,
 which

which caused hym to be taken, & imprisoned by the Duke of Bourbon, that was fled out of Fraunce, and then was Lieutenaunt for the Emperour Charles the fifth in Milan. Whoseuer was astonned and amazed with that Imprisonment, it is to bee thoughte that the Scicilian was not greatly at his ease and quiet, who needed no tormentis to force him confesse the fact, for of his owne accord he voluntarily he disclosed the same, but he sayde he was prouoked therunto by the perswasion of Bianca Maria telling h^e whole discourse as you haue heard before. She had already intelligence of this chaunce, and might haue fled and saued hir selfe before the fact (by the confession of Dom Pietro) had ben discovered, and attended in some secrete place till that stormie time had bene calmed and appeased. But God which is a rightfull iudge would not suffer hir wickednesse stretch any further, Altho she hauing found out such a nimble and willful executioner, the Countee of Gaiaza could not long haue remained aloue, who then in good time and happy houre was absent out of the City. So soone as Dom Pietro had accused the Countesse, the Lord of Bourbon sente hir to prison, and being examined, confessed the whole matter, trustinge that hir infinite numbre of Crownes would haue corrupted the Duke, or those that represented his person. But hir Crownes, & Lye passed all one way. For the day after hir imprisonment shee was condemned to lose hir heade: And in the meane time Dom Pietro was saued, by the diligence and suite of the Captaynes, & was employed in other Warres, to whom the Duke gaue him, for that he was lothe to lose so notable a Shouldour, the very right hand of his Brother the Countee of Colisano. The Countesse having sentence pronounced vpon hir, but trusting for pardon, would not prepare hir selfe to dy, ne yet by any meanes craue forgiveness of hir faultes at the hands of God, vntill she was coneyed out of the Castell, and ledde to the common place of execution, where a Scaffolde was prepared for hir to play the last Acte of this Tragedy. Then the miserable Lady began to know hirselfe, and to confesse hir faultes before the people, deuoutly praying God, not to haue regard to hir demerites, ne yet to determine his wrath against hir, or enter with hir in iudgement, for so much as if the same

The Countesse of Celant.

same were decreed accordinge to hir iniquity, no saluation was to be looked for. She besought the people to pray for hir, and the Countre of Gaiazzo that was absent, to pardon hir malice, and treason which she had deuised agaynst him. Thus miserably, & repentantly dyed the Countesse, which in hir lpe refused not to intembrace and follow any wickednes, no mischichtefe shee accounted & will done, so the same were implored for hir pleasure, and pastime. A goodly example truely for the youth of our present time, Alth the most part indifferently do launch into the gulfe of disordred lpe, suffering themselves to bee plunged in the puddles of their owne bayne conceiptes, without consideration of the mischieues that may ensue. If the Lord of Cardonne had not bene beloued of his generall, into what calamity had he fallen for yeldinge himselfe a pray to that bloudy Woman who had moze regarde to the light, and wilfull fanle of hir, whom he serued like a slaue, than to his duety and estimation? And truely all such be boyde of their right wits, which thincke themselves beloued of a Whooze. For their amity endureth no longer, than they sucke from their purses, and bodie any profit or pleasure. And because almost euery day semblable examples be seene, I will leaue of this discourse, to take me to a matter, not farre moze pleasaunt than this, although founded vpon better grounde, and stablished vpon loue, the first onset of lawfull mariage, the successe whereof, chaunted to murderous ende, and yet the same intended by neyther of the beloued: As you shall be iudge by the continuance of reading of the history ensuing. Beare with me good Ladies (for of you alone I craue this pardon) for introducing the Whoozish lpe of the Countesse, and hir bloudy enterpryse: because I know right wel, that recitall of murders, and bloudy facts wearieth the mindes of those that loue to lpe at rest, & wish for fayre weather after the troublesome stormes of raging Seas, no lesse than the Pilote and wise Hartner, hauing long time endured and cut the perillous stracts of the Ocean Sea. And albeit the corruption of our nature be so great, as follies delighte vs moze than earnest matters fraught wth reason and wisdom, yet I thinke not that our mindes be so peruerced & disuised from trouth, but sometimes wee care and seeke to speake
moze

more grauely than the countrey Mende, or more soberly than they, whose lyes do beare the marke of infamy, and be to euery wight notations for the onely name of their vocation. Sufficeth vs that an Epitome, be it neuer so full of spoyle and pleasure, do bring with it instruction of our lye, and amendement of our maners. And wee ought not to be so curious or scrupulous, to select merry and pleasant deuises that be boide of harmful talke, or without such glee as may hynder the education of Youth proficue, and ready to choose that is corrupt, and naught. The very bookes of holy scriptures doe describe vnto vs persons that bee vicious, and so detestable as nothing more, whose factes vnto the simple may seeme vnseemely, vpon the least recitall of the same. And shall wee therefore select the readings, and eschue those holy bookes? God forbid, but with diligence to beware, that we do not resemble those that be remembred there for example, forsomuch as speedely after time, ensueth grieuous, and as sodayne punishment. For which cause I haue selected these Epitomes, of purpose to aduertise Youth, how they that follow the way of damnable iniquity, sayle not shortly after their great offences, and execution of their outragious vices, to feele the iust, and mighty hand of God, who guerdoneth the good for their good works, and deedes, and rewardeth the euil for their wickednes, and mischete. Now turne we then to the Epitome.

Epitome of two, the rarest Louers that euer were, the perforce.

maunce, and finishing whereof, had it bene so

prosperous as the beginning, they had

toped topfully the fruits of

their intent, and two no-

ble houses of one City

reconciled to perpe-

tuall frend-

ship.

Z.

Rhomeo

Rhomeo, and Iulietta.

The goodly Hyſtory of the true, and conſtant Loue betweene *RHOMEO* and *IULIETTA*, the one of whom died of Poyſon, and the other of ſorrow, and heuineſſe: wherein be compyled many aduentures of Loue, and other deuifes touchinge the ſame.

The XXV. Nouell.



Am ſure that they which measure the Greatneſſe of Goddes workes accordinge to the capacity of their Rude, and ſimple vnderſtandinge, will not lightly adhibite credite vnto this Hiſtory, ſo wel for the variety of ſtraunge Accidents which be therein deſcribed, as for the nouelty of ſo rare, and perfect amittie. But they that haue read Plinie, Valerius Maximus, Plutarche, and diuers other Wryters, do finde, that in olde time a great number of Men, and Women haue died, ſome of exceſſiue ioy, ſome of ouermuch ſorrow, and ſome of other paſſions: and amongſt the ſame, Loue is not the leaſt, which when it ſeazeth vppon any kynde and gentle Subiect, and findeth no reſiſtaunce to ſerue ſo a rampart to ſtay the violence of his courſe, by little, & little vndermineth melteth and conſumeth the vertues of naturall powers in ſuch wyſe as the ſpyrite preadinge to the burden, abandoneth the place of life: Which is verified by the pittifull, and infortunate death

death of two Lovers that surrendered their last Breath in one
 Coumbe at Verona a Citty of Italy, wherein repose yet to this
 day (with great maruell) the Bones, and remmauntes of their
 late louing bodie: A hystory no lesse wonderfull than true. If
 then perticular affection which of good right euery man ought to
 heare to the place where he was borne, doe not deceyue those that
 traualle, I thincke they will confesse wth me, that few Citties in
 Italy, can surpasse the sayd Citty of Verona, aswell for the pa-
 uigable riuer called Adissa, which passeth almost through the midd
 of the same, and thereby a great trasque into Almayne, as also for
 the prospect towards the fertile Mountaynes, and pleasant Vils-
 lers which do enuiron the same, with a great number of very clere
 and lyuely Fountaynes, that serue for the ease and commoditie of
 the place. Omittinge (besides many other singularities) foure
 Brydges, and an infinite number of other honourable Antiquities
 dayly apparaunt vnto those, that be to curious to viewe and looke
 vpon them. Which places I haue somewhat touched, because
 this most true Hystory which I purpose hereafter to recite, depen-
 deth thereupon, the memory whereof to this day is so wel known
 at Verona, as vnneths their blabbed Eyes, be yet day that saw &
 beheld that lamentable sight.

When the Senior Escala was Lorde of Verona, there were two
 families in the Citty, of farre greater fame than the rest, aswell
 for riches as Nobility: the one called the Montescos, and the o-
 ther the Capellers: But lyke as most commonly there is discorde
 amongs them which be of semblable degree in honour, even so
 there hapned a certayne enmity betweene them: and for so much
 as the beginning thereof was vnlawfull, and of ill foundation, so
 lykewise in proceste of time it kindled to such flame, as by diuers
 and sundry deuises practised on both sides, many lost their liues.
 The Lord Bartholmevv of Escala, (of whom we haue already spo-
 ken) being Lord of Verona, and seeinge such disorder in his co-
 mon weate, assayed diuers and sundry waies to reconcile those two
 houses, but all in vayne: for their hatred, had taken such roote,
 as the same could not be moderated by any wyse counsell or good
 aduice: betwene whom no other thing could be accorded, but ge-
 uing ouer

using ouer Armour, and Weapon for the time, attending some o-
 ther season more conuenient, and with better leysure to appease the
 rest: In the time that these thinges were adoeing, one of the fami-
 ly of Montefehes called Rhomeo, of the age of. 20. 02. 21. yeares,
 the comliest and best conditioned Gentleman that was amonges
 the Veronian youth, fell in loue with a yong Gentlewoman of Ve-
 rona, and in few dapes was attached with hir Beauty, and good
 behauiour, as he abandoned all other affaires, & business to serue,
 honour hir. And after many Letters, Ambassadors, and presents,
 he determined in the ende to speake vnto hir, and to disclose hys
 passions, which he did without any other practise. But she which
 was vertuously brought vp, knew how to make him so good an-
 swere to cut of his amorous affections, as he had no lust after
 that time to returne any moze, and shewed hir selfe so austere, and
 sharpe of Speech, as she vouchsafed not with one looke to behold
 him. But how much the yong Gentleman saw hir whilst, and si-
 lent, the moze he was inflamed: And after he had continued cer-
 tayne months in that seruice without remedy of his griefe, he de-
 termined in the ende to depart Verona, for prooue if by chaunge
 of the place he might alter his affection, saying to himselfe. What
 do I meane to loue one that is so unkinde, and thus doth disdain
 me, I am all hir owne, & yet she flieth from me. I can no longer liue,
 except hir presence I doe enioy: and she hath no contented mynde,
 but when shee is furthest from me. I will then from henceforth
 Graunge my selfe from hir, for it may so come to passe by not be-
 holding hir, that thys fire in me which taketh increase and nourish-
 ment by hir sayde Eyes, by little, and little may be quenched. But
 minding to put in prooue what he thought, at one instant hee was
 reduced to the contrary, who not knowing whereupon to resolute,
 passed dapes and nights in maruelous Disayres, and Lamenta-
 tions. For Loue vexed him so neare, and had so well fixed the gen-
 tlewoman's Beauty within the Bowels of his heart, and mynde,
 as not able to resist, hee fainted with the charge, and consumed by
 little, and little as the Snow agaynst the Sunne. Whereof hys
 Parentes, and Kinned did manvuple greatly, bewaylinge hys
 misfortune,

misfortune, but aboue all other one of hys Companions o-
 riper Age, and Counsell than hee, began sharplie to rebuke
 hem. For the loue that he bare him was so great as hee felt hys
 Martirdom, and was pertaker of hys passion: which caused him
 by ofte viewyng his friends disquietnesse in amorous panges, to
 say thus vnto him: Rhomeo I maruell much that thou spendest
 the best time of thine age, in pursute of a thing, from which thou
 seest thy self despised and banished, wtyhout respecte either to thy
 prodigall dispense, to thine honor, to thy teares, or to thy miserable
 life, which be able to moue the most constant to pity. Wherefore I
 pray thee for the Loue of our auncient amity, and for thyne health
 sake, that thou wilt learn to be thine owne man, and not to alienat
 thy libertie to any so ingrate as she is: for so farre as I coniecture
 by thyngs that are passed betwene you, either she is in loue wtyh
 some other, or else determineth neuer to loue any. Thou arte
 yong, rich in goods and fortune, and moze excellent in beauty than
 any Gentleman in thy Cytie: thou art well learned, and the onely
 sonne of the house wherof thou comest. What grefe would it bee
 to thy pooze olde Father and other thy parentes, to see the so drow-
 ned in this Dungeon of Wyce, specially at that age wherein thou
 oughtest rather to put them in some Hope of the Vertue? Begyn
 then from henceforth to acknowledge thyne Erroze, wherein thou
 hast hitherto lured, doe away that amorous baile or couerture
 which blindeth thyne Eyes and letteth thee to folow the reghyte
 path, wherein thyne auncestors haue walked: or else if thou do, feele
 thy selfe so subiect to thyne owne will, yelde thy hearte to some o-
 ther place, and chose some Distresse accordyng to thy worthynesse,
 and henceforth doe not sow thy Paynes in a Soyle so barrayne
 wherof thou reapest no fructe: the tyme approcheth when al
 the Dames of the Cytie shal assemble, where thou mayst behold
 such one as shall make the forget thy former Grefes. Thy
 younge Gentleman attentuely hearyng all the persuadeng rea-
 sons of hys Frend, began somewhat to moderate that Heate
 and to acknowledge all the exhortatyonz which hee had made
 to be directed to good purpose, And then determined to put them

Rhomeo and Iulietta

In al the feasts and assemblies of the City, without bearing affecti-
on more to one Man than to an other. And continued in this
manner of Lyfe . ii . 03 . 11. Montres, thinking by that meanes to
quench the sparks of ancient flames. It chanced the within few
dayes after, about the feast of Chrysmales, when feasts and ban-
kets most commonly be held, and maskes accordinge to the cus-
tome frequented: that Anthony Capellet being the Chief of that
familie, and one of the Principall Lords of the City too, made
a banquet and for the better Solempnization thereof, invited all the
Noble men and dames, to which feast resorted the most parte of
the youth of Verona. The family of the Capellais (as we have de-
clared in the beginnunge of this History) was at variance with the
Monteschis, which was the cause that none of that family repai-
red to that Banquet, but onely the yong Gentleman Rhomeo,
who came in a Maske after supper with certaine other yong Gen-
tlemen. And after they had remained a certayne space with their
Visards on, at length they did put off the same, and Rhomeo very
chancefull, withdrew himself into a Corner of the Hall: but by rea-
son of the light of the Torches which burned very bright, he was
by and by known and looked vpon of the whole Company, but spe-
cially of the Ladies for besides his faire Beauty wherewith
Nature had adorne him, they marvelled at his audacity how hee
durst presume to enter so secretly into the House of that Familie
which had litle cause to do him any good. Notwithstanding, the
Capellais dissembling their mallice, either for the honoz of the com-
pany, or else for respect of his Age, did not misuse him eithers in
Woordes or Deeds. By meanes whereof with free liberty he beheld
and viewed the Ladies at his Pleasure, which hee dyd so well,
and with grace so good, as there was none but did very well, like
the presence of his person. And after hee had particularly giuen
Iudgement vppon the excellency of each one, according to his af-
fection, hee sawe one Gentlewoman amongst the reste of sur-
passinge Beautye who (although hee had neuer seene her
before) pleased him above the rest, and attributed vnto her in heart
the Chiefest place for all perfection in Beautye. And sta-
nding his incessantly with piteous looks, the Loue which hee
bare

bare to his first Gentlewoman, was ouercomen with this 'newe
 fire, that tooke such nourishment and bigor in his harr, as he was
 not able neuer to quench the same but by Death onely: as you may
 vnderstande by one of the strangest discourses, that euer any mor-
 tal man deuised. The yong Rhomeo then feeling himselfe thus tof-
 sed with this newe Tempest, could not tell what countenance to
 be, but was so surprisid and chaunged with these last flames', as
 he had almost forgotten him selfe, in such wise as he had not auda-
 city to enquire what shee was, and wholly beate himself to feede
 his Eyes with hir sighte, where with hee moistened the sweete a-
 morious venome, which dyd so empoison him, as hee ended his
 Dayes with a kinde of most cruell Death. The Gentlewoman
 that dydde put Rhomeo to such payne, was called Iulietta, and
 was the Daughter of Capeller, the mayster of the house wher that
 assembly was, who as hir Eyes did rolle and wander too and fro,
 by chaunce espied Rhomeo, which vnto hir seemed to be the good-
 liest personage that euer shee sawe. And Loue (which lay in
 waite neuer vntill that time,) assailing the tender heart of that yong
 Gentlewoman, touched hir so at the quicke, as for any resistance
 she coulde make, was not able to defende his Forces, and then be-
 gan to set at naught the ropalties of the feast, and felt no pleasure
 in hir heart, but when she had a glimpse by th'owing or receiuing
 some sight or looke of Rhomeo. And after they had contented eche
 others troubled heart with millions of amorous lookes which of-
 tentimes interchangeably encountred and met together, the bur-
 ning Beames gaue sufficient testimony of loues priuy onsets.
 Loue hauing made the heartes breache of those two louers, as they
 two sought meanes to speake together, Fortune offered them a ve-
 ry meete and apt occasion. A certayne Lord of that Troupe and
 Companie tooke Iulietta by the Hande to Daunce, wherein shee
 behaued hir selfe so well, and with so excellent grace, as shee
 wanne that Daye the prize of Honour from all the Damoisels of
 Verona. Rhomeo, hauinge foreseene the Place whereunto shee
 minded to retire, approached the same, and so discretely v-
 sed the matter, as hee founde the meanes at hir returne

Rhomo and Iulietta

to sit beside hir, Iulietta when the daunce was finished, returned to the very place where she was set before, and was placed betwene Rhomco and an other Gentleman called Mercutio, which was a courtlye Gentleman, very well beloued of all men, and by reason of his pleasaunt and curteous behauior was in euery company well intertayned. Mercutio that was of audacity among Capdens, as a Lyon is among Lambes seized incontinently vpon the Hande of Iulietta, whose hands wontedly were so cold both in Wynter and Sommer as the Mountayne yce, although the fires heat did warme the same. Rhomco whych sat vppon the left side of Iulietta, sernge that Mercutio held hir by the right hand, toke hir by the other that he might not be deceiued of his purpose, and straying the same a little, he felt himself so prest wyth that new fauor, as he remayned mute, not able to aunswer. But she perceyving by his chaunge of coloz, that the fault proceded of the behevience of Loue, desyring to speake vnto hym, turned hir selfe towards hym, and wyth trembling voyce torped with Virginal Chamefascine, intermedled wyth a certayn bashfulnesse, sayd to hym: Blessed be the Houre of your neare approche: but mynding to procede in further talke, loue had so closed vp hir mouth, as she was not able to end hir Tale.

Wherunto the pong Gentleman all rauished with ioy and contentation, sighing, asked hir what was the cause of that ryght Fortunate blessing. Iulietta somewhat more emboldened with ppyful loke and smiling countenance said vnto hym: For do not maruell yf I do blesse your comminge hither, bicause Mr Mercutio a good tyme wyth frosty hand hath wholly frosen mine, and you of your curtesy haue warmed the same agayne. Wherunto immediatly Rhomco replied: Madame if the heauens haue ben so fauorable to employe me to do you some agreeable seruice being repaired hither by chance amongs other Gentlemen, I esteeme the same well bestowed, cragging no greater Benefite for satisfaction of all my contentations receiued in this World, than to serue obey and honoz you so long, as my lyfe doth last, as experience shall yeld more ample prooffe when it shall please you to geue further assaye. Moreouer, if you haue receiued any Heat by touche of my Hand, you may be well assured that those flames be dead in respect of the lyuely Sparkes a violet

violent fire which sorteth from your sayre Eyes, which fire hath so
 fiercely inflamed all the most sensible parts of my body, as If I
 be not succozed by the fauoure of your good graces, I do attend the
 time to be consumed to dust, Scarfe had he made an ende of those
 last Words but the daunce of the Torch was at an end. Whereby
 Iulietta which wholly burnt in loue, straightly clasping her Hand
 wth his, had no leysure to make other aunswere, but softly thus to
 say: My deare friend, I know not what other assured wpticall you
 desire of Loue, but that I let you vnderstand that you be no more
 your own, than I am yours, being ready and disposed to obey you
 so farre as honour shal permyt, beseeching you for the present tyme
 to content your selfe wth this aunswere, vntill some other reason
 meeter to Communicate more secretly of our Affaires. Rhomeo
 seeing himselfe pressed to part of the Company, and for that hee
 knew not by what meanes he myght see hir agayne that was his
 life and Death, demaunded of one of his friends what shee was,
 who made aunswere that she was the daughter of Capeller, the lord
 of the house, and Mayster of that dayes feast (who wroth beyonde
 measure that fortune had set him to so dangerous a place, thought
 it impossible to bring to end his enterpryse begon.) Iulietta coue-
 tous on the other side, to know what yong gentlemā he was which
 had so curiously intertayned hir that nyght, and of whome shee
 felt the new wound in hir heart, called an olde Gentlewoman of ho-
 nor which had nursed hir and brought hir vp, vnto whom she sayd
 leaning vpon hir shoulder: Mother, what two yong Gentlemen be
 they which first goe forth with the two Torchcs before them. Ans-
 to whome the old Gentlewoman told the name of the Houses whers
 of they came. Then she asked hir agayne, what yong Gentleman
 that was which holdeth the visarde in his Hand, wth the Da-
 maske cloke about hym: It is (quod she) Romeo Montescue, the
 sonne of youre Fathers capytall Enemye and deadly foe to all
 your kinne, But the Mayden at the onely Name of Montescue
 was altogether amazed, despayrreng for euer to attayne to
 Husband hir great affectyoned friend Rhomeo, for the auncy-
 ent hatreds betweene those two Families. Neuerthelesse she knewe
 so

Rhomeo and Iulietta

so well how to dissemble hir grief and discontented Minde, as the olde Gentlewoman perceiued nothing, who then began to persuaue hir to retire into hir Chamber: whom she obeyed; and being in bed, thinking to take hir wonted rest, a great tepest of diuers thoughts began to enuiron and trouble hir Minde, in such wise as shee was not able to close hir Eyes, but turninge heere and there, fantasied diuers things in hir thought, sometimes purposed to cut of the whole attempte of that amorous practise, sometimes to continue the same. Thus was the pooore pusill vexed with two contraries, the one comforted hir to pursue hir intent, the other proposed the imminent Perill whereunto vndiscreetly she headlong threw hir self. And after she had wandred of long time in this amorous Labyrinth, she knew not whereuppon to resolute, but wept incessantly, and accused hir self, saying: Ah Caitife and miserable Creature from whence doste these vnaccustomed Trauayles which I feelee in Minde, prouoke mee to loose my rest: but infortunate Wretch, what doe I know if that yong Gentleman doe loue mee as hee sayeth. It may be vnder the baile of sugred woordes he goeth about to steale away mine honore, to be reuenged of my Parentes whych haue offended his, and by that meanes to my euill lastyng reproche to make me the fable of the Verona people.

Afterwardes sodainly as shee condemned that which she suspected in the beginning, sayd: Is it possible that vnder such beauty and rare comelynesse, dyloyaltie and Treason may haue their Syedg and Lodgyng? If it bee true that the face is the faythfull Messenger of the Mindes Conceypte, I may be assured that hee doeth loue mee: for I marked so many chaunged Colours in his Face in tyme of his talke with me, and sawe hym so transported and besides himselfe, as I cannot wythe any other moze certayne lucke of Loue, wherein I wyll perswade my selfe immutable to the laste gaspe of Lyfe, to the intente I may haue hym to bee my husband. For it maye so come to passe, as this newe alliance shall engender a perpetuall peace and Amity betweene hys House and mine. Arrestinge then vpon this determination still, as she saw Rhomeo passe before hir

Mr Fathers Gate, she shewed h'r self with merry Countenance, and followed him so with loke of Eye, vntill she had lost his sight .

And continuing this manner of Lyfe for certayne Daies , Rhomeo not able to content himself with lookes, da'ly did behold and marke the Situation of the house, and one day amongst others hee espied Iulietta at hir Chamber Window, boording vpon a narrow Lane, ryght ouer against which Chamber he had a Gardetn, which was the cause that Rhomeo fearing discouery of their loue, began the day time to passe no moze before the Gate, but so soone as the Night with his browne Mantell had couered the Earth, hee walked alone vp and downe that little Street. And after he had bene there many times, missing the chiefest cause of his coming. Iulietta impatient of hir euill, one night repaired to hir window, & perceived throughte the dzyghynesse of the Moone hir friend Rhomeo vnder hir Window, no lesse attended for, than hee hymselfe was waighing. Then she secretly with Teares in hir Eyes, & wpyth voyce interrupted by sighes, sayd: Signior Rhomeo, me thinke that you hazarde your person to much. And committe the same into great Danger: at thys time of the Nyght, to protrude your self to the Mercy of them which meane you little good. Who yf they had takē would haue cut you in pieces, and mine honoꝝ (which I esteeme dearer than my Lyfe,) hindred and suspected for ever. Hadame answered Rhomeo, my Lyfe is in the Hand of God, who only can dispose the same: howbeyt yf any Man had soughte menes to berpeue mee of my Lyfe, I should (in the p'sence of you) haue made him knownen what mine ability had ben to defend the same. Notwithstandyng Lyfe is not so deare, and of sutch estimation wpyth me, but that I coulde vouchsafe to sacryfice the same for your sake: and althoughe my myshappe had bene so greate, as to bee dysparched in that Place, yet had I no cause to be soyrre therefor, excepte it had bene by losynge the meanes, and way how to make you vnderstande the good wyll and duety which I beare you, despyngge not to conserue the same for anye commoditye that I hope to haue thereby, nor for anye other respects, but onely to Loue, Serue, and Honoꝝ you, so long
as

Rhomeo and Iulietta

as breath shal remaine in me. So soone as he had made an end of his talke, loue and pity began to seaze vpon the heart of Iulietta, & leaning hir head vpon hir hand, hauing hir face all bespient wth teares, she said vnto Rhomeo: **S**he Rhomeo, I pray you not to re-
nue that grief agayne: for the onely Memoire of sutch inconueni-
ence, maketh me to counterpoyse betwene death and Life, my heart
being so vnited with yours, as you cannot receiue the least Iniury
in this world, wherein I shall not be so great a Partaker as your
self: beseeching you for conchlussion, that if you desire your owne
health and mine, to declare vnto me in fewe Wordes what your
determination is to attaine: for if you couet any other secreete thing
at my Handes, more than myne Honour can well allowe, you are
maruelously deceiued: but if your desire be godly, and that the fre-
ship which you protest to beare mee, be founded vppon Vertue,
and to bee concluded by Marriage, receiuing me for your wyfe and
lawfull Spouse, you shall haue sutch part in me, as whereof with-
out any regard to the obedience and reuerence that I owe to my
Parentes, or to the auncient Enmity of oure Families, I will
make you the onely Lord and Master, and of all the thynges that
I possesse, being prest and ready in all payntes to folow your com-
maundement. But if your intent be otherwyse, and thinke to reape
the Fruyts of my Virginitie, vnder pretense of wanton Amity, you
be greatly deceiued, and doe pray you to auoide and suffer me from
henceforth to lyue in rest amongs myne equals. Rhomeo whych
looked for none other thyng holding by his Handes to the Hea-
uens, wth incredible ioy and contentation, answered Madams
for so much as it hath pleased you to doe me that honour to accepte
me for sutch a one, I accorde and consent to your request, and do of-
fer vnto you the best part of my heart, which shall remain with you
for guage and sure testimony of my saying, vntill sutch time as god
shall giue me leaue to make you the entier owner and possessor of
the same: And to the intent I may begin mine enterpryse, to mor-
row I will to the Frier Laurence for counsell in the same, who be-
sides that he is my ghostly father is accustomed to giue me instruc-
tion in al my other secret affaires, and sayle not (if you please) to

meete

weete me agayne in this place at this very hour, to the intent I
 may giue you to vnderstand the deuice betwene him and me, which
 he liked very well, and ended their talke for that time. Rhómeco
 receiuing none other fauour at his hands for that night, but only
 wordes. Thys Fryer Laurence of whom hereafter wee shall
 make moze ample mention, was an auncient Doctor of Diuinity,
 of the order of the Fryers Minores, who besides the happy profes-
 sion which he had made in study of holy writ, was very skilful in
 Philosophy, and a great searcher of natures Secrets, and excee-
 ding famous in Magike knowledge, and other hiddden & secret sci-
 ences, which nothing diminished his reputation, because hee did
 not abuse the same. And this Fryer through his vertue and piety,
 had so well won the citizens hearts of Verona, as he was almost
 the Confessor to them all, and of all men generally reuerenced and
 beloued: And many tymes for his great prudence was called by
 the lordes of y^e Citty, to the hearing of their weighty causes. And a-
 monges other he was greatly fauored by the Lorde of Escalé, that
 was the principall gouernor of Verona, and of all the family of
 Montefches, and of the Capelliers, and of many other. The young
 Rhómeco (as we haue already declared) from his tender age, bare
 a certayne particuler amity to Fryer Laurence, & departed to him
 his secrets, by meanes wherof so soone as he was gone from Iu-
 lietta, went straght to the Fryers Franciscians, where frō pōinct
 to pōinct he discoursed the successe of his loue to that good Father
 and the conclusion of mariage betwene him and Iulietta, adding
 vpon the ende of talke, that hee woulde rather choose shamefull
 death, than to faple his of his promise. To whom the good Fryer
 after he had debated diuers matters, and proposed al the inconue-
 niences of that secret mariage, exhorted hym to moze mature deli-
 beration of the same: notwithstandinge, all the alleged perswas-
 ions were not able to reuoke his promise. Wherefore the Fryer
 vanquished with his stubbornes, & also forecassing in his mynde y^e
 the mariage might be some meanes of reconciliation of those two
 houses, in th'end agreed to his request, intreating him, y^e he myght
 haue one dayes respite for leysure to excogitate what was best to be
 done. But if Rhómeco for his part was carefull to prouide for his
 affayres,

Rhomeo, and Iulietta.

affayres, Iulietta likewise did her indenuour. For seeing that she
had none about her to whom she might discouer hir passions, shee
deuised to impart the whole to hir Nurse which lay in her Cham-
ber, appoynted to waite vppon hir, to whom she committed the
inter secrets of the loue betwene Rhomeo and hir. And although
the olde Woman in the beginninge resisted Iulietta hir intent, yet
in the ende she knew so wel how to persuaide and win hir, that she
promised in all that she was able to do, to be at hir commaundement,
And then she sent hir with all diligence to speake to Rhomeo, and
to know of him by what meanes they might be married, and that
he would do hir to vnderstand the determination betwene Fryer
Laurence and him, Whom Rhomeo answered, how the first day
wherein he had informed Fryer Laurence of the matter, the sayde
Fryer deferred aunswere vntil the next, which was the very same,
and that it was not past one houre Athens he returned with small
resolution, and that Fryer Laurence and he had deuised, that the the
Saturday following, should craue leaue of hir mother to go to con-
fession, and to repayre to the Church of saynt Francis, where in a
certayne Chappell secretly they should be married, praying hir in a
ny wise not to fayle to be there. Which thinge she brought to passe
with such discretion, as hir mother agreed to hir request: and ac-
companied onely with hir gouernesse, and a young mayden, he re-
payred thither at the determined day and tyme. And so soone as
she was entred the Church, she called for the good Docto^r Fryer
Laurence, vnto whom answere was made that he was in the myste-
ring Chappell, and forthwith aduertisement was giuen him of
hir comming. So soone as Fryer Laurence was certified of Iuli-
etta, hee went into the body of the Church, and willed the olde
Woman and yong mayden to go heare seruice, and that when hee
had heard the confession of Iulietta, he would send for them againe.
Iulietta beinge entred a little Cell with Fryer Laurence, he shut
fast the doore as he was wont to do, where Rhomeo & he had bin to-
gether thus fast in, the space of one whole hour before. Then Fryer
Laurence after that he had heard them, sayd to Iulietta: Daugh-
ter, as Rhomeo here present hath certified me, you be agreed, & con-
tented to

minded to take him to husband, and he likewise you for his Spouse
 and Wyfe. Do you now still persist and continue in that mynde?
 The Lovers answered that they desired none other thing. The
 Fryer seeing they were conformed & agreeable willes, after he had dis-
 coursed somewhat vpon the commendation of marriage dignity,
 pronounced the vsuall wordes of the Church, and the hauing re-
 ceived the Ring from Rhomeo, they rose vp before the Fryer, who
 sayd vnto them: If you haue any other thing to conferre together,
 do the same wth speede: For I purpose that Rhomeo shall goe
 from hence so secretly as he can. Rhomeo soze to goe from Iuliet-
 ta sayde secretly vnto hir, that shee shoulde send vnto hym after
 dinner the old Woman, and that he would cause to be made a coz-
 ded Ladder the same euening, thereby to climbe vp to her Chäber
 window, where at moze leisure they would deuise of their affaires.
 Things determined betwene them, either of them rettyred to their
 house wth incredible contētation, attending the happy houre for con-
 summation of their martage. Whē Rhomeo was come home to his
 house, he declared wholly what had passed betwene him and Iuliet-
 ta, vnto a Seruaunt of his called Pietro, whose fidelity he had so
 greatly tryed, as he durst haue trusted him with hys lyfe, and com-
 manded him wth expedition to prouide a Ladder of Cordes
 wth 2. strong Hookes of Iron fastned to both endes, which hee
 easily did, because they were much vsed in Italy. Iulietta did not
 forget in the Euening about siue of the Clocke, to send the old
 Woman to Rhomeo, who hauing prepared all things necessary,
 caused the Ladder to be deliuered vnto her, and prayed hir to re-
 quyre Iulietta the same euening not to fayle to bee at the accus-
 tomed place. But if this Iorney seemed long to these two passioned
 Lovers, let other Iudge, that haue at other tymes assayed the
 lyke: for euery minute of an houre seemed to them a Thousande
 yeres, so that if they had power to commaund the Heauens (as
 Iosias did the Sunne) the Earth had incontynently bene shadowed
 wth darkest Cloudes. The apoynted houre come, Rhomeo put
 on the most sumptuous apparell hee had, and conducted by good
 fortune nere to the place where his heart tooke lyfe, was so fully
 determined of hys purpose, as easily hee clymed by the Garden
 wall.

610
Rhomco, Rhomco, Rhomco
wall. Beinge arrived hard to the Wyndow, he perceyued Iulietta,
who had already so well fastned the Ladder to draw him vp, as
with out any daunger at all, he entred hir chambze, which was so
clere as the day, by reason of the Tapers of virgin Wax, which
Iulietta had caused to be lighted, that she might the better beholde
hir Rhomco. Iulietta for hir part, was but in hir night kerchief,
W. so soone as she perceyued him colled him about the Neck, &
after shee had kissed and re-kissed hym a million of times, began to
embrace hym betwene hir armes, hauing no power to speake vnto
him, but by Sighes onely, holding hir mouth close against his,
and being in this traunce beheld him with pitifull eye, which made
him to liue and die together. And afterwards somewhat come to
hir selfe, she sayd wth sighes deeply fetched from the bottom of hir
heart: Oh Rhomco, the exampler of al vertue & gentleness, most
hartely welcome to this place, wherein for your lacke, & absence, &
for feare of your person, I haue gushed forth so many Teares as I
spring is almost dry: But now that I hold you betwene my armes,
let death & fortune doe what they list. For I count my selfe more
than satisfied of all my sorowes past, by the fauour alone of your
presence: Whom Rhomco with weeping eye, giuing ouer silence
answered: Madams for somuch as I neuer receyued so much
of fortunes grace, as to make you feele by liuely experience what
power you had ouer me, and the torment every minute of the day
sustained for your occasion, I do assure you the least grief that br-
eth me for your absence, is a thousand times more paynfull than
death, which long time of this had cut of the threede of my life, if
the hope of this happy Journey had not bene, which paying me
now the full Tribute of my weepings past, maketh me better con-
tent, and more glad, than if the whole Worlde were at my com-
maundement, beseeching you (without farther memozy of auncient
griefe) to take aduice in tyme to come how we may content our
passionate hearts, and to sozt our affayres with such Wth Rhomco,
and discretion as our enemies without aduantage may let vs con-
tinue the remnant of our daies in rest and quiet. And as Iulietta
was about to make answer, the W^{id}e woman came in the meane
time, & sayd vnto them: He that wasteth time in talke, recovereth
the same

the same to late. But for so much as eether of you hath ended
such mutuall paynes, behold (quoth shee) a campe which I
haue made ready, (shewing them the fildes bed which shee had
prepared and furnished,) whereunto they easly agreed, and being
then betwene the Sheets in priuy bed, after they had gladded and
cherished themselves with al kinde of delicate embracements which
loue was able to deuise. Rhomeo vnloosing the holy lines of vir-
ginity, tooke possession of the place, which was not yet besieged in
such toy and contentation as they can indge which haue assayed like
delites. Their marriage thus consummate, Rhomeo perceiving
the morning make to hasty approach, tooke his leaue, making pro-
mise that he would not sayle wythin a day or two to resort agayne
to the place by lyke meanes, and semblable time, vntill fortune had
prouided sure occasion vnfearfully to manifest their marriage to
the whole Worlde. And thus a month or twayne, they continued
their ioyful mindes to their incredible satisfaction, vntill Lady for-
tune enuious of their prosperitie, turned hir Wheele to tumble the
into such a bottomlesse pit, as they payed hir vsury for their plea-
sures past, by a certayne most cruell and pitifull death, as you shal
vnderstand hereafter by the discourse that followeth. Now as we
haue before declared, the Capellets and the Monteschies were not
so well reconciled by the Lord of Verona, but that there rested in
them such sparks of auncient displeasures, as either parties wat-
ted but for some light occasion to draw togethers, which they did
in the Easter holy daies, (as bloudy men commonly be most wil-
lingly disposed after a good time to commit some nefarious deede)
besides the Gate of Bourlarie leading to the olde castel of Verona,
a troupe of Capellets rencountred with certayne of the Montes-
chies, and without other woordes began to set vpon them. And the
Capellets had for Chiefe of their Gloxtous enterpryse one called
Thibault cousin Germane to Iulietta, a yong man strongly made,
of good experiece in armes, who exhorted his Companions with
flout somakes, to repress the boldnes of the Monteschies, that ther
might from that time forth no memoze of them be left at all. The
tumoure of this fray was dispersted throughout al the corners of

Ja.

Verona,

Rhomeo, and Iulietta.

Verona, that succour might come from all partes of the Citty to depart the same. Whereof Rhomeo aduertized, who walked alonges the Citty with certayne of his Companions, halled him speedily to the place where the slaughter of his Parents and allies were committed: and after he had well aduised and beholden many wounded and hurt on both sides, he sayd to hys Companions: My frends let vs part the, for they be so sleight one vpon another, as will all be hewed to peeces before the game be done. And saying so, he thrust himselfe amidst the troupe, and did no more but part the blowes on eether side, crying vpon them aloud. My frendes, no more it is time henceforth that our quarel cease. For besides the pro- uocation of Gods iust wrath, our two families be slaundersous to the whole World, and are the cause that this common wealth both grow vnto disorder. But they were so egre and furious one agaynst the other, as they gave no audience to Rhomeo his counsel and bent themselues too hyl, desmember and teare eche other in peeces. And the feght was so cruell and outragious betweene them as they which looked on, were amased to see them endure those blowes, for the grounde was all covered with armes, legges thighes, and bloude, wherein no signe of cowardnes appeared, and mayntayned their feghts so longe, that none was able to iudge who hadde the better, vntill that Thibault Cousin to Iulietta inflamed with ire and rage, turned towardes Rhomeo thinkinge with a pycke to runne him through. But he was so well armed and defended with a pslure-coate whiche he wore ordinarly for the doubt he had of the Capellers, as the pycke rebounded: vnto whom Rhomeo made answere: Thibault thou maiest know by the patience which I haue had vntill this present tyme, that I came not hether to feght with thee or thyne, but to seeke peace & attonement betweene vs, and if thou thinkest that for defaulte of courage I haue sayled myne endeuor, thou doest greate wronge to my reputacion. And impute thys my suffrance to some other petticular respects, rather than to wante of stomacke. Whetfore abuse mee not but be content with this greate effusion of bloude and murders already committed, And prouoke mee not I beseeche thee to passe the boundes of my good will and mynde. Th tray-

Crasto layde Thibaulce thou thinkest to save thy selfe by the
 plotte of the pleasaunt tounge, but see that thou defende thy selfe
 els presently I will make thee feele that thy tounge shal not gaurd
 thy corps, nor yet be the Backler to defende the same from pre-
 sent death. And saying so he gaue him a blow with such furze, as
 hadde not other warded the same hee had cutte of his heade from
 his shoulders, and the one was no readier to fende, but the other
 incontinently was able to paye agayne, for hee being not onely
 worth with the blowe that hee had receiued, but offended with the
 injury which the other had don, began to pursue his enemy with
 such courage and braciety, as at the third blowe with his sword
 hee caused him to fall backwarde starke deade vpon the ground
 with a prycke vehemently thrust into his throte, whiche
 hee followed till his Sworde appeared throughe the hy-
 der parte of the same, by reason wherof the conflicts ceased.
 For besides that Thibaulce was the chiefe of his compaignie, he was
 also borne of one of the noblest houses within the Cittie which
 caused the Morestate to assemble his Souldiers with diligence
 for the apprehension and imprisonment of Rhomeo, who sepyng
 his fortune at hand, in secreete wise conuayed him selfe to Fryer Lau-
 rence at the Fryers Franciscanes. And the Fryer vnderstandinge
 of his facte, kepte him in a certayne secreete place of his couente
 vntill fortune did otherwyse proude for his safe goinge abroade.
 The bruite spred throughout the cittie, of this chaunce don vpon
 the Lorde Thibaulce, the Capellets in mourning weedes caused the
 deade bodie to be caried before the segnoze of Verona so well to
 moue them to pitty, as to demaunde iustice for the murder: be-
 fore whom came also the Montescas declaring the innocencye of
 Rhomeo, and the wilfull assault of the other. The counsell assem-
 bled and witnesses heard on both partes a straight commande-
 mente was geuen by the Lorde of the Cittie to geue ouer theire
 weapons, and touching the offence of Rhomeo, because he hadde
 killed the other in his owne defence, he was banished Verona for-
 euer. This comyn misfortune published throughout the Cittie, was
 generally sorrowed and lamented. Som complayneth the death of
 Lorde Thibaulce so well for his dexteritee in armes as for the

Rhomeo, and Iulietta.

hope of his great good seruice in time to come, if hee hadde not bene prevented by such cruell Death. Other bewailed (specially the Ladies and Gentlewomen) the ouerthrow of yong Rhomeo, who besides his beauty and good grace wherewith he was enriched had a certayne naturall allurements, by vertue wherof he drew vnto him the hearts of eche man, like as the Snyg Truamante: both the cancred iron, in such wise as the whole nation and people of Verona lamented his mischaunce: But about all infortunate Iulietta, who aduertised both of the death of hir cousin Thibault, and of the banishment of hir husband, made the Ayre sound with infinite number of moynfull playnts and miserable lamentations. Then feeling hirselfe to much outraged with extreme passion, she went into hir chamber, and overcome with sorowe threw hir selfe vpon hir bed, where she began to reinfoyce hir dolor after so strange fashion, as the most constant would haue bene moued to pittie. She like one out of hir wits, she gazed heere and there, and by fortune beholding the Window wherent Rhomeo was wont to enter into to hir chamber, cried out: Oh vnhappy Windowe, O entrie most vnlucky, wherein were wouen the bitter toyle of my former mishaps if by thy meanes I haue receyued at other tymes some light pleasure or transitory contentation, thou now makest me pay a tribute so rigorous and paynesfull, as my tender body not able any longer to support the same, shall henceforth open the Gate to that yse where the ghost discharged from this mortall burden, shall seeke in some place els more assured rest. Oh Rhomeo, Rhomeo when acquayntaunce first began betweene vs, and reclined myne eares vnto thy suborned promises, confirmed with so many othes, I would neuer haue beleued that in place of our continued amity, and in appealing of thy hatred of our houses, thou wouldest haue sought occasion to breake the same by an acte so shamefull, wherby the same shall be spotted for ever, and I miserable wretch desolate of Spouse, and Companion. But if thou haddest bene so greedy after the Cappellts blood, wherof thou didst spare the deare blood of mine owne heart when so many tymes, and in such secret place the same was at the mercy of thy cruell handes? The

victorie

Whom which thou shouldst haue gotten ouer me; had it not bene
 glorious enough for thine ambitious minde; but for more trium-
 phant solemnity to bee crowned wth the bloude of my dearest
 kinsman? Now get thee hence therefore into some other place to
 beate some other, so vnhapp as my selfe. Neuer come agayne
 in place where I am, for no excuse shall heereafter take holde to
 assuage mine offended minde. In the meane tyme I shall lament
 the rest of my heauy life; with such store of teares, as my body
 dried vp from all humidity, shall shortly search reliefe in Earth.
 And hauing made an ende of those hir woordes, hir heart was so
 grievously trapped, as she couide neyther weepe nor speake, and
 stood so immouea ble, as if she had bene in a traunce. Then being
 some what come agayne vnto hir selfe, with feeble voyce shee said:
 Oh murderous tongue of other mens honoz, how darest thou so
 infamously to speake of him whom his very enemies doe comend
 and praise? How presumest thou to impute the blame vpon Rho-
 meo, whose vnguiltines and innocent deede euery man alloweth?
 Where from henceforth shall be hys refuge? Altho which ought
 to bee the onely Bulwarke, and assured rampire of his distresse,
 both pursue and defame him? Receiue, receiue then Rhomeo the
 satisfaction of mine ingratitude by the sacrifice which I shal make
 of my proper life, and so the faulte whiche I haue committed
 agaynst thy loyaltie, shall bee made open to the Worlde,
 thou being reuenged and my selfe punished. And thinking to vs
 some further talke, all the powers of hir body fayled hir wth
 signes of present death. But the good olde Woman whych could
 not imagine the cause of Iulietta hir longe absence, doubted very
 much that shee suffred some passion, and sought hir by and downe
 in euery place wthin hir Fathers Pallace; vntill at length shee
 founde hir lying a long vpon hir Bed, all the outwarde parts of
 hir body so colde as Marble. But the good Olde woman whitch
 thought hir to bee deade, began to cry like one out of hir Wittes,
 saying: Oh deare Daughter, and Mournefullde, howe much do-
 eth thy death now grieue mee at the very heart? And as she was
 feeling all the partes of hir body, shee perceiued some sparke of
 life to bee yet wthin the same, whych caused hir to call hir many

many tymes by her name till at length she brought her oute of her
 " sounde. Then sayde vnto her : Why Iulietta myne onwe deare
 " dareleng, what meane you by this toymoplinge of your selfe : I
 " cannot tel from whence this your behauiour & that immoderate
 " heauines doe procede, but wel I wot that within this houre I
 " thought to haue accompanied you to the graue. Was good mo-
 " ther answered wofull Iulietta do you not most evidently perceiue
 " and see what iust cause I haue too sorrow and complayne loosing
 " at one instante two persons of the world which wer vnto mee most
 " deare : Whereinke answered the good woman, that it is not
 " seemely for a Gentlewoman of your degree to fall into such extre-
 " metye. For in tyme of tribulation wisedome should most preuaile
 " And if the lord Thibault be dead do you thinke to get him agayne
 " by teares : What is he that doth not accuse his ouermutch press-
 " tion : woulde you that Rhomeo had done that wronge to him,
 " and hys house to suffer him selfe outraged and assailed by one to
 " whom in manhoode and prowesse he is not inferioure : Suff-
 " ficeyth youe that Rhomeo is aloue, and his assayes in suche
 " estate whoe in tyme may be called home agayne from banishment
 " for he is a greate lord, and as you know well allied and sauoyed
 " of all men wherefore arme your selfe from henceforth with paci-
 " ence. For albeit that Fortune doth estrange him from you for a
 " tyme, yet sure I am, that hereafter shee will restore him vnto you
 " agayne wth greater ioye and Contentatyon than before. And
 " to the Ende that wee bee better assured in what state he is, yf you
 " will promise me to giue ouer your heauynesse, I will to Dare
 " knowe of Fryer Laurence whether he is gone. To which request
 " Iulietta agreed athen the good woman repayed to S. Francis, wher
 " shee founde Fryer Laurence who tolde her that the same nyghte
 " Rhomeo would not faile at hys accustomed houre to visite
 " Iulietta, and there to do hir to vnderstande what he purposed to
 " doe in tyme to come. This iorney then fared like the boiages of
 " Mariners, who after they haue ben tost by greate and troublous
 " tempest seeyng some Sunne beame pearce the heauens to ligiten
 " the lande, assure themselves agayne, and thinkinge to haue auoy-
 " ded shipwacke, and sodaynlye the seas begonne to swell, the
 " waues

wished do roare, with such behevance and noise, as if they were
 fallen agayne into greater danger than before. The assigned hour
 come, Rhomo sayed not accordinge to hys promise to bee in his
 Garden, where he found his furniture prest to mount the Cham-
 ber of Iulietta, who with displayed armes, began so straghtly to
 embrace hym, as it seemed that the soule would haue abandoned
 hir body. And they two moze than a large quarter of an hour there
 in such agony, as they were not able to pronounce one word; and
 wetting ech others face fast closed together the teares trickled
 downe in such abundance as they seemed to be thoroughly bathed
 theretn, which Rhomo perceyving, thinking to stay those im-
 moderate teares, sayd unto hir: Myne owne dearest freend Iulietta,
 I am not now determined to recite the particulars of the straung
 happes of fragile and inconstaunte Fortune, who in a moment hois-
 teth a man by to the hyghest degree of hir wheele, and by, and by,
 in lesse space than in the twynckling of an eye, she throweth hym
 downe agayne so lowe, as moze misery is prepared for him in one
 day, than favour in one hundred yeares: Whych I now proue, &
 haue experience in my selfe, which haue bene nourished delicately
 amonges my frends, and maynteyned in such prosperous state, as
 you doe little know, (hoping for the full perfection of my felicity)
 by meanes of our mariage to haue reconciled our parents, and
 frends, and to conduct the residue of my lyfe, accordinge to the scope
 and lot determined by Almighty God: And neuerthelesse all
 myne enterprises be put backe, and my purposes tournd cleane
 contrary, in such wise as from henceforth I must wander lyke a
 vagabonde through diuers prouinces, and sequestrate my selfe
 from my frends, wythout assured place of myne abode, whych I
 desire to let you weete, to the intent you may be exhorted, in tyme
 to come, patiently to beare so well myne absence, as that whych it
 shal please God to appoint. But Iulietta, al affrighted wyth teares
 and mortal agonies, would not suffer hym to passe any further, but
 interruptinge his purpose, sayd unto hym: Rhomo, how canst

Pa. 4.

thou be

thou be so hard hearted and vnder of all pity, to leaue mee here
 low, besieged, with so many deadly periles? There is
 neither house nor mine, wherein death doth not appeare a thou-
 sand tymes before mee, and yet my mishap is such, as I can
 not dye, and therefore doe manifestly perceiue, that the same death
 preserueth my life, of purpose to delight in my griefes, and try-
 umphe ouer my euils. And thou speke the minister and tyrant of
 his cruelty, dost make no conscience (for ought that I can see) ha-
 uing atchieued the Summe of thy desires and pleasures on me, to
 abandon and forsake me. Whereby I well perceiue, that all the la-
 uers of Amity are dead and bitterly extinguished, so far as he
 in whom I had greatest hope and confidence, and for whose sake
 I am become an enemy to my self, doth dispayne and contemne me.
 So no Romeo, thou must fully resolue thy selfe vpon one of
 these. If points either to see me incontinently throwen down head-
 long from this high Window after thee: or else to suffer me to ac-
 company thee into that Countrey or place whither Fortune shall
 guide thee: for my heart is so much transformed into thine, that so
 soon as I shall vnderstande of thy departure, presently my life
 will depart this wofull body: the continuance whereof I doe not
 desire for any other purpose, but only to delight my selfe in thy pre-
 sence, to bee partaker of thy misfortunes. And therefore if euer there
 lodged any pity in the heart of gentleman, I beseeche the Romeo
 with all humilitee, that it may now finde place in thee, and that thou
 wilt vouchsafe to receiue me for thy seruante, and the faithful com-
 panion of thy mishaps. And if thou thinke that thou canst not con-
 ueniently receiue me in the estate and habite of a Wife, who shall
 let me to change myne apparell? Shall I be the first that haue be-
 sed like shifts, to escape the tyranny of parentes? Dost thou doubt
 that my seruice will not bee so good vnto thee as that of Petre thy
 seruante? Will my loyalty and fidelity be lesse than his? My beau-
 ty which at other tymes thou hast so greatly commended, it is not
 esteemed of thee? My teares, my loue, and the aunciente pleasures
 and delights that thou haue taken in mee shall they be in obliuion?
 Romeo seeing his in these alter attions, fearing that worse inconue-
 nience would chaunce, tooke his agayne betwene his armes, and
 kissing

kissing her amorously, sayd: Iulietta. the onely mistresse of my heart, ,,
 I pray thee in the Name of God, end for the seruient Loue which ,,
 thou bearest vnto me, to doe away those bayne cogitations, excepte ,,
 thou meane to secke and hazard the destruction of vs both: for if ,,
 thou perseuer in this purpose, there is no remedye but wee muste ,,
 both perishe: to so soone as thyne absence shalbe knowne, thy fa- ,,
 ther will make such earnest pursute after vs, that we cannot chuse ,,
 but be discied and taken, and in the ende cruelly punished, I as a ,,
 theefe and stealer of thee, and thou as a dysobedient Daughter to ,,
 the father: and so in stead of pleasaunt and quiet Lyfe, our Dayes ,,
 shalbe abridged by most shamefull Death. But if thou wilt recline ,,
 thy self to reason, (the ryght rule of humane Lyfe,) and for y tyme ,,
 abandon our mutuall delights, I will take such order in the time ,,
 of my banishment, as within thre or foure Monthes without any ,,
 delay, I shalbe reuoked home agayne. But if it fall out otherwys ,,
 (as I trust not,) howsoeuer it happen, I will come agayne vnto ,,
 thee, and with the helpe of my frendes will fetch thee from Veron- ,,
 naby strong Hand, not in Counterfeit Apparell as a straunger, ,,
 but lyke my spouse and perpetuall companion. In the meane ,,
 time quyet your selfe, and be sure that nothing else but Death shall ,,
 deuide and put vs a sunder. The reasons of Rhomeo so much ,,
 pexualled with Iulietta, as she made hym this aunswere: My ,,
 deare frend I will doe nothing contrary to your will and pleas- ,,
 sure. And to what place so euer you repaire, my hearte shall bee ,,
 your owne, in like sort as you haue giuen yours to be mine. In ,,
 the meane while I pray you not to faile oftentimes to aduertise me ,,
 by frier Laurence, in what state your affaires be, and specially of ,,
 the place of your abode. Thus these two poze louers passed the ,,
 Night together, vntill the day began to appeare which did deuorde ,,
 them, to their extreame sorrow and gref. Rhomeo hauinge taken ,,
 leaue of Iulietta, went to S. Maunces, and after he hadde aduertis- ,,
 sed frier Laurence of his affaires, departed from Verona in the ,,
 habit of a Marchaunt straunger, and vsed such expedytion, as w- ,,
 out hurt he arriued at Mantuona, (accompanied onely with Petre ,,
 his Seruaunt, whome hee hastily sente backe agayne to Verona, to ,,
 serue

Rhomeo and Iulietta

erue his Father (where he took a House: and leuyng in honora-
 ble Companie, assayed certayne Monthes to put away the greife
 which so tormented him. But during the tyme of his absence, mi-
 serable Iulietta could not so cloke hir sorrow, but that throught the
 euill colour of hir face, hir inward passion was discryed. By
 reason whercof hir Mother, who heard hir oftentimes sighing,
 and incessantly complaining, coulde not forbeare to say vnto hir:
 Daughter if you continue long after thys sort, you wyl hasten the
 Death of your good Father and me, who haue you so dearely as
 our owne lyes: wherfore henceforth moderate your heauinesse,
 and endeuor your self to be mery: think no more vpon the Death of
 your cosin Thibault, whome (As it pleased God to cal away) do you
 thinke to reuoke wth Teares, and so withstande his Almighty
 will? But the poore Gentlewoman not able to dissemble hir griefe,
 sayd vnto hir: Madame long time it is Athens the last Teares for
 Thibault were poured forth, and I beleue that the fountayne is so
 well soked and dyed vp, as no more will spring in that place. The
 mother which could not tell to what effect those Words were spo-
 ken held hir peace, for feare she should trouble hir Daughter: and
 certayne Dayes after seeing hir to continue in heauinesse and conti-
 nuall griefe, assayed by al meanes possible to know, aswell of hir,
 as of other the household Seruauntes, the occasion of their sor-
 row: but al in Vayne: wherwith the poore mother beyed beyonde
 measure, purposed to let the Lord Antonio hir Husband to vnder-
 stand the case of hir Daughter. And vppon a Day seeing him at
 conuenient leisure, she sayd vnto him: My Lord, if you haue mar-
 ked the Countenance of our Daughter, and hir kinde of behauior,
 Athens the Death of the Lord Thibault hir Cousin, you shall per-
 ceive so straunge mutation in hir, as it will make you to maruell
 for she is not onely contented to forgoe meate, drinke and slepe, but
 she spendeth hir tyme in nothing else then in Weeping and Lamen-
 tation, delighting to kepe hir self solitarie wthin hir Chamber
 where she tormenteth hir self so outragiously, as yt wee take not
 heede, hir Life is to be doubted, and not able to knowe the Dy-
 gnall of hir Payne, the more difficulte shall bee the remedye for
 albeit

albeit that I haue sought meanes by all extremity, yet cannot I
 learne the cause of his sicknesse. And where I thought in the be-
 ginning, that it proceeded vpon the Death of his Cousin, now I doe
 manifestly perceiue the contrary, specially when he himselfe did as-
 sure me that he had already wept and shed the last teares for him
 that he was mynded to doe. And vncertaine wherupon to
 resolve, I do thinke verily that he mourneth for some despight, to see
 the most part of theyr Companions married, and he yet vnprou-
 ded, perswading with himselfe (it may be) that wee his Parents do
 not care for him. Wherefore deare Husband, I heartily beseech you
 for our rest and his quiet, hat hereafter ye be carefull to proude
 for his some marriage worthy of our State: whereunto the Lord An-
 tonio, willingly agreed, saying vnto his Wife I haue many times
 thought vpon that whereof you speake, notwithstandinge sith as
 yet she is not attayned to the age of xviii. yeares, I thought to pro-
 vide a husband at leysure. Neuerthelesse things beinge come to
 these termes, and knowing the Virgins chastity is a daung-
 erous Treasure, I will be mindfull of the same to your contenta-
 tion, and she matched in such wyse, as she shall thinke the tyme his
 thereto well delayed. In the meane while marke diligently whe-
 ther she bee in loue with any to the end that we haue not so greate
 regard to goodes, or to the Nobility of the house wherein we mean
 to bestow him, as to the Lyfe and Health of our Daughter who is
 to me so deare as I had rather die a Begger without Landes or
 goods, than to bestow him vpon one which shall vse and intreat him ill.
 Certayne dayes after that the Lord Antonio had bequeathed the ma-
 riage of his daughter, many Gentlemen were suiters, so wel for the
 excellency of his Beauty, as for his great Richesse and reuenuue.
 But aboue all others the alpaunce of a young Earle named Paris,
 the Counte of Lodronne, lyked the Lord Antonio: vnto whom ly-
 berally he gaue his consent, and told his Wife the party vpon
 whom he dyd mean to bestow his Daughter. The mother very ioy-
 ful that they had found so honest a Gentleman for theyr Daughter
 caused him secretly to be called before him, doying him to vnderstande
 what things had passed betwene his father & his Cousin Paris, discour-
 sing vnto him his beauty & good grace of his young Cousin, the vertues for
 which

which he was commended of al men, turning thereunto for con-
 solon to the great riches: and sauor which he had in the goods of for-
 tune, by means whereof she and hir friends should liue in eternal
 honor. But Iuliecta which had rather to haue ben torne in peeces
 than to agree to that maryage, answered hir mother with a moze
 than accustomed stoutnesse: Madame, I much maruel, and there-
 withal am asstonned that you being a Lady discrete and honorable,
 will be so liberal ouer your Daughter as to commit hir to the pleas-
 sure and wil of an other before, you do know how hir mind is bent
 you may do as it pleaseith you, but of one thing I do wel assure you
 that if you bring it to passe, it shal be against my wil. And touching
 the regard and estimation of Cosette Paris, I shal first lose my selfe
 before he shal haue power to touch any part of my body: which being
 done, it is you that shal be counted the murderer, by deliuering me
 into the handes of him, whome I neyther can, wil, or knowe whiche
 way to loue. Wherefore I praye you to suffer me henceforth thus
 to lyue, without taking any further care of me, for so muche as
 my cruell fortune hath otherwys disposed of me.

The dolourous Mother which knewe not what Iudgement to
 see vpon hir Daughters aunswere, like a Woman confused and be-
 sides hir selfe went to seeke the Lord Antonio, vnto whom without
 conceyning any part of hir Daughters aunswere, she dyd him vnder-
 stand the whole. The good olde man offended beyonde measure, com-
 manded hir incontinently by force to be brought before him,
 if of hir own good will she would not come. So soone as she came
 before hir father, hir eyes full of teares, fel down at his fete which
 she bathed with the luke warme drops & distilled from hir Eyes in
 great abundance, and thenkyng to open hir mouth to crye him mers-
 cy, she sobbes and sighes many times stopp hir speech, that she re-
 mained dumbe: not able to frame a woorde. But the olde man
 nothing moued with his Daughters Teares, sayd vnto hir in
 great rage: Come hither thou vnkynd and dysobedient Daughter,
 hast thou forgotten how many tymes thou hast hearde spoken at
 the Table, of the puissance and authoryty our auncient Romane
 Fathers had ouer their Chylde: vnto whome it was not onely
 lawfull to sell, guage, and otherwys dispose them (in theyr ne-
 cessity

their necessity) at their pleasure, but also which is more, they had
 absolute power ouer their Death and Life? With what prongs,
 with what torments, with what racks would those good Fathers
 chasten and correct thee if they were a liue againe, to see that ingra-
 titude, misbehauour and disobedience which thou best towards thy
 father, who with many prayers and requestes hath provided one
 of the greatest Lords of this prouince to be thy husband, a Gentle-
 man of best renoume, and indued with all kinde of Vertues, of
 whom thou and I be vnworzy, both for the notable masse of goods
 and substance wherewith he is enriched, as also for the Honour
 and generositie of the house wherof hee is discended and yet thou
 playest the parte of an obstinate and rebellious Childe against thy
 fathers will, I take the omnipotency of that Almightye God to
 witnesse, which hath boughsafed to byng the forth into this world
 that if vpon Tuesday nexte thou failest to prepare thy selfe to be at
 my Castell of Villafranco, where the Counte Paris purposeth to
 meete vs, and there giue thy consent to that whych thy Mother and
 I haue agreed vpon, I will not onely depryue thee of my worldly
 goodes, but also will make the espouse a marie a pyrson so straight
 and sharpe, as a thousande times thou shalt curse the Day & tyme
 wherein thou wast bozne. Wherfore from henceforth take aduise-
 ment what thou doest, for excepte the promise be kept which I haue
 made to the Counte Paris, I will make the feele how greate & iust
 choler of an offended father is against a Childe vnkynde. And
 without staying for other answer of his Daughter, the olde man
 departed the Chamber, and lefte hir vpon hir knees. Iulietta
 knowing the fury of hir father, fearing to incurre his indignati-
 on, as to prouoke his further wrath: retired for ȝ day into hir Cha-
 ber, and contrined ȝ whole Nyght more in weeping then slepyng.
 And the next Morning sayning to goe heare seruite, she went forth
 with the Woman of hir Chamber to the Fryers, where she caused
 father Laurence to be called vnto hir, and prayed him to heare hir
 confession. And when she was vpon hir knees before hym, shee be-
 gan hyr Confession with Teares, telling him the greate mischyeffe
 that was prepared for hir, by the marriage accorded betwene hir
 father

Rhomeo, and Iulietta.

Father, and the Counte Paris. And for conclusion said vnto him:
“ Sir, so much as you know that I can not by Gods Law be
“ married twice, and that I haue but one God, one husband and one
“ faith, I am determind when I am from hence) with these two
“ hands which you see toynd before you, this Day to end my sorow-
“ ful life, that my soule may beare witness in the Heauens, and my
“ bloude vpon the Earth of my faith and loyalty preserved. Then
“ haueing ended hir talke, shee looked about hir, and seemed by hir
“ wilde countenance, as though she had deuilled some sinister pur-
“ pose. Wherefore fr̃er Laurence, aſtonned beyonde measure, fea-
“ ring lest she would haue executed that which she was determi-
“ ned, said vnto hir: Distresse Iulietta: I pray you in the name of god
“ by little and little to moderate your conceiued griefe, and
“ to content your self whilst you bee heere, untill I haue prouided
“ what is best for you to do, for before you part from hence, I will
“ giue you such consolation and remedie for your afflictions, as you
“ shall remaine satisfied and contented. And resolved vpon this
“ good minde, he speedily wente out of the Church vnto his cham-
“ ber, where he began to consider of many things, his conscience be-
“ yng moued to hinder the marriage betwene the Counte Paris and
“ hir, knowing by his meanes she had espoused an other, and callinge
“ to remembraunce what a dangerous enterprise he had begonne
“ by committing himself to the mercy of a simple damosell, and that
“ if she fayled to bee wise and secrete, all theyr doyngs should be dis-
“ cried, he defamed, and Rhomeo hir spouse punished. Hee then af-
“ ter he had well debated vpon infinite numbre of deuises, was in the
“ end overcome with pity, and determined rather to hazarde his ho-
“ nour, than to suffer the Adultery of the Counte Paris with Iulietta.
“ And being determined herevpon, opened his closet, and takeinge a
“ key in his hande, returned agayne to Iulietta whom he founde
“ like one that was in a Traunce, wayghtinge for sleep, either of
“ life, or Death. Of whome the good olde Father demanded
“ vppon what Day hir marriage was appoynted. The firste Day
“ of that appoyntment (quod shee) is vpon Wednesday, which
“ is the Day ordeyned for my Consente of Marriage accorded
“

britomus

betwene my father and Counte Paris, but the Popetall solemnitye
 was not before the x. day of September. And then (quod the religi-
 ons father) be of good cheere daughter, for our Lord God hath
 opened a way vnto me both to deliuer you and Rhomeo from the
 prepared thralldom. I haue knowne your husband from his cradle,
 and hee hath daily committed vnto me the greatest secrettes of his
 Conscience, and I haue so dearely loued him agayne, as if hee had
 bin mine owne sonne. Wherefore my heart can not abide that any
 man should do him wrong in that specially wherein my Counsell
 may stande him in neede. And forso much as you are his wife,
 I ought lykewyle to loue you, and seke meanes to deliuer you fro
 the martyrdom and Anguish wherewith I see your heart beset-
 teth. Understande then (good Daughter of a secreete which, I
 purpose to manifest vnto you, and take heede aboue all thinges
 that you declare it to no liuing creature, for therein consisteth your
 life and Death. We be not ignorant by the common report of the Ci-
 tizens of this City, and by the same published of me, that I haue
 trauelled throughe all the Prouinces of the habytale Earthe,
 wherby during the continuall tyme of xx. yeres, I haue soughte no
 rest for my wearied body, but rather haue many times prostrated
 the same to the mercy of brute beasts in the Wyldernesse, and many
 times also to the mercilesse Waues of the Seas, and to the pesty of
 common Pirates together with a thousand other Daungers and
 shipwracks bypon Sea and Land. So it is good Daughter that
 all my wandring Voyages haue not bene altogether vnprofitable.
 For besides the incredible contemnation receiued ordinarily in mind,
 I haue gathered some particular fruyct, whereof by the grace of
 god you shall shortly feele some experience. I haue proued the se-
 crete properties of Stones, of Plants, Metals, and other thinges
 hidden within the Bowels of the Earth, wherewith I am able to
 helpe my selfe againste the common Lawe of Men, when necessity
 doth serue: specially in thinges wherein I know misse eternal god
 to be least offended. For as thou knowest I bringe approached as
 it were, euen to the Wyrmes of my Graue, and that the Tyme
 is now nigh neare, for yeldynge of myne Accounte before the
 Iudges of all Iudges, I ought therefore to haue some
 Deepe

Rhomeo, and Iulietta.

deepe knowledge and apprehension of Gods iudgement more than
 I had when the heat of considered youth did boyle within my lusty
 body. Know you therefore good daughter, that with those graces,
 and fauours which the learned and proued of long time the com-
 position of a certayne Masse, which I make of diuers soporifi-
 cious Simples, which beaten afterwards to Pouder, and bronks
 wth a quantty of Water, within a quarter of an houre after,
 bringeth the receiuer into such a sleepe, and burieth so deepe
 the senses and other spirits of life, that the cunningest Philisrian
 will iudge the party dead: and besides that it hath a more marue-
 lous effect, for the person which vseth the same feelth no kinde of
 griefe, and according to the quantity of the dough, the patient re-
 maineth in a sweete sleepe, but when the operation is wrought &
 done, hee returneth into his first estate. Now then Iulietta receiue
 myne instruction, put of all Feminine affection by taking bypon
 you a manly stomacke for by the only courage of your minde cons-
 aith the hap or mishap of your affayres. Beholde here I geue
 you a Masse which you shall keepe as your owne prope heart,
 and the night before your mariage, or in the morninge before day,
 you shall sit the same by with water, and drinke so much as is con-
 tained therein. And then you shall feele a certayne kinde of plea-
 sant sleepe, which inuochinge by litle and litle all the partes of
 your body, will constrain them in such wise, as vnmoueable they
 shall remaine: and by not doing their accustomed dueties, shall
 loose their naturall feelinges, and you abide in such extasse the
 space of. 40. houres at the least without any beating of pouls or
 other perceptible motion, which shall so asstonne them that come to
 see you, as they will iudge you to be deade, & accordinge to the cust-
 some of our Citty, you shall be caried to the Churchyard hard by
 our Church, where you shall be Intombd in the common ma-
 nument of the Capellers your auncestors, & in the meane tyme we
 will send word to Lord Rhomeo by a speciall messenger of the ef-
 fect of our deuice, who now abideth at Mantua. And the night fol-
 lowing I am sure he will not faile to be heere, then he and I to-
 gether will open the graue, and lift by your body, and after the o-
 peration of the Pouder is past, hee shall conuey you secretly to

Mantua

Mantua, vnknown to all your Parents and friends. Afterwards
(it may be.) Tyne, the mother of Truth shall cause concord be-
twene the offended City of Verona, and Rhomeo. At which time
your common cause may be made open to the generall contentaci-
on of all your friends. The words of the good father ended, new
ly surprised the heart of Iulietta, who was so attentue to his
taske as she forgoat no one point of his lesson. Then she sayd vnto
him: Father, doubt not that my heart shall faile in performace
of your commaundement: For were it the strongest Popson, or
most pestiferous Menome, rather woulde I thrust it into my bo-
dy, than to consent to fall in the hands of him, whom I bitterly
mislike: With a right strong reason then may I fortifie my selfe,
and offer my body to any kinde of mortall daunger to approach and
hauo neare to him, vpon whom wholly dependeth my Life and all
the solace I haue in this World. So your wayes then my daugh-
ter (quod the Frier) the mighty hand of God keepe you, and his
surpassing power defende you, and confirme that will and good
mynde of yours, for the accomplishment of this worke. Iulietta
departed from Frier Laurence, and returned home to his fathers
Hall about. 11. of the clock, where she found his mother at the
Gate attending for him: And in good deuotion demaunded if shee
continued still in his former follies? But Iulietta with more glad-
some cheere than she was wont to vse, not suffering his mother to
aske agayne, sayd vnto him: Madame I come from S. Francis
Church, where I haue taried longer peradventure than my duety
requireth: How be it not without fruit and great rest to my af-
flicted conscience, by reason of the godly perswasions of our ghost-
ly father Frier Laurence, vnto whom I haue made a large de-
claration of my life. And chiefly haue communicated vnto him in
confession, that which hath past betwene my Lord my father and
you, vpon the mariage of Countess Paris and me. But the good
man hath reconciled me by his holy words, and commendable ex-
hortations, that where I had minde neuer to mary, now I am
well disposed to obey your pleasure and commaundement. Whers-
fore Madame I beseech you to recouer the fauor and good wyl of

Wh.

my fa-

Rhomeo, and Iulietta.

my father, aske pardon in my behalfe, and say vnto him (if it please you) that by obeying his fatherly request, I am ready to meete the Countee Paris at Villafranco, and there in your presence to accept him for my Lorde and husband: In assurance whereof, by your patience, I meane to repayze into my Closet, to make choise of my most pretious Jewels, that I being richly adorne, and decked, may appeare before him more agreable to his mynde, and pleasure. The good mother rapt with exceeding great joy, was not able to aunswere a word; but rather made speede to seeke out hir husband the Lord Antonio, vnto whom she reported the good will of hir daughter, and how by meanes of frater Laurence hir minde was chaunged. Whereof the good olde man marvellous forfull, prayesed God in heart, saying: Wife this is not the firste good turne which we haue receiued of that holy man, vnto whom euery Cittizen of this Common wealth is dearely bounde. I would to God that I had redeemed. 20. of his yeares with the third parte of my goods, so grievous is to me his extreme olde age. The selfe same houre the Lord Antonio went to seeke the Countee Paris, whom hee thought to perswade to goe to Villafranco. But the Countee told him agayne, that the charge would be to great, and that better it were to reserue that cost to the mariage day, for the better celebration of the same. Notwithstanding if it were his pleasure, he would himselfe goe visite Iulietta: And so they went together. The Mother aduertised of his comming, caused hir Daughter to make hir selfe ready, and to spare no costly Jewels for adorning of hir beauty agaynst the Countees comming, which she bestowed so well for garnishing of hir Personage, that before the Countee parted from the house, shee had so solne away his heart, as he liued not from that time forth, but vpon meditation of hir beauty, and lacked no time for acceleration of the mariage day: ceasing not to be importunate vpon father and mother for th'ende and consummation thereof: And thus with joy inough passed forth this day and many others vntill the day before the mariage, against which time the mother of Iulietta did so well prouide, that there wanted nothing to set forth the magnificence and nobility of their house. Villafranco whereof we haue made mention, was a place
of plea.

of pleasure, where the Lord Antonio was wont many tymes to recreate himselfe a mile or two from Verona, there the Dinner was prepared, for so much as the ordinary solemnity of necessity muste be done at Verona. Iulietta perceyving hir time to approche dyssembled the matter so well as shee coulde: and when tyme forced hir to retire to hir Chamber, hir Woman would haue waited vpon hir, and haue lpen in hir Chambr, as hir custome was: But Iulietta sayd vnto hir: Good and faithfull mother, you know that to morrow is my marriage Day, and for that I would spend the most parte of the Night in prayer, I pray you for this time to let me alone, and to morrow in the Mornng about vi. of the clocks come to me agayne to helpe make mee readie. Then good olde woman willing to follow hir minde, suffred hir alone, and doubted nothing of that which she did meane to do. Iulietta beinge within hir Chambr, hauing an ewer full of Water standing vpon the Table filled the vial which the Frier gaue hir: and after she had made the mixture, she set it by hir bed side, and went to Bed. And being layde, new Thoughtes began to assaile hir, with a conceipt of grieuous Death, which brought hir into such case as she could not tell what to doe, but plapning incessantly sayd. I am not I the most unhappy and desperat creature, that euer was bozne of Woman: for mee there is nothing left in this wretched Worm but mishap, misery, and mortall woe, my distresse hath brought me to such extremities, as to saue mine honoz and conscience, I am forced to deuoure the drinke whereof I know not the vertue: but what know I (sayd she) whether the Operatyon of this Powder be to soone or to late, or not correspondent to the due tyme, and that my fault being discovered, I shall remayne a fable to the People? What know I moreouer, if the Serpents & other venomous and crawling Wormes, whych commonly frequent the Graues and pittes of the Earth well hurt me, thinking that I am dead? But howe shall I indure the Gnynge of so many carions and Bones of myne ancestors whych rest in the Graue, yf by fortune I do awake before Rhomoë and Fryer Laurence doe come to help me? And as shee was thus plunged in the deepe contemplatyon of thynges,

Wb. 2.

shee

Rhomeo, and Iulietta.

He thought that he saw a certain vision or fante of his Cousin Thibault, in the very same sort as hee sawe him wounded and imbrued with Bloud, and musing how that he must be buried quick amongs so many dead Carcases and deadly naked bones, his tender and delicate body began to shake and tremble, and his yelow lockes to stare for feare, in such wise as frightned with terrour a cold sweate beganne to pierce his heart, and bedewe the vessels of all his members, in such wise as he thought that an hundred thousand Deahtes did stande about him, haling him on euey side, and plucking him in pieces, and feeling that his forces diminyshed by litle and litle, fearing that through to great debilitye he was not able to do his enterpryse, like a furious and insensate Woman, without further care, gulped by the Water wythin the Wyal, then crossing his armes vpon his stomacke, he lost at that instante all the powers of his Body, resting in a Traunce. And when the morning lyght began to thrust his head out of his Wyent, his Chaumber Woman which had lockt him in with the Key, did open the doore, and thinking to awake him, called her many tymes, and sayde vnto him: Mistresse, you sleepe to long, the Counte Paris will come to raise you. The poore olde Woman spake vnto the Wall, and saie a song vnto the deafe. For if all the horrible and tempestuous soundes of the world had bene cannonised forth out of the greatest bombardes, and sounded through his delicate Eares, his sprytes of Lyfe were so fast bounde and ropt, as he by no meanes coulde awake, wherewith the poore olde Woman amazed, began to shake him by the armes and handes, whyche he found so colde as marble Stone. Then putting hande vnto his Mouth, sodainely perceived that he was deade, for hee perceived no breath in him. Wherefore lyke a Woman out of his wittes, hee ranne to tell his Mother, who so madde as a Tigre, berefte of his fancies hid him selfe into his Daughters Chaumber, and in that pitifull state beholdinge his Daughter, thinking him to be deade, cried out Oh cruell Deathe, which hast ended all my ioye and bliss, be the last scourge of thy Wrathfull ire agayn me, least by suffering mee to lye the rest of my weefull Dayes, my Torment doe increase

case: then she began to fetch such strapping sighes, as hir heart
 did seme to cleane in peces. And as hir cries began to encrease,
 behold the Father, the Countie Paris, and a great troupe of Gen-
 tlemen and Ladies, which were come to honour the feast, hearing
 no sooner tell of that which chaunced, were stroke into such so-
 rowfull dumpes as he which had beheld their faces would easi-
 ly haue iudged that the same had ben a day of ire and pitie, special-
 ly the Lord Antonio, whose heart was strappd with such surpas-
 sing woe, as neither teare nor word could issue forth, & knowing not
 what to doe, straight way sent to seeke the most expert Physicians
 of the towne, who after they had inquired of the life past of Iulier-
 ra, deemed by common repoze, that melancoly was the cause of
 that sodayne death, & then their sorow began to renue a fresh. And
 if ever day was lamentable, Puerous, Unhappy, and fatal, tru-
 ly it was that wherein Iulietta hir death was published in Vero-
 na: for shee was so bewapled of great and small, that by the co-
 mon playnt, the Common wealth seemed to be in dainger, and
 not without cause. For besides hir naturall beauty accompanied
 with many vertues wherewith nature had enriched hir, she was
 self so humble, wife and debonaire, as for that humility and curte-
 se she had stolen away the hearts of euery wight, and there was
 none but did lament hir Misfortune. And whilst these thinges
 were in this lamented state, Frier Laurence with diligence dispat-
 ched a Frier of his Couent, named Frier Anselme, whom hee
 trusted as himselfe, and deliuered him a Letter written with his
 owne hande, commaunding him expressely not to giue the same to
 any other but to Rhomo, wherein was conteyned the chaunce
 which had passed betwene him and Iulietta, specially the vertue of
 the Pouder, and commaunded him the nexte ensuinge Nighte
 to speede himselfe to Verona, for that the operation of the
 Pouder that time would take ende, and that he should cary with
 him back agayn to Mantua his beloued Iulietta, in dissembled ap-
 parell, vntill Fortune had otherwise provided for them. The fri-
 er made such hast as (to late) hee arriued at Mantua, within a
 while after. And bicause the maner of Italy is, that the Frier tra-
 uayling abroade ought to take a companion of his Couent to doe

his affaires within the City, the Fryer went into his couent, and
 for that he was within, it was not lawfull for him to come oute a-
 gaine that Day, because that certayn Dayes before, the religious
 of that couent as it was sayd, dyd dye of the Plague. Wherefore
 the Magistrates appointed for the health and visitation of the Citie,
 commaunded the Warden of the House that no Fryers should wi-
 der abide the City, or talke with any Citizen, untill they were li-
 censed by the officers in that behalfe appointed, which was the cause
 of the great mishap, which you shal heare hereafter. The Fryer
 being in this perplexitie, not able to goe forth, and not knowing what
 was contained in the Letter, deferred hys Journey for that Day.
 Whilst things were in this plight, preparation was made at Ve-
 rona, to doe the obsequies of Iulietta. There is a custome also
 (which is common in Ita'y,) to laye all the best of one lignage and
 Familie in one Tombe, wherevpon Iulietta was intombed in
 the ordynary Grave of the Capellettes, in a Churchyard, hard
 by the Church of the Fryers, where also the Lord Thibault was
 interred whose Obsequies honorably done, every man returned:
 wherunto Pietro, the seruāt of Rhomo, gaue hys assistance. For as
 we haue before declared, hys Mayster sente hym backe agayne
 from Mantua to Verona, to do his Father seruice, and to aduertise
 him of that which should chaunce in hys absence there. who seeing
 the Body of Iulietta, inclosed in Tombe, thinking with the rest
 that they had bene dead in decde, incontinently tooke posse horse, and
 with diligence rode to Mantua, where he founde his Mayster in
 his wonted house, to whome he sayde, with hys Eyes full of Teas-
 res: Sir, there is chaunced vnto you so straunge a matter as it so
 be you do not arme your selfe with Constance, I am afrayd that
 I shall be the cruell minister of your Death, Be it known vnto you
 Sir, that yesterday morning my mistresse Iulietta left hir Life in
 this World to seeke rest in an other: and with these Eyes I saw
 hir buried in the Churchyard of S. Frauncis. At the sounde of
 which heauye Message, Rhomo began woefullie to La-
 mente, as though he had suffered greued with the Torment of
 death, and to weep with the same.

her Passion at that instant would haue abandoned his Bodye.
 But stronge Loue which would not permitte him to saue vnles
 the extremity, framed a thought in her fanteſie, that if it wer pos-
 ſible for him to dye beſides his, his Death ſhould be more glorie-
 ous, and ſhee (as he thought) better contented. By reaſon whereof,
 after ſhee had waſhed his face for feare to diſcouer his ſorrowe, ſhee
 wente out of his Chamber, and commaunded her man to tarry be-
 hind him, that he myght walke through out all the Corners of
 the Citie, to ſynge proppre remedye (if it were poſſible) for her
 griefe. And amonges others, beholdinge an Apothecaries ſhop
 of litle furnytur and leſſe ſtope of Boxes and other thinges re-
 quiſite for that ſcience, thought that the verre pouerty of the ma-
 ſter Apothecarye would make hym willinge yeld to that which he
 pretended to demaunde. And after he had taken hym aſide, ſecre-
 tely ſayde vnto him: Syr, if you be the Maſter o' the Houſe, as I
 thinke you be, beholde here fifty Ducates, wherch I geue you to
 the intent you deſpuer me ſome ſtrong and vyolente Poyſon that
 within a quarter of an houre is able to procure Death vnto hym
 that ſhall uſe it. The couetous Apothecarye entyled by gaine, a-
 greed to his request, and ſayynge to geue hym ſome other med-
 cyne beſore the Peoples face, he ſpeedily made ready a ſtrong and
 cruell Poyſon, afterwarde he ſayd vnto him ſoſely: Syr, I geue
 you more than is needefull, for the one halfe is able to deſtroy the
 ſtrongest manne of the world: who after he hadde receyued the poy-
 ſon, returned home, where he commaunded his man to departe
 with diligence to Verona, and that he ſhould make prouiſion of can-
 dels, a tender Waxe, and other Inſtruments meete for the opening
 of the graue of Iulietta, and that aboue all thinges ſhee ſhoulde not
 faile to attende her commynge beſides the Churchwarde of
 S. Francis, and vppon Payne of Life to keepe her intente
 in ſeete. Which Pietro obeyed in order as her maſter had requy-
 red, and made therein ſuch expedited, as he arrived in good tyme to
 Verona, taking order for al thinges that wer commaunded him. Rho-

Rhomeo and Iulietta.

meo in the meane while being sollicitous with moztall thoughts
 caused incke and paper to be brought vnto hym, and in few wordes
 put in wytyng all the discourse of his loue, the marriage of him and
 Iulietta, the meane obserued for consummation of the same, the
 helpe that he had of frer Laurence, the buying of his Poyson, and
 last of all his death. Afterwardes hauing finished his heauy tra-
 gedie, hee closed the letters, and sealed the same with his seale, and
 directed the Superscription thereof to hys Father: and puttinge
 the letters, into his purse, he mounted on horsebacke, and with
 such diligence, as he arrived vppon darke Nyght at the Cite of
 Verona, before the gates were shut, where he founde his seruante
 taryng for hym with a Lanterne and instrumentes as is before
 sayd, meete for the opening of the grane, vnto whome hee said Pie-
 tro, helpe mee to open this Combe, and so soone as it is open I
 commaunde thee vppon payne of thy life, not to come neere mee, nor
 to stay me from the thing I purpose to doe. Beholde, there is a let-
 ter which thou shalt present to morrow in the morning to my fa-
 ther at his wyppung, which peraduenture shall please him better
 than thou thinkest. Pietro, not able to imagine what was his mai-
 sters intent, stode somewhat aloofe to beholde his maisters geses
 and Countenance. And when they had opened the Vault, Rho-
 meo descended downe two steypes, holding the candel in his hand
 and began to behold with pittifull Eye, the body of hir, which was
 the organ of his Eyes, and kysst it tenderly, holding it harde between
 his Armes, and not able to satisfie him selfe with hir sight, put hys
 fearefull handes vppon the colde stomacke of Iulietta. And after
 he had touched hir in many places, and not able to feele any
 certayne Iudgemente of Lyfe, he drew the Poyson out of hys
 Boxe, and swallowng downe a great quantytye of the same,
 cryed out: O Iulietta, of whome the Woelde was vnworthy,
 what Death is it possible my Hearte coulde chooseth out more
 agreeable than that whych yt suffereth harde by thee? What
 Graue more Glorious, than to bee buried in thy Combe? What
 more woorthye or excellent Epitaph can bee bowed for Me-
 moire, than the mutuall and pittifull Sacrifice of our lyues?

And

And thinkinge to remue his sorowes, his hearte began to frette
through the violence of the Popson, which by litle and litle assailed
the same, and lookinge aboute hym, espied the Bodie of the
Lorde Thibault, lyinge nexie vnto Iulietta, whych as yet was not al
together putrified, and speakinge to the Bodie as though it hadde
bene alrue, sayde: In what place so euer thou arte (O Cousyn
Thibault) I most heartely do crye the mercy for the offence whrch
I haue done by depryuing of thy Lyfe: and yf thy Ghost doe wyshe
and crye out for Wergaunce vppon mee, what greater or moze
cruell satisfaction canste thou desire to haue, or henceforth hoope
for, than to see him whrch murdered thee, to bee empoysoned with
his owne handes, and buried by thy side? Then endryge hys
talk, feleng by litle and litle that his Lyfe began to faile falling
prostrate vppon his knees, wth feeble voyce hee softlye sayd: O
my Lord God, which to redeeme me didest descend from the bosom
of the Father, and tookest humane fleshe in the Wombe of the
Vergine, I acknowledge and confesse, that this body of myne is
nothinge elsse but Earth and Dust. Then seized vppon wth des-
perate sorow, he fell downe vppon the Bodie of Iulietta with such
behemence, as the heart faint and attenuated with two great toz-
zements, not able to beare so hard a violence, was abandoned of all
his sense and Naturall powers, in such sorte as the sieg of hys
soule sayled him at that instant, and his members stretched forth,
remained stiffe and colde. Fryer Laurence whrch knew the cer-
taine tyme of the pouders operation, maruelled that he had no
answere of the Letter which he sent to Rhomoed by his fellowe
fryer Anselme, departed from S. Frauncis and with Instrumentz
for the purpose, determyned to open the Graue to let in aire to Iu-
lietta, whrch was ready to wake: and approching the place, hee
espied a Leght within, which made him afraide vntyll that Pie-
tro whrch was hard by, had certysied hym that Rhomoed was with
in, and had not ceased there to Lamente and Complayne the
space of halfe an Houre. And when they two were entred the
Graue and finding Rhomoed without Lyfe, made such sorow as
they can well conceiue whrch Lous their deare frende wth
the

All perfection. And as they were making theſe complaints, Iulietta
 riſing out of hir trance, & beholding light within ſ^e Counte, un-
 certayne wheather it were a dreme or fantaſie that appeared be-
 fore hir eyes, comming againe to hir ſelfe, knew Frier Laurence,
 unto whom ſhe ſayd: Father I pray thee in the name of G O D
 to perſoarme the promise, for I am almoſt deade. And then Frier
 Laurence concealing nothing from hir, (becauſe he feared to be ta-
 ken through his to long abode in that place) faithfully rehearſed
 unto hir, how he had ſent Frier Anſelme to Rhomeo at Mantua,
 from whom as yet ſhe had receiued no anſwere. Notwithſtan-
 ding he found Rhomeo dead in the graue, whoſe body he poynted
 unto, lying hard by hir, praying hir ſith it was ſo, patiently to
 heare that ſodayne miſfortune, and that if it pleaſed hir, he would
 conuey hir into ſome monaſtery of women where ſhe might in time
 moderate hir ſorrow, and giue reſt unto hir minde. Iulietta had no
 ſooner caſt eye vppon the deade corps of Rhomeo, but began
 to breake the fountayne pipes of gushing teares, which ran forth
 in ſuch abundance, as not able to ſupport the furoꝝ of hir griefe,
 ſhe breathed without ceaſing vpon his mouth, and then throw-
 ing hir ſelfe vpon his body, and embracing it very hard, ſeemed that
 by force of ſighes and ſobs, ſhe would haue reuiued, and brought
 him againe to life, & after ſhe had kiſſed and rekiſſed him a million
 of times, ſhe cried out: Oh the ſweete reſt of my cares, & the onely
 port of all my pleaſures and paſtimes, haſt thou ſo ſure a heere
 to chooſe the Churchyarde in this place betwene the armes of the
 perfect Louer, and to ende the courſe of thy life for my ſake in
 the ſhoure of thy Youth when life to thee ſhould haue bene moſt
 deare & delectable? How had this tender body power to reſiſt the
 furious Combat of death, very death it ſelfe here preſent? How
 coulde thy tender and delicate youth willingly permit that thou
 ſhouldeſt approch into this filthy and infected place, where from
 henceforth thou ſhalt be the paſture of Wormes & inuorment of thee?
 Alas, alas, by what meanes ſhalt I now requie my playns, which
 time & long patience ought to haue buried & clearely quenched?
 Oh I miſerable, and Caluſe wretch, thinkinge to finde remedy
 for my griefe, haue ſharpened the knife that hath giuen me this

cruell blow, whereof I receiue the cause of mortall wound. Th
 happy and fortunats gracie which shall serue in world to come for
 betwisse of the most perfect shiuanee that euer was betwene two
 most infortunats louers, receiue now the last sobbing sighes, and
 intertayment of the most cruell of all the cruell subiects of ire &
 death. And as she thought to continue hir complainys, Pietro ad-
 uertised Frier Laurence that he heard a noyse besides the citedell,
 wherewith being afrayd, they speedily departed, fearing to be ta-
 ken. And then Iulietta seeing hir selfe alone, and in full Liberty,
 tooke agayne Rhomeo betwene hir armes, kissing him with such
 affection, as she seemed to be more attaynted with loue than death,
 and drawing out the Dagger which Rhomeo ware by his side,
 she pricked hir selfe with many blowes against the heart, sayinge
 with feeble & pittifull voice: Oh death the end of sorrow, & beginning
 of felicity, thou art most hartely welcome: feare not at this time
 to sharpen thy dart: giue no longer delay of life, for feare that my
 spirit trauayle not to finde Rhomeos ghost amongs such nūber of
 carion corpses. And thou my deare Lord & for all husband Rho-
 meo, if there rest in thee any knowledge, receiue hir whom thou
 hast so saynfully loued, the onely cause of thy violent death, which
 frankly offreth vp hir soule that none but thou shalt for the loue
 whereof thou hast made so lawfull conquest, and that our soules
 passing from this light, may eternally liue together in the place of
 euerlasting ioy: And when she had ended those wordes shee re-
 uerth vp hir ghost. While these thinges thus were done, the garde
 and watch of the Cittie by chaunce passed by, and seeing light with
 in the graue, suspected straight that there were some Necromans-
 ers which had opened the Tōmbe to abuse the deade bodie for
 arte of their arte: And desirous to knowe what it ment, went
 downe into the vault, where they found Rhomeo and Iulietta, with
 their armes embracing ech others neck, as though there had bene
 some token of life. And after they had well bliuied them at lep-
 sure, they perceiued in what case they were. And then all amazed
 they sought for Cheeues which (as they thought) had done the
 murder, and in the ende founde the good Father Frier Lau-
 rence, and Pietro the Seruante of deade Rhomeo (whych
 had hid themselves vnder a Wall) whom they caried to Prison, &

aſſembled the Lord of Eſcala, and the Magiſtrates of Verona of
 that horrible murder, which by and by was publiſhed throughout
 the City. Then ſtooped together all the Citizens, women and chil-
 dren leaving their houſes, to looke vpon that pitiful ſight and to
 the Eade that in preſence of the whole Cytie, the murder ſhould be
 knowne, the Magiſtrates ordained that the two deade Bodies
 ſhould be erected vpon a ſtage to the view and ſight of the whole
 World, in ſuch ſorte and manner as they were founde within the
 Graue, and that Pietro and Frier Laurence ſhould publiſhly be
 examyned, that afterwarde there might be no murmure or other
 pretended cauſe of ignorance. And this good olde Frier beſeget
 vpon the Scaffold, hauing a whyte Beard all wet and bedewed
 with Teares, the Iudges commaunded him to declare vnto them
 who were the Authours of that Murder, ſith at vntimely houre hee
 was apprehended with certayne Irons beſides the Graue. Frier
 Laurence a rounde and franke Man of talke, nothing moued with
 that accuſation, answered them with ſtout and bolde voyce: My
 maſters, there is none of you all (if you haue reſpect vnto my ſou-
 perſeſſed Life, and to my aged Yeres, and therewithall haue conſide-
 ration of this heauy ſpectacle, whereunto vnhappy fortune hath
 preſentely brought me) but doeth greatly maruell of ſo ſodaine mu-
 tation as to change vnlooked for ſo much as theſe three ſcore and
 Ten or twelue Yeares ſithens I came into this Worlde, and be-
 gan to proue the vanities thereof. I was neuer ſuſpected, touched,
 or found guilty of any crime which was able to make me bluſhe, or
 hide my face, althoug (before God) I doe confeſſe my ſelf to be the
 greateſt and moſt abhominable ſinner of all the redeemed ſlocke of
 Chriſt. So it is notwithstanding, that ſith I am preſent and ready
 to render mine accompre, and that Death, the Graue and wormes
 do dailye ſummon this wretched Corps of myne to appeare beſore
 the Juſtice ſeate of God, ſtill wayghing and attending to be car-
 ried to my hoped Graue, this is the houre I ſay, as you likewiſe
 may thinke wherein I am fallen to the greateſt damage and prei-
 dice of my Lyfe and honeſt porte, and that which hath ingendred
 this ſpawnter oppreſſion of mee, may peraduenture bee theſe greate
 Teares which in abundaunce trechle downe my Face as though
 the

Though the holy scriptures do not witnesse, that Iesus Christ mo-
ued with humane pittie, & compassion, did weepe, and pour forth
teares, and that many times teares be the faithfull messengers of
mans innocency. Or else the most likely euidence, and presumption,
is the suspected hour, which (as the magistrate doth say) doth
make mee culpable of the murder, as though all houres were not
indifferently made equall by God their Creatoz, who in his owne
person declareth vnto vs that there be twelue houres in the Day,
shewing thereby that there is no exception of houres nor of Mi-
nutes, but that one may doe epyther good or ill at all times indiffer-
ently, as the party is guided or forsaken by the spyrte of God:
touching the Irons which were founde about me, needefull it is
not now to let you vnderstand for what vse Iron was first made,
and that of it selfe it is not able to increase in man epyther good or
euill, if not by the mischieuous minde of hym which doth abuse it.
Thus much I haue thought good to tell you, to the intent that
neither teares, nor Iron, ne yet suspected houre, are able to make
me guilty of the murder, or make me otherwys than I am, but
only the witnesse of mine owne conscience, which alone if I were
guilty should be the accuser, the witnesse, and the hangman, whych
(by reason of mine age and the reputation I haue had amongst
you, and the little tyme that I haue to liue in this World shoulde
more torment me within, than all the mortall paynes that coulde
be deuised. But (thankes be to myne eternall God) I feele no
Woyme that gnaweth, nor any remorse that pricketh me touching
that fact, for which I see you all troubled and amazed. And to set
your hearts at rest, and to remoue the doubts which hereafter may
torment your consciences, I sweare vnto you by all the heauenly
powers wherein I hope to be, that forthwith I will disclose from
first to last the entyre discourse of this pittifull Tragedy, whych
peraduenture shall bryue you into no lesse wondze and amaze, than
those two pooze passionate Louers were strong and patient, to ex-
pone themselves to the mercy of death, for the seruent and indissol-
uble loue betwene them. Then the Fatherly Friar began to re-
peat the beginning of the loue betwene Iuliëta, and Rhomoë,
which by certayne space of tyme confirmed, was prosecuted by
wordes at

Rhomeo, and Iulietta.

wordes at the first, then by mutual promise of marriage, banished
 to the world. And as within few dayes after, the two Lovers see-
 king themselves sharped & incited with stronger onser, repaired
 vnto him vnder colour of confession, protesting by othe that they
 were both married, and that if he would not solemnize that ma-
 riage in the face of the Church, they should be constrained to of-
 fend God to liue in disordered lust. In consideration whereof, and
 specially seeing their alliance to be good, and comfortable in dig-
 nity, richesse and Nobility on both sides, hoping by that meanes
 perchance to reconcile the Montescles, and Capellets, and that
 by doing such an exceptable worke to God, he gaue the Church
 blessing in a certayne Chappel of Friers church whereof he night
 following they did consummate their marriage fructs in the Pallace of
 the Capellets. For testimony of which copulation, the woman of Iu-
 liettaes Chamber was able to depose: Adding moreouer, the murder
 of Thisbeile, which was Cousin to Iulietta: By reason whereof
 the banishment of Rhomeo did followe, and howe in the absence
 of the sayd Rhomeo, the marriage being kept secret betwene them,
 a new Matrimony was intreated with the Countesse Paris, which
 mistiked by Iulietta, she fell prostrate at his feete in a Chappell of
 S. Francis Church, with full determination to haue killed himself
 with his owne hands, if he gaue him not counsell how she should a-
 uoide the marriage agreed betwene his father & the Countesse Paris.
 For conclusion, he sayd, that although he was resolu'd by reason of
 his age, and nearnesse of death to abhorre all secret Sciences,
 wherein, in his younger yeares he had delight, notwithstanding,
 pressed with importunity, and moued with pittie, fearing least Iu-
 lietta should do some crueltie agaynst himselfe, he straped his con-
 science, and chose rather with some little fault to grieve his minde,
 than to suffer the young Gentlewoman to destroy his body, and
 hazarde the danger of his soule. And therefore he opened some
 part of his auient cunning, and gaue her a certayne Pouder to
 make him sleepe, by meanes whereof she was thought to be deade.
 Then he tolde them how he had sent Friar Anselme to carry let-
 ters to Rhomeo of their enterpryse, whereof hitherto he had no
 answer.

answers. Then briefly he concluded how he found Rhomeo dead within the graue, who as it is most likely did imporse himselfe, or was otherwise smothered or suffocated with sorrow by findinge Iulietta in that state, thinking shee had bene dead. Then he tolde them how Iulietta did kill herselfe with the Dagger of Rhomeo to beare him company after his death, and how it was impossible for them to saue hir for the noise of the watch which forced them to flee from thence. And for more ample approbation of his saying, he humbly besought the Lord of Verona & the Magistrats to send to Mantua for frer Anselme to know the cause of his slack returne, that the content of the letter sent to Rhomeo might be seene. To examine the Woman of the Chamber of Iulietta, and Pietro the seruauant of Rhomeo, who not attending for further request, said vnto them: My Lordes when Rhomeo entred the graue, he gaue me this Pacquet, written as I suppose with his owne hand, who gaue me expresse commaundement to deliuer it to his father. The Pacquet opened, they founde the whole effect of this story, specially the Apothecaries name, which sold him the Poyson, the price, and the cause wherefore he vsed it, and all appeared to be so cleare and euident, as there rested nothing for further verification of the same, but their presence at the doing of the particulars thereof, for the whole was so well declared in order, as they were out of doubt that the same was true. And then the Lord Bartholomew of Escala, after he had debated with the Magistrates of these euents, decreed that the Woman of Iulietta hir Chamber should bee banished, because shee did conceale that priuy marriage from the Father of Rhomeo, which if it had bene knowne in tyme, had byed to the whole Citty an vniuersall benefit. Pietro because he obeyed hys Maysters commaundement, and kept close hys lawfull secrets, according to the well conditioned nature of a trusty seruauit, was set at liberty. The Poticary taken, racked, and founde guilty, was hanged. The good olde man frer Laurence (as well for respect of his auncient seruice which he had done to the comion wealth of Verona, as also for his vertuous life (for the which hee was specially recommended) was let goe in peace, without any note of Infamy.

Notwith-

Rhomeo, and Iulietta.

Notwithstanding by reason of his age, he voluntarily gave out
the World, and closed himselfe in an Hermitage, two miles from
Verona, where he liued .5. or .6. yeares, and spent his tyme in
continall prayer, untill he was called out of this transitory worlde,
into the blisfull State of euerlasting joy. And for the compassion of
so straunge an infortune, the Mooresches, and Capellers poured
forth such abundaunce of teares, as with the same they did eua-
cuate their auncient grudge and choler, whereby they were then
reconciled. And they which could not bee brought to attonement
by any wisdom or humayne counsell, were in the ende vanqui-
shed and made friends by pity. And to immortalize the memory
of so inter and perfect amity, the Lord of Verona ord'yned, that
the two bodies of those miraculous Louers should be fast inco-
bed in the graue where they ended their leues, in which place
was erected a high marble Piller, honoured with an infinite
number of excellent Epytaphes, which to this day be ap-
paraunt, with such noble memory, as amongst all the
rare excellencies, wherewith that City is furnished,
there is none more famous than the Monu-
ment of Rhomeo, and Iu-
lietta.

Two

Two Gentlewomen of Venice.

Two Gentlemen of *VENICE* were honourably deceiued of their *Wyues*, whose notable practises, and secret conference for archieuinge their desire, occasioned diuers accidentes, and ingendred double benefit: wherein also is recited an eloquent oration, made by one of them, pronounced before the Duke and state of that Citrys: with other chaunces and actes concernge the same.

The. XXVI. Nouell.

Here haue I thought good to summon. 2. Gentlewomen of Venice to appeare in Place, and to mount on Stage amongst other Italian Dames to shew cause of their boide in countrey agaynst the folly of their two Husbands, that vncharitably without respect of neyghbourhoode, went about to assaile the honesty of eyn. 13. Wyfe, and weening they had enioyed others felicity, by the womens prouidence, foresight, & ware government, were both deceiued, and yet attained the chiefe benefit that marriage state doth looke for: so that if search bee made amonges antiquities, it is to be doubted wheather greater chastity, and better pollicy could be founde for accomplishment of an intended purpose. *Wys.*

Cc.

Two Gentlewomen.

105.07
 post. Many deedes haue ben done by women for sauegard of their
 husbandes liues, as that of the Minya, a sort of Women whose
 husbands were imprisoned at Lacedæmon, and for treason cōdem-
 ned who to saue their liues, entred into prison the night befoze they
 should dy, and by exchange of apparell, deliuered them, & remay-
 ned there to suffer for them. Of Hipfistratea also the Queene and
 Wyfe of Mithridates king of Pontus, who spared not hir Noble
 beauty and golden lockes to manure hir selfe in the vse of armes
 to keepe hir husband companie in perils and dauagers: and being
 overcome by Pompeius, and flying away, neuer left him vnaccom-
 panied, ne forooke such trauaile as he him selfe sustayned. The
 like also of Emilia, Turia, Sulpitia, Portia, and other Romane
 Daines. But that such haue prevented their husbands folly, sel-
 dome we reade, saving of Queene Marie, the Wife of Don Pietro
 King of Arragon, who marking the insolency of hir husband, and
 soze for his disordred life, honest ieaiousse opening hir continent
 eyes, forced hir to seeke meanes to remoue his wanton acts, or at
 leastwise by pollicy and wise foresight to make him husbände and
 culture his own soyle, that for want of seasonable tillage was bar-
 ren & voyde of fruite. Wherefoze consulting with the lord cham-
 berlayne, who of custome brought whom the king liked best, was
 in place of his woman bestowed in his Bed, and of her that night
 begat the yong Prince Giacomo, that afterwarde proued a va-
 liaunte, and wise King. These passing good pollicies of women
 many times abolish the frantik lecherous fits of husbands giuen
 to superfluous lusts, when first by their chaste behauiour and wo-
 manly pattice they contayne that which they beloth to see or heare
 of, and then demaunding counsell of sobriety and wisdom, exco-
 gitate sleighes to shun folly, and expell discurtelle, by husbandes
 carelesse vse. Such practises, and deuises, these two Gentlewo-
 men whom I now bringe forth, disclose in this discourse ensuing.

In the City of Venice, (which for riches and fayre Women
 excelleth al other within the Region of Italy) in the time that Fri-
 cesco Foscarei, a very wise Prince, did gouerne the State, there were
 two young Gentlemen, the one called Girolamo Bembo, and the
 other Anselmo Barbado, betwene whom as many times chaun-

ceth a-

each amongst other, grew such great hatred and cruel hostility, as
 each of them by secret and all possible meanes deuised to doe other
 shame and displeasure, which kindled to such outrage, as it was
 thought impossible to bee pacified. It chanced that at one tyme
 both of them did marry two noble young Gentlewomen, excellent
 and fayre, both brought by vnder one Purse, and loued ech other
 like to Sisters, and as though they had ben both bozne of one bo-
 dy. The Wyfe of Anselmo, called Isotta, was the Daughter of
 Messer Marco Gradenigo, a man of great estimation in that Cit-
 ty, one of the procuratours of San Marco, whereof there were
 not so great number in those daies as there bee now, because
 the Wyfest men, and best Approued of Lyfe were chosen to
 that great and Noble dignity, non allotted thereunto by Bribes
 or Ambition. The Wyfe of Girolamo Bembo was called Lu-
 cia, the Daughter of Messer Gian Francesco Valerio Cavaliero, a
 Gentleman very well learned, and many times sent by the State,
 Ambassado: into diuers Countreys, and after he had bene Dia-
 bot with the Pope, for his wisdom in the execution of the same
 was in great estimation with the whole City. The two Gentle-
 women after they were married, and heard of the hatred betwene
 their Husbendes, were very sorrowfull and pensue, because they
 thought the Freendshyp, and Loue betwene them twayne, conti-
 nued from their tender yeares, coulde not bee, but with greate
 difficulty kept, or else altogether dissolued and broken. Notwith-
 standing beyng discrete, and wyse, for auoyding occasion of eche
 Husbendes offence, determined to cease their accustomed conuers-
 sation and louinge Familiarity, & not to frequent others compa-
 ny, but at Places, and Tymes conuenient. To whom For-
 tune was so fauourable, as not onely they Houses were neere
 together but also adioyninge, in the Backsides whereof they
 Gardens also Confined, Seperated onely with a litle Hedge,
 that every day they myght see one another, and many tymes talke
 together: Moreover the Seruauntes, and People of eyther
 Houses were Freendly, and Familiar, which didde greatly
 content the two Louynge Gentlewomen, because they also in
 the absence of theyr Husbendes, myghte at Pleasure in their

Two Gentlewomen.

In their Gardens disport themselves. And continuing this order the space of thre yeares neither of them within that terme were with childe. In which space Anselmo many times viewing and casting his eyes vpon Madonna Lucia, fell earnestly in loue with hir, and was not y day well at ease, wherein he had not beholden hir excellent beauty: She that was of Spirit, and Wit subtile, marked the lookes, and maner of Anselmo, who neither for loue, ne other cause did render like lookes on him, but to see to what ende his louing cheere and Countenaunce would tend. Notwithstanding she seemed rather desirous to behold him, than elswhere to imploie hir lookes. On the other side the good behauour, the wise order and pleasaunt beauty of Madonna Isotta was so excellent and plausible in the sight of maister Girolamo, as no Louer in the World was better pleased with his beloued than he with hir: who not able to liue wthout the sweete sight of Isotta (that was a crafty & wily Wenche) was by hir quickly perceiued. She being right honest & wise, and louing hir husband very dearly, did beare that countenance to Girolamo, y she generally did to any of the City, or to other straunger that she neuer saw before. But hir husband more & more inflamed, hauing lost the libertie of himself wounded & pierced with the amorous arrowes of Loue, could not conuert his minde to any other but to mistresse Lucia. These two women wonted to heare seruice euery day ordinarily at the church of Sanfantino, because they lay long a bed in the mornings, & commonly seruice in that church was sayd somewhat late: their pewes also somewhat distant one from an other. Whether their .2. amorous husbands continually vsed to follow them a looke of, and to place themselves where eyther of them might best view his beloued: by which custome they seemed to the common people to be zealous ouer their Wyues. But they prosecuted the matter in such wise, as eyther of them without shipping, sought to send other into Couraule. It came to passe then, that these .2. beloued Gentlewomen the knowing nothing of an others intent, determined to consider better of this loue, because the great good will long time borne, should not be interrupted. Vpon a certayne day when their husbands were abode, resorting together to talk at their Gardēbedges
according

accoꝝdyng to theyꝝ wonted manner, they began to be 'pleasaunte
and merre; and after louenge salutations, Mistresse Lucia spake
these Wordes vnto hir Companyon. Isotta my deare beloued
sister, I haue a tale to tell you of your husband, that perchaunce
will seeme straunger than anye newes that euer you heard. And I
(answered mistresse Isotta) I haue a story to tel you that will make
you no lesse to wonder than I at that which you haue to say, and
it may be will put you into some choler and chafe. What is that
quod the one and other. In the ende epther of them told what prac-
tizēs and loue their husbands went about. Whereat although they
were in great rage foꝝ theyꝝ husbādes follie, yet foꝝ the time they
laughed out the matter, and thought that they were sufficient (as
in very deede they were, a thing not to be doubted) and able to sa-
tisfye their husbands hunger and therewithall began to blame them
to say þ they deserued to learn to play of þ Cornets, if they had no
greater feare of God, and care of honesty than their husbands had.
Then after much talke of this matter, concluded that they should
do wel to expect what their husbands would demaund, hauing ta-
ken order as they thought meete, they agreed daile to espye what
shoulde chaunce, and purposed first with sweete and pleasaunte
lookes to bapte and lure eche other seere, to put them in hope ther-
by that they shoulde satisfie their desires, which done foꝝ that tyme
they departed. And when at the Church of Sanfadrino oꝝ other
place in Venice, they chanced to meete their louers, they shewed vn-
to them cheareful and mery Countenaunce: whych the Louers
well notyng, were the gladdest Men of the Worlde; and seing that
it was impossible in Speeches to bitter their Wyndes, they purpo-
sed by Letters to signify the same. And hauing found Purcuants
to goe betwene parties. (whereof this City was want to be full) ei-
ther of them wrote an Amorous Letter, to his beloued, the content
whereof was, that they were verie desirous secretly to talke
with them, thereby to expresse the burnyng affectiōns that in-
wardly they bare them, whych without declaration and utterance
by Mouth in theyꝝ owne presence, woulde breede them Tor-
ments moze better than Deathe. And within fewe Dayes af-
ter (no greate Difference of Tyme betwene) they wrote their

Two Gentlewomen.

Letters. But Girolamo Bembo hauing a pregnant Wit, who
coule well Endite both in Prose, and Rime, wrote an excellent
Sonnet in the praise of his Darling in Italian Poeter, & with his
Letter sent the same vnto hir, the effect whereof doth follow.

A Lively face and pearcing beauty bright
Hath linkt in lone my selfe sences all:
A comely port, a goodly shaped wight
Hath made me slide that neuer thought to fall:
His eyes, his grace, his deedes and manners milde,
So straines my heart, that lone hath Wit begilde.

But not one Dart of Cupide did me wounde,
A hundred shaftes lights all on me at ones:
As though dame kind some new deuise had founde,
To teare my flesh, and crash a two my bones:
And yet I feele such toy in these my woes
That as I die, my sprite to pleasure goes.

These new found fits, such change in me doe breede,
I hate the day, and draw to darknesse lo!
Yet by the Lampe of beauty doe I feede
In dimmest dayes and darkest nights also,
Thus aliring State and changing Diet still,
I feele and know the force of Venus will.

The best I finde, is that I doe confesse,
I loue you Dame, whose Beauty doth excell:

But yet

But yet a toy doth breede me some distresse,
For that I dread you will not loue me well,
Than loue yee wot shall rest in me alone:
And fleshly brest, shall beare a heart of stone.

O Goddesse mine, yet heare my voyce of ruthes,
And pitie him, that heart presents to thee:
And if thou want a witnesse for my truth
Let sighes and teares my iudge and record be,
Unto the ende a day may come in hast,
To make me thinke I spend no time in waste.

For nought prepayles in lone to serue and sue
If full effect ioyne not with words at neede,
What is desire or any fantasies newe
More than the winde? that spreades abroad in deede,
My words and works, shall both in one agree,
To pleasure hir, whose Seruaunt would I bee.

The subtil Dames receiuing those amorous letters and song
disdaintfully, at the first seemed to take them at the byngers hands,
as they had determined, yet afterwarde they shewed better coun-
tenaunce. These letters were tossed from one to an other, where-
at they made great pastime, and thought that the same would
come to very good successe, epyther of them keepinge still their
Husbandes Letter, and agreed without injury done one to an o-
ther trunly to deceyue their husbands. The maner how you shall
perceyue anon. They deuised to send word to their Louers, that
they were ready at al times to satisfie their sures, if the same might
besecretly done, and safely might make repaer vnto their houses,

Ec. 4.

when

Two Gentlewomen.

when their Husbands were absent, which in any wise they sayde, must be done in the night, for feare least in the day tyme they were discried. Agayne these prouident and subtil Women had taken order wth their Maydes, who they made priuie to their practyse that thzough their Gardens they should enter into others house, and bee shut in their Chambers without Lycht, there to tary for their Husbands, and by any meanes not to bee seene or knowne. This order prescribed and giuen, Mistrisse Lucia first did hir lou-uer to vnderstand, that the night insuing at foure of the Clock at the Posterne doze, which should be left open, he should come into hir house, wch ere hir mayde should be ready to bring him vp to hir Chaumbre, because hir husbände maister Girolamo would that Night imbarke himselfe to goe to Padua. The like Mistrisse Isotta did to Maister Girolamo, appointing him at fise of the clock wherch she sayd was a very conuenient time, because maister Anselmo that night would sup and lye with certayne of his frendes at Murano, a place besides Venice. Upon these newes, the 2. Lo-uers thought them selues the most valiant and fortunate of the World, no Enterpryse now there was but seemed easie for them to bring so passe, yea if it were to expell the Saracens out of Hierusalem, or to depriue the great Turke of his Kingdome of Constantinople. Their toy was sutch, as they coulde not tell where they were, thinking euerie houre a whole day till night. At length the tyme was come so long desired, and the Husbandes accordingly gaue diligent attendaunce, and let their Wives to vnderstande, (or at least wyle beleueed they had) that they could not come home that night for matters of great importaunce. The Women that were very wise, seeing their ship sayle wth so prosperous wynde, sayned themselves to credite all that they offered. These young men tooke epyther of them his Gondola (or as wee term it theyr Barge) to dispozt themselves, and hauing supped abroade, rowed in the Canali, which is the Water that passeth through diuers Streates of the Citty, expecting their appoynted houre. The Women ready at three of the Clocke, repayzed into their Gardens, and after they had Talked, and Laughed together a pretty while, went one into an others house, and were by the Maydes brought

brought vp to the Chambers. There eithor of them the Candle being light, began diligently to view the order and situation of the Place, and by litle and litle marked the chiefest things they looked for, committing the same to memory. Afterwards they put out the Candle, and both in trembling maner expected the coming of their Husbantes. And lust at foure of the Clocke the Mayden of Madonna Lucia Noode at the Doze to wayte for the coming of Master Anselmo, who within a while after came, and gladly was let in by the wayde, and by hir conducted vp to hir Bed Rde. The place there, was so darke as Hel, and impossible for him to know his Wyfe. The two Wyues were so like of bignesse and Speech as by darke withour great difficulty they could, be known. When Anselmo had put of his clothes, he was of his Wyfe amozously intertayned, thinking the Wyfe of Girolamo had receyued him betwene hir armes, who aboue a Thousande times kissed hir very sweetly, and she for hir parte sweetely rendred agayne to hym so many. What followed it were folly to describe. Girolamo lykewise at. 5. of the clocke appeared, and was by the mayde conueyed vp to the Chäber, where he lay with his owne Wyfe, to their great contentations. Now these. 2. Husbantes thinking they had ben embraced by their beloued Ladies, to serue braue, and valiaunt men of Warre, made greater prooffe of their Manhoode, thā they were wont to do. At what time their Wyues (as it pleased God to manifest by their deliuey) were begottē with child of. 2. fayre Söns, and they the best contented Women of the Worlde. This practise continued betwene them many times, ftwe weekes passing but in this sort they lay together. Neithor of them for all this, perceiued themselves to be deluded, or cöcepted any suspicion of collusion for that the chamber was still without light, and in the day the Women commonly sayled not to be together. The time was not longe but their Bellies began to swell, wherat their Husbantes were exceeding iopfull, bekeuing verily that eithor of them had fixed Hornes vpon the others head. Howbeit the pooze men for all their false Beliefe had bestowed theyr Laboure vppon their owne Soyle, Watred onely with the course of their proper foimtaine. These two Jolly Wenches seeing themselves by thys amozous

amorous practize to be with Childe, beganne to deuise howe they might bycake of the same, doubting least some slander and ill talke should rise: and thereby the hatred and malice betwene they husbands increase to greater fury. And as they were aboute thes deuise, an occasion chaunced, bitterly to dissolue they accustomed meetynges, but not in that sozte as they woulde haue had it. For the Women determined as merily they had begon so iocundlye to ende: but Fortune the guide of Humane Lyfe disposeth all enterpyres after hir owne pleasure, who lyke a puissant Lady carreyth with hir the successe of eche attempte. The beginning she offereth freely to him that list, the Ende she calleth for, as a ransome or tribute payable vnto hir. In the same Streete, or as they call it Rio, a Canale, not farre from they Houses, there dwelled a young Woman very fayre and comely, not fully twenty yeares of age, which then was a Widow, and a litle before the wife of M. Niccolo Delphino, and the Daughter of M. Giuoanni Moro, called Gismonda. She besides hir fathers Dowrye (which was moze than a Thousand Pound) had left hir by hir Husband, a great Portion of Money, Jewels, Plate, and household Furnitures. With hir fell in Loue Aloisio Foscari, the Nephewe of the Duke, who making greate sute to haue hir to Wyfe, consumed the time in beholding his Ladye, and at length had brought the matter to so good passe, as one Nighte she was contented at one of the Wyndowes of hir House directly ouer agaynst a litle lane, to heare him speake. Aloisio maruellous glad of those desired Newes at the appointed Night, about fyue or sixe of the Clocke with a Ladder made of Roapes (because the Window was very high went thither alone. Being at the place and making a signe concluded hypon betwene them, attended when the gentlewoman should throw down hir cord to draw by the Ladder accordyngly as was appointed, which not longe after was done, Gismonda when shee had receiued the ende of the Ladder, tied it fast to the sawme of the wyndow, and gaue a token to hir Louer to mount, he by force of loue being very demourous, liuely and lustely scaled the Wyndow. And when he was hypon the Top of the same, desirous to caste himselfe in, to embrace his Lady, shee not readye to receiue him, or else hypon other occasion

occasion, he fel downe backward, thinking as he fell to haue sa-
 ned himselfe twice or thyece by catchyng holde vpon the Ladder,
 but it would not be. Notwithstanding, as God would haue it, the
 poise of his Body fell not vpon the pauement of the streete fully,
 but was slaped by some lets in the fall, whych had it not bene so, no
 doubt he had bene slayne out of hande, but yet his bones were soze
 brused and his heade deeply wounded. The infortunate Louer
 seeing himselfe soze hurt wth that pitifull fall, albe it hee thought
 that hee had receiued his Deaths Wounde, and impossible to liue
 any longer, yet the loue that he bare to the Widow, did so far sur-
 mount hys payne and the grefe of hys Body soze crushed and bzo-
 ken, that so well as he could, hee rose vp, and with his hands stay-
 ed the blood that ranne from hys Heade, to the intente yt myghte
 not rapse some slaunder vpon the Widow whom hee loued so wel;
 and went alonges the streat towarde the houses of, Girolamo and
 Anselmo aforesaid. Being come thither wth greate difficulty not
 able to goe anye further for verye payne and grefe, hee fainted
 and fell downe as deade, where the Bloude issued in such aboun-
 dauce, as the Grounde therewyth was greatly imbrued, and e-
 uery one that saw him thought him to be voide of Lye. Mistresse
 Gilmonda exceeding sorrowful for this mischaunce, doubted that
 he had broken his Necke, but when she saw hym depart, she i-
 comforted him so wel as she could, and drewe vp the Ladder into hir
 Chamber. Such Chaunces happen to earnest Louers, who
 when they think they haue scaled the top of theyr Felicity today,
 to tumble downe into the Pit of extreme despayre, that better it had
 ben for them leysurely to expect the grace of their Ladies at con-
 uenient place and houre, than haue dysprouidence to aduē-
 ture like desperat souldiers to clym the top of the banuere, without
 mesurynge the height of the Walls, or vichyng the substaunce of
 theyr Ladders, do receiue in the end cruell repulse, and fal down
 headlonge either by present Death or mortall Wounde, to receiue
 euerydayng reproche and shame. But turne we agayne now to this
 disgraced Louer, who lay gasping betwene Lye and death. And as
 he was in this sorrowful state, one of the Captaynes, a Noble man
 appointed to see orders obserued in the Fight, wth hys bande
 (whych

Two Gentlewomen,

(which they call Zaff) came thither. And finding him lying vpon the ground, knew that it was Aloisio Foscari, and causing him to be taken vp from the place wher he lay, (thinking he had ben dead) commanded that he should be conueyed into the Church adorning which immediately was done. And when he had wel considered the place where hee was founde, hee doubted that either Girolamo Bembo, or Anselmo Barbadico, before whose Doores hee thought the murder committed, had killed him, which afterwards he beloued to be true, because he heard a certayne number of menne flete at one of their Doores. Wherefore he deuised his company, placing some on the one side of their houses, and some on the other besieging the same so well as he coude. And as fortune would hee founde by Negligence of the mayds, the doores of the .ii. houses open. It chaunced also that Night that the two Louers one in others House were gone to lye with their Laddes, who hearinge the hurly burly, and sturre made in the House by the Sergeants, suddenly the women lept out of their Beds, and bearing their apparel vppon their Shoulders, went home to their houses throughe their Gardens vnseene of any, and in fearefull wise did attende what should be the End of the same. Girolamo, and Anselmo not knowing what rumoz and noise that was, although they made hast in the Darke to clothe themselves, were by the Officers without any field sought, apprehended in ech others Chamber, and remained Prisoners at their Mercy: whereat the Captaine and his Band did greatly maruell, knowing the Hatred betweene them. But when Torches and Lighes were brought, and the two Gentlemen caried out of Doores, the Wonder was the greater for that they perceiued them almost Naked, and Prisoners taken in ech others House. And besides this admiration, such murmur and clamour was heard, as the qualite of euerye Vulgar Hoode coude secretlye deuise of. Imagene, but specially of the innocent Women, who howe faultlesse they were, euery Man by what is sayde before maye conceiue, and yet the cankered Romackes of that Croupe bare such Malice agaynst them, as they tarred and browled agaynst them like curres the Curres at Graunge Dogges whom they neuer sawe before. The Gentle

men immediately were caried to prison, ignorant howe what occasion Afterwards vnderstandinge that they were committed for the murder of Aloisio Foscari, and imprisoned like the reue, as they knew themselves guiltlesse of murder or Theft, yet their grief and sorowe was very greate, beinge certayne that all Venice should vnderstande howe they betwene whome had ben mortall hatred, were nowe become copartners of that wretched vnde. But the true possessor ought to enjoy. And although they could not abyde to speake together, like those that deadly dyd hate one another, yet both they. Whendes were red vpon one thought. In the ende, conceyvinge Fyre and despayre agaynst they. Wives, the place beinge so darke that no Light of Sunne coulde pierce in to the same, whereby without shame or vndignitie one of them began to speake to another, and with terrible Wythes they gaue they forth to disclose the troth in what sort eyther of them was taken in others Chamber, and frankly tolde the way and meane howe eche of them enioyed hys Pleasure of others Wives: whercupon the whole matter (according to their knowledge) was altogether by little and little manifest and knowen. Then they acquainted they. Wives to be the most arrant Strumpets within the whole Citie, by disparaginge of whom theyr olde reuok was forgotten, and they agreed together like two frends, who thought that for shame they should neuer be able to looke Men in the face, ne yet to shew themselves openly within the Citie, for sorrow wherof they deemed Death the greatest good turne and best Benefit: that could chance vnto them. To be short, seeinge no meanes or occasion to comfort and relieue theyr pensyue and heauy States, they fell into extreme despayre, who ashamed to liue any longer, deuised way to rid them selues of Life, concludinge to make themselves guilty of the murder of Aloisio Foscari. And after much talke betwene them of that cruell determination, vntill appoynting the same to be theyr best refuge, they expected nothinge else, but when they should be examined before the Magistrates.

Foscari as is before declared was carryed into the Church for Deade, and the Priest straightly charged with the keepinge of him, who caused hym to bee conueyed into the myddes of the Church

Church, setting the Torch a light, the one at his heade, and the
 other at his feet, and when the Company was gone, he determined
 to goe to bed the remnant of the Night to take his rest. But before
 he went, seeing the Torch were but short, and could not last passe
 two or three houres, he lighted two other, and set them in the others
 place, for that it should seeme to his friends, if any chanced to come
 what care and watch he bestowed vpon him. The Priest ready
 to depart, perceiued the Body somewhat to moue, with that loo-
 king vpon his face, espyed his Eyes a little to begin to open.
 Wherewithall somewhat afraide, he crying out, ran away: But
 withstanding his Cowage began to come to him again, and laying
 his hand vpon his breast, perceiued his heart to beate, and then
 was out of doubt he was not dead, although by reason of losse of
 his blood he thought little life to remaine in him. Wherefore he is
 one of his fellow priests which was a bed, & the Clerk of the Pa-
 rish, caried maister Foscare so tenderly as they could into the priest
 Chamber, which adioined next the Church. Then he sente for a
 surgeon that dwelt hard by, and required him diligently to search
 the Wounde, who so well as he could purged the same from the
 corrupt Bloud, and perceiuing it not to be mortall, so dressed it
 with Oyles and other precious ointments, as Aloisio came again
 to himselfe. And when he had anointed that recovered Body with
 certayne Precious and comfortable Oyles, he suffered him to take
 his rest. The Priest also went to bed and slepte till it was Daye,
 who so soone as he was vp, went to seeke the Captaine to tel him
 that Maister Aloisio was recovered. The Captaine at that time
 was gone to the palace at San. Marco, to giue the Duke aduertise-
 ment of this Chaunce, after whom the Priest went and was let in
 to the Dukes Chamber: to whom he declared what he had done to
 Aloisio. The Duke very glad to heare tell of his Nephews life,
 although then very peniue for the Nephew brought vnto him
 by the Captaine, intreated one of the Signor de notte, to take with
 him two of the best surgeons, and to call him that had already dress-
 ed his Nephew, to goe to visite the wounded Gentleman, that hee
 might be certified of the truth of that Chaunce. All which together

repairs

repaired to the Dyrectors Chaumber, where findinge hym not a
 sleep, and the Wound saye inoughe to heale, dyd thereunto what
 their cunning thoughte meete. And then they began to inquire of
 hym, that was not yet full recovered to perfecte speache, howe
 that chaunce happened, telling hym that he might frankelye con-
 fesse vnto him the trouthe. The more diligent they were in this de-
 maunde, bicause the Surgeon that dyessed him first, alleaged that
 the Wounde was not made with Sworde, but receiued by some
 greate fall of Blowe with Mace or Clubbe, or rather seemed to
 come of some high fall from a Wyndowe, by reason his head was
 so greuously brused. Also hearinge the Surgeons sodayne de-
 maunde, presentelye answered, that he fell downe from a Wynd-
 owe, and named also the House. And hee had no sooner
 spoken those Wordes, but he was very angry wryth him selfe
 and forye: And therewithall his dismayde Spirit began to
 reuenge in such wyse, as sodainly hee chose rather to dye than to
 speake any thyng to the dishonoure of Mistrisse Gismonda.
 Then the Signior di notte, asked hym what he ded there aboute
 that Tyme of the Nycht, and wherfore hee had climbd vp to the
 Wyndowe, beinge so hyghe: wher hee coulde not keepe
 secreete, consideringe the Authoryte of the Magistrate that de-
 maunded the questyon, albejt hee thoughte that if his Tongue
 hadde runne at large, and committed a faulte by rash spea-
 chinge, his Bodie shoulde therefore suffer the smart. Wher-
 fore before hee woulde in any wyse geue occasion to slander
 his, whome hee loued better than his owne Life, determyned
 to hazarde his Life and Honour, to the Mercye of Justice,
 and sayde: I declared euen now, wher I cannot denye,
 that I fell downe from the Wyndowe of Mistrisse Gismon-
 da Mora. The cause thercof (beinge now as late, where-
 in I knowe not whether I shall Lyue or Dye) I will true-
 ly disclose. Mistrisse Gismonda beinge a Wydowe and a
 young Woman, wethoute anye Man in hir House, bicause
 of repozite shee is very rich of Jewels and Money. I purposed
 to robbe and dyspoyle. Wherfore I deuysed a Ladder to climbe
 by.

Two Gentlewomen,

by to his Windowe, with Windowe full bent to kill all those that
 should resist me. But my mischance was such, as the ladder be-
 ing not well fastened fell downe, and I my selfe therewithall. and
 thinking to recouer home to my lodging with my corded Ladder,
 my Spirites beganne to faile, and tumbled downe. I wote not
 where. The Signor de norre, whose name was Domenico Mariper-
 to hearing him say so, marvelled greatly, and was very sorrye, that
 a'l they in the Chamber, which were a great number, (as at such
 channes commonlye) did heare those Wordes: and because they
 were spoken so openly, he was forced to saye vnto hym: Aloisio, It
 doth not a little grieue me that thou hast committed such follie,
 but for so much as sorrowe now will not serue to remedye the
 Trespass, I must needs be my selfe both faithfull to my coun-
 try, and also carefull of mine honoꝝ, without respect of persons.
 Wherefore thou shalt remaine here in such safe custody as I
 shall appoint, and when thou art better amended, thou must accor-
 ding to desert be referre to the Goale. Leaving him there under
 sure keeping, he went to the counsell of the Dieci, (which magistra-
 tes in that City be of greatest authority) and finding the Lords in
 Counsell, he opened the whole matter vnto them. The presidentes
 of the Counsell which had hearde a great number of Complaints
 of many Trespasors in the Night wth in the City, tooke order
 that one of the Captaynes that were appointed to the diligence
 Watche and keeping of Aloisio, remaining in the Prisoners House,
 should cause him to be examined, and with Tormentes forced to
 tell the truth, for that they did verily beleue that hee had com-
 mitted many Robberies besides, or at the least was ptyer and ac-
 cessarie to the same, and knew where the Treasures were become.
 Afterwardes the said Counsell did sitte vpon the matter of Gi-
 rolamo Bembo and Anselmo Barbado, so called at night, had
 breake the others Chamber, and committed to Prison as he
 for remyned. And because they had many matters beset of a
 greater importance, to consult vpon, amongs which the warres
 betwene them and Philippo Maria Visconte, Duke of Milane,
 the aforesayde causes were deferred till an other tyme, not
 withstanding in the meane while they were examined. The

Duke himselfe that tyme being in counsell, spake most severely against his Nephew. Neuerthelesse hee did hardly belceue that his Nephew being very rich, and indued with great honesty, would abase himselfe to a vice so vile and abhominable as theft is, wherupon he began to consider of many thinges, and in the ende talked with his Nephew secretly alone, and by that meanes learned the trouth of the whole matter. In like maner Anselmo and Girolamo were Examined by Commissioners appoynted by the State, what one of them did in an others Chamber, at that houre of the night, who confessed that many tymes they had scene Aloisio Foscari, to passe by and down befoze their houses at times inconvenient, and that night by chaunce one of them not knowing of another, espied Aloisio, thinking that he lingered about their houses to abuse one of their Wives, for which cause they went out, and with their Weapons sodenly killed him. Which confession they openly declared accordingly, as whereupon befoze they were agreed. Afterwardes with further circumstance being examined vpon the Article of being one in anothers Chaumber, it appeared that their first tale was bitterly vnttrue. Of all which contradicti-
 ons the Duke was aduertised, and was driuen into extreme admiration, for that the truth of those disorders coulde not be to the full vnderstanded and knowne. Whereuppon the Dicci, and the assistauntes were agayne assembled in counsell accordinge to the maner, at what time after all things throughly were debated and ended, the Duke being a very graue man, of excellent Witte, aduauced to the Dukedome by the consent of the whole State, as euery of theym were about to rise by, hee sayde vnto them: My Lordes there resteth one thinge yet to be moued, which peraduenture hitherto hath not bene thought vpon. There are befoze vs two cōplaynts, the effect whereof in my iudgemēt is not throughly conceiued in the Opinions of diuers. Anselmo Barbadico, and Girolamo Bembo, betwene whom there hath bene euer continuall hatred, left vnto them as a man may say by Fathers Inheritance both of them in eyther of their Chaumbers, were apprehended in a manner naked by our Sergeaunts, and without Torments, or for feare to bee racked vpon the onely interrogatories of oure
 Dd. mynistrs

Two Gentlewomen.

“ ministers, they haue voluntarily confessed that befoze their houses
“ they killed Aloisio our Nephew. And albeit that our sayde Ne-
“ phew yet liueth, & was not stricken by them or any other as should
“ appeare, yet they confesse themselues guilty of the murder. What
“ shall be sayd then to the matter, doth it not seeme doubtfull? Our
“ Nephew again hath declared, that in going about to rob the house
“ of Mistresse Gismonda Mora, whom he ment to haue slayne, he fel
“ downe to the Ground from the top of a window, wherefoze by rea-
“ son so many robberies haue bene discovered within the Citie, it
“ may be presumed that hee was the theefe & malefactor, who ought
“ to be put to the torments, that the truth may be knowne, and being
“ found guilty, to feele the seuerer punishment that he hath deserued.
“ Moreover when he was found lying vpon the ground, he had nei-
“ ther Ladder nor Weapon, whereupon may bee thought that the
“ fact was otherwise done, than hitherto is confessed. And because
“ amongst moztall vertues, temperance is the chiefest and woorthy of
“ greatest commendation, and that iustice not righteously executed,
“ is iniustice and wronge, it is meete and conuenient for vs in these
“ straunge accidents, rather to vse temperance than the rigour of
“ iustice. And that it may appeare that I do not speake these words
“ without good grounde, marke what I shall saye vnto you. These
“ two most mortall enemies doe confesse that which is impossible to
“ be true, for that our Nephew (as is befoze declared) is a liue, and
“ his wounde was not made by Sword, as hee himselfe hath con-
“ fessed. Now who can tell or say the contrary, but that shame for be-
“ ing taken in their seuerall Chambers, and the dishonesty of both
“ their Wyes, hath caused them to despise life, and to desire death?
“ We shall finde if the matter be diligently inquired and searched,
“ that it will fall out otherwise than is already supposed by commū
“ opinion. For the contrariety of examinations, vnlikelihoode of
“ circumstances, and the impossibility of the cause, rendreth the mat-
“ ter doubtfull. Wherefoze it is very needefull diligently to exa-
“ mine these attempts, and thereof to vse moze aduised considerati-
“ on. On the other side, our Nephew accuseth himselfe to be a theefe
“ and which is moze, that hee ment to kill mistresse Mora when hee
“ byake

make into his house. Under this Grass my Lords as I suppose,
 some other Serpent lieth hiden, that is not yet thought of. The
 Gentleman yee know before this time was neuer defamed of such
 outrage, ne suspected of the least offence that may be objected. Be-
 sides that, all yee doe know, (thanks thereto be geuen to almighty
 God) that he is a man of great riches, and possessions, and hath
 no neede to rob. For what necessity should driue him to rob a wi-
 dow, that hath of his owne liberally to bestow vpon the succour
 of Widowes? Were there none els of substance in the City for
 him to geue attempt, but to a Wyddowe, a comfortlesse creature,
 contented with quiet life to lyue amonges his family within the
 boundes of his owne house? What if his riches, Jewels and
 plate be great, hath not Aloisio of his owne to redouble the same?
 But truly this Robbery was done after some other manner than
 hee hath confessed. To vs then my Lords it appertayneth, if it so
 stande with your pleasures, to make further inquiry of the same,
 promising vnto you vppon our Faith, that wee shall imploie our
 whole diligence in the true examination of this matter, and hope
 to bringe the same to such good ende, as none shall haue cause to
 blame vs, the small sentence whereof shall bee reserued to your
 iudgement. This graue request and wise talke of the Duke plea-
 sed greatly the Lordes of the Counsaile, who referred not onely
 the examination, but also the small sentence vnto hym.

Wherevppon the wise Prince beinge fully enformed of the
 chaunce happened to his Nephewe, attended only to make search,
 if hee coulde vnderstand the occasion why Bembo and Barbado
 so foolishly had accused themselues of that which they neuer did.
 And so after much counsaile, and great tyme continued in their
 seuerall examinations, his Nephew then was well recovered, and
 able to goe abroade, being set at liberty. The Duke then hauinge
 bestowed his trausple with the other two prisoners communicated
 to the Lordes of the aforesayd conseil called Dieci the whole trouth
 of the matter. Then he caused to great discretio, proclamatio to be
 made throughout Venice, & Anselmo & Girolamo shold be beheded

Ed 2.

betweene

Two Gentlewomen.

betwene the two Killers, and Aloisio hanged, whereby he thought to know what sute the women would make, epther with or against their Husbannes, and what euidence mistresse Gismonda would geue against Aloisio. The brute hercof disperfed, diuers talke thereuppon was rayfed, and no Communication of any thing els in open streets, and priuate houses, but of the putting to death of those men. And bicause all thzee were of honorable houses, their kinsmen, and friends made sute by all possible meanes for their pardon. But their Confessions published, the rumoz was made worse, (as it dayly chaunceth in like cases) than the matter was in deede, and the same was nopsed how Foscarei had confessed so many thestes done by him at diuers tymes, as none of his frends or kin durst speake for him. Mistresse Gismond, which bitterly lamented the mischaunce of hir Louer, after she vnderstoode the confession hee had made, and evidently knew that because hee would not bleamish hir honour, he had rather willingly forgo his owne, and therewithall his life, felt hir selfe so oppressed with feruent loue, as shee was ready presently to surrender hir ghost. Wherefoze shee sent him woorde that hee should comfort himselfe, because shee was determined to manifest the very trouth of the matter, and hoped hypon hir declaration of true euidence, sentence shoulde bee renoked, for testimony whereof, shee had his louinge letters yet to shewe, witten to hir with his owne handes, and would bring forth in the iudgement place, the corded Ladder, which she had kept still in hir chamber. Aloisio hearinge these louing newes, & of the euidence which his Lady would geue for his defence, was the gladdest man of the worlde, and caused infinite thankes to be rendred vnto hir, with promise that if hee might bee rid and discharged out of prison, he would take hir for his louing spouse and wyfe. Whereof the Gentlewoman conceiued singular solace, louing hir deere freende with more entier affection than hir owne soule. Mistresse Lucia, & mistresse Isotta, hearing the disperfed voyce of the death of their husbands, & vnderstandinge the case of mistresse Gismonda by an other womā, layd their heads together likewise to deuise meanes for sauing their husbandes liues: & entring into their
Barge, or

barge or Gondola, wente to seeke mistress Gismonda and when they had debated vpon the trouthe of these euents, concluded with one assent to prouide for the safegarde and deliuerie of the husbands, wherein they shewed themselues both wise and honest. For what state is more honozable and of greater Comfozte than the married Lyfe, if in deede they that haue soaked themselues therein be conformable to those Delightes, and contentation which the same conduceth? Wealth and Riches maketh the true vniupt couple to reioyce in the Benefits of Fortune, graunted by the sender of the same, either of them prouiding for disposing thereof, against the decrepite tyme of olde age, and for the bestowing of the same vpon the fruite accrued of the Bodies. Pouerty in any wise dothe not offend them, both of them glad to Laboure and trauaile. Like one Body, to sustaine the poore and needy Lyfe, eyther of them Comfortably both Minister comfozte in the cruell tyme of Thuersty, rendyng humble thankes to God for his sharp Rodde and Punishment inflicted vpon them for their manifolde sinnes committed against his Mateste, trauaillinge by night and Day by sweatinge Browes to get browne Breaide, a drynke ful thin to cease the Cries and penyfull crawinges of their tender Babes, wrapt in Cradle and instant on their mother to fill their hungry mouthes. Thuerse fortune maketh not one to forsake the other. The louing Wyfe ceaseth not by paynfull sure to trot and go by night and day in heate and colde to relieue the miserie of hir husband. He likewise spareth not his payne to get and gayne the liuyng of them both, he abrode and at home according to his called state, she at home to saue the Lucre of that Laboꝝ, and to doe such necessary trauaile incident to the married kinde. He carefull for to get. He heedfull for to saue, he by traſſique and Arte, she by diligence and houtholde toile. And the happy state of married folke: A surpassing delights of mariage bed: which maketh these it poore Gentlewomen, that by honozable pollicy saued the honoꝝ of themselves and honestie of the husbands, to make humble sure for their preservation, who were like to be berieued of their greatest comforts.

But come we again to declare the last act of this Comical discourse

Two Gentlewomen,

These married Women, after this chaunce befell, vpon their husbands imprisonment, began to be abhorred of their Friends and Parents, for that they were suspected to be dishoneste, by reason wheteof dolcfully lamenting their Misfortune, notwithstandinge their owne conscience boide of faulte, dyd byd them to be of good cheere and comfort. And when the daye of execution came, they dyd theyr Friends and Parents to vnderstand that their conceiued opinion was vntrue, and prayed them to forbear their disdain and malice, till the truth should be thoroughly manifested, assuring them that in the End their owne innocencie and the guiltlesse crime of their Husbands should openly be reuealed to the Worlde. In the meane time they made request vnto their Friends, that one of the Lordes called Auogadori might be admitted to vnderstande their case, the rest to be referred to themselves, wherein they had no neede either of Practor or Aduocate. This request seemed verre straunge to their friends, deeming their case to be shameful and abominable. Neuertheles diligently they accomplished their request vnderstandyng that the Counsell of the Dieci had committed the matter wholy to the Duke, they made a supplicatyon vnto hym in the name of the thre Gentlewomen, wherein they craued nothing else but theyr matter might be hearde. The Duke perceiuyngc hys aduise like to take effect, assigned them a Day, commaundinge them at that tyme before hym and the Lords of the Councell and all the College of the estate to appeare. The Day being come, all the Lordes assembled, desirous to see to what issue this matter would grow. On the morning the thre Gentlewomen honestly accompanied with other Dames, went to the Palace, and goynge along the streete of San Marco the people began to utter many rayling words against them. Some cried out (as we see by vnstable order the vulgare people in like cases vse to do) and doynge a certain curtilye by way of disdain & mockery: Behold ȝ honest women, that without sending their husbands out of Venice, haue placed them in the Castell of Cornerio, and yet the arrante Whoores bee not ashamed to shewe them selues abrode, as though they hadde done a thyng that were honeste and prayse worthy. Other shot forth theyr Woltes, and wryth theyr Proverbs procedyng from their

their malicious Mouthes, thwitted the poore Women at their pleasure. Other also seeing Mistresse Gismonda in their Company, thought that she went to declame against maister Aloisio Foscari, and none of them all hapned on the trowth. Arryued at the pallasce, ascēding the marble staires o: steps of the same, they were brought into the great hall, wher the duke appointed the matter to be heard. Thither repaired the friends and those of nearest kin to the thre Gentlewomen, and befoze the matter did begin, the Duke caused also the thre prisoners to be brought thither. Thither also came many other Gentlemen, with great desire to see the end of those euentys. Silence being made, the Duke turning his face to the women, sayd vnto them: Ye Gentlewomen haue made requeste by supplicacions to graunt you publike audyence accordyng to Justice, for that you do alleage that Law and order doth so require, and that euery well ordered common wealth condemneth no subiecte withoute due answer by order of lawe. Beholde therefore, that we desirous to do Justice, bee ready in Place to heare what ye can say. The two husbands were very angry & Wrathfull against their wiues, and the more their stomackes did fret with choler and dysbayne by how much they saw theyr impudence and shamelesse wyllyng with such audacity to appeare befoze the maiesty of a counsel so honorable and dreadfull, as though they had ben the most honeste and chaste Women of the World. The two honeste wiues percepued the anger and displeasure of their husbands, and for all that were not afrayde ne yet dismayde, but smiling to themselves and sometimes mouing their heads in decēte wylse seemed vnto them as though they had mocked them. Anselmo more angry and impacient then Giolamo, brake out into such furie, as had it not ben for the maiesty of the place, and the Companye of People to haue stayed him woulde haue kyllled them: and seying he was not able to hurt them, he began to utter the hylest Words, that he possibly could devise agaynst them. Mistresse Isotta hearing hir husband so spitefully to spit forth his popson in the presence of that honourable assembly, conceiued courage, and crauinge licence of the Duke to speake, with merrye countenancel and good vtrance began thus to say her mind.

Two Gentlewemen.

Most excellent Prince, and yee right honorable Lordes, I doe
 perceiue how my deare Husbande vncemely and very dishonelly
 doth vse himselfe agaynst mee in this noble company, thinking al-
 so that Myster Gholamo Bembo is affected with like rage and
 minde agaynst this Gentlewoman my Mistresse Lucia. Yet, al-
 though moze temperate in wordes, he do not expresse the same. I
 agaynst whom if no reply be made, it may seeme that he doth well
 hath spoken a truth, and that we by silence do condempne our selves
 to be those most wicked Women whom hee alleageth vs to bee,
 Wherefore by your gracious pardon and licence (most iustifica-
 ble) in the behalfe of my Mistresse Lucia and my selfe, for our defence
 I purpose to declare the effect of my minde although my purpose
 be cleane altered from that I had thought to say, being now nely
 prouoked by the vnkinde behaviour of him whom I loue better
 than my selfe, and whose disloyalty had hee bene silent and not so
 rashly runne to the overthrow of me and my good name, coulde I
 haue concealed and chely touched that, which had concerned the
 purgation and sauergard of them both, which was the onely in-
 tent and meaning of vs, by making our humble supplication to
 your Maiesties.ouerthelesse, so farre as my feeble force shall
 stretch, I will assay to do both the one and the other, although it be
 not appropiate to our kinde in publicke place to declare me, nor yet
 to open such bold attempts, but that necessity of matter and opor-
 tunity of time. and place dothe bolden vs to enter into these
 termes, whereof we craue a thousand pardons for our vnkindely
 dealings, and tender double thanks to your honours, for admit-
 ting vs to speake. Be it knowne therefore vnto you, that our hus-
 bands agaynst duety of loue, lawes of marriage, and agaynst all
 reason, do make their heauy complaints, which by end by I will
 make playne and euident. I am right well assured, that their ex-
 treme rage and bitter hearts sorrow do procede of 2. occasions:
 The one, of the murder whereof they haue falsely accused them-
 selues: the other of ielousie, which grieuously doth gnawe their
 hearts, thinking vs to be vile, and abhominable Women, because
 they were surprisid in ech others Chamber. Concerning the
 murder, if they haue soyled their handes therein, it appertayneth
 vnto you

into you my Lordes to render their desert. But how can the same
 be layd to your charge, for sommuch as they (if it were done by
 them) committed the same without our knowledge, our help and
 counsel: And truly I see no cause why any of vs ought to be tur-
 bened with the outrage, and much lesse cause haue they to laye the
 same to our charge. For meete it is that he that doth any vnlawful
 act, or is accessory to the same, should suffer the due penalty and se-
 uere chastisement accordingly as the sacred lawes do prescribe, to
 be an example for other to abstayne from wicked facts. But here-
 of what neede I to dispute, wherein the blind may see to bee none
 offence, because (thanks bee to G O D) We after Aloisio li-
 on, which declareth the sonde Confession of our vngnill Hus-
 bandes, to be contrary to trouth: And if so be our husbands in
 dede had done such an abominable enterprise, reason and ducty
 hauioured vs to sorrowe and lament them, because they be bozne
 of noble blood, and be gentlemen of this noble Citie, which like
 a pure virgin inuolably doth conserue hir lawes and customes.
 Great cause I say, had we to lament them, if theye homicides, and
 murderers they had spoyled their blood with such foule bleanish
 thereby deseruing death, to leaue vs yong Women Widowes in
 woofull plight. Nowe it behoueth me to speake of the Jealouse
 they haue conceyued of vs, for that they were in ech others Cham-
 ber, which truly is the doubtfull knot and scruple that forceth all
 their disdayne and grife. This I knowe well is the Payle that
 pierceth their heart: other cause of offence they haue not: Who
 like men nor well aduised, without examination of vs and our be-
 meanour, bee fallen into despayre, and like men desperate, haue
 wrongfully accused themselves. But because I may not consume
 words in vayne, to stay you by my long discourse from matters of
 greater importance, I humbly beseech you (right excellent prince)
 to commaunde them to tell what thing it is, which so bitterly doth
 torment them. Then the Duke caused one of the noble men assis-
 tant there, to demaund of them the question: Who answered,
 that the chiefest occasion was, because they knewe their Wyes to
 be Harlots, whom they supposed to be very honest. And forso-
 much as they knewe them to be such, they conceyued sorrowe and
 grife,

Two Gentlewomen.

griefe, which with such extremitie did gripe them at the heart, as
 not able to sustayne that great Infamy, ashamed to be sene of men
 were induc'd through desire of death to confesse that they neuer
 did. Mistresse I sort hearing them say so, began to speake againe,
 turning hir selfe vnto them: Were you offended then at a thinge
 which yee thought inconuenient and not meete to be done? Wee
 then haue greatest cause to complaine. Why then sweete Husband
 went you to the Chamber of mistresse Lucia at that time of the
 night? What had you to do there? What thing thought you to
 finde there more than was in your owne house? And you Hayster
 Girolamo, what constrain'd you to forsake your Wives Bed to
 come to my Husbonds, where no man euer had, or at this pre-
 sent hath to do but himselfe? Were not the Shewes of the one so
 white, so fine, neat, and sweete as the other? I am (most noble
 Prince) sorie to declare my Husbonds folly, and ashamed that hee
 should forsake my Bed to go to an other, that did accompt my selfe
 so well worthy to entertayne him in myne owne, as the best Wfe
 in Venice, and now through his abuse, I abstayne to shewe my
 selfe amonges the Beautifull, and noble Dames of this Citie.
 The like mistaking of hirselfe is in mistresse Lucia, who (as you
 see) may be numbred amongs the fairest. Either of you ought to
 haue bene contented with your Wives, and not (as wickedly
 you haue done) to forsake them, to seeke for better breade than is
 made of Wheate, or for purer Golde than whereof the Angell is
 made: O worthy deede of yours, that haue the face to leaue your
 owne Wives, that be Comely, fayre, and Honest, to seeke after
 strange Carrion. O beastly order of Men that cannot contayne
 their Lust within the boundes of their owne House, but must go
 hunt after other Women as Beastes do after the nexte of their
 kinde that they chauce vppon. What vile affection possessed your
 hearts to lust after others Wfe? You make complaine of vs,
 but wee with you haue right good cause to be offended, you ought
 to bee grieved with your owne disorder, and not with others of
 us, sence, and thus your affliction patiently to beare, because you went
 about to beguile one an others Loue, like them that be weary
 and Glutted with their owne Fare, seeking after other dainties.

more delicate if they were to be founde. But praised be **GOD** and our prouident discretion, if any hurt or shame hath chaunced, the same doth light on you. Moreover I know no cause why men should haue more liberty to doe euill than we Women haue: But beir through the weakenes and cowardise of our Sexe, yee men will doe what ye list. But ye be now no Lords, nor we Seruantes, and husbands we do you call, bicause the holy Lawes of Matrimony (which was the first Sacrament given by **GOD** to Men after the creation of the Worlde) doe require equall sayth, and so well is the husband bound to the Wyfe as she vnto him. Goe to then and make your complaynt: The next Iste of Beast ye meete take hir to be your Wyfe. Why do yee not knowe that the balance of Justice is equall, and wapeeth downe no more of one side than of other? But let vs now leaue of to reason of this matter, and come to that for which we be come hither. Two things (most righteous Prince) haue moued vs to come before your maiesty, and all this honourable assembly, which had they not bene, we woulde haue bene ashamed to shewe our faces, and lesse presumed to speake or once to open our Lippes in this Noble audience, which is a place only meete for them that be most Expert, and Eloquent Orators, and not for vs, to whom the Needle, and Distaffe be more requisite. The first cause that forced vs to come forth of our owne house, was to let you vnderstand that our Husbands be no murderers, as is supposed, neyther of this Gentleman present master Aloiso, ne yet of any manels: and thereof we haue sufficient and worthy testimony. But heerein we neede not to trauaile much, or to vse many words: for neyther master Aloiso is slayn, ne any other murdered that is known or manifest hitherto. One thyng resteth, which is that Madonna Lucia & I do humbly beseech your excellents Maiestye, that your grace and the authoritie of the right honourable Lords here present, will vouchsafe to reconcile vs to our husbands, that we may obtayne pardon & saue at their handes, bicause we haue so manifestly made their acts to appeare, and for that we be the offence, and they the Offendours, and yet by their owne occasions, we haue committed the Error

(if it may

Two Gentlewomen,

(This may be so termed.) And now to come to the conclusion, I doe
 remember Athens I was a Childe, that I haue heard the Gen-
 tlewoman my mother saye (whose soule God pardon) many times
 vnto me, and other my sisters, and to mistress Lucia, that was
 brought vp with vs, being by hir instructed in diuers good & ver-
 tuous Lessons, that all the honor a Woman can do vnto hir hus-
 band, whereby she beautifieth him and his whole race and family,
 consisteth in hir honest, chaste, and vertuous life, without which,
 she oughte rather to die than liue. And that a Gentlemans Wife
 when she hath giuen hir hope to the vse of an other man, is the co-
 mon marke for euery man to point at in the streete where she goeth
 hir husband thereby incurring reproche and shame which no doubt
 is the greatest injury and scoone that an honest Gentleman can re-
 ceiue, and the most shamefull reproche that can deface his house.
 Which Lesson we so well remembryng, desirous not to suffer the
 carelesse and vnhubdeled appetites of our husbandes to be hur-
 ned, and runne at large to some dishonest Ende, by a faithfull and
 commendable pollicie, did provide for the mischefe that myght en-
 sue. I neede not heere rehearse the eniemy and debate that many
 yeares did raigne betwene our husbandes fathers. because it is
 knowen to the whole City. Wee two therefore here presente, the
 Wages of those noble Gentlemen, brought vp together from our
 Cradle, perceiuing the malice betwene our husbandes, made a ver-
 tue of Necessity, deeming it better for vs to lose our sweete and
 auncient conuersation, than to mouer cause of disquietnesse.
 But the nearrenesse of our houses would not that naturall hatred
 shoulde defraude and take a way olde ingrafted amity. Wherefore
 many times when oure husbandes were gone forth, we met toge-
 ther, and talked in our Gardens, betwene which there is but a
 slender hedge beset with Myrtte and Roses, which commoditie
 in their absence we did discretly vse. And as sometimes for plea-
 sure we walked with oure husbandes there, ye (three turnings) vnto
 them did cast your eyes vpon ech others wife, and were straght
 way in loue, or else perchance you fained your selues to bee, which
 espied by vs, many times betwene our selues did deuise vpon the
 same

same, and red your amorous letters, and sonnet sent vnto vs. For
 which disloyalty and treason towards vs your Wyes, we sought
 no dishonour to your persons, wee were content to suffer you to
 bee abused with your fond loue, we blabbed it not abroade to our
 Gossips, as many leude and fantasticall women bee wont to doe,
 thereby to rayse slander to our husbands, and to sturre vp ill re-
 porte vpon them, whose infirmities it becommeth vs to conceale &
 hide. Wee deuised meanes by some other way to let you vnder-
 stand your fault, and did cast vpon you many times right louinge
 looks. Which although it were agaynst our owne desire, yet the
 cause, and full conclusion of the same, was to practise, if it were
 possible, to make you frendes : But consideringe that this loue, &
 allurementes of epyther parts, could not tend to other ende, as wee
 coniectured, but to increase displeasure, and to put the swords into
 your handes, we therefore consulted, and vniformely in one minde
 agreed for the appeasinge, and satisfaction of all partes, at such
 nightes as yee farned to go into diuers places about earnest as-
 sayes as yee alleaged. Mistresse Lucia with the help of Cassandra
 my mayde, through the Gardene came into my chamber, and by
 meanes of Iane hir maide by like way repayed vnto hers. And yee
 pooze men guided by our maydes were brought vnto your cham-
 bers whers yee lay with your owne Wyes, and so by tith of o-
 thers land in straunge soyle (as yee beleued) yee lost no labour.
 And bicause your embracements then, were like to those atchieued
 by amorous Gentlemen, vsinge vs with moze earnest desire than
 you were wont to do, both wee were begotten with childe : which
 ought to be very gladsome, and gratefull vnto you, if yee were so
 fayne to haue children as yee shewed your selues to bee. If then
 none other offence doth grieue you, if remorfe of Conscience for
 other cause doeth not offend you, if none other sorowe doeth dis-
 please you : Gieue ouer your griefe. Remit your displeasure. Be
 glad, and ioyfull. Thanke vs for our pollicy, and pleasaut dispozt
 that wee made you. If hitherto yee haue ben enemies, henceforth
 be frends, put of that auncient mallice so long continued, mitigate
 your hatefull moode, and liue yee from henceforth like friendly
 Gentlemen, yelde by your rancor into the lap of your Countrey,
 that

Two Gentlewomen,

" that shee may put him in exile for ever, who like a pittifull, and lo-
 " uing mother would gladly see all hir children of one accorde and
 " minde. Which if yee shall do great discomfort to your foes, yee
 " shall do singular good to the common wealth, yee shall doe greatest
 " benefit to your posterity, yee shall make vs humble Wyues, yee
 " shall encrease your posterity, yee shall bee praysed of all men, and
 " finally shall depart the best contented that euer the World brought
 " forth. And now because yee shall not thinke that wee haue picked
 " out this Tale at our fingers ends, thereby to seeke your sauegard
 " and our owne fame, and prayse, beholde the Letters which you
 " sent vs, beholde your owne handes subscribed to the same, be-
 " holde your seales assigned thereunto, which shall render true testi-
 " mony of that which vnfainedly we haue affirmed. Then both de-
 " liuered their letters, which viewed and seene, were well knowne
 " to be their owne husbandes handes, and the same so well appro-
 " ued hir tale, as their husbands were the gladdest men of the world
 " and the Duke and Seignory maruailously satisfied and contented.
 " In so much as the whole assembly with one voyce, cried out for
 " their husbands deliuerance. And so with the consent of the duke
 " and the whole seignory they were clearely discharged. The parents,
 " Cousins, & friends of the husbands & wyues were wonderfully a-
 " mazed to heere this long hysoy, and greatly praysed the manner of
 " their deliuey, accounting the women to bee very wise, and mi-
 " stresse Isotta to be an eloquent gentlewoman, for that shee had so
 " well defended the cause of their husbands and of themselves An-
 " selmo, and Girolamo openly in the ptesence of all the people em-
 " braced, and kissed their Wyues with great reioysing. And then the
 " husbands shaked one an other by the hands, betwene whom began
 " a Brotherly accorde, and from that time forth liued in perfect a-
 " mity, and friendship, exchaunging the wanton loue that eyther of
 " them bare to others Wyfe into Brotherly friendship, to the great
 " delight of the whole City. When the multitude assembled, to
 " heere this matter thzoughly was satisfied, the Duke with cheere-
 " full Countenaunce lookinge toward Gismonda, sayde thus vnto
 " hir: And you saye Gentlewoman, what haue you to say? Wee
 " holde to bitter your minde, and wee wil gladly heare you.

Gismonda

Gismonda bashfull to speake, began wonderfully to blush, into
 whose Cheekes entred an orient rud, intermixed with an Alaba-
 ster white, which made her countenance moze amiable than it
 was wont to be. After she had stande still a while with hir Eyes
 declined towards the ground, in comly wise lifting them vp againe
 with shamefast audacity she began thus to speake: If I most Pos-
 sible Prince, in open audience should attempt to discourse of Loue,
 whereof I neuer had experience, or knew what thing it was, I
 should be doubtfull what to say thereof, & peradventure durst not
 open my mouth at al. But hearing my father (of worthy Memory)
 many times to tel that your mateship in the time of your youth dis-
 dained not to open your heart to receiue the amorous flames of
 loue, and being assured that there is none but that doth loue little
 or much, I do not doubt but for the words which I shal speake,
 to obtain both pity & pardon. To come then to the matter: God I
 thanke him of his goodnesse, hath not permitted me to bee one of
 those women, that like hypocrites do mumble their Pater noster to
 saints, appearing outwardly to be deuout & holy & in fruite doe
 bring forth deuils, & al kinds of vices, specially ingratitude, which
 is a vice that doth suck & dry vp by the fountain of godly Diety. Life
 is deare to me (as naturally it is to all) next which I esteeme
 myne honoꝝ, which is to be preferred before life, bicause without
 honoꝝ life is of no regard. And where mā & womā do liue in shame
 notorious to the world, & same may be termed a liuing death rather
 thā a life. But & loue that I beare to mine onely beloued Aloisio
 here present, I do esteeme aboue al the Jewels & treasures of the
 world, whose personage I do esteeme moze thā mine owne Lyfe.
 The reason & moueth me thereto is very great, for before that I
 loued him, or ever ment to fixe my mind that way, he dearely regar-
 ded me, continually deuising which way he might win & obtain my
 loue, sparing no trauel by Night and Day to seeke the same. For
 which tender affection should I shew my self unkind & froward?
 God forbid And to be playn with your honoꝝ, he is moze deare
 & acceptable vnto me, than the balles of mine owne eyes, being the
 chiefest things that appertain to the furniture of the body of man,
 without which no earthly thing can be gladsome and loful to the
 sens.

Two Gentlewomen,

sense, and feelinge. Last of all, his amorous, and affectionate des-
 monstration of his loue towards me, by declaringe himselfe to be
 carefull of mine honoz, rather moze willinge to bestow his owne,
 than to suffer the same to be touched with the least suspicio of dis-
 honesty, I can not choose, but so faithfully imbrace, as I am read-
 dy to guage my life for his sake, rather than his finger shoulde ake
 for offence. And where hath there bene euer found such liberality
 in any louer? What is he that hath bene euer so prodigall, to em-
 ploy his life (the most speciall pledge in this worlde,) rather than
 hee would suffer his beloved to incurre dishonoure? Whany hy sto-
 ry es haue I red, and Chronicles of our time, and yet I haue found
 fewe or none comparable vnto this Gentleman, the like of whom
 be so rare and seldome as white Crowes, or Swannes of colour
 blacke. O Anguler liberality, neuer hearde of before. O fact that
 can neuer be sufficiently praysed. O true loue most vnfayned. What
 Ger Aloisio rather than he would haue my fame any one iote to be
 impayred, or to suffer any shadow of suspition to blemish the same
 frankly hath confessed himselfe to be a theefe, and murdzer, regar-
 ding mee and mine honoz moze than himselfe, and life. And albeit
 that he might a thousand wayes haue saued himselfe without the
 imprisonment and aduersity which he hath sustayned: Fewerthe-
 lesse after he had sayd, beinge then past remembrance through the
 fall, that he fell downe from my window, & percepued how much
 that confession would pretudice and hurt my good name, and hurt
 the known honesty of the same, of his good well did chose to dye
 rather than to speake any words that might bzeede ill opinion of
 mee, or the least thinge of the Worlde that might ingender infamy
 and slaunder. And therefore not able to reuoke the words hee had
 spoken of the fall, nor by any meanes coulde colour the same, hee
 thought to saue the good name of another by his owne hurt. If he
 then thus redily and liberally hath prorruded his life into man-
 yest daunger for my benefit and sauegard, preferring mine honour
 aboue the care of himselfe, shall not I abandon all that I haue,
 yea and therewithall hazard mine honoz for his saluaton? But
 what? Shall I disdayne bountifullly to imploer my selfe and all
 the endeuoz of my Friends for his deliuey? No, no (my Lords)

if I

If I had a thousand liues, and so many honoꝝ at my commaundement, I woulde giue them al foꝝ his reliefe and comfort, yea if it were possible foꝝ me to recouer a fresh .x. C. liues, I woulde so frankly bestow them all, as euer I desired to liue, that I might enioy mine owne Aloisio. But I am soꝝry, and euer shalbe soꝝry, foꝝ that it is not lawfull foꝝ me to do moꝝe foꝝ him, than that which my power and possibilitie is able. Foꝝ if he should die, truly my life could not endure: if he were depꝛiued of life, what pleasure should I haue to liue in this world after him? whereby (molle honorable and righteous iudge,) I beleue befoꝝe the honest, not to loose any one lote of myne honoꝝ, bicause I being (as you may see) a younge Woman and a Widow desirous to marry againe, it is lawfull foꝝ me to lous and to bee beloued, foꝝ none other intent (whereof God is the onely iudge) but to attaine a husbände according to my desire. But if I should lose my reputation and honoꝝ, why should not I aduenture the same foꝝ hym, that hath not spared hys own foꝝ me? Now to come to the effect of the matter, I doe say wꝛth al dutifull reuerence, that it is an accusation altogether false & vntrue, that euer mayster Aloisio came to my house as a Theefe against my wil. Foꝝ what neede he to be a Theefe, oꝝ what neede had he of my goodes, that is a Lorde and owner of twenty times so much as I haue? Was good Gentleman, I dare depose and guage my life, that he neuer thought much lesse dyd any robbery oꝝ thing vnlawfull, wherewith iustly he may be charged, But he repayed to my house with my consent, as a louing and affectionate louer the circumstance wherof, if it be duely marked, must aduouch the same to be of tꝛouth infallible. Foꝝ if I had not giuen him licence to come, how was it possible foꝝ him to conuey his ladder so high, that was made but of Ropes, and to fasten the same to the saime of the window, if none within did helpe hym. Againe, howe could the Window of the Chaumber be open at that time of the Night, which is still kept shut, if it had not bene by my consent. But I with the helpe of my mayde thꝛewe downe to him a little Rope, whereunto he tyed his Ladder and dyꝛwe the same vp, and making it so fast, as it could not vndo, gaue a signe foꝝ him to Mount. But as both our ill Fortune would haue it, befoꝝe I

Ce.

could

Two Gentlewomen of Venice.

i did
shoe the
love is

could catch any hold of him, to mine inestimable griefe and heart's
sorrow he fell downe to the ground Wherefore (my Lordes) I be-
seech your honours to reuoke the confession wherein he hath made
himselfe to be a theefe. And you maister Aloisio declare the trowth
as it was, sth I am not ashamed in this honozable assemble to tel
the same. Beholde the letters (my Lordes) which so many times
he wrote vnto me, wherein hee made suite to come to my speache, &
continually in the same doth call me Wyfe. Beholde the Ladder,
which till now, did still remayne in my chaumber. Beholde my
maide, whych in all mine assayes, is as it were myne owne hande
and helper. Aloisio being hereupon demaunded by the Lordes of
the articles, which he in his Tale had recited, confessed them al to
bee true: Who also at the same instant was discharged. The
Duke greatly commended them both, his for his stout audacity,
in defence of an innocent Gentleman, and him for his honour, and
modesty, by seeking to p̄serue the same & good repute of a ver-
tuouse Gentlewoman. Whych done, the Counsell disassembled &
broke vp. And the friendes of both the parties accompanied them
home to the house of mistresse Gismonda, where to the great re-
ioyce, & pleasure of all men, they were solemnely married in sumptu-
ous and honozable wise, and Aloisio with hys Wyfe lured in
great prosperitie long time after. Mistresse Lucia, and mistresse
Isotta, at the expyred tyme were deliuered of two goodly sonnes,
in whom the Fathers tooke great Joy, and delight. Who with
their Wyues after that tyme liued very quietly, and well, one las-
ting an other like naturall Brethren, many times sporting among
themselves discretely at the decrepts of their Wyues. The wise-
dome of the Duke also was wonderfully extolled and commens-
ded of all men, the same wherof was increased and byuted
throughout the Region of Italy. And not without cause.

For by hys prudence and aduise, the Dominion of the
State, and Common wealth was amplified &
dilated. And yet in th'ende beeing olde and
impotent, they unkindly deposed him
from hys Duke-
dome.

The

The Lord of Virle.

¶ The Lorde of *Virle*, by the comādemēt of a fayre younge *VV*ydow called *Zilia*, for hys promise made, the better to attaine hir loue, was contented to remayne dumbe the space of three yeares, and by what meanes he was reuenged, and obtayned hys suite.

The. XXVII. Nouell.



THe that haue spent their youth in humane follies, and haue followed the Vanities of loue, not addicted to the contemplation of high secrets, nor haue made entry here on Earth, to enlarge and amplify the boundes of their honor and Estimation. These Worldlings (I say) and embracers of transitory pleasures, shall witness with me, & confirme, this olde & auncient

Theme & proposition to be true, which is: That the Beauty, and comely grace of a Woman is the very true, and naturall Admānt (for the attractiue power, and agreeable quality therein closed,) to draw vnto it the hearts, and affections of men: which hath made man beleue, that the same onely essence, was sent downe from aboue to serue both for Joy and torment together: For the ampler springe of which proposition, I will not bringe forth, the immoderate loue of Paris by forsaking his owne Native country of Troy, to visite fayre Helena in Greece, nor yet tell how Hercules gaue ouer his mace to handle the Distaffe, vpon the comādemēt of Omphale, nor yet how Sampson and Salomon were foiled in the

Et.

Auustien

many m

The Lord of Virle

slaueries of Dalida and other Concupines. But my discourse here following shall ring out a loude Peale, of a meane Gentlewoman, of Piedmont, that shewed no fauor or Curtesy at all to her suppliant, a Gentleman not inferior to Paris for his actiuitie and prowesse: which for her seruice and atcheyues of her loue, refused not to bee bounde the space of many yeares, and to giue ouer the best porcion of his sences wherewith the Almighty, made man differente from brute and sauage Beastes. If this thing declare not sufficiently the force and power of that attractive and drawing power in woman, no other example is worthy to be preferred. Those aforesayd and many other haue voluntarily soaked themselves in the chains of loues obedience, rendreth the masse of their mirre corpes to the slavery thereof, but that any haue franchely tyed by their Tongue, the chiefest Instrument of the bodie's furniture: in honorable assembly or where dexterity of seruice shoulde make him glorious, the like of that subiection was neuer seene or founde. And yet our fathers dayes, did see this miracle wrought by a Woman, vpon a Gentleman very wise, and well trained vp in all good exercise. This example, and what this Malapert Dame did gaine, by the penance of this louing knight, shal in this discourse be manifestly pronounced.

The City of Thurin (as is well knowne to them that haue travelled Piedmont) is the ornament & bulwarke of al the Countrey, so well for the natural site of the place, as for the artificial & industrious worke of mans hand, which hath inslaured and furnished with great magnificence, that which nature had indifferently enryched, for the rudenesse and tise knowledg of the time past. Now besides this fauor & strong tise, there standeth a litle towne named Montcall, a place no lesse strong, and of good defence, than wel planted in a faire & rich soyle. In this Towne there dwelt a Gentlewoman a widow called Zilia, beautifull amongs the most excellent fayre Gentlewomen of the countrey, which countrey (besides other happy and heavenly influences) seemeth to be specially fauored, for hauing the most fatrest and curtest Gentleman, aboue any other within the compass of Europa. Notwithstanding this faire Zilia, degenerating from the nature of his climate was so haggard and cruel, as it might

might haue ben thought, she had ben rather nourished and brought
 by amid the most desert mountaines, of Sauoy, than in the pleasant
 and rich Champian Countrey, watered and moistened with Eri-
 danus, the father of Riuer, at this Day called the Pau, the large-
 nesse whereof doth make men to maruel, and the Fertilitie allureth
 ech man to be desirous to inhabit vpon the same. This sayre rebel-
 lious Widow, albeit, that she was not aboue .xxiii. or .xxv. yeres of
 age, yet protested neuer moze to be subject to man, by marriage, or o-
 therwise, thinking her self wel able to liue in single life: A Wifde
 truly very holy & commendable, if the prickes of the flesh do obey the
 first motions & adhortatibz of the spirit, but where youth, pleasure,
 & multitude of suters do addresse their endeuour against that cha-
 stity (which is lightly enterprised) the Apostels counsel oughte to
 be followed, who willet pong widows to marry in Christ, to auoid
 the temptations of the flesh, & to aue offensue slander & dishonour
 befoze men. This mistresse Zilia (hir husband being dead) only bent
 hir selfe to enrich hir house, and to amplify the possession of a little
 infant which shee had by hir late departed Husband. After whose
 death she became so couetous, as hauing remoued, and almost cut
 of quite the wonted port she vsed in hir husbands dayes, implored
 her maids in household affaires, thinking nothing to be wel don that
 passed not thzough hir owne Handes. A thinge truely moze praysle
 worthy, than to see a softe of Effeminate, fine, and dayntie syngred
 Dames, that thinke their honoz diminished yf they holde but their
 Rose ouer theyr Household Matters, where theyr Hande and
 Delygence were moze requisite, for so much as the mystresse of
 a House is not placed the Chyefe to heare onely the reasons of
 them that Laboz, but thereunto to put hir hands, for hir presente
 eye seemeth to giue a certayn perfection to the worke that the Ser-
 uantes doe by hir commaundement. Which caused the Hystory-
 ans in tymes past, to describe vnto the Posterity a Gentlewoman
 called Lucretia, not babbling amongs young girles, or runninge
 to feastes and Waigames, or Masking in the night, wethoute any
 regard of the Honoz and degnitie of hir race and house, but in hir
 Chaumber Sowing, Spinning and Carding, amids the Troup
 of her Mayden Seruantes; wherein our mistresse Zilia passed the

The Lord of Virle,

most part of hir time, spending no minutt of the day, without some honest exercise, which she the rather did for that she liked not to be seene at Feasts, and Bankets, or to be gadding vp and downe the streets, wandring to Gardens or places of pleasure, although to such places yowth sometimes may haue their honest repaere to refresh their wearied bodie with vertuous recreation, and thereby reioyce the heauinesse of their mynde. But this Gentlewoman was so seuer in following the rigorous, and constrained maners of our auncentis, as impossible it was, to see hir abroad, except it were when she went to the Church to heare deuine seruice. This Gentlewoman seemed to haue studied the deuinity of the Egyptians, which paynt Venus holding a Key befoze hir mouth, and setting hir fote vpon a Tortus, signifying vnto vs thereby, the duety of a chaste Woman, whose tongue ought to bee locked, that shee speak not but in tyme place, and hir feete not straying or wandering, but to keepe herselfe within the limits of hir owne house, except it be to serue God, and sometimes to render bounden duety to them which brought them into light. Moreouer Zilia was so religious (I will not say superstitious) and rigorous to obserue customes, as she made it very squeemish and straunge to kisse a Gentleman that met hir, a ciuility which of long time hath bene obserued, and yet remaineth in the greatest parte of the Worlde, that Gentlewomen do welcome strangers & Guests into their houses with an honest and chaste kisse. Notwithstandinge the institution and profession of this Wyddow had wiped away this poynte of hir yowth: Whether it were for that she esteemed hir selfe so sayre as all men were vnworthy to touch the biter partes of so rare and pretious a vessel, or that hir great, and inimitable chastity made hir so straunge, to refuse that which hir duety and honour would haue permitted hir to graunt. There chaunced about this time that a Gentleman of the Countrey called Sir Philiberto of Virle, esteemed to be one of the most balaunt Gentlemen in those parts, repaired vpon an holy day to Montcall, (whose house was not very farre of the Towne) and being at diuine seruice, in place of occupying his Sence, and Mynde in heauenty things, and attending the ho-

the holy wordes of a Preacher, which that day declared the wordes of God vnto the people, hee gaue himselfe to contemplate the excellent beauty of Zilia, who had put of for a while hir mourninge habite, that she might the better beholde the good Father that preached, and receiue a little ayre, because the day was extreame hot. The Gentleman at the firste blush, when hee sawe that sweete temptation befoze his eyes, thought himselfe rapt aboute the thirde heauen, and not able to withdraue his looke, hee fed himselfe wryth the Venome which by little, and little, so leasid vpon the soundest parts of hys mynde, as afterwards being rooted in heart, he was in daunger still to remayne there for a Guage, wythout any hope of ease or comfote, as moze amply this followinge discourse, shall giue you to vnderstande. Thus all the morning hee behelde the Gentlewoman, who made no moze account of theyn, that wryth great admiration did beholde hir, than they theselues did of their life, by committinge the same to the handes of a Woman so cruell. This Gentleman being come home to his lodging, enquired what saye Wyddow that was, of what calling, and behauiour, but hee heard tell of moze truely, than he would of good will haue known or desired to haue ben in hir, whom he did presently chose to be the only mistresse of his most secret thoughts. Now vnderstandenge well the stubburne Nature, and vnciuile Manner of that Wyddowe, hee coulde not tell what parte to take, nor to what Sainct to bow his Devotion, to make suite vnto hir hee thought it tyme lost, to bee hir Seruant, it was not in his power, hauing already by inguaged his Liberty into the handes of that beauty, wherby once holding captiue the heart of men, will not infraunchise them so soone as Thought, and Will, desire. Wherefore baytinge hymself wryth hope, and tickled wryth loue, he determined whatsoeuer chaunced, to loue hir, and to assaye if by long seruice he could leasse that harde heart, and make tender that vnplaisant will, to haue pittie vppon the payne which shee saw him to endure, and to recompence hys laboursome Travailes, which hee thought were virtuously employed for gayning of hir good grace. And vpon this settled deliberation, he retired agayne to Virle (so was his house

The Lord of Virle

named) where disposing his thinges in order, he returned againe to Montcall to make his long residence there, to put in readines his furniture, and to welde his artillary with such industry, as in the ende he might make a reasonable breach to force and take the place: For surpring whereof, hee hazarded great daungers, the rather, that himselfe might first be taken. And where his assaults and pollicies could not preuaile, hee minded to content his Fancy wth the pleasure and pastetyme that hee was to receiue in the contemplation of a thing so fayre, and of an image so excellent. The memozy of whom rather increased his paine than yelided comfort, did rather minister corosiuu poison, than giue remedy of ease, a cause of more cruell and sodayne death, than of prolonged life. Philiberto then being become a citizen of Montcal, vsed to frequēt the Church more than hee was wont to doe, or his deuotion serued hym, and that because he was not able elsewhere to enioy the presence of his Sainct, but in places and Temples of Deuotion: Which no doubt was a very holy, and worthy Disposition, but per not meete or requisite to obserue such holy places for those intentes, which ought not to bee prophaned in things so sonde and foolish, and Actes so contrary to the Institution, and mynde of those, wher in tymes past were the firste Founders, and Erectours of Temples. Seignior Philiberto then mooued wth that Religious Superstition, made no Conscience at al to speake vnto hir wthyn the Church. And true it is, when she went out of the same, he (mooued wth a certayne familiar curtesie, naturall to eche Gentleman of good bringyng by) many tymes conducted hir home to hir house, not able for all that (what so euer hee sayd) to win the thing that was able to ingender any little solace, which greued him very much: For the cruell woman fained as though she vnderstoode nothing of that he sayde, and turnyng the Wayne agaynst the Oxen, by contrary talke shee began to tell hym a tale of a Tubbe, of matters of hir Householde, whereunto hee gaue so good heede, as shee did to the hearing of his complaynts. Thus theese two, of diuers Affections, and mooued wth contrary thoughtes, spake one to another, without apt answer to eithers talke

make. Whereby the Gentleman conceived an assured argument
 of hys Ruine, who bope of all hope, & meanes, practised wth cer-
 tayne Dames of the Citie, that had familiar accesse vnto hys
 house, and vsed frequent conuersation with hys rebellious Lady
 Zulia. To one of them then hee determined to communicate hys
 secrets, and to doe hir to vnderstand in deede the onely cause that
 made him to sotozne at Montcall, and the grieue which he suffered,
 for that he was not able to discouer his torment vnto hir, that had
 giuen him the wounde. Thys Gentleman therefore, repayed to
 one of his neyghbours, a Woman of good corage, which at other
 tymes had experimented what meates they feede on, that sit at
 Venus Table, and what bitterness is intermingled, amid those
 drinckes that Cupido quaffeth vnto hys Guestes. Vnto whom
 (hauing before contured hir to keepe close that which hee would
 declare) he discouered the secrets of hys mynde, expressing hys
 loue without naming hys Lady before he heard the aunswere of
 hys Neighbour, who vnderstanding almost to what purpose the
 affections of the Patient were directed, sayd vnto hym: Sir needs
 full it is not to vse longe orations, the loue that I beare you for
 the honest qualities which hitherto I haue knowne to be in you,
 shall make me to keepe silent, that whereof as yet I do not know
 the matter, and the assurance you haue, not to bee abused by mee,
 constraineth me to warrant you, that I will not spare to do you
 all the pleasure & honest seruice I can. Wh Distresse (aunswered
 Sir Philiberto) so long as I lyue, I will not faile to acknowledge
 the Liberality of your endeouour by offeringe your selfe patient
 ly to heare, and secretly keepe to the Words I speake accor-
 dingly as they deserue: And that (which is more than I re-
 quire) you doe assure me that I shall finde such one of you, as will
 not spare to giue you ayde. Alas, I resemble the goode and wise
 Captayne, who to take a forte doeth not onely ayde himselfe with
 the forwardenesse, and ballaunce of his Souldiers, but to spare
 them, and to auoyde slaughter for makinge of war, planteth his
 cannon, and battereth the Walle of the fort, which hee would as-
 saile, to the intent that both the Souldier, and the ordinance may
 perfourme and suffice the perfection of the plat, which hee hath
 framed

The Lord of Virle.

framed and deuised within his polittike heade. I haue already encouraged my souldiers, and haue lost the better part trustly in the skirmish which hath deliuered vnto me my sweete cruell Ennemy. Now I am diuene to make ready the fire, which resteth in the kindled match of your conceiptes, to batter the fort hitherto inexpugnable, for any assault that I can make. I vnderstand not (sayd she smiling) these Labyrinthes of your complaynts, except you speake more playn. I neuer haunted the Warres, ne knewe what thyng it is to handle weapons, improper and not seemely for myne estate and kynde.

The Warre (quod he) whereof I speake, is so naturall and common, as I doubt not, but you haue sometymes assayed, with what sleighthes and camisados men vse to surpasse their enimies, howe they plant their ambushes, and what meanes both the assaiant & defendant ought to vse. So far as I see (sayd she) there resteth nothing for vs, but the assurance of the field, sth wee bee ready to enter in combat: and doe thinke that the fort shall not bee harde to winne, by reason of the Walles, dikes, rampers, bulwarks, plat-formes, counterforts, curtines, banewyes and engins which you haue prepared, besides a numbze of false bzaies and flanks, placed in good order, and the whole defended from the thundzinge Cannons and Bombardeg, which do amaze the wandzinge enemy in the field. But I pray you leauing these warlike Tumults, to speake more boldly without these extrauagantes and digressions, for I take pitty to see you thus troubled: ready to exceede the boundes of your modesty and wonted wysedome. Doe not maruell at all mistresse (quod he) sth accordenge to new occurrentes and alterations, the purpose, talke, and counsel ordinarily do change. I am become the seruauant of one which maketh me altogether lyke vnto those that bee madde, and bound in Chaynes, not able to speak or say any thing, but what the sprytes that be in them, do force them to vter. For neither will I thynke, or speake any thing, but that which the Enchaunter Loue doth commaunde and suffer to expresse, who so reggorously doth bere my hearte, as in place wher bouldenesse is moste requysite, hee deprieth me of force, and leaueth mee without any Countenance. And being alone, God knoweth

with how frankly I doe wander in the place, where myne enemy
 may commaunde, and with what hardinesse I do inuade his pro-
 uince. Alas, is it not pity then to see these diuersities in one selfe
 matter, and vpon one very thing? Cruely I would endure wyl-
 lingly all these trauailes, if I wyl in the end, my seruice woulde
 be accepted, and hoped that my Watirdome shoulde fynde releefe:
 but luyng in this vncertainty, I must needes norrysh the hunger
 and solace of the unhappy, which are Wishes and vaine hopes,
 that some God, wyl gayne me a fapthful friend that will assaye to
 rid me from the bell, into the which I am throwne, or else to shor-
 ten this Miserable lyfe, whych is a hundred tymes moze paynfull
 than Death. In sayinge so, he began to aghe so straungely as a
 man would haue thought that two Smithes sledges working at
 the forge had giuen two blowes at his stomake, so belement was
 the inclosed winde within his heart, that made him to fetch forth
 those terrible sighes, the Eyes not forgetting to yeld forth a Riuer
 of Teares, whych gushynge forth at the Centre of hys Hearte,
 mounted into his Waynes, at lengthe to make Issue throughe
 the Spoute, proper to the Chanell of such a Fountayne. Which
 the Gentlewoman seeng, moued with Compassion, coulde not
 contain also from Weepynge, and therewithall sayde vnto hym.
 Although mine estate & reputation, which to this day I haue kept
 vnspotted, defend the vse of my good wyl in all things—that may de-
 fame mine honoz, yet sit seing the extremity which you suffer, to be
 vnfained, I wil somewhat stretch my conscience, & assaye to succor you
 wth so good heart, as frankly you trust me with the secrets of your
 thought. It resteth then now for me to know what she is, to whome
 your deuotions be inclined whose heart & mind I wil so relife wth the
 taste of your good wil, as I dare giue warrant, her appetit shal ac-
 cept your proffered seruice, & truly y woman may count her self happy,
 that shal intertain the offer of a Gentleman that is so honest, & curte-
 ous, who meaneth wth al fidelity to aduance & honoz, not onely the su-
 perficial ornamēt of his beauty, but the inward vertues of his cōstāt
 mind. And truly the earth scidd yeldeth those frutes in the harrow
 men in these our barren days they being ouer growen wth the shrub-
 bes of dissolaty the same choke by the plantes of true Fidelitye,

the

The Lord of Virle.

" the sedes whereof are sowne and replanted in the soyle of womeng
 " hartes, who not able to depart and vse the force and effects thereof
 " will put vpon them conditions that bee cruell, to punish the Foo-
 " lish indiscretion of tryfling Louers, who disguised with the vi-
 " sard of fained friendship, and painted with coloured Amity, lan-
 " guishing in sighes and sorowes, goe aboute to assay to deceiue the
 " flexible Nature of them that prodigally employ theyr honoꝝ into
 " the hands of such cruel, inconstante & foolish suters. Th Whistresse
 " answered the Gentleman: howe may I bee able to recompence that
 " onely benefite which you promise me now? But be sure that you see
 " here a Souldier and Gentleman presente which shall no lesse bee
 " prodigall of hys Life to doe you serupce, than you bee lyberall of
 " your reputation, to ease his Paines. Now sith it pleaseth you to
 " shew such fauour to offer me your helpe and support in that which
 " payneth me, I require no more at your hands, but to beare a Let-
 " ter which I shall wyte to Whistresse Zilia, with whome I am so
 " farre in loue, as if I do receiue no solace of my greife, I know not
 " howe I shall auoyde the cutting of the Thyeꝛde, whych the spy-
 " ning sisters haue twisted to prolonge my lyfe, that hencefoorth can
 " receiue no succor if by your means I do not archteue the thing that
 " holdeth me in bondage. The Gentlewoman was very sorowful,
 " when she vnderstoode that Seignior Philiberto had bent his Loue
 " vpon such one, as would not consent to that request, and much
 " lesse would render rest vnto hys myseryes, and therefore enforced
 " hir selfe to moue that Fooleshe Fantasie out of his head. But
 " he being already resolu'd in thys myshappe, and the same percei-
 " ued by her in the ende she sayde: To the intende Sir that you
 " maye not thynke that I doe meane to excuse the Sartyfaccyon
 " of my promise, make youre Letters, and of my fapth I wil
 " deliuer them. And albeyt I knowe verie well what bee the
 " Honoures and Glorrie of that Pilgryme, yet I well render
 " to you agayne the true aunswere of hir speache whereby you maye
 " consider the gayne you are lyke to make, by pursuing a Woman
 " (although faire) of so small deserte. The Gentleman sayled not
 " to geue her heartee Thanks, prayinge hir to tarry vntill
 her

he had written his letters : Whereunto the most willingly obeyed. He then in his chaumber, began to fantasie a hundred, hundred matters to write vnto his Mistresse, and after he had fixed them in minde tooke Incke, and Paper writing as followeth.

The Letters of Seignior

Philiberto of Virle, to Mistresse

Zilia of Montcall.

THE passion extreeme which I endure, (Madame) through the seruient loue I beare you, is such, as besides that I am assured of the little Affection that resteth in you towards me agayne, in respect of that incredible seruitude which my desire is ready to employ, I haue no power to commaunde my force, ne yet to rid my selfe from my bowed deuotion and will to your incomparable beauty, although euen from the beginning I felt the pricks of the mostall shot which now torments my mynde. Alas I do not know vnder what influence I am bozne, nor what Fate doth guide my yeares, sith I doe perceiue that heauen, and loue, and hir whom alone I honor, doe confirme themselves with one assent to seeke myne overthrowe. Alas I thinke that all the powers aboue conspired together, to make me be the faythfull man, and perpetuall seruaunt of you my mistresse deare, to whom alone, I yeilde my heart afflicted as it is, and the ioy of hidden thoughts nourshed in my minde, by the contemplation, and remembraunce of your excellent & perfect graces, whereof if I be not fauored, I waight for death, from which euen now I fly : not for feare of that which I conceiue to be in hir, but rather to confirme my lyfe, this Body for instrument to exercise the myndes conceypts for doinge your Commaundements, which body I greatly feare shall proue the vniworthye creature, both of your gentle nouriture, & of those graces which Dame Nature most abundantly hath powred in you. Be sure Madame that,

The Lord of Virle.

that you shall shortly see the Ende of him, which attendeth yet to
beare so much as in him doth lye, the vehement loue into an o-
ther world, which maketh me to pray you to haue pity on him, who
(attending the last and final sentence of his Deathe or Lyfe) doth
humble kisse your wyte and delicate handes, beseeching God to
giue to you like toy as his is, who desireth to be,

VVholy yours or not to be at all.

Philiberto of Virle.

The Letter written, closed and sealed, he deliuered to his neigh-
bour, who promysed hym agayne to byng him answer at Night.
Thus this Messenger wēt hir way, leauing this poye languishing
Gentlema hoping against hope, & faryng by and by some toy a plea-
sure, & herein he bained himself with great contented minde. Then
sodaynly he called agayne vnto remembraunce, the cruelty and in-
cruelity of Zilia, which shewed before his Eyes so many kindes of
Death, as tymes he thought vpon the same, thinking that he saw
the choler wherewith his little courteous mistresse furiously did in-
tertaine the messenger, who findinge Zilia comming forth 'of a gar-
den aduising to her house, & hauing saluted her, & receiued like cur-
teous salutation would haue framed hir talke, by honest excuse in
vnsensle charge & Message: to hir vnto whō she was set, & for some
ease to the poye gentleman which approached nearer death than life.
But Zilia brake of hir talke saying: I maruell much Gentle nei-
ghbor to see you heere at this time of the day, knowing your honest
custome is to let passe no minute of the tyme, except it be employed
in some vertuous exercise. Mistresse answered the messenger, I
thank you for the good opinion you haue of me, and doe pray you
to continue the same. For I do assure you that nothings hapne or
of litle effect hath made me slacke my businesse at this time, which
me think I do not forslow, when I inforce my selfe to take pitye
and mercy vpon the afflicted and the substance thereof I woulde
disclose, if I feared not to offend you, and breake the loue which of
long tyme betweene vs two hath ben frequented. I know not (said
Zilia) whereunto your words do tend, althoughe my Hearte doth
throbbe, and minde doth moue to make mee thinke your purposes
talk

talke to bee of none other ſeſſecte, than to ſay a thing which may re-
 bound to the prejudice of myne honour. Wherefoze I pray you: do
 not diſcloſe what ſhall be contrary, (be it neuer ſo little to the duety
 of Dames of our Degree. Myſtreſſe ſayd the Neighbour, I ſup-
 poſe that the little Likelihoode touchyng in you the thinge for the
 helpe whereof I come, hath made you feeſe ſome paſſion, contrary
 to the greeſe of him that indures ſo much for your ſake. Unto
 whome with out feare of your diſpleaſure, I gaue my faith in
 Pledge to beare this Letter. In ſaying ſo, ſhe drew the ſame out
 of hir Boſome, and preſentynge it to cruell Silia, ſhe ſayde: I be-
 ſeeche you to thinke that I am not ignoraunt of the euill where-
 wyth the Lord of Virle is affected, who wrote theſe Letters. I
 promyſed him the duety of a Meſſanger towardſ you: and ſo con-
 ſtrained by promyſe I could doe no leſſe, than to deliuer you that
 which hee doeth ſende, with Seruice ſuch as ſhall endure for e-
 uer, or if it ſhall pleaſe you to accept him for ſuch a one as hee de-
 ſireth to be. For my parte I onely praye you to reade the Con-
 tentes, and accorſynglye to geue mee Anſwere: for my ſayth
 is no further bounde, but truſtelye to repoſite to hym the thinge
 whereuppon you ſhall bee reſolued. Silia which was wonte to
 receiue very ofte ſuch Ambaſſades, at the firſte was in mind
 to breake the Letters, and to retourne the Meſſanger wythout
 anſwere to hir ſhame. But in the Ende takyng heart, and chaun-
 ging hir affectyon, ſhe red the Letters not without ſhewing ſome
 very great alteration outwardely, which declared the meanynge
 of hir thought that diuerſly dyd ſtroue wythin hir mynde: for ſo-
 daynelye ſhe chaunged her Coloure twyce or thryce, nowe wax-
 ing pale lyke the increaſynge Moone, Eclypſed by the Sunne,
 when ſhe ſeeleth a certayne darkenyng of hir borrowed Lighte,
 then the Wermeylon and coloured Tarynte came into hir face
 agayne, with no leſſe hewe than the blomed Roſe newelye
 budded forth, whych increaſed halfe ſo much agayne, the
 Excellencye of that wherewyth Nature had indued hir. And
 then ſhe paused a while. Notwithſtandyng, after that ſhe
 had

The Lord of Virle.

“had red, and red agayne hir Louers letter, not able to dissemble hir
“foolish anger which vexed hir heart, she sayde vnto the mystrisse
“messenger : I woulde not haue thought that you, being a woman
“of good fame would (by abusinge your ducty,) haue bene the am-
“bassadoꝝ of a thing so vncomeley for your Estate, & the house where
“of you come, and towards me which neuer was such one (ne yet
“pretend to be.) And trust me it is the loue I beare you, which shall
“for this tyme make me dissemble what I thincke, reseruinge in A-
“lence, that whych (had it come from an other) I woulde haue pub-
“lished to the great dishonour of hir that maketh so little account
“of my chastity. Let it suffice therefore in time to come for you to
“thinke and beleue, that I am chaste, and honest : And to aduertise
“the Lorde of Virle to proceede no further in his sute : for rather
“will I dy, than agree to the least popnet of that whych hee desires
“of mee. And that he may knowe the same, be well assured that hee
“shall take his leaue of that priuate talke which sometimes I vsed
“with him to my great dishonour, as far as I can see. Get you home
“therefore, and if you loue your credit so much, as you see me cu-
“rious of my chastity, I beseech you vse no further talke of hym,
“whom I hate so much, as this folly is excessive, for I do little ef-
“feme the amorous Toyes and fained passions, whereunto such
“louinge fooles doe suffer themselves to bee caried headlong. The
“messenger ashamed to heare hir selfe thus pinched to the quicker,
“answered hir very quietly without moouing of hir patience : I
“pray to God (mistresse) that he may recouer the different disease al-
“most incurable in eyther of you twayne, the same being so behe-
“ment, as altered into a phrenesie, maketh you in this wyse, incapa-
“ble of reason. Finishing these words she tooke hir leaue of Zilia, &
“arrived to the Louers house, she founde him lying vpon his bed,
“rather dead than a liue : Who seeing his neyghboꝝ returned backe
“agayne, with face so sadde, not taryng for the aunswere which she
“was about to make, he began to say : Oh infortunate Gentleman,
“thou payest wel the vsury of thy pleasures past when thou diddest
“lyue at liberty, free from those trauayls which now do put thee to
“death, without suffering thee to dy. Oh happy, and more than hap-
“py had I ben, if inconstant Fortune had not deuised this treason,
“wherein

wherein I am surpris'd and caught, and yet no raunsome can re-
 deeme from prison, but the most miserable death that euer pooze lo-
 uer suffred. Th Mistresse, I knowe well that Zilia esteemeth not
 my Letters, ne yet regardeth my loue, I confesse that I haue done
 you wrong by thus abusing your honest amity, for the solace of my
 payne. Th sickle loue, what foole is hee which doth commit hym-
 selfe to the rage & fury of the Waues of thy foaming and tempestu-
 ous Seas? Mas I am entred in, with great, & glad some cheere,
 through the glistering shew befoze myne eyes of the faynt shininge
 Sunne beames, whereunto so soone as I made sayle, the same de-
 nied me light of purpose to thrust me forth into a thousand winds,
 tempests, and raging stormes of Rayne. By meanes whereof I
 see no meane at all to hope for end of my mishaps: and much leste
 the shipwacke that sodainely may rid me from this daunger more
 intollerable, than if I were ouerwhelmed wythin the bottomlesse
 depth of the mayne Ocean. Th deceyuer, & wily Shouldeour, why
 hast thou made me enterpryse the voyage farre of fro thy solitudes
 & Wildernesse, to geue me ouer in the middest of my necessity? Is
 this thy maner towards them, which franckly followe thy tract, &
 pleasauntly subdue themselves to thy trayterous follies? At least
 wyldest thou if I sawe some hope of health I would indure without com-
 playnt thereof: yea, and it were a more daungerous tempest. But
 O good God, what is he of whom I speake? Of whom do I at-
 tend for solace & releefe? Of him truely which is bozne for the o-
 verthrow of men? Of whom hope I for health? Of the most noy-
 som popson that euer was mingled with the subtillest druggs that
 ever were. Whom shall I take to be my Patron? He which is in
 ambush traiterously to catch me, that he may martir me worse thā
 he hath done befoze. Th cruell Dame, that measureth so euill, the
 good will of him that neuer purposed to trespasse the least of the
 commandements. Th, that thy beauty should finde a Subject so
 obbozne in thee, to torment them that loue & honoꝝ thee. O maigre
 and bakinde recompence, to expell good seruaunts that be affecti-
 mate to a seruice so iust and honest. Th Basiliske, coloured ouer
 with pleasure and sweetnesse, how hath thy sight disperd his poe-
 se throughout mine heart? At least wyldest thou if I had some drugg to
 repell the

The Lord of Virle,

repell the force, I should liue at ease, and that without this sute
and trouble. But I feele and proue that this sentence is moze than
true:

*No physicke hearbes the grieve of loue can cure,
Ne yet no drugge that payne can well assure.*

Alas, the seare cloath will not serue, to tent the wound the time
shall be but lost, to Launch the soze, and to salue the same it breeds
myne ouerthrow. To be short, any dressing can not auayle, except
the hand of hir alone which gaue the wounde. I woulde to God
she sawe the bottome of my heart, and viewed the Closet of my
mynde, that she might iudge of my firme sayth & know the wrong
she doth me by hir rigor and froward will. But O unhappie man,
I feele that she is so resolued in obstinate mynde, as htr rest ser-
meth only to depend vpon my payne, hir ease vpon my grieft, & hir
toy vpon my sadnesse. And saying so, began straungly to weepe, &
sighing betwene, lamented, in so much as, the mistresse messan-
ger not able to abide the grieft & paynefull trauayle wherein she
saw the pooze Gentleman wrapped, went home to htr house: not-
withstanding she told afterward the whole successe of his loue to a
Gentleman, the friend of Philiberto. Now this Gentleman was
a companion in armes to the Lorde of Virle, and a very familiar
freend of his, that went about by all meanes to put away those
foolish, and franticke conceypts out of his fanlle, but hee proff-
ted as much by his endeuour, as the passionate gayned by his hea-
uines: Who determining to dye, yelded so much to care & grief,
as he fell into a greuous sickness, which both hindred him from
sleepe, and also his Appetite to eate and drinke, geuing himselfe to
muse vpon his follies, and fanlsed dreames, without hearing or
admitting any man to speake vnto hym. And if perchance hee
hearkened to the persuacons of his frends, he ceased not his ch-
playne, Bewayling the cruelty of one, whom he named not. The
Physicians round about were sought for, and they coulde geue no
iudgement of his malady (neither for all the Signes they saw, or
any inspection of his Urine, or touching of his pulse) but sayd that
it was melancholie humoz distilling from the Brayne, that cau-

sed the alteration of his sense: howbeit their Arte and knowledge
 were void of skil to euacuate the grosse Bloud that was congeled
 of his disease. And therefore dispaynyng of his health, with hands
 full of Hony, they gaue him ouer. Which his friend and Compa-
 nion perceiuing, maruellous sozry for his affliction he ceased not
 to practise all that he could by Letters, gifts, promises and com-
 playntes to procure Zilia to visite her pacient. For hee was assured
 that her onely presence was able to recouer him. But the cruel wo-
 man excused hir self that she was a Widow and that it shoulde bee
 vnseemely for one of hir degree (of intente) to visite a Gentleman,
 whose Parentage and Alliance she knew not. The soliciter of the
 Lord of Virle his health, seeing how lytle hys prayers auailed to
 his implacable grefe could not tell to what Saint he might bow
 himself for Counsell, in the ende resolved to sollicite hir again that
 hadde done the first Message, that she myght estiong deuise some
 meanes to byng them to speake together. And sending hir for hys
 purpose, thus he sayed vnto hir: Mystrisse I maruell much that
 you make so little accompt of the poze lord of Virle who lyeth in
 his Bedde attending for Death. Alas, if euer pittie had place in
 Womans heart, I beseech you to geue your ayde to help him, the
 meane of whose recovery, is not ignoraunt vnto you. God is my
 witnesse (quod she) what trauaile my heart is willing to vndertake
 to helpe that Gentleman, but in things impossible, it is not in man
 to determine, or rest assured Iudgement. I will go vnto him and
 comfort hym so well as I can, that peraduenture my Promyses
 may ease some part of his payne: and after ward we wil at leysure
 better consider, what is best for vs to do. Wherevpon they wente
 together to see the Pacient; that beganne to looke moze chearefull
 than he dyd before: who seeing the Gentlewoman, said vnto hir:
 Oh mistres, I would to God I had neuer proued your fidelite, the
 had I not felt the passing cruell Heart of hir, that esteemieth moze
 hir honour to practise rigour and tyranny than with gentlenesse to
 maintaine the Lyfe of a poze feeble knight: Sir (said she). We of
 good cheare, doe not thus torment our selfe: for I trust to geue
 you remedy betwene this and to morrowe, and well doe myne en-
 deuor to cause you to speake with hir, vpon whome wrongfully
 perchance

The Lord of Virle.

perchaunce you doe complayne, and who dare not come vnto you,
least ill speakers conceiue occasion of suspicion, who wil make the
report moze slanderous, then remedie for the cause of your disease
Th(sayd the patient) howe topefull and pleasaunt is your talke? I
see wel that you desire my health, and for that purpose would haue
me drinke those liquors, which superficially appeare to bee sweete,
which afterwarde may make my lyfe a hundred tymes moze faine
and feeble than now it is. We you there sayed she? And I sweare
vnto you by my faith not to faile to keepe my promise, to cause you
speake alone with mistresse Zilia. Was mistresse sayd the louer, I
aske no moze at your handes, that I may heare with myne own eares
the last sentence of hope or desiance. Well put your trust in me,
sayd she, and take no thought but for your health. For I am assured
it be longe, to cause hir to come vnto you, and then you
shall see whether, my diligence shall aunswere the effect of myne attempt.
We thinke already (quod he) that sicknesse is not able to stay
me from going to hir that is the cause, Alth her onely remembraunce
hath no lesse force in mee, than the clearenesse of the Sun beames
to euaporate the thickenesse of the morning mistes. With that the
Gentlewoman tooke her leaue of hym, and went home attendynge
opportunity to speake to Zilia, whome two or thre Dayes after she
mette at Church, and they two beyng alone togither in a Chapell,
she sayd vnto hir with sayned Teares, forced from hir Eyes, and
sending forth a Cloude of sighes: these Wordes: Madame, I nothing
doubt at al, but the last Letters which I brought you, made
you conceiue some ill opinion of me, which I do guesse by the frownyng
countenance that euer Athens you haue bozne me. But when
you shall knowe the hurte which it hath done, I thinke you will
not be so harde, and boyde of pitie, but with pacience hearken
that whych I shall saye, and therewithall bee moued to pitie
the state of a poore Gentleman, who by your meaues is in the pags
of death. Zilia, which til then neuer regarded the payne and sicknesse
of the patient, began to sorrow, wyth such passion, as not to graunt
him further fauor than he had already receiued, but to finde some
meanes to ease him of hys grefe, and then to geue hym ouer for euer

uer. And therefore she sayd vnto hir neyghbor: My good frend I
 thought that all these suites had beene forgotten, vntill the other
 day, a certen Gentleman prayed me to go see the Lord of Virle, who
 told me as you do now, that he was in great daunger. And now
 vnderstanding by you that he waxeth worse, and worse, I will
 be ruled, being well assured of your honesty and vertue, and that
 you will not abuse me to any thing that shall be hurtfull to myne
 honour. And when you haue done what you can, you shall winne
 of me so much as nothinge, and geue no ease to him at all that
 wrongfully playneth of my cruelty. For I purpose not to do any
 priuate face with him, but that which shall be meete for an honest
 Gentlewoman, and such as a faithfull tutor of hir chastite, may
 graunt to an honest, and vertuous Gentleman. His desire is none
 other (sayd the gentlewoman) for he craueth but your presence, to
 let you wit by word, that he is ready to do the thing you shall com-
 maund him. Alas sayde Zilia, it is impossible for me to go to hym
 without suspition, which the common people will lightly conceiue
 of such light & familiar behauiour. And rather would I by thā
 aduēture mine honor hitherto conserued with great seuerity & dili-
 gēce. And yet sith you say, he is in extremes of death, for your sake
 I will not sliue to here him speake. I thāke you (sayd she Messenger)
 for your good wil you beare me & for your help you promise vnto your poore
 passionate Gētlema, whō these newes wil bying on foote againe, &
 who al the dayes of his life will do you honor for that good turne,
 Sith it is so (sayd Zilia) to morow at noone let him come vnto my
 house, wherein a low chamber, he shall haue leysure to say to mee
 his minde. But I purpose by Gods help, to suffer him no further
 than that which I haue already graunted. As it shall please you
 (sayd hir neyghbour) for I craue no more of you but that only fa-
 uour, which as a Messenger of good newes, I go to shew hym,
 recommending my selfe in the meane tyme to your commaunde.
 And then she went vnto the patient, whom she found walkinge by
 and downe the Chaumber, indifferent lusty of his person, and of
 colour meetely freshe for the tyme hee left his Bed. Now when
 Sir Philiberto saw the Messenger, hee sayde vnto hir: And how
 now mystress, what newes? As Zilia so stubborne as shee was

The Lord of Virle,

“wont to be? You may see hir (sayd she) if to morrowe at Poone
“you haue the heart to aduenture to goe vnto hir house. Is it possi-
“ble (sayd hee embracing hir) that you haue procured my deliue-
“rance from the misery, wherewith I haue so long tyme bene af-
“fected? Wh trusty and assured frende, all the dayes of my lyfe I
“will remember that pleasure, and benefite, and by and by acknow-
“ledging of the same, shall be ready to render like, when you please
“to commaunde, or els let me be counted the most vncurtuous Gen-
“tleman that euer made profession of loue: I will go by Gods help
“to see mistresse Zilia, with intent to endure all vexation, wherewith
“Dame Fortune shall afflict me, protesting to vex my selfe no moze,
“although I see my wished hap otherwise to ende than my desert
“requireth. But yet agaynst Fortune to contend, is to warre a-
“gaynst my selfe, whereof the Victoꝝ can bee but daungerous.
Thus he passed all the day, which seemed to last a thousand years
to hym, that thought to receiue some good intertainment of hys
Lady, in whose Bonds hee was caught befoze he thought that
Womans malice could so farre exceede, or display hir venomous
Sting. And truly that man is voyde of Sense, whych suffreth
hym selfe so fondly to bee charmed, with the pearill of others befoze
time abused, ought to serue hym for example. Women be vnto
mankinde a greate confussion, and vnwares for want of hys due
foresight, it doth suffer it selfe to bee bounde and taken captiue by
the very thing which hath no being to worke effect, but by free-
will. Which Inchauntment of Womans beauty, being to men a
pleasaunt displeasure, I thinke to bee decked with that drawinge
vertue, and allurement, for chastisinge of their sinnes who once
sed and bayted with their fading fauour and popsoned sweetenesse,
forget their owne perfection, and nouled in their foolish fantasies,
they seeke felicity, and soueraygne delight, in the matter wherein
doth lie the summe of their vnhaps. Semblably the vertuous and
shamefast daines, haue not the eyes of their minde so blindfolded,
but that they see whereunto those francke seruices, those disloyal
flaythes and Hypocres coloured and stuffed with exterior vertue, doe
tende: Who doubt not also but such louers do imitate the Scor-
pion, whose Venome lieth in his Tayle, the ende of which is loue,
beinge

betinge the ruine of good Renoume, and the Decay of former vertues. For which cause the heauens, the Friends of their sexe haue giuen them a prouidence, which those Gentle, vnfauoured louers terme to be rigor, thereby to proue the deserts of Suters, aswell for their great contentation and prayse, as for the rest of them that do them seruice. Howbeit this iust & modest prouidence, that cruel Gentlewoman practised not in hir louer, the Lord of Virle, who was so humble a seruaunt of his vnkinde mistresse, as his obedience rebounded to his great mishap, and folly, as manifestly may appeare by that which followeth.

Sir Philiberto then thinking to haue gaped much by hauing made promise, liberally to speake to his Lady, went vnto hir at the appoynted hour, so well contented truly of that grace, as all the vnkindnesse past was quite forgot. Now being come to the Lodging of mistresse Zilia, he found hir in the deuised place with one of hir maydes attending vpon hir. When she saw him, after a little co:de entertaynment, she began to say vnto him with fayned ioy, that neuer moued hir heart, these wordes: Now sir, I see that your late sicknesse was not so straunge as I was geuen to vnderstand, for the good state wherein I see you presently to be, which from henceforth shall make mee beleue, that the passions of Men endure so longe as the cause of their Affections continue within their fanles, much like vnto looking Glasses, which albeit they make the equality or excessse of things represented to appeare, yet when the thing scene doth passe, and vanishe away, the formes also do voyde out of remembraunce, resembling the wynde that lightly whoozleth to and fro through the playne of some deepe balley. Wh madame aunswered he, how easie a matter it is for the grieafelesse person to counterfayt both ioy and dissimulation in one very thing, which not onely may forget the conceipt that moueth his affections, but the object must continually remayne in him, as paynted, and grauen in his minde. Which truly as you say is a looking Glasse, not such one for all that, as the counterfayted apparance of represented formes hath like rigor in it, that the first & true Idées & shapen can so soone vanishe wout leauing most perfect

The Lord of Virle,

“ impression of such formes within the minde of him, that liueth by
“ on their onely remembraunce. In this mirroz then (which by
“ reason of the hidden force I may well say to bee ardent and burn-
“ ning) haue I looked so well as I can, thereby to forme the susten-
“ tation of my good hap. But the imagined Shape not able to sup-
“ port such perfection, hath made the rest of the body to faile (weakened
“ through the mindes passions) in such wise as if the hope to
“ recouer this better parte halfe lost, had not cured both, the whole
“ decay of the one had followed, by thinking to giue some accomplis-
“ ment in the other. And if you see me Madame, attayne to some
“ good state, impute the same I beseech you, to the good will, a fa-
“ uor which I receiue by seeing you in a private place, wherein I con-
“ ceiue greater top than euer I did, to say vnto you the thing which
“ you would not beleeue, by woordes at other times proceeding from
“ my mouth, ne yet by aduertisement signified in my written letters.
“ Notwithstanding I think that my Martirdome is known to bee
“ such as euery man may perceiue that the Summe of my desire
“ is onely to serue and obey you, for so much as I can receiue no
“ greater comfort, than to be commaunded to make repaer to you,
“ to let you know that I am whole (although giuen ouer by Whis-
“ tians) when you vouchsafe to employ me in your seruice, & thinke
“ my selfe rapt by agayne from one hundred thousand deaths at
“ once, when it shall please you to haue pittie vpon the griefe and pas-
“ sion, I endure. Alas what causeth my mishap, that the heavenly
“ beauty of yours should make prooue of a cruelty so great? Haue
“ you decreed Madame thus to torment mee poore Gentleman that
“ am ready to sacrifice my selfe in your seruice, when you shall impart
“ some fauour of your good grace? Do you thinke that my passions
“ be dissembled? Alacke, alacke, the teares which I haue shed, the
“ losse of lust to eate and drinke, the weary passed nights, the longe
“ contriued sleepelesse tyme, the restlesse turmoyle of my consumed
“ corpes may wel assure the my loyall heart is of better merite than you
“ esteeme. Then seeing hir to fixe hir eyes vpon the ground, and thin-
“ kinge that hee had already wonne hir, hee reinforced his humble
“ Speache, and Sighing at fits betwene, not sparinge the Teares,
“ whych trickled downe alongs hys face, he prosecuted his Tale
as fol.

as followeth: Wh saye amongst the sayest, woulde you blot that
 surpassing Beauty with a cruelty so furious, as to cause the death
 of him which loueth you better than himselfe? Wh my-withered
 eyes, which hitherto haue bene serued with two liuely springs to
 expresse the hidden griefs within the heart, if your unhap be such
 that the only Mistresse of your contemplations, and cause of your
 bitter teares, doe force the Humour to increase, which hitherto in
 such wise hath emptied my Bayne, as there is no more in mee to
 moisten your drouth, I am content to endure al extremity, until my
 heart shall feele the last Pangue, that deprieth, pee of nourishment,
 and me of mine affected Joy. The Gentlewoman, whether shee
 was weary of that Marton, or rather doubted that in the end hir
 chastity would receiue some assault through y dismeasured passion
 which she saw to continue in him, answered with rigorous words:
 You haue talked, and written enough, you haue indifferently well
 solicited hir, whych is thoroughly resolved in former minde, to
 keepe hir honoz in that worthy reputation of degree, wherein shee
 magnifyeth the same amongst the best. I haue hitherto suffered
 you to abuse my patience, and haue shew'd that familiarity which
 they deserue not that go about leudly to assaile the chastity of those
 Women that patiently giue them eare, for the opinion they haue
 conceiued of the shadowing vertues of like foolish Suters. I
 now doe see that all your woordes doe tend to beguile mee, and to
 depriue mee of that you cannot giue me: Which shall bee a war-
 ning for me henceforth, more wisely to looke about my businesse, &
 more warely to shunne the Charms of such as you bee, to the
 ende that I by bending mine open eares, be not surpris'd, and o-
 uercome with your enchanted Speeches. I pray you then for
 conclusion, that I heare no more hereof, neyther from you, nor yet
 from the Ambassadour that cometh from you. For I neyther
 will, ne yet pretend to depart to you any other fauour than that
 which I haue enlarged for your comfort: But rather doe protest,
 that so long as you abide in this Countrey, I will neyther goe
 forth in State, nor suffer any Gentleman to haue access into this
 place except he be my neare Kinsman. Thus for your importunar
 sure,

The Lord of Virle.

“ Iute, I will chastise my light consent, for harkeninge vnto you in
“ those requests, which duty and Womanhoode ought not to suffre.
“ And if you do proceede in these your follies, I will seeke redzesse
“ according to your desert, which till now I haue deferred, thinking
“ that time would haue put out the ardent heate of your rash, and
“ wanton youth.

The infortunate Lord of Virle, hearing this sharpe sentence,
remayned long time without speech, so astonned as if he had bene
saine from the Clouds. In the ende for alhis despaye he replred
“ to Zilia with Countenance indifferent merry: Sith it is so ma-
“ dame, that you take from mee all hope to be your perpetuall Ser-
“ uant, & that without other comfozt or contentation I must nedes
“ depart your presence, neuer (perchaunce) hereafter to speake vnto
“ you again, be not yet so squeimish of your beauty, and so cruell to-
“ wards your languishing louer, as to deny him a kisse for pledge of
“ his last farewell. I demaund nothing here in secret, but that hos-
“ netye you may openly performe. It is al that I doe craue at your
“ handes in recompence of the trauayles, paynes, and afflictions suf-
“ fered for your sake. The malicious dame full of rancor, and spite,
“ full rage sayd vnto him: I shall see by and by sir, if the loue which
“ you haunt to beare mee, be so vehement as you seeme to make it.
“ Th Madame (sayd the vnaduised Louer) commaunde only, and
“ you shal see with what deuotion I will performe your will, were
“ it that it should cost me the price of my proper life. You shall haue
“ (quod she) the kisse which you require of me if you will make pro-
“ mise, and sweare by the fayth of a Gentleman, to do the thinge that
“ I shall commaund, without fraude, couin, or other delay. Ma-
“ dame (sayd the ouer wilfull louer) I take God to witnessse that of
“ the thingh which you shall commaunde I will not leaue one tore
“ vndone, but it shall bee executed to the vttermoost of your request
“ and will. She hearing him sweare with so good affection, sayd vn-
“ to him smiling: Now then vpon your oth which I beleue, and be-
“ ing assured of your Vertue and Noble nature, I will also per-
“ forme and keepe my promise: And saying so, she Embraced and
“ kissed him very louingly. The poore Gentleman not knowing how
“ dearely hee had bought that disfauorable curtelle, & bitter sweete-
“ nesse,

nesse, helde hir a while betwene his armes, doubling kisse vpon
 kisse, with such pleasure, as his soule thought to fly by to the
 heauens being inspired with that imporsoned Baulme which hee
 sucked in the sweete and sugred breath of his cruel mistresse: who
 vndoing hir selfe out of his armes, sayde vnto him: Sith that I
 haue made the first disclosure both of the promise and of the effect,
 it behooueth that you performe the rest, for the full accomplis-
 ment of the same. Come on hardily (sayeth hee) and G O D
 knoweth how speedily you shal be obeyed. I will then (quod shee) &
 commaund you vpon your promysed faith, that from this present
 time, vntyl the space of thre yeres be expyred, you speake to no ly-
 ving person for any thing that shall happen vnto you, nor yet ex-
 presse by tonge, by sound of word or speache what thing you want
 or els desire, whych requeste if you do breake, I will neuer truste
 liuing man for youre sake but will publyshe your fame to bee vil-
 lanous, and your person periured, and a promyse breaker. I le-
 for you to thinke whether this vnhappy louer were amazed or not,
 to heare a Commaundment so vniust, and therewithall the diffi-
 culty for the performance. Notwithstanding he was so stout of
 heart, and so religious an obseruer of his Othe as euen at that
 very instant he began to do the part which he had commaunded,
 playing at Munchaunce, and vsing other signes, for doing of his
 duetye, accordyng to hir demaund. Thus after his ryghte hum-
 ble reuerence made vnto hir, he went home, where vnto that hee
 had lost his speach by meanes of a Catarre or reume which distil-
 led from his brayne, he determined to forsake his Countrey vntill
 his tyme of penance was runne out. Wherefore setting apace in hys
 affayres, and prouyding for his trayne, he made him ready to de-
 part. Notwithstanding, he wrote a Letter vnto Zilia, befoze he toke
 hys iourney into Fraunce, that in olde tyme hadde ben the Solace
 and refuge of the miserable, aswel for the pleasantnes and tempe-
 rature of the ayre, the great wealth & the aboundance of al thynges,
 as for the curtesy, gentlenes and familiarity of the people: where-
 in that region may compare with any other Nation vpon earth.

Flow

The Lord of Virle.

Now the Letter of Philiberto, fell into the hands of Lady Zilia, by meanes of hys Page instructed for that purpose: who aduertised hir of the departure of his master, and of the despaire where in hee was. Whereof shee was somewhat soze, and offended: But yet puttinge, on hir Aunciente scuerpipe, tooke the Letters, and breakinge the Seale, founde that which followeth.

THE very euill that causeth mine annoy
The matter is that breedes to me my ioy,
Which doth my wofull heart full sore displease,
And yet my hap and hard yll lucke doth ease.
I hope one day when I am franke and free,
To make thee do the thing that pleaseth mee,
Whereby gayne I shall, some pleasaunt gladnesse,
To supply mine undeserued sadnesse,
The like whereof no mortall Dame can giue
To louing man that heere on earth doth liue.
This great good turne which I on thee pretende,
Of my Conceites the full desired ende,
Proceedes from thee (O cruell mystress myne)
Whose from my heart hath made mee to resign
The full effect of all my liberty
(To please and ease thy fonde sickle fanfy)
My vse of speache in silence to remayne:
To enery wight a double hellishe payne.
Whose sayth hadst thou not wickedly abused,
No stress of payne for thee had bene refused,
Who was to thee a trusty seruant sure,
And for thy sake all daungers would endure.
For which thou hast defaced thy good name,
And therewith procurest eternall shame.

g That

¶ That roaring tempest huge which thou hast made me felt,
 The raging stormes whereof, well neere my heart hath swelt
 By painefull pangs: whose waltering waues by troubled Skies
 And thousand blasts of winde that in those Seas do ryse
 Do promise shipwracke sure of that thy sayling Barke
 When after weather cleare doth rise some Tempest darke.
 For eyther I or thou which art of Tygers kinde,
 In that great raging gulfse some daunger sure shalt finde,
 Of that thy nature rude the dest'nies en'mies bee,
 And thy great ouerthrow full well they do fore see.
 The heauens unto my estate no doubt great frendship shoo
 And do seeke wayes to ende, and finish all my woe.
 This penauunce which I beare by yelding to thy hest
 Great store of ioyes shall heape, and bring my mynde to rest.
 And when I am at ease amidst my pleasaunt happes,
 Then shall I see thee fall, and snarld in Fortunes trappes.
 Then shall I see thee ban and curssse the wicked time
 Wherin thou madest me gulp such draught of poisoned wine.
 Of which thy mortall cup, I am the offerd wight,
 A vowed sacrifice, to that thy cruell spight.
 Wherefore my hoping heart, doth hope to see the day,
 That thou for silence now, to me shalt be the pray.
 ¶ O Blessed God most iust, whose worthy laude and prayse
 With uttered speech in Skies a loft I dare not once to rayse,
 And may not well pronouce & speak what suffrāce I sustaine,
 Ne yet what death I do indure, whiles I in lyfe remayne.
 Take vengeance on that traytresse rude, afflict hir corps with
 Thy holy arme redresse hir fault, that she no more do see. (woe
 My reason hath not so farre strayed, but I may hope & trust
 To see hir for his wickednes, be whipt with plague most iust.
 In the meane while, great heauines my fēce & soule doth bite
 And shaking feuer vex my corps for grieve of hir despite.
 My mynde

The Lord of Virle.

*My mynde now set at liberty, from thee (O cruell Dame)
Doth giue defiance to thy wrath, and to thy cursed name,
Proclayming mortal warre on thee, vntill my tongue vntide
Shall ioi to speak to Zilia fast weping by my side. (vaunt,
The heauens forbid, that causiesse wrōg abroad shold make his
Or that an undeserued death, forgetfull tombe should haunt:
But that in writtē booke & verse their names shold euer liue
And eke their wicked deedes shold dy, & vertues stil reuiue.
So shall the pride and glory both, of hir be punished right,
By lēth of yeares, & tract of time. And I by vertues might
Full recompence thereby shal haue, & stand still in good Fame
And she like caitif wretch shal liue, to hir long lasting shame.
Whose fond regard of beauties grace, cōtēned hath the force
Of my true loue full fixt in hir: hir heart void of remorse,
Esteemed it selfe right foolishly, and me abused still,
Vsurping my good honest fayth and cre dite at hir will.
Whose loyall faith doth rest in soule, and therē stil shal bide,
Vntill in filthy stinking graue, the earth my corps shal hide.
Thē shal that soule fraught with þy faith, to heuē make his reu
And rest amōg the heuēly rout, bedect with sacred aire. (paire
And thou for thy great cruelty, as God aboue doth know,
With ruful voice shalt wepe & wayle for thy gret ouerthrow
And whē thou woldst fayn purge thy self for þy thy wretched
No kindnes shal to þy be done, extreme shal be thy mede (dede
And where my tōgue doth wāt his wil, thy mischief to display
My hand and penne supplies the place, and shall do so alway.
For so thou hast constraynd the same by force of thy behest:
In silence still my tongue to keepe, & accomplishe thy request.
Adieu, farewell my tormenter, thy friend that is full mure,
Doth bid thee farewell once agayne, & so hee ends his sute.*

**He that liueth only, to be reuenged of thy cruelty,
Philiberto of Virle,**

Zilia like a disbaynfull Dame made but a Jest at these Let-
 ters, and Complayntes of the infortunate Louer, saying that she
 was very well content with his Seruice. And that when hee
 should perfourme the tyme of his probation, shee shoulde see if he
 were worthy to bee admitted into the Fellowship of them which
 had made sufficient prooffe of the Order, and Rule of Loue. In
 the meane tyme Philiberto rode by great Journes (as we haue
 sayde befoze) towards the goodly, and pleasaunte Countrey of
 Fraunce, wherein Charles the Seuenith that tyme did raigne,
 who miraculously (But gieue the Frenche man leaue to
 flatter, and speake well of hys owne Countrey, ac-
 cordinge to the flatteringe, and vauntinge Nature
 of that Nation) chased the Englishe men out of hys Lands
 des, and Auncient Patrimony in the yere of our Lord. 1451.
 This Kyng had hys Campe then Warrefaringe in Gaucigne,
 whose Lucke was so fortunate as hee expelled hys Enemies,
 and left no Place for them to Fortes there, which Incou-
 raged the Kyng to followe that good Occasion, and by Victo-
 secutinge hys Victorious Fortune, to Possigate out of Nor-
 mandie, and to dispatch himselfe of that Enemy, into whose
 Handes, and seruitude the Countrey of Guyene was rightly
 deliuered, and Victoriously wonne, and gotten by the Englissh-
 men. The Kyng then beeing in hys Campe in Norman-
 die, the Piedmount Gentleman the Lorde of Virle asforesayde,
 Repaired thereunto to Serue hym in hys Person, where hee
 was well knowne of some Captaynes which had scene hym
 at other tymes, and in place where Worthy Gentlemen are
 wonte to frequente, and in the Duke of Sauoyes Courte,
 which the Frenchemen dyd very much haunte, and because
 the Earle of Piedmont that then was Duke of Sauoy had
 Marryed Iolanta the seconde Daughttr of Charles the Se-
 uenth. These Gentlemen of Fraunce were very much so-
 ry for the Misfortune of the Lorde of Virle, and knowinge
 hym to bee one of the Bravest, and Lustiest Men of Ar-
 mes that

The Lord of Virle.

of armes that was in his tyme within the Countrey of Piedmont, presented him befoze the King, commending vnto hys Grace the vertue, gentlenesse, and valiaunce of the man of Warre: Who after hee had done his reuerence accordinge to hys duety, whych hee knew ful wel to doe, declared vnto him by signes that he was come for none other intent, but in those Warres to serue hys Maiesste: whom the King heard and thankefully recepued assuryng himself and promysing very much of the dumbe Gentleman for respect of his personage which was comely and wel proportioned, and therefoze represented some Force and greate Dexterity: and that whych made the king the better to fantasie the Gentleman, was the repozte of so many worthy men which extolled euen to the heauens the prowesse of the Piedmont knight. Whereof he gaue assured testimony in the assault which the king made to deliuer Roane the Chiefe Citie and defence of all Normandie in the yere of our Lord. 1451. wheré Philiberto behaued himself so valiantly as he was the first that mounted vpon the Walls, and by his Dexterity and inuincible force, made way to the souldiers in the breach, whereby a little while after they entred and sacked the Enemies, dpyuing them out of the Citie, and wherein not long befoze, that is to say. 1430. the Duke of Somerser caused Ioane the Pucelle to be burnt. The king aduertised of the Seruice of the Dumbe Gentleman to recompence him according to his deserr, and because hee knewe hym to bee of a good hoase, he made him a Gentleman of his Chambré, and gaue him a good pension, promysing him moreover to continue hys liberality, when he should see him prosecute in tyme to come, the towardnesse of seruice which he had so haply begon. The dumbe Gentleman thanking the King very humbly, both for the present princely reward, & for promise in tyme to come, lifted by his hand to heaue as taking God to witnesse of the faith, which inuiofable he promised to keepe vnto his Prince: which he did so earnestly, as hardely he had promysed, as well appeared in a Skirmishe betweene the French, & their auncient Enemies the Englysh Men, on whose side was the valiant and hardy Captayne the Lord Talbot, who hath eternized his memory in the victories obtained vpon that People, whych sometimes made Europa and Asia to tremble, & appalled the

mon.

monstruous and Warlike Countrey of Affrica. In this conspete the Piedmont Knighte combated with the Lord Talbot, agaynst whome he had so happy successe, as vpon the shock and incountre he ouerthrewe both man and Horse, which caused the discomfiture of the English Men: who after they had horsed agayne their Captain, fled againe, leauing the felde bespred with dead Bodyes and bludshed of their Companions. This victorie recovered such Courage and boldnes to the French, as from that tyme forth the English men began with their places and forts to lose also their hartes to defend themselves. The king exceedingly wel contented with the prowesse and valiance of the dumbe Gentleman, gaue him for seruice past the Charg of v. C. men of armes, & indued him with some possessions, attending better fortune to make him vnderstand howe much the vertue of valiance ought to be rewarded and cheryshed by Prynces that be aided in their Necessity with the Diligence of such a vertuous and noble Gentleman. In lyke manner, when a Prynce hath something good in himself, he can do no lesse but loue and fauor that which resembleth himself by Princely Conditions, As the Vertue in what soeuer place it taketh roote, can not chose but produce good fruite, the vse whereof far surmounts them all which approche the place, where these first seedes of Nobility were throwen. Certaine daies after, the kinge desirous to reioyce his Knights and Captaines that were in his trayne, and desirous to extinguishe quite the woefull time which so long space held Fraunce in fearefull Silence, caused a triumph of Turney to bee proclaimed within the City of Roane, wherein the Lord of Virle was deemed and esteemed one of the best, whych further did increase in him the good wyl of the king, in such wyse as he determined to procure his health, and to make him haue his speech againe. For he was verie sorry y^e a Gentleman so valiant was not able to expresse his minde which if it might be had, in counsel it would serue the state of a commonwealth, so wel as the force & valour of his body had till then serued for defence & recovery of his country. And for that purpose he made Proclamation by sound of Trumpet throughout the prynces as wel within his own kingdome, as the regions adioynning vpon the same, that who so euer could heale that dumbe Gentleman, shoulde haue ten thousand Frankes for recompence. And Man myght then

The Lord of Virle.

then haue seene thousands of Physicians assemble in fielde, not to skirmish with the English men, but to combat for reward in recovery of the Patients speache, who begon to make such Warre against those ten thousand Frankes, as the King was afrayde that the cure of that disease could take no effect: and for that cause ordained furthermoze, that whosoever would take in hand to heale the dumbe, and dyd not keepe promise within a certaine prefixed time, should pay the sayd summe, or for default thereof should pledge his head in gage. A Man myght then haue seene those Whiske Whippers, aswell beyonde the Mountaynes, as in Fraunce it selfe, retire home againe, bleeding at the Nose, curling with great impiety their Patrones, Galen, Hypocrates, and Auicen, and blamed with moze than reprochful Wordes, the Arte wherewith they fished for honor and richesse. This brute was spred so far, and babbling fame had already by mouth of her Trump published the same throughout the most part of the Provinces, Townes, and Cities neare and farre off to Fraunce, in such wise as a Man would haue thought that the two young men (which once in the tyme of the Macedonian Warres brought Tydings to Varinius that the king of Macedon was taken by the Consul Paulus Emilius) had ben bagarant and wandering abroad to carry Newses of the Kings edicte for the healing of the Lord of Virle. Which caused that not only the brute of the Proclamation, but also the Credyte and reputaion wherin the sayd Lord was to the French king arriued euē at Montcal and passed from mouth to mouth, til at length Zilia the principal cause thereof vnderstode the newes, which reioysed hir very much, seeing the firme Amittie of the dumbe Lord, and the sincere faith of hym in a promise unworthe to be kept, for so much as, where Fraude and feare doe rule in Heartes of Men, releygon of promise specially the Place of the giuen fapth, surrendreth hys force and reuolteth, and is no more bound but to that which by good will he would obserue. Nowe thought shee, thoughte & nay rather shee assured hir selfe, that the Gentleman for all hys wyrtten Letter was still so surpysed wth hir Loue, and kindled wth hir fire in so ample wise, as when hee was at Montcall: and therefore determined to goe to Paris, not for desire shee had to see hir

patient and penetenciarie, but rather for couetise of the ten thousand Frankes, wherof already she thought hir self assured, making good accompt that the dumbe Gentleman when hee should see himself discharged of his promise, for gratifying of hir, would make no stay to speak, to the intent she myght beare away both the praise and Money whereof all others had failed tyll that tyme. Thus you see that she whome honest Amitie and long seruice could litle induce to compassion and desire to giue some ease vnto hir moste earnest louer, yelded hir selfe to couetous gaine and greedinesse for to increase hir Rycheesse. Cursed hūger of Money, how long wilt thou thus blinde the reason and Spyrtes of men? Thypertillous gulfe how many hast thou ouerwhelmed within thy bottomlesse Throte, whose gloze, had it not bene for thee, had surpassed the Clouds, and bene equall with the bryghtnesse of the Sunne, where now they bee obscured wery the thickenesse of thy fogges and Palpable darknesse. Was the fructis whych thou byngest forth for all thine outward apparence, conduce no felicity to them that be the possessors, for the dropsey that is hydden in their Wynde, whych maketh them so much the more drye, as they drynke ofte in that thirstie fountaine, is cause of their alteration: and moste miserable is that insatiable desire the Couetous haue to glut their appetite, whych can receiue no contentment. Thys onely Couetousnesse sometimes procured the Death of the great and rich Romane Crassus, who throughe GODS punishment fell into the Handes of the Persians, for violating and sackyng the Temple of God that was in Ierusalem. Sextimuleus burnyng with Auarice and greedynesse of Money, dyd once cut of the head of hys Patron and defender Caius Gracchus the Tribune of the People, incepted by the Tyrant, which tormenteth the hearts of the couetous. I wil not speak of a good number of other Examplis in people of all kyndes, and others nations, to come againe to Zilia. Who forgetting hir vertue the first ornamēt & shyning qualite of hir honest behauior feared not the wearines & trauaile of way, to comit her self to y danger of losse of honoz, & to yeld to the mercy of one, vnto whō she had don so great iniury, as hir conscience (if she hadde not lost hir ryghte sence) oughte

The Lord of Virle.

Oughte to haue made hir thinke that hee was not without desire to reuenge the wrong vniuſly don vnto him, and ſpecially being in place where ſhe was not known, and he greatly honoured and eſteemed, for whoſe loue that Proclamation and ſearche of Phyſicke was made and ordained. Zilia then hauing put in order hir affaires at home, departed from Montcall, and paſſing the Mounts, arrived at Paris, in that time when greateſt deſpayre was of the dumbe Knights recovery, Weynge arrived wpyhin fewe Dayes after ſhe inquired for them that had the charge to entertayne ſutch as came, for the cure of the paciēt. For (ſhe) if ther be any in the world, by whom the Knigt may recover his health, I hope in God & I am ſhe that ſhall haue the prayſe. Heereof the Commiſſaries deputed hercunto, were aduerted, who cauſed the fayre Phyſician to come before them, and asked her if it were ſhe, that would take vppon hir to cure this dumbe Gentleman. To whome ſhe aunſwared my maſters it hath pleaſed God to reuſale vnto me a certayne ſecrete very proper and meere for the healing of hys Malady, wherewithal if the Pacient wyl. I hope to make hym ſpeake ſo well, as he dyd theſe two yeares paſt and more. I ſuppoſe ſayd one of the Commiſſaries, that you be not ignoraunte of the Circumſtances of the Kyngeſ Proclamation. I knowe ful wel (quod ſhe) the Effecte thereof, and therefore doe ſay vnto you, that I wyl looſe my life yf I doe not accompliſh that whych I doe promyſe ſo that I may haue Licence, to tarry wpyth hym alone, becauſe it is of no leſſe importance than hys Health. It is no maruell ſayde the Commiſſary, conſidering your Beauty, which is ſufficient to frame a ſweete Tongue in the moſte dumbe Perſon, that is vnder the Heauens. And therefore doe your Endeuor, aſſuring you that you ſhall doe a great pleaſure vnto the King, and beſides the prayſe you ſhall gette the good wyl of the dumbe Gentleman which is the moſt excellent man of the World, and therefore ſo well recompended as you ſhall haue good cauſe to be contented wpyth the Kyngeſ Liberallitye. But (to the intent you be not decepued) the meanyng of the Edicte is, that wpythin ſittene dayes after you begin the cure, you muſte make hym whole, or elſe to ſatiſſie the Daynes ordained in the

the same. Whereunto she submitted hir selfe, blinded by Auarice and presumption, thinking that she had like power nowe ouer the Lord of Virle, as when she gaue him that sharpe and cruel penance. These Conditions prompsed, the Commissaries went to aduertise the Knight, how a Gentlewoman of Piedmont was of purpose come into Fraunce to helpe him: whereof he was maruelously astommed. Now he would neuer haue thoughte that Zilia had bozne hym so great good wil, as by abasing the pryde of hir Cozage, would haue come so farre to ease the grieffe of him, whome by such greates tozments she had so wonderfully persecuted. He thought againe that it was the Gentlewoman his Neighbour whych sometymes had done hir endeuor to helpe him, and that nowe she had prouoked Zilia to absolue him of his faith, and acquite him of hys promise. Musing vpon the diuersitie of these things, and not knowing where vpon to settle hys iudgement, the deputies commaunded that the Woman Physitian should be admitted to speake with the patient. Which was done. and brought in place, the Commissaries presently withdrew themselves. The Lord of Virle seeinge hys Enemye come befoze him, whom sometimes hee loued very dearely, iudged by and by the cause wherefoze she came, that onely Auarice & greed by desire of gaine had rather procured hir to passe the mountayns trauaile, than due and honest Amitie, wherewith she was double bound thzough his perseuerance and humble seruitce, with whose sight hee was so apalled, as he fared like a shadowe and Image of a deade Man. Wherefoze calling to mynd the rigour of his Lady, hir inciuillity and sonde Commaundement, so longe time to forbidde hys Speech, the Loue which once hee bare hir, with be- hement desire to obey hir, sodainly was so cooled and qualysed, that loue was turned into hatred, and will to serue hir, into an appetite of reuenge: whereupon he determined to vse that presente Fortune, and to playe his parte with hir, vppon whom hee had so foolysly doted, and to pay hir with that Money wherewith she made him feele the Fruicts of vspeakable crueltie, to giue ex- ample to sonde and presumptuous dames, how they abuse Gentle- men of such Degree whereof the Knight was, and that by ha-

The Lord of Virle.

uing regarde to the merite of such personages, they be not so prodigall of themselves, as to set their honour in sale for vyle reward and filthy mucke: which was so constantly conserued and defended by this Gentlewoman, against the assaults of the good grace, beauty, valour, and gentlenesse, of that vertuous and honest suter. And notwithstanding, in these dayes wee see some to resist the amity of those that loue, for an oppnyon of a certayne vertue, which they thinke to be hydden within the copps of excellent beauty, who afterwards do set themselves to sale to hym that giueth most, and offereth greatest reward. Such do not deserue to be placed in rank of chaste Gentlewomen, of whome they haue no smacks at al, but amongs the throng of Brumpets kynde, that haue some sparke and outward shew of loue: for he which loueth money and huntereth after gayne, wyl make no bones, by treasons trap to betray that unhappy man, which shall yelde himselfe to him: his loue tending to vn sensible things, and such in dede, as make the wisest sorte to fallle their sayth, and s. l the ryghte and Equite of their Iudgment. The Lorde of Virle, seeing Zilia then in his company, and almost at his commaundement, fayed as though hee knew him not, by reason of his small regard and lesse intertaynement shewed vnto him at his first comming: Which greatly made the poore Gentlewoman to muse. Fewerthelesse she making a vertue of necessity, and seeing him selfe to bee in that place, from whence shee could not depart, without the losse of his honoz and Lyfe, purposed to proue Fortune, and to committe him selfe vnto his mercy, for all the mobilitie which the auncients attribute vnto Fortune. Wherefore shutting fast the doore, shee went vnto the Knight, to whome she spake these words: And what is the matter (Sir knight) that now you make so litle accompte of your owne Zilia, who in tymes past you sayd, had great power and Authoztye ouer you? what is the cause that moueth you hereunto: Haue you so soone forgotten him? Beholde me better, and you shal see him before you, that is able to acquyte you of youre promise, and therefore prayeth you to pardon his committed faultes done in tymes past by abusing so cruelly the honest and firme loue which you bare him. I am she, which throughe follye
and

and temeritie did stoppe your mouth, and tyed by your Tongue. Giue me leaue I beseeche you, to open the same agayne, and to breake the Lyne, whych letteth the liberty of your Speache. She seeing that the dumbe Gentlewan would make no aunswere at all, but Humme, and shewed by signes, that he was not able to vndo his Tongue, weeping began to kisse hym, imbrace hym and make much of hym, in such wyse, as he whych once studied to make Eloquent Orations befoze hys Ladye, to induce hir to pity, forgat then those Ceremonyes, and spared his talke, to shewe hymselfe to be such one as shee had made at hir Commaundement, mused and deuyfed altogether vpon the Execution of that, which sometyme hee hadde so paynefully pursued, both by Woordes and contynuall Seruyce, and coulde profite nothrug. Thus waked agayne by hir, whych once had Morteified hys Wynde, assayed to renue in hir that, whych long tyme befoze, seemed to be a sleepe. She moze for feare of losse of Lyfe, and the pryce of the rewarde, than for any true or earnest loue, suffered hym to receyue of hir, which the long Suter desireth to obtaine of his mistresse. They liued in this toy and Pleasure the space of fiftie e Dages ordained for the assigned Terme of his Cure, wherein the pooze Gentlewoman was not able to conuert hir offended Frende to speake, although she humbly prayed him to shewe so much fauour as at least she might goe free, from either losse: telling hym howe lyttle regard shee hadde to hir Honour, to come so farre to doe him pleasure, and to discharge him of his promise. Much other gay and lowlye talke shee hadde. But the knyght nothyng moued with what she sayde determined to bynge hir in such feare, as hee had bene vexed with heauynesse, which came to passe at the expyred tyme. For the commissaries seeing that their payent spake not at all, summaoned the Gentlewoman to pay the Penaltie pronounced in the Edict, or else to loose her Lyfe, Alas, howe better seemed thys Wynde to thys pooze Gentlewoman, who not able to dissemble the grefe that prest on euery syde, beganne to saye: Oh I Wretched and Captiue Woman, by thynking to deceiue an other, haue sharpened the Swoorde to smyth myne owne Lyfe. Was

The Lord of Virle.

It not enough for me to vse such cruelty towards this myne Enemye, which most cruelly in double wise taketh Reuenge, but must I come to bee thus tangled in his Snares, and in the Handes of him, who introyng the Spoiles of myne Honour, will with my Life, depprue me of my Fame, by making mee a Common Fable, to all Posterity in tyme to come? What hap had I that I was not rather deuoured by some furious and cruell Beast, when I passed the mountaines, or else that I brake not my Necke, downe some steepe and headlong hill, of those high and hideous mountains, rather than to be set heare in stage, a Pageant to the whole Citie to gaze vpon, for enterprysing a thing so bayne, done of purpose by him, whome I haue offended. Th Signator Philiberto, what will rewardest thou for pleasures receyued, and fauours felt in hir whom thou didst loue somutch, as to make hir dye such shameful, and dreadfull Death. But O G O D, I know that it is for worthy guerdon of my folysh and wycked Life. Th disloyaltrie and fickle trust, is it possible that thou be harborod in the heart of hym, which hadde the Wute to bee the moste Loyal and Curteous, Gentleman of hys Countrey? Alas, I see well now that I must die throught myne onely Simplicity, and that I must sacrifice mine Honour to the rpgour of hym, which with two aduantages, taketh ouer cruell reuenge of the lttle wrong, wherewith my chastity touched him before. As she thus had finished hir complainte, one came in to carrie hir to Pryson, whether willingly shee wente for that she was already resolued in desire, to lye no longer in that miserie. The Gentleman contented wyth that payne, and not able for to dissemble the greife, whych hee conceyued for the passion whych hee sawe hys Welbeloued to endure, the enioyng of whome renued the heate of the flames forpast, repayzed to the King, vnto whome to the great pleasure of the Standers by, and exceeding reioyce of hys Maiestye (to heare hym speake) he told the whole discourse of the Loue betwene hym and cruell Zilia, the cause of the losse of his speech, and the somme of hys reuenge. By the faith of a Gentleman (sayed the king) but here is so straunge an hystoie as euer I heard: a verely your faith and loyaltie is no lesse to be praised and commended than the cruelty and couetousnes of the

of the Woman worthy of reproch & blame, which truly deserueth some greivous, & notable iustice, if so be she were not able to render some apparant cause for her couerture & hiding of his folly. **Blas** **Ar** (sayd the Gentleman) please your maiesty to deliuer him (although she be worthy of punishment) and discharge the rest that be in prison for not recovery of my speach, Sith my onely help did rest, eyther at his Commaundemente whych had bounde me to that wyong, or else in the expired time, for whych I had pledged my sayth. To which request, the Kinge very willingly agreed, greatly praisynge the Wisedome, Curtesse, and aboue all the fidelity of of the Lord of Virle, who causynge his penitenciarie to be set at liberty, kept his company certayne dayes, as well to feaste, and banquet him, in those Landes, and Possessions which the Kinges maiesty had liberally bestowed vpon him, as to satiate his Appetite with some fruites whereof he had sauoured his taste when he was voluntarily Dumb. **Zilia** founde that fauour so pleasant, as in maner shee counted his imprisonment happy, and his trauell rest, by reason that distresse made him then feele more liuely the force and pleasure of Liberty, whiche shee had not founde to bee so delicate, had she not receyued the experience, and payne thereof. **Marke** heere how Fortune dealeth with them which trustinge in their force, despise (in respect of that which they doe themselves) the little portion that they iudge to bee in others. If the **Waynegloze**, and arrogante Presumption of a Chastity Impregnable had not deceiued this Gentlewoman, if the sacred hunger of gold had not blinded him, it coulde not haue bene knowne, wherein his Incontinency consisted, not in the **Myntion** delights, and alluring Toyes of a passionate Louer, but in the couetous desire of filling his Purse, and Hypocriticall gloze of praise among men. And notwithstanding, yee see his gaine to serue him turne nothing at all but to the perpetuall reproch of his name, & the **Asunder** sutch, as ill speakers & enemies of womankind, do burden her Sexe withall. But the fault of one Woman, which by his owne presumption deceyued his selfe, ought not to obscure the gloze of so many vertuous, fayre, and honest dames, who by their Chastity, Liberality, and Curtesy, be able to deface the blot of Folly, Couetousnes, and cruelty

The Lord of Virle.

cruelty of this Gentlewoman heere, and of all other that do resemble hir. Who taking leaue of hir Louer, went home agayne to Piedmount, not without an ordinary griefe of heart, which serued hir for a spur to hir Conscience, & continually forced hir to thinke, that the force of man is lesse than nothing, where God worketh not by his grace, which sayling in vs, oure workes can saue but of the flesh & corruption of our nature, wherein it tumbleth and tosseth like the Sow that walloweth in the puddle of filth and dirt. And because yee shall not thinke in generall termes of Womans chastity, and discretion, that I am not able to vouch some particular example of later years, I meane to tell you of one, that is not only to bee praised for hir Chastity in the absence of hir husband, but also of hir Courage and Policy in chastity. Since the vaunting natures of two Hungarian Lords that made their braggs they would win hir to their Willes, and not only hir, but all other, whatsoeuer they were of Womans kinde.

A Lady of Boeme,

¶ Two Barons of *HUNGARIE* assuring themselves to obtayne their suite to a fayre Lady of *BOEME*, receyued of hir a straung & maruelous repulse, to their great shame, & Infamy, cursynge the tyme that euer they aduentured an Enterprise so foolish.

The. XXVIII. Nouell.



E NE LOPE, the wofull Wife of abset Vlisses, in hir tedious lōging for the home retourne of that hir aduenturous knight, assayed wth Carefull heart amid the troupe of amorous Suters, and within the Bowels of hir royall Pallace, deserued no greater fame for hir valiant encountries

and stout defence of the invincible, and Adamant fort of hir chastity, than this Boeme Lady doth by resisting two mighty Barons, that canoned the Walles, and well mured rampart of hir pudicity. For being threatned in his Princes Court, whether al well trag-

A Lady of Boe me.

welltrained crew of eche science and profession, dyd make repayre, beynge menaced by Venus hand, which not onely summoned hir forth and gaue hir a camisado by thicke Al' Armes, but also forced the place by fierce assault, she lyke a couragious and politike captayn, gaue those braue and lusty Souldiers, a fowle repulse, and in end taking them Captiues, brged them for their victuals to fall to womans toyle, moze shamefull than shamelesse Sardanapalus amid hys amorous troupe. I neede not amplifie by length of preamble, the fame of this Boeme Lady, nor yet briefely recompt the Triumph of hir Victory: bayne it were also by glorious hymnes to chaunte the wisdom of hir beleuing Haaks, who not carelesse of hir Lyfe, employed hys care to serue hys Dynce, and by seruice atchieued the cause that dyaue him to a souldiers state. But yet for trustlesse faith in the pyyme conference of his future porte, hee consulted weth a Pollaco, for a compounded drugge, to ease his suspect mind, whych medicine so eased his maladie, as it not onely preserued hym from the infected humour, but also made hir happy for euer. Sutch fall the euent of valiant mindes, though many times mother teaslous that cancred Wytch steppeth in hir foote to anoy the well disposed heart. For had he toynd to his valyaunce credite of his lounge Wife, without the blinde adurpe of such as professe that blacke & lying science, double gloire hee had gayned: once for endeuoyng by seruice to seeke honour: the seconde, for absolute truste in hys, that neuer ment to beguile him, as by hir firste aunswere to his first motion appeareth. But what is to be objected against the Barons? Let them answere for their fault. in this discourse ensuing: whych so lessoneth all Noble Wyndes, as warely they ought to beware how they aduenture vpon the honoure of Ladies, who bee not altogether of one selfe and pelding trampe, but wel forged and Steeleed in the shamefull choppe of Loyaltie, which armure defendeth them against the fond skirmitshes & vnconsoled conflicts of Venus wanton hand. The maiesties also of the King and Queene, are to be adenaunced aboue the starres for their wise dissuasion of those Noble men from their hot & heedlesse enterpryse and then their Justice for due execution of their forfait, the particularity of which discourse in this wise doth begynne.

Marhie

Mathie Coruine, sometime king of Hungarie, aboute the yere of oure Lozde . 1458. was a valiaunt man of Warre, and of goodly personage. Hee was the first that was famous, or feared of the Turks, of any Pryncce that gouerned that kingdome. And amongs other his vertues, so well in Armes and Letters, as in Liberalltye and Curtesie he excelled al the Prynces that raygned in his time. He had to Wyfe Quene Beatrice of Arragon, the Daughter of olde Ferdinando, kynge of Naples, and sister to the mother of Alphonsus, Duke of Ferrara, who in learning, good condittion, and all other vertues generally dispersed in hir, was a surpassing princesse, and shewed herself not onely a curteous and Liberall Gentlewoman to king Mathie hir husband, but to al other, that for vertue seemed worthy of honour and reward: in such wise as to the Court of these two noble Prynces, repaired the most notable Men of al Nations that were giuen to any kind of good exercise, and euery of them accordyng to theyr desert and degree were welcomed and entertained. It chaunced in this time, that a knight of Boeme, the vassall of Kinge Mathie, for that he was likewise kynge of that countrey, boyn of a noble house, very valiant & wel exercised in armes, fell in loue with a passing faire Gentlewoman of like nobility, & reputed to be the fairest of al the countrey, & had a brother that was but a poore Gentleman, not lucky to the goods of fortune. This Boemian knight was also not very rich, hauing onely a Castle, with certain reuenues therunto, which were scarce able to yeld vnto him any great maintenance of liuing. Fallyng in loue then with this faire Gentlewoman, he demaunded hir in mariage of hir brother, and with hir had but a very little dowrie. And this knight not wel foreseeing his poore estate, brought his wife home to his house, & there, at more leisure considering the same, began to fele his lack & penury, & how hardly & scant his reuenues were able to maintein his port. He was a very honest & gentle person, & one that delighted not by any meanes to burden & grieve his tenants contenting himself with that reuenue which his ancessers left him, the same amounting to no great yerely rent. Whe this gentlemā perceiued that he stood in neede of extraordinary reliefe, after many and diuers considerations with himself, he purposed to folow the Court, and to serue king Mathie his Soueraign lord & master, ther by his diligence & experience, to seke meanes for ability to sustaine his wife & himself. But so great & seruice wasthe loue he bare vnto his lady, as he thought it impossible for him to liue on house without hir, & yet iudged it not best to haue her with him to the court, forauoidinge of further Charges incident to Courtyng Ladies, & hofe Delight and Pleasure resteth in the toys and trycks of the same & cannot

A Lady of Boeme.

be wel auoyded in pooze Gentlemen, without they? Names in the
Hercers o? Diapers Iornals, a heauy thyng for them to consyder
if for their disposyt they lyke to walke the stretes. The daily then-
kyng thereupon, brought the pooze Gentleman to great sorrow and
heautnesse. The Lady that was young, wise and discrete, marking
the maner of hir husband, feared that he had some mistaking of hir.
Wherefore vpon a day she thus sayd vnto him: Were husband, wis-
lingly would I desire a good turn at your hand, if I wist I should
not displease you. Demaund what you will (said the knyght) if I
can, I shall gladly perfoyme it, bicause I do esteeme your satisfac-
tion, as I do mine owne lyfe. Then the Lady very sobely praied
him, that he would open vnto hir the cause of that discontentment,
whiche hee shewed ourwardly to haue, for that his mynd and beha-
uio?r seemed to bee contrary to ordinarie Custome, and contriued
Day and Nyghte in sighes, auoydinge the Company of them that
were wont specially to deleyght him. The knyght hearing his La-
dyes request, paused a whyle, and then sayd vnto hir: We welbe-
loued Wyle, for so much as you desyre to vnderstand my thoughtes
mynde, and whereof it commeth that I am sad and penitise, I will
tell you: All the Heauinesse wherewith you see me to bee affected,
doth tend to this end. Fayne would I deuyse that you and I may
in honour lyue together, acco?dyng to our calling, for in respect of
our Parentage, our Liuelode is very slender. the occasion whereof
were our Parents, who morgaged they? Lands, and consumed a
great part of their goodes that our Ancestors lefte them. I dayly
thyinking hereupon, and conceiuyng in my head deuers Imagina-
tions, can deuise no meanes but one, that in my fantasie seemeth
best, which is, that I go to the Court of our soueraigne lord Machie
who at this present is inferring Warres vpon the Turk, at whose
hands I do not mistrust to receiue good intertainment, beyng a
most liberal Prynce, and one that esteemeth al sutch as be valiant
and actiue. And I for my parte will so gouerne my selfe (by Gods
Grace) that by deserte I will procure sutch louing and fauour as
hereafter we may lyue in oure Olde Dages a quyet Lyfe to oure
great stay and comforte: For althoughe Fortune hitherto hath not
fauored that state of Parentage, whereof we be, I doubt not wryth
Nobl

Noble Courage to win that in despyte of Fortunes Teeth, which
 obstinately hitherto she hath denyed. And the moze assured am I
 of this determination, because at other tymes, I haue serued vn-
 der the Vaiuoda in Traosiluania, agaynst the Turke, where many
 tymes I haue bene requyred to serue also in the Courte, by that ho-
 norable Gentleman, the Counte of Cilia. But when I dyd consider
 the beloued Companie of you (deare Wyfe) the sweetest Compa-
 nyon that euer Wryght possessed, I thought it vnpossible for me to
 forsake your presence, wherby if I should doe, I were worthy to
 sustayne that dishonour, which a great number of carelesse Gentle-
 men doe, who following their pryuate gayne, and Wyl abandon
 their young and fayre Wyues, neglectyng the fyre wherby Nature
 hath instilled to the delicate bodies of such tender Creatures.
 Fearing therewithall, that so soone as I shoulde depart, the lusty
 young Barons and Gentlemen of the Countrey woulde pursue the
 gaine of that loue, the pryce wherof I do esteeme about the crowne
 of the greatest Emperour in all the World. and woulde not forgoe
 for all the Riches and Precious Jewels in the fertile Soyle of
 Arabie, who no doubt would swarme together in greater heapes
 then euer dyd the wowers of Penelope, within the famous grasig
 of Ithaca, the house of Wanderyng Vlisses. Wherby pursute if they
 dyd attayne, I shoulde for euer hereafter be ashamed to shewe my
 face before those that be of valour & regard. And this is the whole ef-
 fect of the scruple (sweete wyfe) that hyndreth me, to seeke for oure
 better estate and fortune. When he had spoken these words, he held
 his peace. The Gentlewoman which was wyse and stout, percey-
 uing the great loue that her husband bare hir, when hee had slayed
 himselfe from talke, wyth good and merry Countenance answered
 hym in this wyse. Sir Vlrico (which was the name of the Gentleman)
 In lyke manner as you haue done, haue deuyded and thought v-
 pon the Nobilitie and Birth of our Ancestors, from whose state
 and pozt (and that wythout oure fault and cyme) we be far wyde
 and deuyded. Notwithstanding I determined to set a good face v-
 pon the matter, and to make so much of our paynted sheath as I
 could. In deede I confesse my selfe to be a Woman, and you when
 doe say that Women heartes be faynt and feeble; but to bee playne,
 wyth,

The Lord of Virle.

with you, the contrary is in me, my hearte is so stout and ambitious, as peradventure not meete and consonant to power and ability, although we Women will finde no lacke if our Hartes haue pith and strength inough to beare it out. And saine woulde I support the state wherein my mother maintayned me. Howe be it for mine owne part (to God I yeld the thanks) I can so moderate & stay my little great heart, that contented and satisfied I can be, with that which your abilitye can beare, and pleasure commaund. But to come to the point, I say that debating with my selfe of our state as you full wisely do, I do verily think that you being a yong Gentleman, lusty and valiaunt, no better remedy or deuyse can be found than for you to aspyre and seeke the Kings fauor and seruice. And it must needs ryse and redounde to your gaine and preferment, for that I heare you say the Kings Maiesyte doth already knowe you. Wherefore I do suppose that bys grace (a skillfull Gentleman to way and esteeme the vertue and balor of ech man) cannot chosse but reward and recompens the well doer to his singular contentation and comfort. Of this myne Opinion I durst not before this time bitter Word or signe for feare of your displeasure. But nowe with your selfe hath opened the way and meanes, I haue presumed to discouer the same, do what shal seeme best vnto your good pleasure. And also for my parte, although I am a Woman (accordingly as I sated euen now) that by Nature am desirous of honoz, and to shew my selfe abrode moze rich and sumptuous than other, yet in respect of our fortune, I shal be contented so long as I lyue to continue with you in this our Castell, where by the grace of God I will not faile to serue, loue, and obey you, and to keepe your House in that moderate sorte, as the reuenues shal be able to maintayne the same. And no doubt but that pooze liuing we haue orderly vsed, shal be sufficient to finde vs two, and fīue or sixe seruauents with a couple of hoxs, and to lyue a quyet and merry Lyfe. If God doe send vs any Childzen, tēl they come to lawfull age, we will with our pooze liuing bring them by so well as wee can and then to prefer them to some Noble mens seruices, with whome by Gods grace they may acquire honoure and lyuing, to keepe them in their aged dayes. And I doe trust that wee two shal vse such mutuall loue and

and reioyce, that so long as our Lyfe doth last in weaith and woe,
 our contented mindes shall rest satisfied. But I waiping the shous-
 nesse of your minde, doe know that you esteeme moze an Duncel of
 honor, than all the Golde that is in the world. For as your birth is
 Noble, so is your heart and stomacke. And therefore many tymes
 seeing your great heauinesse, and manyfolde muses and studies, I
 haue wondred with my selfe whereof they should proceede, and a-
 mongst other my conceits, I thought that either my behauior and
 order of dealing, or my personage did not lyke you: or else that your
 wonted gentle minde and disposition had ben altered and transfor-
 med into some other Nature: many times also I was contente to
 thinke that the cause of your disquiet mynde, dyd lyse vppon the
 disuse of Armes wherein you were wonte dayly to accustom
 your selfe amongeth the Troupes of the honourable, a com-
 pany in dede most worthy of your presence. Reuoluing many times
 these and such lyke cogitations, I haue sought meanes by such
 allurements as I could deuise, to ease and mitigate your trou-
 led minde, and to wythdraw the great vnquiet and care wherewith
 I sawe you to be affected. Wherefore I do esteeme you aboue all the
 Worlde deeming your onely grefe to be my double Payne, your
 aking fenger, a seruent feuerish, and the least Woe you can suf-
 ayne mozte bitter Death to me, that loueth you moze dearely
 than my selfe. And for that I doe perceyue you are determy-
 ned to serue our Noble King, the sorowe which without doubt
 will assaile mee by reason of your absence, I will sweeten and fe-
 nish with Contentation, to see your Commendable desyre appea-
 red and quiet. And the pleasaunt Memozy of your valyaunt facts
 beguile my penill thoughts, hoppyng our nexte meetyng shall bee
 moze ioyfull than thys our dysiunctyon and departure heauy. And
 where you doubt of the Confluence and repayre of the dyshoneste
 which shall attempt the wyppynge and subduing of myne heart and
 vnspotted bodie hitherto inuolably kepte from the touch of any
 person, cast from you that feare, expel from your minde that sonde
 conceipt: for death shall sooner close these mortall Eyes, than my
 Chastitee shall bee despyed. For pledge wherof I haue none o-
 ther thyng to geue, but my true and simple sayth, which if you dare

H h.

trust

A Lady of Boeme.

rust, it shal hereafter appeare so firme and inuolable, as no sparke
of suspition shal enter your careful minde, which I may wel terme
to be carefull, bicause some care befoze hand doth rise of my beha-
uor in your absence. The tryall whereof shal yelde sure euidence
& testimony, by passing my careful life which I may w better cause
so terme, in your absence that God knoweth wil be right penitence
& carefull vnto mee, who togeth in nothing else but in your welfare.
Neuerthelesse all meanes and wayes shal bee agreeable vnto my
minde for your assurance, and shal breede in me a wonderfull con-
tentation, which lusteth after nothing but your satisfaction. And if
you list to close me by in one of the Castell towers til your return,
right glad I am there to continue an Inkelesse life: so that the same
may ease your desired mind.

The Knight with great dellyght gaue eare to the aunswer of his
Wife, and when she had ended hir talke, he began to reply vnto hir:
My welbeloued. I doe like wel and greatly commend the stout-
nesse of your heart, it pleaseth me greatly to see the same agreeable
vnto mine. You haue lightened the same from inestimable woe by
vnderstanding your conceiued purpose and determination to gard
and preserue your honor, praying you therein to perseuere still re-
membryng that when a Woman hath lost hir honor, she hath for-
gone the chiefest Jewel she hath in this Life, and deserueth no lon-
ger to be called woman. And touching my talke proposed vnto you
although it be of great importaunce, yet I meane not to depart so
soone. But if it do come to effect I assure thee Wife, I will leaue
thee Lady and mistresse of all that I haue. In the meane time I
will consider better of my businesse, and consult with my frendes
and kinsmen, and then determine what is best to be done. Til when
let vs lyue and spend our tyme so merely as we can. To bee shorte
there was nothing that so much molested the knight, as the doubt
he had of his wife, for that she was a very fine and faire yong Ge-
tlemwoman: And therefore he still deuised and imagined what assu-
rance he myght finde of hir behauor in his absence. And resting in
this imaginatio, not lōg after it cam to passe that the knight being in
company of diuers gentlemen, & talking of sūdy matters a tale
was tolde what chaunced to a gentleman of the Countrey which
had

had obtained the fauoure and good well of a Woman, by meanes
of an olde man Pollacco, which had the name to be a famous en-
chaunter and Physitian, dwelling at Cutiano a Citie of Boeme,
where plenty of Silver mines & other metals is. The knight whose
Castle was not far from Cutiano, had occasion to repaire vnto
that Citie, and according to his desire found out this Pollacco,
which was a very old man, and talking with him of diuers things,
perceiued him to be of great skil. In end he entreated him, that for
so much as he had don pleasure to many for apprehension of their
loue, he wold also instruct him, how he might be assured that his
wife did keepe hir self honest all the time of his absence, and that by
certaine signes hee might haue sure knowledge whether she brake
hir faith, by sending his honesty into Cornvall. Such vain trust
this Knight reposed in the lying Science of Sozcery, whych al-
though to many other is found deceitful, yet to him serued for sure
evidence of his wifes fidelity. This Pollacco which was a ve-
ry cunning enchaunter as you haue heard, sayd vnto him: Sir you
demaund a very straunge matter, such as wherewith neuer hitherto
I haue bene acquainted ne yet searched the depth of those hyd-
den secrets, a thyng not commonly used for, ne yet practized by me.
for who is able to make assurance of a Womans chastity, or tel by
signes except he were at the deede doing, that she had don amisse?
Or who can gaue by proctors wryt, to summon or sue at spiritual
Courte, peremptorily to affirme by neuer so good euidence or te-
stimony, that a woman hath hazarded hir honesty, except he sweare
Rea to be in Re, which the greatest Ciuilian that ever Padua bred
neuer saue by procelle duely tried? Shall I then warrante you the
honesty of such slippery Catell, prone and ready to lust, easy to be
banquished by the suites of earnest pursuers? But blame worthy
surely I am, thus generally to speake? for some I know, although
not many, for whose pooze honesties I dare aduenture mine owne.
And yet that number how small so euer it be, is worthy all due
Reuerence and Honoure. Notwithstandinge because you
seme to bee an Honest Gentleman of that knowledg which
I haue, I will not bee greater squemyshe, I certayne se-

A Lady of Boëme.

crete experiment in deede I haue, wherewith perchaunce I may
satisfie your demaund. And this is it. I can by mine Arte in final
time, by certaine compositions, frame a Womans Image, whych
you continually in a litle Boxe may carry about you, and so ofte
as you list behold the same. If the wife doe not breake hir mary-
age faith, you shall still see the same so fayre and wel coloured as it
was at the first making, and seeme as though it newly came from
the painters shop, but if perchaunce she meane to abuse hir honestie
the same wil waxe pale, and in deede committing that filthy Act,
sodainely the colour will bee blacke, as arayed with Cole or other
filthy, and the smel thereof wyl not be very pleasaunt, but at all times
when she is attempted or pursued, the Colour will be so yealow as
gold. This maruellous secrete deurse greatly pleased the knyght
verely beleuing the same to be true, specially much moued and as-
sured by the same bytuted abode of his science, whereof the Cyt-
zens of Cutiano tolde very straunge and incredible things. When
the pryce was payed for this precious Jewel, hee receiued the I-
mage, and ioyfully returned home to his Castell, where tarryinge
certaine dayes, he determined to repayre to the Court of the glo-
rious king Machie, making his Wife priue of hys intent. After-
wards when he had disposed his household matters in order, he co-
mitted the gouernement therof to his Wife, and hauinge prepared
all Necessaries for his voyage, to the great sorow and grief of his
beloued, he departed and arryued at Alba Regale, where that time
the King lay with Beatrix his Wife, of whome hee was ioyfully
receiued and entertayned. He had not long continued in the Court,
but he had obtained and won the fauor and good wyl of all men.
(The King which knew him full wel) very honorably placed him in
his Courte, and by him accomplished diuers and many waighty
affaires, which very wysely & trustely he brought to passe accordyng
to the kings mind & pleasure. Afterwards he was made Colonell
of a certain number of footemen sent by the king against the Turks
to defend a holde which the enimies of God begā to assaile vnder
conduct of Mustapha Balca. which conduct he so wel directed & ther-
in stoutly behaued himself, as he chased al the infidels oute of those
coasts, winning therby the name of a most valiant soldier & prudent
Captaine.

Captayne. whereby he merueylously gained the fauor and grace of
 the King, who (ouer and besides his dailie intertainment) gaue
 vnto him a Castle, and the Reuenue in fee farme for euer. Such
 rewards deserue all valiaunt men, which for the honour of the
 Prince and countrey do willingly imploy their seruice, worthy no
 doubt of great regard and chearishinge vpon their home returne,
 because they hate idlenes to win Gloze, deuisinge rather to spende
 whole daies in fildes, than houres in Courte, which this worthy
 Knight deserued, who not able to sustayne his pooze Estate, by po-
 litick wisdom and prowesse of armes endeuored to serue his Lord
 and countrey, wherein surely hee made a very good chorse. Then
 he deuourly prayed God, for he put into his minde such a pos-
 sible enterprise, trusting dailie to atchieue greater fame & Gloze:
 But the greater was his toy and contentation, because the Image
 of hys Wyfe inclosed wrythin a Boxe, wherby still hee caried
 about him in hys Purse, continued freshe of colour without al-
 teration. It was noyed in the Court how this valiaunt Knight
 Vlrico, had in Boeme the fayrest and goodliest Lady to his Wife
 that liued eithre in Boeme, or Hungary. It chaunced as a certaine
 company of yong Gentlemen in the Courte were together, (a-
 mongst whom was this Knight) that a Hungarian Baron sayde
 vnto him: How is it possible for Vlrico, being a yere and a halfe
 since you departed out of Boeme, that you haue no minde to re-
 turne to see your Wife, who as the comon fame reporteth, is one
 of the goodliest women of all the Countrey: truely it seemeth to
 me, that you care not for hir, which were great pittie if hir beauty
 be correspondent to hir fame. *Spz* (quod Vlrico) what hir beau-
 ty is I referre vnto the World, but how so euer you esteeme me to
 care of hir, you shall vnderstand that I do loue hir, and wil do so
 duringe my lyfe. And the cause why I haue not visited hir of long
 time, is no little prooffe of the great assurance I haue of her ver-
 tue and honest lyfe. The argument of hir vertue I proue, for that
 she is contented that I should serue my Lord and King, & sufficiēt
 it is for me to giue hir intelligence of my state and wellfare, wherby
 many tymes by Letters at opportunity I sayle not to doe: The
 prooffe of my fayth is euident by reason of my bounden duety

Wh 3.

toour

A Lady of Boeme.

“ to our Soueraigne Lord of whom I haue receyued so great, and
“ ample Benefi:ets, and the Warrefare which I vse in his graces
“ seruice vpon the Frontiers of his Realme agaynst the enemies of
“ Ch:riste, whereunto I beare moze good will than I doe to Wed.
“ Locke Loue, preferring duety to Prince befoze mariage, albeit my
“ Wines sayth, a constancy is such, as freely I may spend my lyfe
“ without care of hir deuoty, being assured that besides hir Beauty
“ shee is wise, vertuous and honest, and loueth me aboue al worldly
“ things, tending me so dearely as she doth the Walles of hir owne
“ eyes. You haue stoutly sayd (answered the Baron) in defence of
“ your Wines chastity, whereof she can make vnto hir selfe no great
“ warrantice, because a woman sometymes will be in minde not to
“ be mouued at the requests, and gifts offred by the greatest Prince
“ of the World who afterwards within a day vpon the onely sight,
“ and view of some lusty youth, at one simple worde vttered with a
“ few Teares, and shorter suite, yeldeth to his request. And what is
“ she then that can conceiue such assurance in hir selfe? What is
“ hee that knoweth the secretes of heartes which be impenetrable?
“ Surely none as I suppose, except God him selfe. A Woman of
“ hir owne nature is moueable and pliant, and is the most ambiti-
“ ous creature of the Worlde. And (by God) no Woman doe I
“ know but that she lusteth and desireth to be beloued, required, sued
“ vnto, honozed and cherished? And oftentimes it commeth to passe
“ that the most crafty Dames wch thincke with fapned Lookes to
“ feede their diuers Louers, be the first that thrust their heads into
“ the amorous Nets, and lyke little Birdes in hard distresse of
“ weather be caught in Louers Linetwiggess. Whereby Sir Virico
“ I do not see that your Wfe (aboue all other Women compact of
“ flesh and bone) hath such priuiledge from God, but that she may
“ be soone entised & corrupted. Well Sir (sayd the Boeme Knight)
“ I am perswaded of y^e which I haue spoken; and verely doe beleue
“ the effect of my beliefe most true. Euery man knoweth his owne
“ assayes, and the Foole knoweth better what hee hath, than hy^s
“ neighbors do, be they neuer so wise. Beleue you what you thincke
“ for good, I meane not to disgresse from y^e which I conceiue. And
“ suffer me (I pray you) to beleue what I list, Asy beliefe, canot hurt
me, noz

me, nor yet your discredite can hinder my beliefs, being free for ech
 man in semblable chaunces to thinke, and belieue what his mynde
 lusteth and liketh. There were many other Lordes and Gentles-
 men of the court present at there talke, and as we commonly see
 (at such like meetings) every man uttereth his minde: Where-
 vpon sundry opinions were produced touching that question. And
 because diuers men be of diuers natures, and many presuminge
 vpon the pregnancy of their wise heads: there rose some stir about
 that talke, each man obstinate in hys alledged reason, moze fro-
 ward peraduenture than reason, moze rightly required: The cō-
 munication grew so whor, and talke bzake forth so loude, as the
 same was reported to the Queene. The good Lady soze to heare
 tell of such strife within hir Court, abhorring naturally all con-
 trouersie and contention, sent for the parties, and required them
 from poynt to poynt to make recitall of the beginning, and cir-
 cumstaunce of their reasons, & arguments. And when she vnder-
 stood the effect of al their talke, she sayd, & every man at his owne
 pleasure might beleue what he list, affirming it to be presumptu-
 ous and extreme folly, to iudge all women to be of one disposition,
 in like sort as it were a great errour to say that all men bee of one
 quality and condicion: the contrary by dayly experience manifest-
 ly appearing. For both in men and women, there is so great differ-
 rence and variety of natures, as there bee heads, and wits. And
 how it is commonly scene that two Brothers, and Sisters, bozne
 at one Wyth, bee yet of contrary Natures, and Complexions, of
 Manners, and Conditions so diuers, as the thinge which shall
 please the one, is altogether displeasaunt to the other. Where-
 vppon the Queene concluded, that the Boeme Knight had good
 reason to continue that good and honest credit of his Wyfe, as
 hauing proued hir fidelity of long time, wherein she shewed hirself
 to be very wise & discret. Now because (as many times we see) &
 natures & appetites of diuers men be insatiable, & one man some-
 times moze foolish hardy than another, euen so (to say & troth) were
 those two Hungarian Barons, who seeming wise in their owne
 Conceytes, one of them sayd to the Queene in this maner: Ma-
 dame your grace doth wel maintaine the sexe of womankind, be-
 cause

A Lady of Boeme.

“ cause you be a Woman. For by nature it is giuen to that kinde,
“ stoutly to stand in defence of themselves, because their imbecillity,
“ and weakenes otherwise would bewray them : and although good
“ reasons might be alledged to open the causes of their debility, and
“ why they be not able to attayne the hault excellency of man, yet for
“ this tyme I doe not meane to be tedious vnto your grace, least the
“ little heart of Woman should ryle and display that conceit which
“ is wrapt within that little Shoulde. But to retourne to this chaste
“ Lady, through whom our talke began, if we might craue licence of
“ your Hatelsy, and sauile Conduct of thys Gentleman to knowe
“ hir dwelling place, and haue leaue to speake to hir, we doubt not
“ but to breake with our batteringe talke the Adamant Wallies of
“ hir Chastity that is so famous, and cary away that Spoile which
“ victoriously we shall archieue. I know not answered the Boeme
“ Knight, what pee can, or will doe, but sure I am, that hitherto I
“ am not decepued. Many things were spoken there, and sundry o-
“ pinions of epyther partes alledged, In ende the two Hungarian
“ Barons perswaded them selues, and made their vaunts that they
“ were able to climbe the Skyes, and both would attempt and also
“ bying to passe any enterpryse were it neuer so great, affirming their
“ former offer by othe, and offering to Guage all the Landes, and
“ goods they had, that within the space of. 5. moneths they woulde
“ epyther of them obtayne the Gentlewomans good will to do what
“ they list, so that the Knight were bound, neyther to retorne home,
“ ne yet to aduertise hir of their determination. The Queene, and
“ all the standers by laughed heartely at this their offer, mockinge
“ and iesting at their foolish, and youthly conceites. Whych the Ba-
“ rons perceiuing, sayde : You thinke Madame that we speake tri-
“ flingly, and be not able to accomplish this our proposed enterpryse,
“ but Madame, may it please you to giue vs leaue, wee meane by
“ earnest attempt to giue pproofe thereof. And as they were thus in
“ reasoninge. and debating the matter, the Kinge (hearings tell of
“ this large offer made by the Barons) came into the place where
“ the Querne was, at sutch time as she was about to dissuade them
“ from the frantik deuise. Befoze whom he bring entred the cham-
“ ber, the two Barons fell downe vpon their Knees, and humbly
“ besought

besought his Grace, that the compact made betwene Sir Vtrico and them might proceede, disclosing vnto him in few wordes the effect of all their talke, whych frankly was granted by the king. But the Barons added a Prouiso, that when they had won their Wager, the Knight by no meanes shoulde hurt his Wyfe; and from that tyme forth shoulde giue ouer hys false Opinion, that Women were not naturallly giuen to the suites and requestes of amorous persons. The Boeme Knight, who was assured of hys Wyues great Honesty, and Loyall fayth, beleued so true as the Gospell, the proportion and quality of the Image, who in all the tyme that hee was farre of, neuer perceyued the same to bee eith er Pale or Blacke, but at that tyme lookinge vpon the Image, hee perceyued a certayne Pealow colour to rise, as hee thought his Wyfe was by some loue pursued, but yet soderly it returned againe to his naturall hewe, which boldned him to say these wordes to the Hungarian Barons: Pee be a couple of pleasaunt, and vn-
 beleeuing Gentlemen, and haue conceyued so fantastickall opinion, as euer men of your calling did: But sith you proceede in your
 obstinate folly, and wil needes guage all the Lands, and goods you haue, that you bee able to vanquish my Wyues Honesty, and
 Chaste heart, I am contented, for the singuler credite which I
 repose in hir, to ioyne with you, and will pledge the pooze syunge I haue for prooofe of mine Opinion, and shall accomplishe al other
 your requestes made here, befoze the Chastities of the Kinge and
 Queene. And therfore may it please your highnesse, sith this fond
 deuice can not be beaten out of their heads, to giue Licence vnto
 those Noblemen, the Lords Vladislao and, Alberto, (so were they
 called) to put in prooofe the mery conceipt of their disposed mindes
 (whereof they do so greatly bragge) and I, by your good grace, and fauoure, am content to agree to their demaundes: and wee
 answered the Hungarians, do once againe affirme the same which
 wee haue spoken. The King willing to haue them giue ouer that
 strife, was intreated to the contrary by the Barons: Whereupon
 the Kinge perceyuinge their Follies, caused a decree of the Wars
 to be put in writing, eith Parties interchaungeably subscribing the same. Which done, they tooke their leaues. After-
 wards

A Lady of Boeme.

wards, the two Hungarians began to put their Enterprize in order and agreed betwene themselves, Alberto to bee the firste that should aduenture vpon the Lady. And that within sixe Weekes after, vpon his returne, the Lord Vladislao should proceede. These thinges concluded, and all Furnitures for their seuerall Iornes disposed, the Lord Alberto departed in good order, with two seruants directly trauielling to the Castle of þ Boeme Knight, where being arriued, hee lighted at an Inn: of the towne adioyning to the Castle, and demaunding of the hoste, the Conditions of the Lady, hee vnderstoode that shee was a very fayre Woman, and that hir honestie, and loue towards hir Husbände farre excelled hir beauty. Which wordes nothing dismayde the Amorous Baron, but when hee had pulled of his Bootes, and richely arayed himselfe, he repayed to the Castle, and knockinge at the Gates, gaue the Lady to vnderstand that he was come to see hir. She which was a curteous Gentlewoman, caused him to be brought in, and gently gaue him honourable intertaynment. The Baron greatly mused vpon the Beauty, and goodlinesse of the Lady, Angularly commending hir honest order and Behauiour. And bringe
" set downe, the young Gentleman sayd vnto hir: Madame, moured
" with the fame of your surpassing Beauty, which now I see to bee
" more excellent than fame with hir swiftest Wengs is able to carry: I am come from the Court to view and see if that were true,
" or whether spynge Wretches had scattered their Vulgar talke in
" vayne: But finding the same farre more fine and pure than erst I
" did expect, I craue Apcence of your Ladyship, to conceiue none
" offence of this my boulder, and rude attempt: and herewithall hee
began to toyne many trifling, and vayne woordes, whych daulinge
Suters by heate of Lusty bloude bee wont to shoote forth, to
declare theym selues not to bee Speechlesse, or Tonguetied.
Which the Lady well espying, speedily imagined into what Port
hys rotten Barke would arriue: Wherefoze in the ende when
shee sawe his Shippe at Roade, began to enter in prery louinge
Talke, by little, and little to encourage his fond attempt. The
Baron thinkinge hee had caught the Cele by the Tayle, no well
practised

practised in Cicero his schoole, ceased not fondly to contriue the
 time, by making hir beleue, that he was farre in loue. The Lady
 weary (God woe) of his fonde behauiour, and amorous reasons,
 and yet not to seeme scornfull, made him good Countenance, in
 such wise as the Hungarian two or three dayes did nothing else
 but proceede in bayne Pursute. Shee perceiving him to bee but
 a Hauke of the first Coate, deuyed to recompence hys follies
 with such entertaynement, as duringe his life, he shoulde keepe
 same in good remembraunce. Wherefore not long after, sayning
 as though his great wisdom, bittered by eloquent Talke, had
 subdued hir, shee sayd thus vnto him: My Lord, the reasons you
 produce, and your pleasaunt gesture in my house haue so Inchaun-
 ted mee, that impossible it is, but I must needes agree vnto your
 will: For where I neuer thought during lyfe, to sayne the puri-
 ty of mariage Bed, and determined continually to pferue my
 selfe inuolably for my Husbände: Your Noble grace, and curte-
 ous behauiour, haue (I say) so bewitched mee, that ready I am
 to bee at your commaundement, humbly beseeching your honour
 to beware, that knowledge hereof may not come vnto myne Hus-
 bands eares, who is so ferce and cruell, and loueth me so dearely,
 as no doubt he will without further triall either him selfe kill me,
 or otherwise procure my death: and to the intent none of my house
 may suspect our doings, I shall desire you to morrow in the morn-
 inge about nyne of the Clocke, which is the accustomed time of
 your repayre hither, to come vnto my Castle, wherein when you be
 entred, speedily to mount vp to the Chaumber of the highest Tow-
 wer, ouer the doore whereof, yee shall finde the armes of my Hus-
 band, entayled in Marble: and when you be entred in, to shut the
 Doore fast after you, and in the meane time I will wayte and pro-
 uide, that none shall molest and trouble vs, and then we shall be-
 stowe our selues for accomplishment of that which your loue de-
 sireth. Nowe in very deede this Chaumber was a very strong
 Prison ordained in auncient tyme by the Progenitours of that
 Territoiry, to Impryson, and punish the Vassals, and Tenants
 of the same, for offences, & Crimes committed. The Baron hea-
 ringe

A Lady of Boeme.

ryng this Lyberall offer of the Ladye, thinking that he had obtained the summe of al his toy, so glad as if he had conquered a whole kingdome, the best contented man aliue, thanking the Lady for hir curteous answere, departed, and retourned to his Inne God knoweth vpon howe merry a Dinner the hearte of this young Baron was sette, and after he had liberally banketted his hoste a hostesse, pleasantly disposing himselfe to myght and recreation, he wente to bed, where toy so lightned his merre head, as no slepe at all could close his eyes. sutch be the sauage pangs of those that aspyre to like delgths as the best reclaimer of the wildest hauk could neuer take moze payne or deuise mo shiftes to Van the same for the better atchieuing of hir pray, than dyd this hyaue Baron for bynging his Enterpryse to effect. The next day early in the morning hee rose, dressing himselfe with the sweete Perfumes, and puttinge on his finest suite of Apparell, at the appointed houre hee went to the Castell, and so secretly as he could, accordinge to the Ladies Instruction, hee conueyed himselfe by into the Chamber which hee founde open, and when he was entred, hee shut the same, The manner of the Dooze was sutch, as none within coulde open it without a Key, and besides the Strong Locke, it hadde both Warre and Bolt on the outside, with sutch fasteninge as the Deuill himselfe being locked within, coulde not breake forth. The Lady whych wayted hard by for his comming, so soone as she perceyued that the Dooze was shut, slept vnto the same, and both double Locked the Dooze, and also without she barred, and fast Bolted the same, carping the Key away with hir. This Chamber was in the hyghest Tower of the House (as is before sayd) wherein was placed a Bedde with good furniture, the Window wherof was so high, that none coulde looke out wythout a Ladder. The other partes thereof were in good, and conuenient order, apt, and meete for an honest Wyson. When the Lorde Alberto was within, hee sat downe, wayting (as the Iewes do for Messias) when the Lady accordyng to hir appoyntment should come. And as he was in this expectation building castles in the Ayre, & deuising a thousand Chimeras in his brayne, behold he heard one to open a litle Wicket that was in the dooze of that Chamber, which was
as straight

as straight, as scarcely able to receive a tosse of bread, or cruse of
 Wyne, vnto be sent to the prisoners. He thinking that it had bin
 the Lady, rose vp, and hearde the noyse of a litle girle, who loo-
 king in at the hole, thus sayd vnto him: My Lord Alberto, the La-
 dy Barbara my mistress (for that was hir name) hath sent me thus
 to say vnto you: That for so much as you be come into this place,
 by countenance of Loue, to dispoyle hir of hir honour, she hath
 impysoned you like a theefe, according to your deserte, and purpo-
 seth to make you suffer penance, equall to the measure of your of-
 fence. Wherefore so long as you shal remain in this place, she min-
 deth to force you to gain your bread and drinke with the art of spin-
 ning, as poore Women doe for gayne of theyr Iyulnge, meaneinge
 thereby to coole the heate of your lusty youth, and to make you tast
 the sorrow of saue mee for them to assaye, that go about to robbe
 Ladies of theyr honour: she bad me likewise to tell you, that the
 more yarne you spin, the greater shall be the abundance and deli-
 cacie of your fare, the greater payne you take to earne your foode,
 the more lyberall she will be in distributing of the same. otherwise
 (she sayeth) that you shall faste with Bread and Water. Wherby
 determinate sentence she hath decreed, not to be infringed and bro-
 ken for any kinde of sute or intreaty that you be able to make. Whe-
 the the maiden had spoken these Wordes, she shut the litle doore, and
 returned to hir Ladye, The Baron which thought that he had ben
 comen to a marriage, did eate nothing all the morning before, be-
 cause he thought to be enterteyned with better and daintier stowe of
 viandes, who nowe at those newes fared like one out of his wittes
 and stode still so amazed, as though his leggs would haue say-
 led him, and in one moment his spirites began to banyshe, and his
 force and breath forsooke hym, and fel downe vpon the Chamber stowe,
 in such wise as hee that had beheld hym would haue thought him
 rather dead than liuing. In this state he was a great tyme, and af-
 terwardes somewhat commynge to himselfe, he could not tel whi-
 ther hee dreamed, or else that the Wordes were true, which the ma-
 den had sayde vnto hym: In the end seeing, and beyng verely as-
 sured

A Lady of Boeme.

verily assured, that he was in a Prison so sure as Bird in Cage,
 through disdain and rage was like to dye or else to lose his wits,
 saring with himselfe of long time like a madde Man, and not know-
 ing what to do, passed the rest of the Day in walkinge vpp and
 downthe Chaumber, raving, stamping, saring, Cursinge and
 vsing Words of greatest Villanie, lamenting and bewailinge the
 time and day, that so like a beast and brutish man, he gaue the at-
 tempt to dispoyle the honestie of an other mans Wyfe. Then came
 to his mind the losse of all his Lands and goods, which by Kings
 authoritie were put in compromise, then the shame, the scoorne, and
 rebuke which hee should receiue at other mens handes, beyonde
 measure vexed him : and repoynt bruted in the Courte (for
 that it was impossible but the whole World should knowe it) so
 greued hym, as his heart seemed to be strained with two sharp
 and biting Nalles : the Paynes whereof, forced he n to loose
 his Wytes and vnderstandinge . In the myddes of which
 Pangs furiously dauncing vp and downe the Chaumber, hee es-
 pied by chaunce in a Corner, a Deske furnished with good store
 of flaxe, and a spendie hangeng thereupon : and ouercome with
 Choler and rage, hee was aboute to spoyle and break the same in
 pieces : but remembryng what a hard Weapon Necessitie is, hee
 shapd his wisedome, and albejt he hadde rather to haue contri-
 ued his leysure in Noble and Gentlemanlike pastyme, yet ra-
 ther than he would be Idle he thoughte to reserue that Instru-
 ment to auoyde the tedious lacke of honest and familiar Compa-
 ny. When supper time was come, the Hayden retourned agayne,
 who opening the Doortall doze, saluted the Baron, and sayde: My
 Lord, my Wyfresse hath sent mee to vntie your good Lordshipp,
 .. and to receiue at poure good Handes the Effecte of your Laboure,
 .. who hopeth that you haue sponne some substantiall store of threede
 .. for earning of your Supper, which beyng done, shall be readie
 .. brought vnto you. The Baron full of Rage, Furie, and felonis
 .. our moode, if before he were fallen into choler, now by protestation
 of these words, seemed to transgresse the bounds of reaso, & bega to
 ralle at the poore wench, scolding & chiding hir like a Trumpet of
 the News, saring as though he would haue beat hir, or do hir some
 other

other mischete: but his moode was stayed from doing any hurt. The poore Wench lessoned by her mistresse, in laughing wise sayd vnto him: Why (my Lord) do you chafe, and rage agaynst mee? He thinks you do me wrong to vsue such reprochful words, which am but a seruaunt, and bounde to the Commaundment of my mistresse: Why Sir, do you not know that a pursuaunt or messenger suffreth no paine or blame? The greatest King or Emperour of the Worlde: receiuing defiance from a meener Prince, neuer beth his ambassadoz with scolding Wordes, ne yet by villany or rebuke abuseth his person. Is it wisdome then for you, being a present prisoner, at the mercy of your keepers, in this dishonorable sorte, to reuile me with disordred talke? But Sir, leane of your ragges, and quiet your selfe for this present time, for my mistresse maruelleth much why you durst come (for al your Noble State) to giue attemptes to violate hir good name, which message shee required me to tell you, ouer and besides a desire shee hath to know whether by the Science of Spynning, you haue gained your meat for you seeme to kicke against the wynd, and beat Water in a mortar, if you think from hence to goe before you haue earned a recompense of the meat which shalbe giuen you. Wherefore it is your lot patiently to suffer the penance of your fond attempt, which I pray you gently to sustaine, and think no scorn thereof hardely: for desperate men and hard aduencurers must needs suffer the dangers thereunto belonging. This is the determinate sentence of my mistresse mynd, who sheweth you no better fare than Bread and Water, if you can not shewe some pretty Spynndle full of parne for signe of your good well at this present pynch of your distresse. The Mayden seeing that hee was not dysposed to shewe some part of willing mind to gaine his liberty by that prefixed sence, shut the portall Dooze, and went his way. The unhappy Baron (arruied thether in very ill tyme) that might had neither Breade nor Water, and therefore he fared accordynge to the Prouerbe: He that goeth to bed supperlesse, lyeth in his Bed restlesse. For duringe the whole night, no sleepe could fasten by his Eyes. Now as this Baron was closed in prison safe, to the La-

he tooke order, that secretly with great charge his Seruantes should be intertained, and his Horſſe with ſweete hays and good prouender well maintained, all his furnitures, ſumptuous horſſe & carriages contrayned within the Caſtle, where wanted nothyng for the ſtate of ſuch a perſonage but onely Debertie, makinge the hoſt of the Anne beleue (wher the Lord harbored befoze) that he was returned into Hungarie.

But now turne we to the Boeme Knight, who knowinge that one of the two Hungarian Competitors, were departed the Court and ridden into Boeme, did ſtill behold the quality of the enchanted Image, wherein by the ſpace of thre or foure Dayes, in which time, the Baron made his greateſt ſute to his Ladie: he marked a certaine alteration of Coloure in the ſame: but afterwards returned to his ſhative forme: and ſeing no greater transformation, he was well aſſured, that the Hungarian Baron was repulſed, and employed his Labor in vaine. Whereof the Boeme Knight was exceedingly pleaſed and contented, becauſe he was well aſſured, that his Wyfe had kept his ſelfe ryghte pure and honeſt. Notwith ſtanding his Wynde was not wel ſettled, ne yet his heart at reſt, doubting that the Lord Vladislao, which as yet was not departed the Courte, would obtayne the thing, and acquitte the faulte, which his Companiſon had committed. The impryſoned Baron which all this tyme had neither eaten nor dronken, nor in the night could ſleepe, in the moorning, after he had conſidered his miſadventure, and well perceyued no remedy for him to goe forth, except he obeyed the Ladies heſt made of Neceſſitys Vertue, and applyed himſelfe to learne to Spynne by force, which freedome and honour could neuer haue made him to do. Whereuppon he toke the diſtaffe and beganne to ſpynne. And albeſt that hee neuer Sponne in all his Life befoze, yet instructed by Neceſſity, ſo well as he could, he drew out his Threde, now ſmall and then greates, and many tymes of the meanest ſorte, but verie often broad, yf fauored, yf cloſed, and worſe twiſted, all oute of fourme and faſhion, that ſe by tymes verie heartely he laughed to himſelfe, to ſee his cunning, but would haue made a cunning Woman ſpinner burſt into Tea

Thouſan

thousand Laughters, if she had ben there. Thus all the morning
 he spent in spinning, and when dinner came, his accustomed mes-
 senger, the mayden, repayed vnto him againe, and opening the
 Wyndow demaunded of the Baron how his worke went fore-
 ward, and whether he were disposed to manifest the cause of hys
 comming into Boeme? Hee well beaten in the Schoole of shame,
 bittered vnto the Waide the whole compact and bargayne made
 betweene him and his Companton, and the Boeme Knyghte hir
 mapster, and afterwards shewed vnto hir his Spynndle full of
 threde. The young Wenche smyleing at hys Woozke, sayd: By
 Saint Marie this is well done, you are worthy of victuall for
 your hire: for now I wel perceiue that Hunger forceth the Woulf
 oute of hir Denne. I comne you thanck, that like a Lord you can
 so puissantly gayne your lviuing. Wherefore proceeding in that
 which you haue begonne, I doubt not but shortly you will proue
 such a Woozke-man, as my mistresse shall not neede to put oute
 hir flax to spinne (to hir great charge and cosse) for making of hir
 smockes, but that the same may wel be don within hir own house,
 yea althoughe the same doe serue but for Kitchen Cloathes, for
 dresser bozdes, or cleanyng of hir Vessel befoze they bee serued
 forth. And as your good deserts do merite thankes for this your
 arte, now well begonne, euen so your new told Tale of comming
 hether, requyrez no lesse, for that you haue dysclosed the trouth.
 When she had spoken these Woozds, she reached hym some store
 of meates for hys dinner, and bade hym fare well. When shee
 was returned vnto hir Lady, shee shewed vnto hir the Spynndle
 full of Threde, and told hir therewithall the whole story of the
 compact betweene the Knight Vlrico, and the two Hungarian Wa-
 rons. Whereof the Lady sore astounded, for the snares layd to en-
 trappe hir, was notwithstanding wel contented, for that shee had
 so well forseene the same: but most of all reioysed, that hir Hus-
 band had so good opinion of hir honest lye. And befoze she would
 aduertise hym of those euent, she purposed to attend the com-
 ming of the Lord Vladislao to whome she ment to do like penan-
 ce for his carelesse bargayne and dishonest opinion, accordynglye

A Lady of Boeme.

as he deserued, maruelling very much that both the Barons, wer so rash and presumptuous, daungerously (not knowing what kind of Woman she was) to put their Landes and goodes in hazard. But considering the Nature of diuers brainick men, which passe not how carelesly they aduenture their gained goods, and inherited Lands, so they may atchieue the pray, after which they vaine-ly hunt, for the prejudice and hurt of other, he made no account of these attempts, with honest Matrones force not vpon the sutes, or bayne consumed time of lyght brained Cockscombs, that care not what fond cost or ill imployed houres they waste to anoy the good renoume and honest byutes of Women.

But not to discourse from point to point the particulars of this intended sojney, this pooze deceiued Baron in short time proued a very good Spūmer by exercise whereof, he felt such solace, as not onely the same was a comfortable spozte for his captiue time, but also for want of better recreation, it seemed so ioyfull, as if he had bene pluming and seding his Hawke, or doing other spozes belonging to the honourable state of a Lord. Which his wel accruied Labour, the Maiden recompensed with abundance of good & delicate meates. And although the Lady was many times requyred to visite the Baron, yet she would neuer to that request consent. In whych tyme the Knight Vlrico ceased not continually to biewe and reuiewe the state of his Image, which appeared well to bee of one well coloured soyte, And although thys vse of hys was diuers times marked and seene of many, yet being earnestly demaunded the cause thereof hee would neuer disclose the same. Many coniectures thereof were made, but none could attayne the trouthe. And who would haue thought that a Knight so wise and prudent had woyn within his pursse any inchaunted thyng? And albept the King and Queene had intelligence of thys frequent practyse of the Knight, yet they thoughte not mete for the ppyuate and secrete Mysery, to demaund the cause. One moneth and a halfe was passed now, that the Loyde Alberto was departed the Court, and become a Castle Knighte and cunning Spynster; which made the Lozds Vladislao to muse,

for

for that the promise made betwene them was broken, and hearde
neither by Letter or messenger what successe he had receiued. Af-
ter diuers thoughts imagyned in his mynde, he conceiued that
his companion had happily enioyed the end of his desired toy, and
had gathered the wished fructs of the Lady, and drowned in the
mayne Sea of hys owne pleasures, was ouerwhelmed in the bot-
tome of Obluion: wherefore he determined to set forward on his
Iourney to giue onfet of his desired fortune: who without long de-
lay for execution of his purpose, prepared all necessaries for that
voyage, and mounted on horsebacke with two of his men, he Iour-
neyed towards Boeme, and within few daies after arryued at the
Castle of the fayre and most honest Lady. And when hee was en-
tered the Inne where the Lord Alberro was first lodged, he dily-
gently enquyred of hym, and heard tell that he was returned into
Hungarie many daies before, whereof much maruelling, coulde
not tel what to say or thinke. In the End, purposing to put in prose
the cause wherefore he was departed out of Hungarie, after dily-
gent searche of the maners of the Lady, he vnderstoode by general
voyce, that she was without comparisson the honestest, wifeliest, gent-
lest and comeliest Lady within the whole Countrey of Boeme.
Incontinently the Lady was aduertised of the arriuall of this Ba-
ron, and knowing his message, she determined to paye him also
wth that Money whych she had already corned for the other.

The next Day the Baron went vnto the Castle, and knocking at
the Gate, sent in Word how that he was come from the Court
of King Mathie, to visite and salute the Lady of that Castle: and
as she did entertayne the first Baron in curteous guise, and wth
louing Countenance, euen so she dyd the second, who thoughte
thereby that he had attayned by that pleasaunt entertainment, the
game which he hunted. And discoursing vppon diuers matters,
the Lady shewed hir selfe a pleasaunt and familiar Gentlewo-
man, whych made the Baron to thinke that in short tyme he should
wyn the pryce for whych he came. Notwithstanding, at the firste
brynt he would not by any meanes descend to any particularity of
his purpose, but hys Words ran general, which were, that hea-

A Lady of Boeme.

ring tell of the fame of hir Beauty, good grace and comelineſſe, by hauing occaſſion to repayre into Boeme to doe certayne his affaires, he thought it laboꝝ wel ſpent to ride ſome portion of his iourney, though it were beſides the way, to degreſſe to do reuerence vnto hir, whom ſame aduanced aboute the Skyes; and thus paſſing his firſt viſitation he returned againe to his Lodging. The Lady when the Baron was gone from hir Caſtle, was rapt into a rage, greatlye offended that thoſe two Hungarian Lordes ſo preſumptuouſly had bended themſelues lyke common Theeues to wander and roue the Countreys, not onely to robbe and ſpoyle hir of hir honour, but alſo to bying hir in diſpleaſure of hir husband, and thereby into the Daunger and Peryll of Death. By reaſon of which rage (not without cauſe conceiued) ſhe cauſed another Chamber to be made ready, next Wall to the other Baron that was become ſutch a notable Spenſter. And vpon the nexte retourne of the Lord Vladilaſ, ſhe receiued him with no leſſe good entertainment than befoze, and when Night came, cauſed him to be lodged in hir owne houſe in the Chamber prepared as befoze, and when Night came, cauſed him to be lodged in hir owne houſe in the Chamber prepared as befoze, where he ſlept not very ſoundly all that Night, thꝛough the continuall remembraunce of hys Ladies beauty. Next morning he perceiued himſelf to be locked faſt in a Dyſon. And when he had made him readye, thinking to deſcend to bid the Lady good Mornow, ſeeking meanes to vnlock the Dooze, and perceiuing that he could not, he ſtoode ſtill in a dumpe. And as hee was thus ſtandeng, maruelling the cauſe of his ſhutting in ſo faſt, the maiden repaired to the hole of the doze, giuing him honoꝝ an vnaccuſtomed ſalutatio, which was, that hir Miſtreſſe commaunded hir to giue him to vnderſtand, that if hee had any luſt oꝝ appetyte to his breakfast, oꝝ if he minded frō thenceforth to eaſe his hunger oꝝ contayne Lyfe, that he ſhould giue him ſelfe to learne to reele yarne. And foꝝ that purpoſe ſhe willed him to looke in ſutch a corner of the Chamber, & he ſhould find certayne ſpindles of thred, & an inſtrument to winde his yarn vpon. Where foꝝe (quod ſhe) apply your ſelf therunto, and looſe no time. He that had that tyme beholden the Baron in the Face, would haue thought

thought that hee had seene rather a Marble Stone, than the figure of a man. But conuerting his could conceyued moode, into mad anger, he fell into ten times moze displeasure with himselfe, than is befoze described by the other Baron. But seeinge that his mad behauiour, and brastly vlsage was bestowed in bayne, the next day he began to Reele. The Lady after wardes when shee had intelligence of the good, and gaynefull Spinning of the Lord Alberto, and the wel disposed, and towardly Reeling of the Lord Vladislao, greatly reioyced for makinge of such two Notable Workemen, whose workemanship exceeded the labours of them that had bene Apprentizes to the Occupation seuen Yeares togeather. Such be the apt, and ready Wets of the Souldiers of Loue: Wherein I would wishe all Cupides Dearlings to be nouled and applied in their youthly time: then no doubt their passions woulde appease, and rages assuage, and would giue ouer bold attempts, for which they haue no thancke of the chaste and honest. And to this goodly sight the Lady brought the Seruaunts of these Noblemen, willing them to marke and beholde the diligence of their Masters, and to imitate the industry of their gallant exercise, who neuer attayned meate befoze by labour they had gayned the same. Which done, shee made them take their Horse, and Furnitures of their Lords, and to depart: otherwise if by violence they resisted, she would cause their Choller to be cauled with such like seruice as they saw their Lordes doe befoze their Eyes. The Seruaunts seeing no remedye, but must needes depart, tooke their leaue. Afterwards she sent one of hir Seruaunts in Poast to the Courte, to aduertise hir husband of all that which chaunced. The Boeme Knight receyuing these good newes, declared the same vnto the King and Quene, and recited the whole Story of the two Hungarian Barons, accordingly as the tenor of his Wyues letters did purport. The Princes stood still in great admiration, and highly commended the wisdom of the Lady, esteeming hir for a very sage and politticke woman. Afterwards the Knight Vlrico humbly besought the King for execution of his decree & performance of the Bargayne. Whereupon the King assembled his counsell, &

A Lady of Boeme.

required euery of them to say their minde. Upon the deliberation whereof, the Lord Chauncelloꝝ of the Kingdome, with two Counsellors, were sent to the Castle of the Boeme Knight, to enquire, and learne the processe and doinges of the two Lordes, who diliggently accomplished the Kinges commaundement. And hauinge examined the Lady and hir marden with other of the house, and 5 Barons also, whom a little before the arriual of these Commissioners, the Lady had caused to be put to gether, 5 by Spinning, & Reeling they might comfort one another. When the Lord Chauncelloꝝ had framed and digested in order the whole discourse of this history, returned to the Court where the King, & Queene with the Pieres, & Noblemen of his kingdome caused the acts of the same to be diuulged & byuted abroade, and after much talk, & discourse of the perfoꝛmaunce of this compact, Pro, & contra, the Queene taking the Ladies part, and fauoring the Knight, the Kinge gaue sentence that sir Vlrico should wholly possesse the Landes & goods of the two Barons to him, and to his Heyres foꝛ euer, and that the Barons should be banished the kingdomes of Hungary, and Boeme, neuer to returne vpon payne of death. This sentence was put in execution, & the vnfortunat Barons exiled, which specially to those 5 were of their consanguinity & bloud, seemed to seuer, & rigorous. Nevertheless the couenaunt being most playne & euident to most men, the same seemed to bee pronounced with great Justice and equity, foꝛ example in time to come, to lesson rash wits how they iudge & deeme so indifferently of Womens behaviours amongs whom no doubt there bee both good & bad as there bee of men. Afterwards the, 2. Princes sent foꝛ the Lady to the Court, who there was courteously intertayned, & foꝛ hir wise, & politticke fact had in great admiration. The Queene then appoynted hir to be one of hir women of honoꝛ, and esteemed hir very deere. The knight also daily grew to great promotion, well beloued & fauored of the King, who with his Lady long time liued in great ioy & felicity, not foꝛ getting the cunning Pollacco, that made him 5 image and likeness of his wife: Whose frendship & labor he rewarded with money, & other Benefits very liberally.

Dom

Dom Diego, and Geneura.

DOM DIEGO a Gentleman of Spayne fell in loue with fayre **GENEURA**, and she with him: their loue by meanes of one that enuied **DOM DIEGO** his happy choyse, was by default of light credit on hir part interrupted. He constant of mynde, fell into despayre, and abandoninge all his frends and liuing, repayred to the Pyrene Mountaynes, where he led a Sauage lyfe for certayne moneths, and afterwarde knowne by one of hys freendes, was (by marueylous Circumstaunce) reconciled to hys froward mistresse, and maryed.

The. XXIX. Nouell.

E S mischaunces occur ring on brunts of dyuers Tragicall fortunes, albeit vpon their first taste of bitterness, they saue of a certayne kinde of lothsome relish, yet vnder the Bende of that vnsauerouse Sap, doth lurke a sweeter Honnye, than sweetnesse it selfe, for the fruit that the Posterity may gather, & learne by others hurts, how they may loathe, and shun the like. But bicause all thinges haue their seasons, and euery thyng is not conuenient for all Times, and Places, I purpose now to shew a notable example of a vayne and superstitious Lover, that

At 4.

abandoned

Don Diego, and Gineura.

abandoned his liuing and friends, to become a Savage Desert man. Which Historie resembleth in a maner a Tragical Comedie, comprehending the very same matter and Argument, wherewith the greatest part of the sortishe sozte Arme them selues to couer & defend their follies. It is red and seene to often by common custome, and therefore needelesse heere to display what rage doth gouerne, and headlong hale sonde and licentious youth (conducted by the pangue of loue, if the same be not moderated by reason, and cooled with sacred Lessons) euē from the Cradle to moze nurture and riper age. For the Tyranny of Loue amonges all the deadly Foes that bere and afflict our mindes, glozeth of his force, boasting hymselfe able to chaunge the proper nature of things, be they neuer so sounde and perfect: Who to make them like his lustes, transfor meth himselfe into a substance qualified diuersly, the better to intrap such as be giuen to his vanities. But hauing auouched so many examles before, I am content for this present to tell the discourse of two persons, chaunced not long sithins in Catheloigne. Of a Gentleman that for his constancy declared two extremities in him selfe of loue, and folly. And of a Gentlewoman so sickle and inconstant, as loue and they which waited on him, be disordered, for the trustlesse grounde whereupon such foundation of seruice is layed, which yee shall easely conceiue by well biewing the differēce of these twayne: Whō I meane to summon to h liſs, by h blaſt of this sounding trump. And thus the same beginneth.

Not long after that the victorions and Noble Prince, younge Ferdinandus, the Sonne of Alphonſus Kinge of Aragon was deade, Leues the Twelfth, that tyme being Frenche King, vpon the Marches of Catheloigne, betwene Barcelona, and the Hostaynes, there was a good Lady then a Wyddow, which had bene the Wyfe of an excellent, and Noble knight of the Countrey, by whom she hadde left one onely Daughter, which was so carefully brought vp by the mother as nothinge was to deare or hard to bee brought to passe for hir desire, thinking that a creature so Noble & perfect, could not be trayned vp to delicately. Now besides hir incomparable furniture of beauty, this younge Gentlewoman was adorne with Hayre so sayre, curle, and Peslow, as the new fined
Gold

Golde was not matchable to the shining locks of this tender Infant, who therefore commonly was called Gineura la Blonde. Halfe a dayes Iorney from the house of this Wyddow, lay the lands of an other Lady a Wyddow also, that was very rich, and so wel allied as any in all the Land. This Lady had a Sonne, who she caused to be trayned by so well in Armes and good letters, as in soother honest Exercises proper and meete for a Gentleman and great Lorde, for which respect shee had sent him to Barcelona the chiefe Citty of all the Countrey of Catheloigne. Senior Dom Diego, (for so was the Sonne of that Wyddow called) profited so well in all thynges, that when hee was. 18. yeares of age, there was no Gentleman of his degree, that did excell him, ne yet was able to approche unto his Perfections and commendable Behaviour. A thing that did so well content the good Lady his mother as she could not tell what countenance to keepe to couer hie top. A vice very common to fond and foolish mothers, who flatter the selues with a shadowed hope of the future goodnesse of their children, which many times doth more hurt to that wanton and willfull age, than profit or aduancement. The perswasion also of such towardnesse, full oft doth blinde the Spirites of Youth, as the Faults which follow the same bee farre more vile than before they were: Whereby the first Table (made in his first colours) of that imagined vertue, can take no force or perfection, and so by incurring sundry mishaps, the Parent and Childe commonly escape not without equall blame. To come agayne therefore to our discourse: It chaunced in that tyme that (the Catholike Kyng deceased) Phillippe of Austrich which Succeeded him as Heire passing through Fraunce, came into Spayne to bee Inuessed, and take Possession of all hys Seignories, and Kingdomes: Which knowne to the Cittyzens of Barcelona, they determined to receiue hym with such Pompe, Magnificence, and Honor, as duely appertaineth to the greatnes & maiesty of so great a Prince, as is the sonne of the Romane Emperour. And amonges other thinges they prepared a Triumphe at the Tilt, where none was suffered to enter the lists, but yong Gentlemen, such as neuer yet had followed armes. Amongst whom Dom Diego as fittest & noblest person was chosen.

Dom Diego, and Genuera.

chosen chiefe of one part. The Archduke then come to Barcelona after the recepued honours and Ceremonies, accustomed for such entertaynement, to gratifie his Subjects, and to see the brauery of the yong Spanish Nobility in armes, would place himselfe vpon the scaffolde to iudge the courses and valiaunce of the runners.

In thir magnifike, and Princely conflict, all mens eyes were bent vpon Dom Diego, who course by course made hys aduersarius to feele the force of his armes, his manhoode, and dexterity, on horsebacke, and caused them to muse vpon his toward valiance in time to come, whose noble Chests then acquired the victorie of the Campe on his side. Which moued King Phillip to say, that in all his life he neuer saw triumph better handled, and that he same seemed rather a battell of strong & hardy men, than an exercise of yong Gentlemen neuer wonted to support the deedes of armes, & trauaile of warfare. For which cause calling Dom Diego before him he sayd. God graunt (yong Gentleman) that your ende agree
“ with your good beginnings & hardy shock of prooue done this day.
“ In memoire whereof I will this night hee do your watch, for I
“ meane to morrow (by Gods assistance) to dub you knight. The
yong Gentleman blushing for shame, vpon his knees kissed the Princes hands, thanking him most humbly of the honour & fauour which it pleased his maiesty to do to him, bowing & promising to do so well in time to come, as no man should be deceiued of their conceiued opinion, nor he king frustrate of his seruice, which was one of his most obedient Vassals, & subjects. So the next day he was made knight, & recepued the collar of the order at the hands of king Phillip, who after his departure of his prince which tooke his iorney into Castille, retired to his owne lands & house, more to see his mother, who long time before he had not seene, than for desire of pleasure hee in fieldes, which notwithstanding he exercised so well as in end he percepued resistance in townes and Citties, to be an imprisonment in respect of that he felt in Countrey. As the Poets whilom sayned Loue to shoote his Arrowes amid the Woods, Forrests, fertile fields, Sea coasts, Shores of great Riuers, and fountayne brinkes, and also vpon the tops of huge, and high Mountaynes at the pursue of the sundry soyled Nymphes, and
feldis

fieldish Dimigods, deeming the same to bee a meane of liberty to
 follow Loues tract without suspition, horde of company and loth-
 some cries of Citties, where Jealousie, Enuy, false report, and ill
 Opinion of all things, haue pitched their Camp, and rayled their
 Tent. And contrariwise franckly and wpythout dissimulation in
 the fieldes, the freende discovering his passion to his Mistresse,
 they enioy the pleasure of hunting, the naturall muscke of Byrds,
 and sometimes in pleasaunt Herbers compassed with the murmur
 of some running Brookes, they communicate their Thoughts,
 beautifie the accorde and vnity of Louers, and make the place fa-
 mous for the first witnesse of their amorous acquaintance. In
 like manner thrice, & foure times blest be they there, who leauinge
 the vnquiet toyle that ordinarly doth chaunce to them that abyde
 in Citties, doe render duety of their studies to the Muses wheres
 vnto they be most Addicted. Now Dom Diego at his owne house
 loued and cherished of his mother, reuerenced and obeyed of hys
 Subiects after he had imployed some time at his study, had none
 other ordinary pleasure but in rousling the Deere, hunting the
 wilde Boze, run the Hare, sometimes to fly at the Hearon, or fearful
 Partrich alongs the fieldes, Forrests, Ponds, and steepe Moun-
 tayne Goats, which he had dislodged vpon the Hill top, he espied
 an olde Hart that his Dogges had found, who so toypfull as was
 possible of that good lucke, followed the course of that swift, and
 fearefull beast. But (such was his Fortune) the Dogges lost the
 foote of that pray, and he his men: For being hoysed of purpose,
 vpon a fayre Jennet, could not be followed, and in ende loosinge
 the sight of the Deere, was so farre seuered from company, as he
 was bitterly ignoraunt which way to take. And that which grie-
 ued him most was his Horse out of Breath scarce able to gor a
 false Gallop. For which cause he put his horne to his mouth, and
 blew so loude as he could. But his men were so farre of, as they
 could not here him. The young Gentleman being in this distresse
 could not tell what to doe, but to returne backe, wherein he was
 moze deceyued than before, for thinkinge to take the way home to
 hys Castle, wandzed still further of from the same. And trotting
 thus

thus a long tyme, he spied a Castle Situated bypon a little Hill, whereby he knew himselfe far from his owne house. Neuerthelesse hearing a certayne nople of Hunters, thinking they had bene his People, resorted to the same, who in deede were the Seruants of the Mother of Cinuera with the golden Locks, which in company of their Mistresse had hunted the Hare, Don Diego, when he drew neere to the cry of the Hounds, saw right well that hee was deceyued. At what tyme Night approached, and the Shadowes darkening the Earth, by reason of the Sunnes departure, began to Cloath the Heauens with a Frowne and misty Mantell. When the Mother of Cinuera saw the Knight which Rode a soft pace, for his Horse was tired, and could traueple no longer, and knowing by his outward apperance that he was some great Lord, & ridden out of his way, sent one of hir men to knowe what he was, who returned agayne with such aunswere as she desired. The Lady ioyfull to entertayne a Gentleman so excellent and famous, one of hir next neighbors, went forwaide to bid hym welcome, which she did wth so great curtesy as the Knight sayd vnto hir: Madame I thinke that fortune hath done me this fauour, by setting me out of the way, to proue your curtesie and gentle entertainment, and to receiue this ioy by visiting your house, where of I trust intime to come to be so perfect a friend, as my predecesors heeretofore haue bene. Sir sayd the Lady, if happinesse may be attributed to them, that most doe gayne, I thinke my selfe better fauored than you, for that it is my chaunce to lodge and entertayne him, that is the worthiest person and best beloued in all Castellaigne. The Gentleman blushing at that prayse, sayd nothing els, but that affection forced men so to speake of his vertues, notwithstandinge such as hee was, he vowed from thenceforth his seruice to hir and all hir Household. Cinuera desirous not to bee slacke in curtesie, sayd that he should not so do, except she were partaker of some part of that, which the Knight so liberally had offered to the whole Family of hir Mother. The Gentleman which till that time tooke no heede to the deuine Beauty of the Gentlewoman, beholding hir at his pleasure, was so alloued, as hee could not tell what to aunswere, his eyes were so fixed vpon hir, spending

spending his lookes in contemplation of that freshe betw, stayned with a red Vermilion, vpon the Alabaster, and sayre colour of hir cleare and beautifull face. And for the imbelishing of that naturall perfection, the attire vpon hir head was so couenable and proper, as it seemed the same day shee had Looked for the coming of him, that afterwarde indured so much for hir sake. For hir head was Adorned with a Garlande of floures, interlaced with hir Golden, and Enamiled hayre, which gorgeously couered some part of hir Shoulders, disparted, and hanging down some tyme ouer hir passing sayre Forcheade, somewhyles vpon hir ruddy Cheekes, as the Sweete, and Pleasaunt windy Breath dyd mouue them to, and fro: Pre should haue seene hir wauering and crisped tresses disposed with so good grace, and comelynesse, as a man would haue thought that Loue, and the three Graces could not tell els where, to harbor themselves, but in that riche, and delectable place of pleasure, in gorgeous wise laced and imbraued. Upon hir Eares did hang two Sumptuous and Riche orientall Pearles, which to the artificiall order of hir hayre added a certen splendent brightnes. And he that had beholden the shining & large Forchead of that Nimph, which Gallantly was beset with a Diamonde of inestimable price & value, chased with a tresse of Golde made in forme of little Starres, would haue thought that he had seene a Rancke of the twinkeling Planettes, fixed in the firmament in the hottest time of Sommer, when that sayre season discovereth the order of his glittering Cloudes. In lyke maner the sparkeling eyes of the sayre Gentlewoman, adorned with a stately baulte with two Archers, equally by euen spaces distinct, and deuided, stayned with the Ebene Indian tree, did so well set forth their Brightnesse, as the eyes of them that stayed their lookes at Noone dayes directly vpon the Sunne, could no moze be dazeled and offended, than those were, that did contemplate those two flaminge Starres, which were in force able throughe to pierce euen the Bottome of the inward partes. The Nose well fourmed, iustly placed in the Amiable valley of the Wyface, by Equall conformity Distinguished the two Cheekes, stayned with a pure Carnation, resemblinge two lytle Apples that were
were arry:

Don Diego and Gineura.

arrived to the due time of their maturity and ripenesse. And then
 hir Cozalline mouth, through which breathing, issued out a breath
 more soote and sauorous than Ambre, Muske, or other Romanti-
 call Parfume, that euer the sweete Soyle of Arabie brought forth.
 She sometime vnclosing the doore of hir Lips, discovered two
 rancke of Pearles, so finely blanchd, as the purest Orient would
 blushe, if it were compared with the Beauty of this incompara-
 ble whitenesse. But hee that will take vpon hym to speake of all
 hir inspeakeable Beauty, may make his vaunte that he hath seene
 all the greatest perfectiōs that euer dame Nature wrought. Now
 to come a little lower, on this freshe Diana appeared a Neck, that
 surmounted the Blaunche colour of Mylke, were it neuer so ex-
 cellent white, and hir Stomacke somewhat mounting by the two
 Pomeles, and firme Teates of hir Breasts, seperated in equall
 distaunce, was couered with a bayle, so soft, and fine, as those two
 little pretty Mountaynes might easily be Discried, to mooue, and
 remooue, according to the affection that rose in the Centre of that
 modest, and sober Pucelles mynde: Who ouer, and besides all
 this, had such a pleasaunt Countenaunce, and ioyfull cheere, as
 hir Beauty more than wonderfull, rendred hir not so woorthie to
 be serued, and loued, as hir naturall goodnesse, and disposed cur-
 tesie appearing in hir Face, and hir excellent entertainment and
 comely Grace to all indifferently. This was not to imitate the
 manner of the most parte of our saye Ladies, and Gentlemomen,
 who (mooued with what Opinion I know not) be so disdain-
 full, as almost theyr name causeth discontentment, and breedeth in
 them great imperfection. And who by thinking to appeare more
 braue, and fine, by to much squeemish dealing, doe offuscate and
 darken with Folly their exterior Beauty, blotting, and defacing
 that which beauty maketh amiable, and worthy of honoz. I leave
 you now to consider wheather Don Diego had occasion to forgo
 his Speech, and to bee bereft of Sense, being liuely assailed with
 one so well armed as Gineura was with hir Graces and Honesty:
 Who no lesse abashed with the Poze, Countenaunce, sweete talk,
 and stately Behauior of the Knight, which she beuewed to be in him
 by dealing lookes, felt a Motion (not wanted or accustomed in
 hir ten

his tender heart, that made hir to chaunge coloz, and by like occasi-
 on speechlesse: An ordinary custome in them that be surpris'd with
 the malady of loue to lose the vse of speech where the same is most
 needefull to gieuē the intier charge in the heart, which not able to
 support and beare the burden of so many passions, departeth some
 portion to the eyes, as to the faythful messengers of the Hyndes
 secret conceits, which tormented beyond measure, and burninge
 with affection, causeth sometimes the Humour to gush out in that
 parte that discovered the first assault, and byed the cause of that
 feuer, which frightened the hearts of those two yong persons, not
 knowing well what the same might be. When they were come to
 the Castle, and dismounted from their Horses, many Welcomes
 and Gratulations were made to the Knight, which yelded more
 wood to the fire, and liuely touched the yong Gentleman, who was
 so outraged with loue, as almost he had no minde of himselfe, and
 rapt by little, and little, was so intoxicated with an Amorous pas-
 sion, as all other Thoughtes were lothsome, and Joye displea-
 saunt in respect of the fauourable Martirdomē which hee suffe-
 red by thinking of his fayre and gentle Gineura. Thus the knight
 which in the morning disposed him selfe to pursue the Hart, was in
 heart so attached, as at euening he was become a Seruaunt, yea
 and such a Slaue, as that voluntary seruitude wholly disposse-
 sed him from his former freedome. These be the fructes also of
 Foyle, inuegling the lookes of men, that launch themselves with
 eyes shut into the Gulfe of despayre, which in ende doth cause the
 ruin & ouerthrow of him, & yeldeth thereunto. Loue proceedeth ne-
 uer but of opinion: so likewise & ill order of those & bee afflicted wth
 that Passion, yf leth not elswhere, but by the fond persuasioⁿ which
 they conceiue, to bee Blamed, Despised, and deceyued of the thing
 beloued: Where if they measured that passioⁿ according to his va-
 loz, they would make no more account of that which doth toyme^t
 them, than they do of their health, honoz, & life, which loue for their
 great seruice & laboz deludeth them, and recōpēse^th another with &
 for which the foolish Louer employeth thys trauel, which at lēgth
 doth haste despayre, and ende more than desperate, when an other
 enioy that, for which hee hath so longe time beate the Bushes.

During

Dom Diego, and Ginuera.

During the time that supper was preparing, the Lady sente hir
 men to seeke the huntsmen of Dom Diego, to geue them know-
 ledge where he was become, and thereof to certify his mother, who
 when she heard tell that her sonne was lodged there, was very glad
 being a ryght good frend and very familiar Neighbour with the
 Lady, the hostesse of Dom Diego. The Gentleman at supper after
 he had tasted the seruient heate that broyled in his Minde, coulde
 eate little meate, beinge satisfied with the feeding diete of his amo-
 rous eyes, which without any maner Jealousie, distributed their
 nourishment to the heart. Who sat very soberly, praisly throwing
 his secretly Pricks, with louely, and wanton lookes, vpon the
 heart of the fayre Lady, which for hir part spared not to render b-
 fury of rolling regards, whereof he was so sparing, as almost he
 durst not lift vp his eyes for dazeling of them. After Supper, the
 knight bidding the mother & Daughter good night, went to Bed,
 where in sleepe of sleepe, he fell to sighinge and imagineng a thou-
 sande diuers deuises, fantasping like number of follies, such as
 they doe whose Waynes be fraught loue. Was (sayde hee) what
 meaneth it, that alwayes I haue lyued in so great liberty, & now
 doe feeble my self attached with such bondage as I cannot expresse
 whose effects neuertheless be fastned in me? Haue I hunted to be
 taken? Came I from my house in liberty, to be shut vp in Prison,
 and do not know wheather I shall be receyued, or being receyued,
 haue intertaynment, according to desert? Ah Gineura, I would
 to God, that thy Beauty did pricke mee no worse, than the tree
 whereof thou takest thy name, is sharp in touching, and bitter to
 them that taste it. Truly I esteeme my comming hither happy
 (for all the Pass'on that I indure) with the purchase of a grieffe so
 lucky doth qualify the ioy, & made me to wander thus ouer frank-
 ly. Ah Fayre amonges the Fayrest, truly the fearefull Beast
 which with the bloudy Hare Houndes was torne in pieces, is
 not more Hartired, than my heart deuised in Opinions vpon
 thyne Affection. And what doe I know if thou Louest an other
 worthy to bee fauoured of thee than thy pooze Dom Diego. But
 it is impossible that any can approche the Uncerity that I feeble in
 my heart, determining rather to indure death, than to serue other
 but faire,

but saye a golden Gineura : therefore my loyalty receiuing no co-
 parison, cannot bee matched in man sufficient (for respect of the
 same) to be called seruant of thine excellēcy. Now come what shal,
 by meanes of this, I am assured that so lōg as Dom Diego liueth,
 his heart shal receiue none other impression or desire, but ſuch which
 inciteth him to loue, serue, & honor the fairest creature at thys day
 within the compasse of Spayne. Resolued hereupon, sweating, la-
 boring, & trauelling vpon the framing of his loue, he founde no-
 thing more expedient than to tel hir his passion, & let hir vnderſtād
 the good wil ſhe had to do hir seruice, & to pray hir to accept hym
 for such, as frō that time forth would execute nothing but vnder
 the title of hir good name. On th'other ſide Gineura could not close
 hir eyes, & knew not the cause almost that so impeched hir of sleepe,
 wherefore now tossing on th'one ſide, and thē turning to the other,
 in hir rich & goodly Bed, ſatished no fewer deuises thā passionated
 Dom Diego did. In th'end ſhe concluded, ſhe if the knight shewed
 hir any euident ſigne, or opened by word of mouth any ſpeech of
 loue & seruice, ſhe would not refuse to do ſuch like to him. Thus paſ-
 sed the night in thought & sighs, & wiſhes betwene these. 2. appren-
 tises of the thing, whereof they ſhould be learners, ſhal ſoone attayne ſuch
 experience, and they that follow the occupation thoroughly, in ſhort
 time be their crafts maſters. The next day ſuch knight would depart
 ſo ſoone as he was by : but the good widow, embracing the per-
 ſonage & good order of ſuch knight in hir heart, more than any other
 that ſhe had ſeene of long time, intreated him ſo earnestly to tary
 as he which loued better to obey hir request thē to depart, although
 fained the contrary, in the end appeared to be vāquiſhed vpon the
 great impoſtunity of the Lady. At that morning the Mother and
 the Daughter paſſed the time with Dom Diego in great talke of
 cōmon matters. But he was thē more aſtonned & enamored than ſuch
 night before, in ſuch wiſe as many times he answered ſo draptly
 to their demāds, as it was eaſily perceiued that his minde was
 much diſquieted with ſome thing, that only did poſſeſſe the force &
 vehemence of the ſame : notwithstanding ſuch lady imputed ſuch to the
 ſhamefaſtneſſe of ſuch Gentleman, & to his ſimplicity, which had not
 greatly frequented the cōpany of Ladies. When dinner time was

At.

come, they

Dom Diego and Gineura.

come, they were serued with such great fare & sundry delicacies accordingly as with hir hart she wished to intertain the young lord, to the intent from that time forth, he might moze willingly make repaire to hir house. After dinner he rendred thanks to his hostesse for his good cheare and intertainment that he had receiued, assuring hir, that all the dayes of his Life he would imploie him selfe to recompense hir curtesie, and with all duety and induror to acknowledge that fauor. And hauing taken his leaue of the mother, he went to the Damosell, to hir I say, that had so sore wounded his hearte who already was so deeply grauen in his mind, as the marke remained there for euer, taking leaue of hir, kissed hir handes, and thinking verily to expresse that whereuppon hee imagined all the Night, his Tongue and Wits were so tyed and rapt, as the Gentlewoman perfectly perceiued this alteration, whereat she was no whit discontented and therefore all blushing, sayde vnto him : I pray to God sir, to ease and comfort your griefe, as you leaue vs desirous and glad, long to enioy your company. Cruelly Gentlewoman (answered the Knyght,) I think my selfe moze than happy, to heare that with proceede from such a one as you be, and specially for the desire whych you say you haue of my presence, whych shall bee euer readye to doe that whych it shall please you to commaunde. The Gentlewoman bashfull for that offer, thanked hym verie hartely, prayinge him with sweete and smilinge Countenance, not to forget the waye to come to visite them, beyng wel assured, his mother would be very glad thereof. And for mine owne part (quod she) I shall thinke my self happy to be partaker of the pleasure and great amitye that is betwene our two houses. After great reuerence & leaue taken betwene them, Dom Diego returned home, where he told his mother of the good intertainment made him, and of the great honesty of the Lady his hostesse : wherefore Madame (quod he to his Mother) I am desirous (if it be your pleasure) to let the know how much they both full hospitality hath tied me to them, and what desire I haue to recompense the same. I am therefore wishing to bydde them hither, and to make them so good cheare, as with all their hearte they made me when I was with them. The Lady whych was the assured Frende of the Mother of Gineura, liked well the aduise

upse of hir soune and tolde hym that they shoulde bee welcome,
 for the aunciente amity of long time betwene them, who was wont
 many times to visite one an other. Dom Diego vpon his mothers
 words, sent to intreat the Lady and saye Gineura, that it would
 please them to do him the honour to come into his house: To which
 request she so willingly yeldded, as he was desirous to bid them.
 At the appointed day Dom Diego sought al meanes possible ho-
 nourably to receiue them: In meates whereof there was no want,
 in Instruments of all sortes, Hummeries, Hoysescoes, and a
 thousand other pastymes, whereby he declared his good bring-
 ing by, the gentlenesse of his Sperryte, and the desire that he had to
 appeare such one as he was, before hir, whych had already the
 full possession of his liberty. And bicause he would not faile to ac-
 complishe the perfection of his intent, hee inuited all the Gentle-
 men and Gentlewomen that were his neighbours. I will not
 here describe the most part of the prouision for that feast, nor the diuer-
 sity of Meates, or the delicate kyndes of Wines. It shall suffice
 mee to tell that after dynner they daunced, where the knight tooke
 his mistresse by the hand who was so glad to see hir self so aduan-
 ced, as he was content to be so neare hir, that was the sweete tor-
 ment and unspeakable passion of his mynd, whych hee began to,
 discouer vnto hir in this wyse: Mistresse Gineura, I haue ben al-
 wayes of this Mynde, that Musike hath a certaine secreete hyd-
 den vertue (which wel can not be expressed) to reuiue the thoughts
 and cogitations of mā, be he neuer so moznfull and pensiue, forcing
 him to viter some outward reioyse: I speake it by my self, for that
 I liue in extreme anguish & payne, that al the toy of the World see-
 meth vnto mee displeasaunt, care, and disquietnesse: and neuer
 thelesse my passion, agreeing with the plaintiue voice of the In-
 strument, doth reioyce and conceiue comforte, as well to heare in
 sensible thinges conforment to my desires, as also to see my self so
 neere vnto hir, that hath the salue to ease my payne, to discharge
 my disease, and to depyue my Wynd from all greifs. In like ma-
 ner reason it is, that she hir selfe do remedy my disease, of whome
 I receiued the pycke, and which is the first foundation of al mine
 euill. I can not tell (sayd the Gentlewoman) what disease it is you

Dom Diego and Gineura.

822.07
“ speake of, for I shoulde bee very vnkinde to gieuẽ him occasion of
“ griefe, that doth make vs this great cheere. Th Lady myne (sayd
“ the knight) fetching a sigh from the bottome of his heart, the in-
“ tertaynement that I receiue by the continuall contemplation of
“ your diuine Beauties, and the vnpeakeable brightnesse of those
“ two Beames, which twinkle in your Face, bee they þ happily doe
“ vex me, & make me drinke this Cup of bitternesse, wherein notwith-
“ standing I finde such sweetenesse as al the Heauenly Dyrinke cal-
“ led Ambrosia, fained by the Poets, is but Gall in respect of that
“ which I taste in mynde, feeling my deuotion so bent to do you ser-
“ uice, as onely Death shall vnry the knot wherewith voluntarily
“ I knyt my selfe to bee your Seruaunt for euer, and if it so please
“ you, your fapthfull, and Loyall freende, and Husbände. The
“ yonge Damosell not wouted for to heare such Songs, did chafige
“ hir coloure at least thzee or foure times, and neuerthelesse fained a
“ litle angre of that which dyd content hir most: And yet not so
“ sharpe, but that the Gentleman perceyued well enough, that shee
“ was touched at the quicke, and also that hee was accepted into
“ hir good Grace and Fauoure. And therefore hee continued still
“ hys talke, all that time after dinner, vntill the Mayden made hym
“ thys aunswere: Syr, I will nowe confesse that griefe may couer
“ alteration of affections proceeding of Loue. for although I had
“ determined to dissemble that which I thinke, yet there is a thinge
“ in my Mynde (which I can not name) that gouerneth mee so
“ farre from my proper Deuises, and Conceytes, as I am con-
“ strayned to doe that which this second Inspiration leateth mee
“ vnto, and forceth my Mynde to receiue an Impression: but what
“ will bee the ende thereof, as yet I knowe not. Notwithstan-
“ dinge, reposing mee in youre Vertue, and Honesty, and acknow-
“ ledgyng your merite, I thinke my selfe happy to haue such
“ one for my freende, that is so fayne and comely a knight, and
“ for such I doe accept you vntill you haue obtayned of the Lady
“ my Mother, the second poynt, which may accomplish þ which is
“ moste despyed of them, that for vertues sake do loue. And but for
“ that, you shall bee none otherwysẽ fauoured of me, than hether to
“ you haue ben. Till now haue I attended for thys reght happye
“ day of

day of Joy and Blisse (sayd the King) In token whereof, I doe
 kysse your whyte and delicate Hands, and for acknowledging the
 fauour that presently I do receiue, I make my vaunt to be the ser-
 uant of hir, that is the fayrest, and most curteous Gentlewoman,
 on this side the Mountaynes. As hee had finished those words,
 they came to couer for Supper, where they were serued so honou-
 rably, as if they had ben in the Court of the Monarch of Spayne.
 After Supper they went to walke abroad alongs the Riuer side,
 besette with Willow Trees, where both the Beauty of the time
 the running Riuer, the Charme of the Natural muscke of birds,
 and the pleasaunt Murmure of the trembling Leaues, at the whis-
 telyng of the swete Westerne Wynd, moued them agayne to reuew
 theyr Pastyme after Dynner. For some dyd geue themselves to
 talke, and to heyr of delectable matter: some framed Possgayes,
 Garlandes, and other pretty Possges for theyr frendes: Other
 some dyd leape, runne, and throwe the Barre. In the end a great
 Lord, Neighbour to Dom Diego, whose name was Dom Roderico,
 knowyng by his frendes Countenaunce to what Saynt hee was
 bowed, and perceyuing for whose loue the Feast was Celebrate,
 tooke by the hand a Gentlewoman that sat nexte to fayre Gine-
 ra, and prayed hir to daunce after a Song, whereunto shee beeyng
 pleasaunt and wyse, made no great refusall. Dom Diego say-
 led not to toyne with his Mystrisse, after whome folowed the rest
 of that Noble trayne, euery of them as they thought best. Now the
 Gentlewoman, that was ledde into daunce, song this song so apt
 for the purpose, as if shee had entred the heart of the Ennemy and
 Mystrisse of Dom Diego, or of purpose had made the same in the
 Name of hir, whom the matter touched aboute the rest.

*Who may better sing and daunce amonges Ladies all,
 Than she that doth hir louers heart possesse in bondage shal?
 The yong and tender feeblenesse
 Of myne unskilfull age,*

Kk 3.

Whereof

who may better sing and daunce among

Dom Diego, and Gineura.

Whereof also the tendernesse
Doth feeble heart assuage:
Whom Beautyes force hath made to frame
Unto a Lovers best,
So soone as first the kindled flame
Of louinge Toyes increst,
Who may better sing and daunce amongs vs Ladies all,
Than she that doth hir louters heart possesse in bondage thrall?
I haue assayed out to put
The fier thus begoone,
And haue attempted of to cut
The threede which lone hath spoone:
And new alliance fayne would flee
Of him whom I lone best,
But that the Gods haue willed mee
To yelde to his request.
Who may better sing and daunce amongs vs Ladies all,
Than she that doth hir louters heart possesse in bondage thrall?
So amiable is his grace,
Not like among vs all:
So passing fayre is his Face,
Whose hie doth stayne vs all:
And as the shining sunny day
Doth eu'ry man delight,
So he alone doth beare the sway,
Amongs eche louing wight.
Who may better sing and daunce amongs vs Ladies all
Than she that doth hir louters heart possesse in bondage thrall?
Why should not then, the fayrest dame,
Apply hir gentle minde,
And honor giue vnto his name,
Wyth humble heart and kinde?

Sith he

*Sith he is full of curtesie,
Indewd with noble grace,
And brest replete with honesty,
Well knowne in euery place.*

*Who may better sing and daunce amongst vs Ladies all,
Than she that doth hir louers heart possesse in bōdage thrall?*

*If I should loue, and serue him than,
May it be counted vice?*

*If I retayne that worthy man,
Shall I be deemed vnwise?*

*I will be gentle to him sure,
And render him myne ayde:*

*And loue that wight with heart full pure,
That neuer loue assayde.*

*Who may better sing and daunce amongst vs Ladies all,
Than she that doth hir louers heart possesse in bōdage thrall?*

*Thus the most sacred vinity,
That doth our hearts combine:*

Is voyde of wicked flattery,

The same for to vntwine.

No hardned rigor is our guide,

Nor folly doth vs leade:

No Fortune can vs twayne deuide,

Vntill we both be deade.

*Who may better sing and daunce amongst vs Ladies all,
Than she that doth hir louers heart possesse in bōdage thrall?*

And thus assured certaynely,

That this our loue shall dure,

And with good lucke hope verely,

The same to put in vre.

The sower

Dom Diego, and Gineura.

*The sown seedes of amity,
Begon betwixt vs twayne,
Shall in most perfect vnity,
For euermore remayne.*

*Who may better sing and daunce amongst vs Ladies all,
Than she that doth hir louers heart possesse in bondage thrall*

This Song delighted the Myndes of many in that company, and principally Dom Diego, and Gineura, who felt themselves tickled without laughing; And the Mayden retorted to heare hir selfe so greatly praysed in so noble a company, and specially in the presence of hir friende who had no lesse pleasure by hearing & praises of his beloued, than if he had bin made Lord of all Aragon. She for all hir dissembled Countenance could not hide the alteration of hir Mynde, without sending forth a sodayne chaunge of colour, that forced a fayne and goodly raynt in hir face. Dom Diego seeing that mutation, was so ioyful as was possible, for there by he knew and Iudged himselfe assured of the good grace of his Mistresse, and therefore wrytinging hir finely by the hands, sayd vnto hir very soberly Smiling. What greater pleasure my louinge Wench can there happen vnto your Seruant, than to see the accomplishment of this Propheccall Song? I assure you that in all my life I neuer heard musicke, that delighted me so much as this, and thereby doe vnderstand the good will of the Gentlewoman, which so curteously hath discouered yours towards me, and the faythfull seruice whereof you shall see me from hence forth so libetall, as neyther goods nor life shalbe spared for your sake. Gineura who loued him wth all hir heart, thanked him very humbly, & prayed him to beleue that the Song was truly soonge, and that without any fayne, she that soonge, had thereby manifested all the secrets of hir mynde. The daunce ended, they sat them downe rounde about a cleare Fountayne, which by silent discourse, issued from an high and mossy rock, enutrone^d with an infinite number of Maple trees, Poplers, and Alges. To which place a Page brought

brought a Lute to Dom Diego, whereupon hee coulde play very well, and made it more pleasauntly to sound for that hee accorded his Fayninge Voyce to the Instrument, Singing this song that followeth.

*That I should lue and serue also, good reason doth require,
What though I suffre lothsome grief, my life in woe to wrap?
The same be it only instruments, of my good lucke and hap,
The foode and pray for hungry corps, of rest it assured hire.*

*By thought wherof (O heauy man) gush forth of teares great
And by & by reioyst agayne, my driery teares do ease: (store
Which guerdon shall mine honor sure, in that triumphant peace
The summe wherof I offer now, were it of price much more.*

*Which I do make with all my heart, vnto that blessed wight,
My proper Goddesse here on earth, and only mistresse deere:
My goods & life, my brething ghost within this carcase here
I vow vnto that maiesty, that heauenly starre most bright.*

*Now sith my willing vow is made, I humbly pray hir grace,
To end th' accord betwene vs pight, no longer time to tracte:
Whych if it be by sured band, so haply brought to passe.
I must my self thrice happy count, for that most heauely fact.*

Thes Song made the company to muse, who commended the trim inuention of the Knight, and aboue all Gineura prayesd him more than before, and could not so well refrayne hir looks from him, and he with counterchaunge rendring like agayne, but that the two wydowes their Mothers tooke great heede thereof, reioysing greatly to see the same, desirous in time to couple them together. For at that present they deferred the same, in consideration they

Dom Diego and Gineura.

they were both very young. Notwithstanding it had bene better that the same Continunction had ben made, befoze Fortune had turned the Wheele of hir vnstablenes. And truely delay and prolongation of time sometimes byngeth such and so great mischappe that one hundred times men curse their fortune, and litle aduise in foresight of their infortunate chaunces that commonly do come to passe. As it chaunced to those Wydowes, one of them thinking to loose hir Sonne by the vaine behauior of the others daughter, who without the help of G O D, or care vnto his will, disparaged hir honor, and prepared a person so dangerous for his Mothers age, as the foode thereof hastened the way to the good Labyes Graue. Now whyles this loue in thys manner increased and that the desire of these two Louers, flamed forth ordinarily in fire and flames moze violent, Dom Diego all chaunged & transformed into a new man, receiued no delyght, but in the sight of his Gineura. And she thought that there could be no greater felicity or moze to be wished for, than to haue a frend so perfect, and so well accomplished with all thyngs requisite for the ornament and full furniture of a Gentleman. This was the occasion that the young knyght let no Weeke to passe without visting his mystrisse twice or thyrce at the least, and she did vnto hym the greatest curtesy and best Entertaynement, that vertue could suffer a Mayden to doe, whych was the diligent Treasurer and careful tutor of hir honor. And thys she dyd by consent of hir Mother. In lyk manner, honestie doth not permit chaste Maydens to vse long talk or immoderate speach, with the fyrst that be suters vnto them, and much lesse seemely it is for them to be ouer squeimysly wice, with that man whych seeketh (by way of Marriage) to wyne power and tittle of the Body, beyng in very deede, or ought to be h mozt of thepy soule. Such was the desyres of these two Louers, which notwithstanding was impeached by meanes, as heareafter you shal heare. For during the rebounding toy of those faire couple of Loyal Louers, it chaunced that the Daughter of a Noble man of the Countrey, named Ferrando de la Serre, whych was sayre, very Comely, Wese, and of good behauior, by keepenge
daile

daily Companie with Gineura, fell extremely in loue with Dom Diego, and assayed by all meanes to do him to vnderstand what the puiſſance was of his Loue which willingly she meant to bestowe vpon him, if it would please hym to honoꝝ his so much, as to loue his with like sincerety. But the knight which was no more his own Man, being possessed of another, had with his Lebertie lost his Wits, and Wound to marke the affectyon of this Gentlewoman of whome he made no accompt. The Maiden neuertheless ceased not to loue him, and to make him his owne. And knowing how much Dom Diego loued Hawking, she bought a hauke the best in all the countrey, and sent the same to Dom Diego, who with all his heart receiued the same, and affectuouſly gaue his thanks for that desired gift, praying the messenger to recommend him to the good grace of his mistresse, and to assure his self of his faithfull seruice, and that for his sake he would kepe the Hauke so tenderly as the Walles of his eyes. This Hauke was the cause of the ill fortune that afterwards chaunced to this poore Louer. For going many times to see Gineura with the Hauke on his fist and bearing with him the tokens of the goodnesse of his Hauke, it escaped his mouth to say, that the same was one of the things that in all the World he loued best. Cruelly this Word was taken at the first bound contrary to his meaning, wherewith the matter so fell out, as afterwards by despayre he was like to lose his Life. Certaine dayes after, as in his absence of his knyght, talk rose of his vertue & honest conditions, one praising his prowesse & valiance another his great Beauty and Curtesy, another passing further, extolling the sincere affectyon and Constancy which appeared in him touching matters of Loue, one enuious person named Gracian spake his mind of hym in this wyse: I wil not deny but that Dom Diego is one of the most excellent most honest and brauest knyghtes of Catheloigne, but in matters of Loue he seemeth to me so waltering and inconstant, as in euery place where he cometh, by and by he falleth in loue, and maketh as though he were sicke & would dy for the same Gineura maruelling at those words said vnto him: I pray you my frend to vse better talk of my lord Dom Diego

Dom Diego, and Gineura.

“ Diego, for I do thinke the Loue which the Knight doth beare to
“ a Gentlewoman of this Countrey, is so firme and assured, as none
“ other can remoue the same out of the Siege of his mynd: Lo howe
“ you be deceiued Gentlewoman (quod Gracian,) for vnder coloure
“ of dissimulate seruice, he and such as he is doe abuse the simplicity of Young Gentlewomen. And to proue my sayinge true, I
am assured that he is extremely enamored wth the Daughter of
Dom Ferrando de la Serre, of whom he receiued an Hauke, that
he loueth aboue all other things. Gineura remembryng the wordes
which certayn dayes before Dom Diego spake touching his hauke
began to suspect and beleue that which Gracian alleaged, and not
able to support the choler, which colde Jealousy bred in his stomack
went into his Chamber full of so greates griefe and heauynesse
as she was many tymes lyke to kill his selfe. In the end, hoppyng to
be reuenged of the wrong which shee beleued to receiue of Dom
Diego, determynd to endure his fortune patiently. In the meane
tyme she conceived in his Mynd a despyte and hatred so great and
extreme agaynst the poore Gentleman that thought lytle hereof
as the former loue was nothing in respecte of the reuenge by death
which she then desired vpon hym. Who the next day after his wō-
ted maner came to see him, hauing (to his great damage) the hauke
on his fist, which was the onely cause of all her Jealousie. Howe
as the Knight was in talke with the mother, seeyng that his belo-
ued came not at al (accordyng to his custome) to salute him and bid
him welcome, inquired how she dyd. One that loued hym more thā
the rest, sayd vnto hym: Syr, so soone as she knewe of your com-
ming, immediatly she wpthrew her selfe into his Chamber. He
that was wyse and well trayned by dissembled what he thought,
imagining that it was for some lytle fantasie, whereunto Women
willingly be subiecte. And therfore whē he thought time to depart
he toke leaue of the wydow, and as he was goyng down the staires
of the great Chamber, he met one of the maides of Gineura, whom
he prayed to commend him to his mistresse. Gineura during all this
time tooke no resse, deuising howe shee myght cutte off cleane his
loue entertained in Dom Diego, after she knewe that hee carryed
the

the Watke on hys fyst: beyng the onely Instrument of her frenste.
 And therfore thynkng hir selfe both despyfed and mocked of hir
 Knyght, and that he had done it in despyte of hir, she entred into so
 great rage and Choler, as she was like to fall mad. She being then
 in this trouble of Wynde, behold hir Gentlewoman came vnto hir,
 and dyd the Knyghts message. Who hearng but the semple name
 of hir supposed Ennemy, began to sighe so straungely, as a Man
 would haue thought hir soule presently would haue departed hir
 Body. Afterwards when she had banquished hir raging fit whych
 shaped hir speach, she gan very tenderly to wepe, saying: Ah tray-
 toz and vnfaithful Louer, is thys the recompence of the honest, and
 firme Amity whych I haue bozne thee, so wyckledly to deceiue me
 vnder the colour of so faine and detestable a Friendship? Ah rashe
 and arrant Theefe, is it I vyppon whome thou oughtest to bende
 thy wycked Crumpetie? Dost thou thinke that I am no better
 worth, but that thou prodigally shouldest waste myne honor to bear
 the spoyle thereof to hir, that is in nothing comparable vnto mee?
 Wherein haue I deserued thys discourtesy, if not by loung thee
 more than thy beauty and fained loue deserue? Dyddest thou dare
 to aduenture vyppon me, hauing thy Conscience wounded wryth
 such an abhominable and deadly Treason? Durst thou to offer
 thy Mouth to kysse my Hand, by the mouth of an other, to whome
 thou haddest before dedicated thy lying Lypes in thyne owne per-
 son: I most humbly thanke Almighty God that it pleased him to
 let mee see the Poison by thee prepared for the ruine of my Lyfe
 and Honor. Oa foole, hope not to take me in thy Trap, nor yet to
 deceiue me through thy sugred & deceitfull Words. For I sweare
 by the Almighty God, that so long as I lue, I will accompte thee
 none other, but the most cruell and mortall Ennemy that I haue in
 this world.

Then to accomplish the rest of hir carefull Wynde she wrote a
 Letter to giue hir farewell to hir olde friend Dom Diego. And
 for that purpose instructed hir Page with this Lesson, that when
 the Knyght should come, he should be ready before hir lodging and
 say vnto him in the behalfe of hir, that before he passed any further,
 hee shoulde reade the Letter, and not to sayle to doe the Con-
 sent

Dom Diego and Gineura.

sents: The Page which was malicious, and ill affectioned to Dom Diego, knowing the appointed day of his coming, wayted for him a quarter of a mile from the Castle, where he had not long tarried, but the innocent lover came, against whom the Page went, bearing about him more hurtfull and noysome Weapons, than all the Thieves and robbers had in all the Countrey of Catheloigne.

" In this manner presenting his mistresse letters, he said vnto him:
" My Lord, Madame Gineura my mistresse hath sent me vnto you:
" and because she knoweth how feareful you be to displease her, pray-
" eth you not to faile to reade this Letter before you passe anye
" further, and there withal to accomplysh the effecte thereof. The
" Knight abashed with that sodayne message, answered the Page
" God forbid my friend (quod he) that I should disobey her by anye
" meanes, vnto whom I haue geuen a full authoritie and puissance
" ouer myne affectyons. So receyuing the letters, he kissed them thre
" or foure tymes, and openyng them, found that he loaked not for, and
" red that whych he thought not off. The contents were these.

The Letters of faire Gineura, to the Knight Dom Diego.

Here shall passe no day of my Lyfe, from making com-
playnts of the dysloyall and perjured Lover, who be-
ing more esteemed and better beloued than thou dydst
deserue, hast made so small accompte of mee, whereof
I will be reuenged vpon my selfe, for that I so leghtly beleued thy
Wordes so full of craft and guyle. I am in mynd that thou hence-
forth shalt flye to buzze and beat the Bushes, where thou suspec-
test to catch the pray: for heere thou art lyke to be deceiued. Goe
barlet, (goe I say,) to deceyue her whych holdeth thee in her nets
and snares, and whose Presentes (althoughe of small Value)
moued thee more than the Honeste, Vertuous and Chaste
Loue, that Vertue her selfe began to knytte betwene vs.

be. And with a Carrion Rype hath made the fly further off, than the Wynde of the Rype was able to beare thee, God defende that Gineura should goe aboute to hynder thy follyes, and much lesse to suffer hir selfe to bee beguyled throughe thine Excuses. May rather God defend (except thou desirest to se me dy) that thou shouldst euer be in place where I am, assuring thee of thys my mynde, neuer to be chaunged so long as my soule shall rest wythin my body: which giuing breath vnto my panting breast, shal neuer be other, but a mortall enemy to Dom Diego: and such one as eue to the Death wyl not fayle to prosecute the default of the most traitorous and vnfaithfull Ruyght, that euer was gyte in girdle, or armed with Sword. And behold the last fauour that thou canst, or oughtest to hope of me, who truely not but onelye to martir and crucifye thee, and neuer shall be other but

The greatest Enemy, that euer thou haddest, or shalt haue, *Gineura the fayre.*

The myserable loue had no sooner red the Letter, but lifting by his Eyes to the heauens, he said: Was, my God thou knowest well if euer I haue offended, that I ought to be banished from the place, where my contentation is chyetly fixed, and from whence my heart shall neuer departe, chaunce what my mischappe and Fortune so euer shall: Then tournyng hymself towards the Page, he said: Sir Page my frend, say vnto my Ladye, most humblye commending me vnto hir, that for this present time I wyl not see hir, but hereafter she shall heare some newes from me. The Page well lessoned for the purpose, made hym aunswere, saying: Sir she hath willed me to say thus much by mouth, that ye cannot do hir greater pleasure, than neuer to come in place where shee is: for so much as the Daughter of Dom Ferrando de la Serre hath so catched you in hir nettes, that loth she is your faithfull heart shoulde hang in ballance, and expect the vncertaine loue of two Ladys at once.

Dom Diego hearing the truth of hys mischape, and the occasion of the same, made Lyghie of the matter for that tyme, tyme, till at length

Dom Diego and Gineura.

length the Choler of his Mistresse, were abated, that thereby shee might know vpon how brittle Ground she hadde planted, a suspicion of hir most faithfull and louing Seruant, and so retiring to his House, altogether vexed and yll contented, he wente into his Chamber, where with his Dagger he paunched the Gorge of the poore Birde, the cause of his Ladies Anger, saying: Ha vyle carraime Kite, I sweare by the bloud of him, that thou shalt neuer be the cause agayne, to make hir fret for such a trifling thing as thou art: I beleue that what so euer fure is hidden within the Body of this curst Kite, to engender a Plague, the same now is sealed on me, but I hope to doe my Mistresse vnderstande what Sacrifice I haue made of the thyng that was sent me, ready to do the lyke vpon mine owne flesh, where it shall please hir to commaund. So taking Inke and Paper, he made aunswere to Gineura as followeth.

The Letters of Dom Diego.

to *Gineura* the faire,

BUt who would euer thinck (my Lady deare) that a Leght Opinion could so soone haue diuided your good iudgement. so chas demyn your waight before you had heard what he was able to say, for himselfe: & truly I thought no moze to offend you, than the manner which you neuer knew, although you haue bene deceiued by coloured words, bittered by those that be envious of my happe, and Enimies of your top, who haue filled your minde full of false report, I sweare vnto you (by God, my good Lady) that neuer thinge entered into my fantasie moze, than a desire to serue you alone, and to auoide the acquaintance of all other, to preferue for you a pure and entire heart. Whereof longe agoone I made you an offer. In witness whereof I humbly beseech you to beleue, that so soone as you see this Birde (the cause of your anger and occasion of my mishap) toyne and pluckte in pieces, that my heart feeleth no lesse alteration or torment: for so long as I shall vnderstand your displeasure to endure against mee, assure your selfe my Life shall abide in no lesse paine

payne than my love was great, when frankly possessed your presence. Be it sufficient (Madame) for you to know, that I never thought to offend you. Be contented I beseech you, with this sacrifice which I send you, if not, that I doe the like upon mine owne body, which without your good will and grace can no longer live. For my life depending upon that only benefit, you ought not to be aslonned if the same sapling his nourishment both pearsh, as frustrate of that foode, proper, and apt for his Appetite: and by like meanes my sayd life shal reutur, if it may please you to spread your beames ouer mine obscure and base personage, and to receiue thys satisfaction for a fault not committed. And so waiting a gentle answer from your great curtesie, I humbly kisse your white and delicate handes, with all humility, praying God sweete Lady, to let you see how much I suffer without desert, and what puissance you haue ouer him that is all your

Faythfull and euer seruuant
most obedient *Dom Diego.*

The letter closed, and sealed, he deliuered to one of his faythfull and secret Seruants, to beare (with the deade Hauke) vnto Gineura, charging him diligently to take heede to his countenance, and aboue all, that faithfull he should beare away what shee dyd say vnto him for answer. His man sayled not to speede himselfe with diligence: And being come before Gineura, he presented that which his maister had sent her. She full of wrath and indignation, would not once vouchsafe to reade the letter, and much lesse to accept the present which was a witnesse of the contrary of that shee did beleue, and turninge vnto the Messenger, she sayde: Why frende, thou mayest goe get thee backe agayne, with the selfe same charge which thou hast brought, and say vnto thy maister, that I haue nothing to doe with his Letters, his Excuses, or any other thing that cometh from his handes, as one hauing good experience of his wylgits, and deceits. Tell him also, that I praye God, in good time I haue taken heede to the little fayth and trust that is in him for a countergarde, lightly neuer hereafter to bee de-

Dom Diego and Cincura.

ceived. The serving man would fayne haue framed an Oration to purge his master, but the fierce Gentlewoman brake of his talke, saying vnto him, that she was wel resolu'd vpon his intent, whych was that Dom Diego should neuer recover place in his minde, and that she hated him as much at that time as euer she loued him before. Vpon which answer the Messenger returned, so sorrowfull for the Misfortune of his Master (knowing him to be very innocent) as he knew full well into what desperate his Master would fall, when he vnderstode those pittifull and heauy newes: notwithstanding needes he must knowe them, and therefore when he was come before Dom Diego, hee receyted vnto him from point to point his ambassage, and deliuered him agayne his Letters. Whereof the infortunate Gentleman was so sore astonned, as he was like to haue fallen downe dead at that instant. *Alas* (sayde he) what yll luck is this, that when I thought to enioy the benefite of my attempte, Fortune hath reuoluted to bring me to the extremitie of the moste desperate man that euer liued? Is it possible that my good seruice should bee the cause of my approached ouerthrowe? *Alas*, what may true and faithfull louers henceforth hope for, if not the losse of thei? tyme, when after long deuotie and duetie, an Enuious foole shall come to deppeue them of thei? ioy and gladnesse, and thei? feeling the betternesse of thei? abandoned farewell, one that loueth lesse shall beare away the sweete fruite of such hope, and shall possesse withoute deserte the glozzy due to a good and faithfull suter. Ah sayre Cincura, that thou seeest not the grieffe whych I do feele, and the affliction wherewith I serue thee, and how much I would suffer to gayne and recover thy good grace and fauor. Oa vayne hope, which vntill now hast fylled me, with mirth and gladnesse, altogether spent and ouerwhelmed in the gaulle of thy bitter saueur, and in the tast of thy corrupted lecoure: better it had ben for me at this be-
gynning to haue refused thee, than afterwards receiued, cherished, & sincerely beloued to be banished for so light occasion, as I am full sore ashamed so conceiue the same within remembrance: but for-
tune shall not haue hir wil ouer me: for so long as I shall liue I will contynue the seruauit of Cincura, and my Life I will preserve,

to lette her vnderstand the force of Loue: By continuance where-
of, I will not sticke to sette my selfe on fyre with the lusty flames
of my passions, and then withdrawe the fyrebrandes of my loy, by
the rigour and frowardnesse that shall proceede from hir. When
h: had sntified his talke, he began to sigh and lament so stranges-
ly, as his mā was about to go cal the lady his mother, In whom
dyd appeare sutch signes, as if Death had ben at hand, or els that
he had ben attached wth the Spirite of phrensie. But when hee
saue hym aboute to come agayne to himselfe, he sayed thus vnto
hym: How now fyr, wyl you cast your selfe away for the foolthe
top of an vndiscrete girle, yll mannered and taught and who per-
chaunce doth al this: to proue how constant you would be? No no
sir, you must turne ouer an other Lease, and lth you bee determy-
ned to loue hir, you must perseuere in your pursute. For at length
it is impossible, but that this diamont hardnesse, must needes bee
mollified, if she be not a Diuell incarnate, moze furious than the
wildest Beasts, whych haunt the desertes of Lybia. Dom Diego
was comforted wth that admonition, and purposed to persist in
hys affection, and therefore sent many messages, gistes, letters, and
excuses to hys angry mistresse Gineura: But she made yet lesse ac-
cept of them than of the first, charging the messangers not to trou-
ble themselves about those trifles, for shee had rather dye than see
hym, or to receiue any thyng from him, whom shee deadly hated.

When newes hereof came to the Kinght, he was altogether im-
patient, and seeing the small profite which he did gaine by pursu-
ing his folish opinson, and not able to bestow his loue elsewhere,
he determined to die: & yet vnwilling to imbrue his hands with
his owne bloud, he purposed to wander as a vacabond into some
deserte, to persourne the course of his unhappye and sorrowfull
dages, hoping by that meanes to quench the heat of that amorous
rage, either by length of time, or by death, the last refuge of s^o im-
serable. For which purpose then, he caused to be made two yll-
grims wedges, s^o one for himselfe, & s^o other for his mā, & prepared al
their necessities for his volage. The writing a Letter to his Gi-
neura, he called one of his mē, to whom he said: I am going about

Dom Diego, and Gineura.

certayne of myne assayes, whereof I will haue no man to knowe,
and therefore when I am gone, thou shalt tell my Lady Mother
what I say to thee, and that within twenty dayes (God willing)
I meane to retourne: Wherevnto I require thee, that foure dayes
after my departure, and not before, thou beare theese Letters to
mistresse Gineura, and if so be she refuse to receiue them, saye not
to deliuer them vnto hir mother: take heede therefore if thou loue
me, to do all that which I haue geuen thee in charge. Afterwards
he called his seruauunt vnto hym, which had done the first message
vnto Gineura, which was a wise, and gentle fellow, in whom the
Knight reposed great affiaunce, to him he declared all his enter-
prise, and th'ende whereunto his fierce determination did extend.
The good Seruauunt whych loued his master, hearing his intent
so vnfreasonable, sayde vnto hym: Is it not enough for you sir to
“ peld: your selfe a pray to the most fierce, and cruell woman that ly-
“ ueth, but thus to augment hir gloze, by seeing hir selfe so victori-
“ ous ouer you? Are you ignorant what the mallice of Women
“ is, and how much they triumph in tormenting the poore blended
“ soules that become their Seruauunts, and what praise they attri-
“ bute vnto themselves, if by some misfortune they driue them to dis-
“ paire? Was it without cause that the Sage in times past did so
“ greatly hate that Sexe, and kinde, as the common Rutie, and or-
“ uerthrow of men? What moued the Greeke Poet to sing theese
“ verses, against all sorts of Women?

*A common woe though silly woman be to man,
Yet double ioy againe she doth vnto him bring:
The wedding night is one, as wedded folke tell can,
The other when the knill for hir poore soule doth bring.*

If not for that he knew the happinesse of man consisted more in a-
uoiding the acquaintance of that fury, than by embracing, and
cheerishing of the same, such his nature is altogether like vnto A-
sops Serpent, which being deliuered from pearill and daunger of
death by his shepheard, for recompence thereof, infected his whole
house with his venomous hissing, and rancorous breath. Howe
happy is hee that can master his owne affections, and like a free

man from that passion, can reioyce in liberty, fleeing the sweete euill
 which (I well perceyue) is the cause of your despayre. But sir,
 your wisdom ought to banquish those light conceits, by setting
 so light of that your rebellious Gentlewoman, as shee is vnwoz-
 thy to be fauoured by so great a Lord as you be, who deserueth a
 better personage than hers is, and a frendlier entertainment than
 a farewell so fondly giuen. Dom Diego, although that he tooke
 pleasure to heare those discourses of his faithfull seruant, yet he
 shewed so sower a Countenance vnto him, as the other with these
 few wordes helde his peace. Suth then it is so say, that you be re-
 solved in your mishap, it may please you to accept mee to wayte
 vpon you, whither you are determined to goe: For I meane not
 to lue at mine ease, and suffer my mayster, in payne and griefe. I
 will be partaker of that which Fortune shall prepare, buttill the
 heauens doe mitigate their rage vpon you, and your predestinate
 mishap. Dom Diego, who desired no better company, embraced
 him very louingly, thankinge him for the good will that hee bare
 him, and sayd: This present Night about midnight, we wil take
 our Journey, euen that way wheather our Lot and also Fortune
 shall Guide vs, attendinge epyther the ende of my Passion, or the
 whole ouerthrow of my selfe. Their intent they did put in prooffe:
 For at Midnight the Moone being cleere when all thinges were
 at rest, and the Crickets chirpinge through the Creausies of the
 Earth, they tooke their way vnseene of any. And so soone as Au-
 rora began to garnish hir Mantle with colozs of red and white, &
 the morning Starre of the Goddess of stealing loue, appeared,
 Dom Diego began to sigh, saying: Ah pee freshe and dewy Morn-
 ninges, that my hap is farre from the quiet of others, who after
 they haue rested vpon the Cogitation of theyr Case, and ioye, doe
 awake by the pleasaunte Tunes of the Byrdes, to perforce by
 effect that which the Shadowe and Fantasie of their Minde, did
 present by dreming in the Night, where I am constrained to se-
 parate by great dissaunce exceeding vehement continuation of my
 Torments, to followe wilde Beasts, wandring from thence where
 the greatest number of men doe quietly sleepe and take their rest.
 Ah Venus, whose Starre now conducteth me, and whose b. ames

Dom Diego and Gineura.

“ long agoe did glow and kinde my louing heart, how chaficeth it ?
“ I am not intreated according to thy desert of my constant minde & mea-
“ ning most sincere ? Alas, I looke not to expect any thing certayne
“ from thee, sith thou hast thy course amongst the wandring starres.
“ Must the Influence of one Starre that ruleth ouer mee, deface
“ that which the Heauens would to bee accomplished, and that my
“ cruel mistresse, deluding my languors and griefs triumpheth ouer
“ mine infirmity, and ouerwhelmeth me with care and sorrow, that I
“ liue pining away, amongst the sauage beasts in the Wildernesse ?
“ for so much as without the grace of my Lady, all company shalbe
“ so tedious and lothsome vnto me, that the only thought of a true re-
“ conciliation with hir, that hath my heart, shal serue for the comfort &
“ true remedy of all my troubles. Whiles he had with these pangs
forgotten himselfe, hee sawe that the day begin to waxe cleere, the
Sun already spreading his golden beames vpon the earth & there-
fore hastily he set himselfe southwards, vsing Byways, & far from
common vsed trades, so neere as he could, that hee might not by any
meanes be knowne. Thus they rode forth till Poone : but seeing
their horse to be weary and faynt, they lighted at a village, farre
from the high way : Where they refreshed themselves, and bayted
their horse vntill it was late. In this sort by the space of thre daies
they trauesed the Countrey, vntill they arrived to the foote of a
mountayne, not frequented almost but by Wilde & sauage Beasts.
The countrey round about was very fayre, pleasaunt, and fit for
the solitarines of the Knight : for if shadow pleased him, hee might
be delighted with the couert of an infinite number of fructifull trees,
wherewith only nature had furnished those hideous and Sauage
Desertes. Next to the high and wel timbred Forrests, there were
groues and bushes for exercise of hunting. A man could desire no
kinde of Venison, but it was to be had in that Wildernesse : there
might be seene also a certaine sharpe and rude situation of craggy,
and vnfructifull rocks, which notwithstanding yeilded some plea-
sure to the Eyes, to see them tapissed with a pale moasse Greene,
which disposed into a frizeled guise, made the place pleasaunt and
the Rock soft, according to the fashion of a couerture. There was
also a very fayre and wide Caue, which liked him well, compassed
round

round about with firre trees, Pine apples, Cipres, and Trees
 distilling a certayne Rosen or Gume, towards the bottom wheres
 of, in the way downe to the valley, a man might haue viewed a pas-
 sing company of Swe trees, Poplers of all sortes, a Maple tres,
 the Leaues wherof fell into a Lake or Pond, which came by cer-
 tayne smal gutters into a fresh and very cleare fountayne right a-
 gaynst that Caue. The knight viewing the auncienty and excellē-
 cy of the place, deliberated by and by to plant there the siege of his
 abode, for performing of his penaunce and life. And therefore sayd
 vnto his seruauant: My friend, I am aduised that this place shall
 be the Monastery, for the voluntary profession of our religion, and
 where we will accomplish the Voyage of our Deuotion. Thou
 see'st both the beauty and solitarinesse, which do rather commaund
 vs here to rest, than any other place nere at hand. The Seruauant
 yelded to the pleasure of his master, and so lightinge from their
 horse, they disurnished them of their Saddles, and Bridles, gies
 uing to them the liberty of 5 fields, of whom afterwards they ne-
 uer heard moze newes. The saddles they placed within the Caue
 & leauing their ordinary apparell, clothed themselves in Pilgrimes
 weedes, fortifying the mouth of the caue, that wilde beasts should
 not hurt them when they were a sleepe. There the seruauant began
 to play the Upholster, and to make. 2. little beds of mosse, whose
 spindle & wheele were of wood, so well polished & trimmed, as if
 he had bin a Carpenter wel expert in that Science. They liued of
 nothing els, but of the fruits of those wilde trees, sometimes of
 herbs, vntill they had deuised to make a crosbow of wood, wherewith
 they killed now & then a Hare, a Cony, a Kid, and many times some
 stronger beast remaind with them for gage: Whose bloude they
 pressed out betwene. 2. pieces of wood, and rolled them against the
 Sunne, seruing the same in, as if it had bene a right good Dish
 for their first course of their sober and vndelicate Table, whereat
 the pure water of the fountayne, next vnto their hollow and deepe
 house, serued in steade of the good Wyne, and delicious Drinks
 that abounded in the house of Dom Diego. Who liuing in this
 pooze estate, ceased night nor day to complayne of his hard fortune
 and cursed plight, going many times through the Desertes all a-

Dom Diego and Gineura.

done, the better to muse and study thereupon, or (peraduenture) de-
 stroues that some hungry Beare shoulde descend from the Moun-
 tayne, to finish his life and paynesfull griefes. But the good ser-
 uant knowing his Masters sorow and mishap, would neuer go
 out of his sight, but rather exhorted him to retourne home againe
 to his goods and possessions, and to forget that order of life, vn-
 worthy for such a personage as he was, and vncome for him that
 ought to be indued with reason and iudgement. But the desperate
 Gentleman willfall in his former deliberation, would not heare
 him speake of such retrayt. So that if it escaped the seruant to
 be earnest and sharpe against the rudenesse & sottish cruelty of Gi-
 neura, it was a pastime to see Dom Diego moue in choller against
 him, saying: Art thou so hardy to speake it of the Gentlewoman,
 which is the most vertuous personage vnder the coape of heauen?
 Thou maist thancke the loue I beare thee, other wise I would
 make thee feelee how much the daunder of her toucheth mee at the
 heart, which hath right to punish me thus for mine indiscretion, &
 that it is I that commit the wronge in cōplaining of hir severity.
 Now sir sayd the seruant, I do in deede perceiue what maner of
 thing the contagion of loue is. For they which once doe feelee the
 corruption of that Pye, think nothing good or sauoy, but the st-
 the smel of þ pestiferous meat. Wherefore I humbly beseech you
 a little to set apart, & remoue frō minde, that feare & presumptuous
 dame Gineura, and by forgetting hir beauty, to measure hir Des-
 sert & your griefe, you shall knowe then (being guided by reasons
 Inze) that you are the simplest and weakest man in the Worlde, to
 torment your selfe in this wise, and that shee is the fondest Girl.
 wholly draught of wits, so to abuse a Noble man that meritteth
 good grace and sweete embracement of one more fayre, wise & mo-
 dest, than she sheweth hirselfe to be. The knight hearing these words
 thought to abandon patience, but yet replied vnto him: I sweare
 vnto thee by God, that if euer thou haue any such talke agayne,
 eether I will dye, or thou shalt depart out of my company, for I
 cannot abide by any meanes to suffer one to despise hir whom I do
 loue & honor, and shal so do during life. The seruant loth to offend
 his master helde his peace, heauy for all that in heart, to remem-
 ber how the poore Gentleman was resolved to finish there, (in a des-

bert vnkn^{en} to his freendes) all the remnaunt of his life. And
 who aswell for the euill order, and not accustome nourture, as for
 assiduell playnts and weepings, was become so pale and leane, as
 he better resembled a drye Chip, than a man, hauing feeling or lyfe.
 His eyes were sonke into his Head, his Beard vnkempt, his hayre
 staring, his skin full of filth, altogether more like a wilde and Sa-
 uage creature (such one as is depainted in brutall forme) than faire
 Dom Diego, so much commended, and esteemed throughout the
 kingdome of Spayne. Now leaue we this amozous Hermit to pas
 sonate and playne his misfortune, to see to what ende the Letters
 came that he wrote to his cruel Mistresse. The day prefixed for de-
 liuery of his Letters, his seruant did his charge, and being come
 to the house of Gineura, founde hir in the Hall with hir mother,
 where kissing his Maysters Letters, hee presented them with ve-
 ry great reuerence to the Gentlewoman. Who so soone as shee
 knew that they came from Dom Diego, all chaunged into raging
 colour, and foolish choller, theye them incontinently vppon the
 Grounde, sayinge : Sufficeth it not thy Mayster, that already
 twice I haue done him to vnderstand, that I haue nothing to doe³³
 with his Letters nor Ambassadors, and yet goeth he about by such³³
 assaults to encrease my displeasure and agony, by the only reme-³³
 dyance of his folly? The Mother seeing that vnciuile order, al-³³
 though shee vnderstoode the cause, and knowinge that there was
 some disorde betweene the two Louers, yet thought it to bee but
 right, as the Comike Poet sayeth:

*The Louers often falling out,
 And pretie warling rage:
 Of pleasaunt loue it is no doubt,
 The sure renewing gage.*

She went vnto hir Daughter, and sayd vnto hir: What great
 rage is this? Let me see that Letter that I may reade it: For I
 haue no feare that Dom Diego can deceiue me with the sweetenes
 of his honny wordes. And truly Daughter you neede not feare to
 touch them, for if there were any Poi son in them, it proceeded
 from your beauty that hath bitten and stong the knight, wherof if
 he assay to make you a partaker, I see no cause why he ou_ght to be

Dom Diego and Gineura.

thus rigorously reſected, deſeruing by his honeſty a better enter-
tainment at your hands. In the meane time one of the ſeruing
men toke vp the Letters, and gaue them to the Lady, who reading
them, found written as followeth.

The letters of Dom Diego to Miſtreſſe Gineura.

My deareſt and moſt welbeloued Lady, ſith that mine innocen-
cy can finde no reſting place within your tender Coſple, what
honeſt excuſe or true reaſon ſo euer I do alledge, & ſith your heart
declareth it ſelfe to be Implacable, and not pleaſed with hym that
neuer offended you, except it were for ouermuch loue, which for
guerdon of the rare and incomparable amity, I perceyue my ſelfe
to be hated deadly of you and in ſuch wiſe contemned, as the only
recozd of my name cauſeth in you an inſupportable griefe and diſ-
pleaſure vnſpeakable. To auoide I ſay your indignation, and by
my miſhap to render vnto you ſome eaſe and contentment, I haue
meant to diſlodge my ſelfe ſo far from this Countrey, as nether
you nor any other, ſhal euer heare by fame or true report, the place
of my abode, nor the graue wherein my Bones ſhall reſt. And al-
though it be an inexplicable hearts ſorrow and torment, which by
way of pen can not be declared, to be thus miſpriſed of you, whom
alone I do loue & ſhal, ſo long as mine afflicted ſoule ſhall hang v-
pon the feeble and brittle threede of life: yet for all that, this griefe
falling vpon me, is not irkeſome, as the puniſhment is grieuous,
by imagining the paſſion of your minde, when it is diſquieted with
diſdayne & wrath againſt me, who liueth not, but to wander vpon
the thoughts of your perfectionſ. And forſomuch as I doe feele
for the debility that is in mee, that I am not able any longer to
heare the ſowre ſhockes of my bitter tormentſ & martyrdomes that
I preſently doe ſuffer, yet before my life doe fayle, and death doe
ſeaſe vpon my ſenſes, I haue written vnto you this preſent letter
for a teſtimonſall of your rigour, which is the marke that ſuffi-
eth my vnguiltigneſſe. And although I doe complayne of mine vn-
happy

happy fortune, yet I meane not to accuse you, onely contented that
 eche man doe know, that firme affection and eternall thraldome do
 deserue other recompence than a farewell so cruell. And I am wel
 assured, that when I am deade, you will pitty my torment, know-
 ing then, although to late, that my loyalty was so sincere, as the
 report of those was false, that made you beleue, that I was very
 far in loue with the daughter of Dom Ferrande de la Serre. Was,
 shall a noble Gentleman that hath bene well trayned vp, be forbid-
 den to receiue the gifts that come from a vertuous Gentlewoman?
 Ought you to be so incapable and boyde of humanity, that the sa-
 crifice which I haue made of the pooze Birde, the cause of your
 disdayne, my repentaunce, my lawfull excuses, are not able to let
 you see the contrary of you persussion? Ah, ah, I see that the dark
 and obscure bayle of vniust disdayne and immoderate anger, hath
 so blindfold your eyes, and inuegled your mynde, as you can not
 ingde the truth of my cause and the vnrighteousnes of our qua-
 rell. I will render vnto you none other certificate of myne inno-
 cency, but my languishing heart, which you clepe betweene your
 hands, feling such rude intertaynement there, of whom he loaked
 for reioyse of his trauayles. But forsomuch then as you do hate
 me what resteth for me to do, but to procure destructio to my self?
 And sith your pleasure consisteth in mine overthrow, reason wil-
 leth I obey you, & by deth to sacrifice my life in like maner as by
 life you were my only mistresse of my heart. One only thing cheereth
 by my heart agayne, & maketh my death moze myserable, which is,
 that in dying so innocent as I am, you shall remaine guilty, and
 the onely cause of my ruine. My Lyfe will depart like a Dulle,
 and Soule shall vanish like a sweete Summers blast: Whereby
 you shall be euer deemed for a cruell Woman and bloudy Murde-
 rer of your deuout and faithfull Seruaunt. I pray to God mine
 owne sweete Lady, to giue you such Contentation, Joye, & lea-
 sure, and Gladnesse, as you do cause through your Rigor, Discon-
 tentment, Griefe, and Displeasure to the pooze languishing Crea-
 ture, and who for euermoze shall bee

Your most obedient and affec-
 ted seruaunt *Dom Diego.*

The

Dom Diego and Gineura.

The good Lady hauing red the Letter, was so adonned, as hir
 words for a long space staled within hir mouth hir heart panted, &
 spirite was full of confusion, hir minde was filled wth sorrow, to con-
 sider the anguishes of the poore bagabond, and foster Hermit. In
 the ende before the household dissembling hir passion which moued
 hir sense, she tooke hir Daughter a side, whom very sharply she re-
 buked, for that she was the cause of the losse of so notable and per-
 fect a Knight as Dom Diego was. Then she red the Letter vnto
 hir, and as all hir eloquence was not able to moue that cruel dam-
 sell, more venemous than a Serpent agaynst the Knight who (as
 she thought) had not indured the one halfe of that which his in-
 constancy and lightnesse had wel deserved, whose obstinate minde
 the Mother percepuinge, sayde vnto hir: I pray to God (deare
 daughter) that for your frowardnesse, you bee not blinded in your
 beauty, and for refusall of so great a benefit as is the alliaunce of
 Dom Diego, you be not abused with such a one as shall dimme
 light of your renoume & gloze, which hitherto you haue gayned as
 mongs the sobrest and modest maydens. Hauing sayd so, the wyfe
 and sage widow, went to the seruaunt of Dom Diego, of whom she
 demaunded what day his master departed, which she knowing, &
 not ignorant of the occasion, was more wroth than before: Not-
 withstanding she dissembled what she thought, and sending backe
 his seruaunt, she requited him to do hir hearty commendations to
 the Lady his mistresse, which he did. The good Lady was ioyfull
 of them not knowing the contents of hir sonnes letters, but looked
 rather that he had sent word vnto his Lady of the iust hour of his
 returne. Howbeit when she saw that in the space of. 10. dayes, not
 yet within a moneth he came not, shee could not tell what to thinke, so
 dolorous was she for the absence of hir sonne. The time passinge
 without hearing any newes frō him she began to torment hir selfe,
 and be so peniue, as if she had heard certayne newes of his death.
 Alas (quod she) and wherefore haue the heauens giuen me the pos-
 session of such an exquisite fruiet, to deprive mee thereof before I
 do partake the goodnesse, and sweetenes therof, & before I do enioy
 & grifis proceeding frō so goodly a stock. Ah God, I feare & my im-
 mode-

moderate loue is the occasion of the losse of my sonne, & the whole
 ruine of the mother, to the demolition & wast of al our goods. And
 I would that it had pleased God (my Son) & Hunters game had
 neuer bene so deere, for thinking to catch & pray thou thy selfe wast
 taken & thou wandring for thy better dispozt, missing & right way,
 so strangely didst straggle, & hard it is to reduce thee into & right
 track agayne. At least wise if I knew & place, whereunto thou arte
 repaired to finde againe thy losse, I would trauell thither to beare
 the company, rather than to leue heere horde of a Husbande, be-
 trayed by them whom I best trusted, and bereft from the presence
 of the my Sonne, the Staffe and onely comfort of myne olde age,
 and the certayne hope of all our House, and family. Now if the
 Mother vexed hir selfe, the Sonne was ealed with no great re-
 loyce, being now a free Cittizen with the Beasts, & Foules of the
 Forrests, Denues, and Cauees, leauing not the Profundity of the
 Woods, the Craggednes of the Rocks, or beauty of the Valley,
 without some signe or token of his griefe. Sometime with a Pa-
 cheon wel harpned, seruing him in steede of a Penknife, he graued
 the successe of his loue vpon an hard stone. Other times the softe
 Bark of some tender and new growen spray serued him in steede
 of Paper, or Parchment. For there he carued in Cyphres proper-
 ly combined with a Knot (not easly to be knowne) the name of his
 Lady, interlaced so properly with his owne, that the finest heads
 might bee decepued, to Disciphze the righte interpretation. V-
 pon a day then, as he passed his time (according to his custome) to
 muse vpon Whatehappes, & to frame his successe of loue in the Wyre,
 hee Ingraued these Verses vpon a Stone by a Fountayne side,
 adioyning to his rude and Savage house.

*If any Forrest Pan, doth haunt here in this place,
 Or wandring Nymphe, hath hard my wofull playnt:
 The one may well beholde, and view what drop of grace,
 I haue deseru'de, and eke what griefes my heart do taint,
 The other lend to me some broke, or showre of rayne,
 To moyst myne heart and eyes, the gutters of my brayne.*

Somes

Dom Diego and Gineura.

Some what further of many times at the rising of the Sunne, he mounted the Top of an high and Greene Mountayne to solace himselfe vpon the freshe and Greene grasse, where foure Pillers were erected, (eether naturally done by Dame Nature, or wrought by the industry of man,) which boze a Stone in forme foure square, well hewed, made and trimmed in maner of an Altier, vpon which Altier he dedicated these verses to the Posterity.

*Upon this holy squared stone, which Altier men doe call,
To some one of the Gods above, that consecrated is,
This dolefull verse I do ingraue, in token of my thrall,
And deadly griefes that do my silly heart oppresse,
And vex with endlesse paynes, which neuer quiet is,
This wofull verse (I say) as surest gage of mydistresse,
I fixe on Altier stone for euer to remayne,
To shew the heart of truest wight, that euer lined in payne.*

And vpon the byms of that Table, he carued these Wordes:

*This Mason worke erected here, shall not so long abide,
As shall the common name of two, that now uncoupled bee,
Who after froward fortune past, knit eche in one degree,
Shall render for right earnest loue, reward on either side.*

And befoze his Lodging in that wilde and stony Forrest vpon the Barke of a lofty Beeche Tree, feeling in himselfe, and vnaccustomed lustnesse, thus he wrote :

*Th' encreasing beauty of thy shape, extending far thy name,
By like increase I hope to see, so stretched forth my fame.*

This man seeing him to begin to be merily disposed, one day said vnto him : And wherefoze sir serueth the Lute, which I brought amongst our Whales, if you do not assay thereby to recreate your selfe, and sing thereupon the pæples of hir whom you loue so well:
yes and

yea and if I may so say, by worshipping hir, you doe commit I-
 dolatry in your minde. Is it not your pleasure that I fetch the
 same vnto you, that by imitation of Orpheus, you may moue the
 Trees, Rocks, and wilde Beastes to bewayle your misfortune,
 and witness the penance that you doe for hir sake, without cause
 of so hapnous punishment: I see well (quod the Knight) that thou
 wouldest I should be mery but mirth is so far from me, as I am
 estranged from hir that holdeth me in this misery. Notwithstan-
 ding I will performe thy request, and will awake that instrument
 in this desert place, wherewith sometime I witnessed the greatest
 part of my passions. Then the Knight recepuing the Lute soun-
 ded thereupon this song ensuing.

*The waues and troubled scum, that moues the Seas alofte,
 Which runs & roares against the rocks, & threatneth daun-
 Resembleth so the fits of loue, (gers oft
 That dayly do my fansie moue.*

*My heart it is the ship, that drines on salt Sea some,
 And reason sayles with senselesse wit, & neuer loketh home,
 For loue is guide, and leades the daunce,
 That brings good hap, or breeds mischaunce.*

*The furious flames of loue, that neuer ceaseth sure,
 Are loe the busie sailes and oares, that would my rest procure
 And as in Skies, great windes do blo,
 My swift desires runnes, fleeing so.*

*As sweete Zephyrus breath, in spring time feedes the floures,
 My mistresse voice would ioye my wits, by hir most heavenly
 And would exchange my state I say, (powers,
 As Sommer chaungeth Winters day. She is*

Dom Diego and Gineura.

*She is the Artique starre, the gracious Goddesse to,
She hath the might to make and marre, to helpe or els ymdo,
Both death and life, she hath at call,
My warre, my peace, my ruine and all.*

*She makes me liue in woe, and guides my sighs and lookes,
She holds my fredome by a lace, as fish is held with hookes,
Thus by despayre, in this conceite,
I swallow vp both hooke and baite.*

*And in the deserts loe I liue, among the sauage kinde,
And spend my time in wofull sighs, rayd up by care of minde,
All hopelesse to, in paynes I pyne,
And ioyes for euer doe resigne.*

*I dread but Charons boat, if she no mercy giue,
In darknesse then my soule shall dwell, in Plutos raygne to liue
But I beleue, she hath no care,
On him that caught is in hir snare.*

*If she release my woe, a thousand tharkes therefore,
I shall hir giue, and make the world to honor hir the more,
The Gods in Skies will prayse the same,
And recorde beare of hir good name.*

*O happy is that life, that after torment straunge,
And earthly sorows on this mould, for better life shal chaunge
And liue amongs the Gods on high,
Where loue and Lovers neuer die.*

O lyfe

*Onlye that here I leade, I freely giue thee now,
Vnto the fayre where ere she rests, and loke thou shew hir how
I linger forth my yeares and dayes,
To winne of hir a crowne of prayse.*

*And thou my pleasaunt Lute, cease not my songs to sound,
And shew the tormētts of my minde, that I through loue haue
And alwayes tell my Mistresse still, (found,
Hir worthy vertues rules my will.*

The ffoer louer singing this song, sighing sundry tymes betwene, the trickling teares ranne downe his Face: Which thereby was so disfigured, as scarce could any man haue knowne him, that al the dayes of their lpe had frequented his company. Such was the state of this miserable yong gentleman, who dronke with his owne Wyne, balanced himselfe downe to despayre rather than to the hope of that which he durst not looke for. Howbeit like as the mischiefs of men be not alwayes durable, and that all things haue their proper season, euen so Fortune repentinge hir euill intreaty which wrongfully shee had caused this pooze penitentiary of Gineura to endure, prepared a meanes to readuauce hym aloft vpon hir Wheele, euen when hee thought least of it. And certes, heretn appeared the mercy of God, who causeth things difficult & almost impossible, to be so easy, as those ordinarily be brought to passe. How may this exaple show how they which be pliged in the bottome of deshaunce, deeming their life vriterly forlorne, be soone exalted euen to the top of all glozy, and felicity? Hath not our age seene a man whych was by aucthority of his Enemy indged to be, ready to bee caried forth to the Scaffolde miraculously deliuered from that daunger, and (wherein the works of God are to be marueyled) the same man to be called to the dignity of a Prynce, and preferred aboue all the rest of the people? Now Dom Diego attending his fieldish Philosophy in the solitary dales of the riche Mountayne Pyrene, was rescowed with an helpe vnlooked for as you shall heare.

Am,

Pow

Dom Diego and Gineura.

You haue hard how hee had a Neighbour and singular Friend
a Noble Gentleman named Dom Roderico. This Gentleman
amongst all his faithfull Companions, did most lament the harde
fortune of Dom Diego. It came to passe that. 22. Moneths after
that the poore Wilde penitent person was gonne on Pilgrimage.
Dom Roderico tooke his Journey into Calcoyne for diuers his
bzgent Affayres, which after hee had dispatched, were it that hee
was gon out of his way, or that GOD (as it is most likeli) did
driue him thither, he approached towarde that Coast of the Pyren
Mountaynes, where that time his good Frende Dom Diego did
Inhabite, who dayly grew so Weake and Feeble, as if God had
not sent him sodayne succour hee had gotten that hee most desired,
which was death that should haue bene the ende of his trauayles
and Afflictions. The trauay of Dom Roderico being then a bowe
shot of from the sauage Cabin of Dom Diego, espied the tractes
of mens feete newly troden, and beganne to maruaile what hee
should hee that dwelled there, considering the Solitude, and In-
fertility of the Place, and also that the same was farre of from
Towne or house. And as they deuised hereupon, they saw a man
going into a Cauen, which was Dom Diego; comming from ma-
king his complayntes vppon the Rock spoken of before. From
which hauinge turned his face towarde that parte of the Worlde
where he thought the lodging was of that Sanctuary, whereunto he
addressed his deuotions, Dom Diego hearing the Noise of the
horse, was retired because hee woulde not bee seene. The Knight
which rode that way, seeing that, and knowing how far he was oute
of the way, commaunded one of his men to Gallop towarde the
Rocke, to learne what People they were that dwelled within,
and to demaund how they might coaste to the high way that led to
Barcelona. The Seruaunt approaching neare the Cauen, perceiued
the same so well Empaled and Fortified with Beastes Skins be-
foze, fearing also that they were Cheeues and Robbers that dwel-
led there, durst not appoche, and lesse enquire the way, and there-
foze returned towards his Mayster to whom hee tolde what hee
saw. The Knight of another maner of Mettal and hardinesse than
that Rascall and coward seruaunt, like a stout, Couragious, and
bastaunt

galliaunt Man, poasted to the Cave, and demandinge who was
 within, he saw a man come forth so disfigured, horrible to look vpon,
 pale with staring hayre vpright, as pittfull it was to behold
 him, which was the seruauent of the foster Hermit. Of him Roderico
 demanded what he was, and which was the way to Barcelone. Shee
 answered that disguised person: I know not not how
 to answer your demand, & much lesse I know the countrey where
 we now presently be. But sir sayd he sighing, true it is that we be
 two poore companions whom fortune hath sent hither, by what ill
 aduenture I know not, to do Penance for our Trespasses, and
 Offences. Roderico hearing him say so, began to call to his remembrance
 his freende Dom Diego, although he neuer before that time suspected
 the place of his abode. Hee lighted then from his horse, desirous to see
 the singularities of the Roche, and the magnificence of the Caustly
 lodging, where hee entred and sawe him whom he sought for, and yet
 for all that did not know him. He commoned with him a long time
 of the pleasure of the solitary life in respect of them that liued
 intangled with the combersome follies of this World. For somuch
 (quod he) as the spirit is distracted and withdrawn from worldly
 troubles is cleaue to the contemplation of heauenly thinges, and
 sooner attendeth to the knowledge and reuerence of his God, than
 those that bee conuersant amongs men, and to conclude, the
 complaints, the delights, the ambitions, couetousnesse, vanities,
 and superfluities that abound in the confused Maze of worldly
 troupe, doe cause a misknowledge of our selues, a forgetfulness
 of our Creator, & many times a negligence of piety and purenesse
 of Religion.

Whiles the unknowne Hermit, and the knight Roderico talked
 of these thinges, the Seruauntes of Roderico visiting all the
 Corners of the deepe, and Stony Cell of those Penitents by
 fortune espied two Saddles, one of them richely wroughte
 and Armed with Plates of Steele, that had bene made for some
 goodly Ieniet. And vpon the Plate well wroughte, Grauen
 and Enameled, the Golde for all the Rust cankering the
 Plate, ded yet appeare. For which purpose one of them

Am 2. sayde.

Dom Diego, and Gineura.

sayd to the seruante of Dom Diego, good Father hitherto I see
neither Mule, nor Horse, for whom these Saddles can serue, I
pray thee to sell them vnto vs, for they will doe vs moze pleasure,
than presently they do pou. Masters (quod the Hermit,) if they like
you, they be at your commaundement. In the meane time Roderico
hauing ended his talke with the other Hermit, without knowing
of any thinge that he desired, sayd vnto his men. Nowe str to horse
and leaue wee these pooze people to rest in peace, and let vs goe
seeke for the right way which wee so well as they haue lost. Sir
(quod one of his men,) there be two Saddles, & one of them is so
exceeding fayre, so well garnished and wrought as euer you saw.
The Knight feeling in himselfe an vnaccustomed Motion, caused
the to be brought before him and as he viewed & marked the riche
Harnesse, and Trappings of the same, he staret to looke vpon
the vnder parte minionly wrought, and in the middelt of the en-
grauing he red this deuise in the Spanish Tongue.

Que brantare la fe, es causamuy fea.

That is,

To violate or breake fayth, is a thing detestable.

That only inscription made him to pause a while. For it was the
Poesse that Dom Diego bore ordinarily in his armes, which mo-
ued him to think that without doubt one of those Pilgrimes was
the very same man to whom that Saddle did appertayne. And
therefore he bent himselfe very attentiuely afterwarde to behold
first the one, and then the other of those desert Citizeng. But they
were so altered, as hee was not able to know them agayne. Dom
Diego seeing his freende so neare him, and the desire that he had
to knowe hym, chased very much in his mynde, and the moze his
Rage began to waxe, when hee saw Roderico approach neare vn-
to hym moze aduisedly to looke vpon hym, for hee had not hys
owne Affections so much at commaundement, but hys Bloude
mooued hys Entrailles, and mounting into the most known place,
caused outwardly the alteration which hee endured, to appeare.
Roderico seeing hym to chaunge colour, was assured of y which
before hee durst not suspect: And that which made him the sooner
believe

belene that he was not deceined, was a little tust of haire, so yellow as Gold, which Dom Diego had vpon his Specke, whereof Dom Roderico taking heede, gaue ouer all suspicion, and was well assured of that he doubted. And therefore displaying himselfe with hys armes opened vpon the Specke of his friend, and imbracing him very louingly, his face bedew'd with teares, sayd vnto hym: Alas my Lord Dom Diego, what euill lucke from Heauen hath departed you from the good company of them which dye for sorrow, to see themselves berieued of the Beauty, light and ornament of their fellowship? What are they that haue giuen you occasion thus to Eclipse the brightnesse of your name, when it ought most clearely to shyne, both for theyr present pleasure, and for the honour of your age? Is it from me Sir, that you ought thus to hide your selfe? Doe you thinke me so to be blind, that I know not right well, that you are Dom Diego, that is so renoumed for vertue and prowesse? I would not haue tarried here so longe, but to carry away a power to reioyce two persons, you being the one, by withholding your selfe from this heauy and bitter misery. And therefore, and my selfe the other, to enioy your Company, and by bearing newes to your frends, who sth your departure, do be waille and lament the same. Dom Diego seeing that he was not able to conceale the truth of that which was euidently seene, and the Louing imbracements of his best friends, began to feele a certaine tendernesse of heart like vnto that which the mother conceyueth, when she recouereth hir Sonne that is long absent, or the chaste Wyfe, the presence of hir deare husband, when she clepeth him betwene hir armes, and frankly culleth and cherisheth hym at hir pleasure. For which cause not able to refrain any longer for sorrow together, weeping and sighing began to imbrace hym with so good a hearty affection, as with good wyl the other had sought and longed to knowe where he was. And being come againe to himselfe, he sayd to his faithfull and most louing friend: Oh God, how vneasy and difficult be thy iudgments to comprehend? I had thought to lue here miserably, vnknewe to al the world, behold, I am discouered, when I thought least of it, I am in deede quod he to Roderico) that wretched and vnfournate Dom Diego, euen

Dom Diego, and Gineura.

that she very great and loving friend, who weary of his life, as
 " affected with his unhapp, and constrained by fortune, is retyred into
 " these desertes to accomplish the ouerplus of the rest of his ill luck.
 " Now sith that I haue satisfied you herein, I beseech you that be-
 " ing content with my sight, yet will got you hence and leaue me
 " heere to perfoyme that litle remnant whych I haue to lyeue, with-
 " out telling to any person that I am aliue, or yet to manifeste the
 " place of my abode. What is that you say Sir (sayd Roderico) are
 " you so farre brought from your right wits, to haue a minde to
 " continue this brutall life, to deppreue al your friends from the joy
 " whych they receiue by intoying your company? Think I pray you
 " that God hath caused vs to be boyn noble men, and hauing power
 " and authorite not to lyeue in Corners, or be buried amids the slaue-
 " ry of the popular sort, or remain idle within great palaces or se-
 " crete Corners, but rather to illustrat and giue light with the ex-
 " ample of our vertue to those that shal apply theselues to our dex-
 " terity of good behantoi, and do lyeue as depending vpon our edicts
 " and commaundements: I appeale to your faith, what good shal
 " succede to your subiects, who haue both heard and also knowne
 " the benefitt bestowed vpon them by G O D, for that hee gaue
 " them a L O R D so modest and vertuous, and before they haue
 " experimented the effect of his goodnesse and Vertue, deprived of
 " him, that is adorned and garnished with such perfections, What
 " comfort, contentation and joy shal the Lady your mother receiue,
 " by seeing your losse to be so sodaine, after your good and delicate
 " bringeing vp, instructed with such great diligence and bitterly be-
 " rieted of the fruct of that education? It is you Sir, that may com-
 " maund obedience to Parents, succor to the afflicted, and iustice
 " to them that craue it: Alas, they be your poore subiects that make
 " complaints, crier of you, for denying them your due presence. It is
 " you of whom my good madame both complayne, as of him that
 " hath broken & violared his faith, for not comming home at the pro-
 " mised day. Now as he was about to continue his oration, Dom
 " Diego unwilling to heare him, brake of his talk saying: Th Sir, and
 " my great friend: It is an easy matter for you to iudge of mine af-
 " faires, and to blame myne absence, not knowing peradventure the
 " cause

caple thereof. But I esteeme you a man of so good iudgement, and so great a friend of thinges that be honeste, and a Gentleman of great fidelity, as by vnderstanding my hard luck, when you be aduertised of the cause of my withdrawing into this solitary place, you will rightly confesse, and plainly see that the wisest and most constant haue committed more vaine follies than those don by mee. Forced with like spirite that now moueth and tormenteth me. As being sayd, he tooke aside Roderico, where he dyd tell vnto hym the whole discourse both of his Loue, and also of the rigor of hys Lady, not without weeping, in such abundance, and with such frequent sighes and sobbs, interrupting so hys speech, as Roderico was constrained to keepe him company, by remembering the obstinacie of hir that was the Distresse of his heart, and thinkeinge that already he had seene the effect of like mishap to fall vpon his owne head, or neare vnto the like, for greater distresse than that which he sawe his deare and perfect friend to endure. Forwonderstanding he assayed to remoue him from that desperate minde, and opinion of continuance in the desert. But the forward penitente swoze vnto hym, that so long as he liued, (without place recovered in the good graces of his Ginuera, he would not returne home to his house, but rather change his being, to seke more savage abode, and lesse frequented than that was. For (quod hee) to what purpose shall my retourne serue where continuance turns affection. I shall feele like cruely that I dyd in time past, which will bee more painful & heauy for me to beare than voluntary exile and banishment, or bying me to that end wherein presently I am. Contente your self, I beseech you, and suffer me to be but once unhappy, and do not perswade mee to proue a second affliction, worse than the first.

Roderico hearing his reasons so liuely and wel applyed would not reply, onely content that he would make him promise to tarry there two monethes, and in that time attempt to reioyse himselfe so wel as he could. And for hys owne parte, he swoze vnto him, that he would bee a meanes to reconcile Ginuera, and byinge them to talke together. Moreover, he gaue him assurance by othe, that hee shoulde not bee dyscouered by hym, nor by any in his Com-

Don Diego, and Gineura.

pany. Wherewith the Kinght somewhat recomforted, thanked him very affectuouly. And so leauyng with him a fiesde bed, two seruants, and Money for his Necessities, Roderico tooke hys leaue, telling him that shortly he would visite him againe, to his great contentation, as euer he was left and forsaken with greefe and sorrow, hymselfe miskeyng great mone for the vnsweetly state, and miserable pleght of Dom Diego. And God knoweth whether by the way, he detested the cruelty of pitilesse Gineura, blaspheming a million of times the whole sexe of Womankind, peraduenture not without iust cause. For there lieth hydden (I know not what) in the brests of Women, whiche at times like the Wane and increase of the Moone, doth chaunge and alter, wherof a man can not tell on what foote to stand to conceiue the reasons of the same: whych sickle fragility of theirs (I dare not say mobility) is such, as the subtillest wench of them al best skilled in Turners Art, can not (I say deface) or so much as hide or colour: that Naturall Imperfection.

Roderico arriued at his house, frequented many times the lodging of Gineura, to espy hir faultes, and to see if any other had conquered that place, that was so well assailed and besieged, by Dom Diego. And this wyse and sage Kinght vsed the matter so well, that he fell in acquaintance wyth one of the Gentlewomans pages, in whome she had so great trust, as she conceyled from him very few of her gratest secretes, not well obseruing the precepte of the wyse man, who counselleth vs not to tell the secretes, of the mynd to those, whose iudgement is but weak, and Tongue very launty and franke of speech. The Kinght then familiar with this Page, dandled him so with faire words, as by lytle and lytle he wryng the Woymes out of his Nose, and vnderstode that whē Gineura began once to take Peper in snuffe, against Dom Diego she fell in Loue wyth a Gentleman of Biskaye, very pooze, but Beautyfull, young, and lusty, whych was the Steward of the house; and the Page added further, that her was not then there, but woulde retorne wythin three Dayes, as he had sent Woorde to her Wyfrelle, and that two other Gentlemen woulde accom-

ganp him to cary away Gineura into Biskaye, soz that was their
 last conclusion: and I hope (quod he) that she will take me with
 hir, bicause I am made ptyup to their whole intent. Roderico hea-
 ring the treasch of this flight & departure of the vnfaithful daugh-
 ter, was at the first brunt asstonned, but desirous that the Page
 should not marke his altered Countenance, said vnto him. In
 very deede meete it is, that the Gentlewoman should make hir
 owne choise of husband, sith hir mother so little careth to prouide
 for hir. And albeit that the Gentleman be not so riche and Noble
 as hir estate deserueth, hir affection in that behalfe ought to suf-
 fise, and the honesty of his person: for the rest Gineura hath (thaks
 be to God) wherewith to intertaine the state of them both. These
 wordes he spake, farre from the thought of his heart. For being
 alone by himself, thus he said: O blessed God, how blinde is that
 loue, that is vnrul'd, and out of order: and what dispayre to rectine
 to them, which (boide of reason) doe feede so foolishly of bayne
 thoughts and fond desires, in such wise as two commodities, pre-
 sented vnto them, by what ill lucke I know not, they forsake the
 beste, and make choise of the worst. Ah Gineura, the fairest Lady
 in all this Countrey, and the most vnfaithfull Woman of oure
 time. where be thine eyes and iudgement? whither is thy Wynde
 straid and wandzed, to acquitte thy selfe from a great Lord, faire,
 rich, Noble, and vertuous, to be giuen to one that is pooze, whose
 parents be vnkowne, his pꝛowess: obscure, and birth of no apa-
 rant reputation. Behold, what maketh me beleue, that loue (so wel
 as fortune) is not onely blynd, but also dazeleth the sight of them
 that hee imbraceth and captiuareth vnder his power & bondage.
 But I make a bowe (false woman) that it shal never come to passe
 and that this Biskaye Gentleman shal neuer enioy the Spopies
 whych iustely bee due vnto the Trauaille and faithfull seruice of
 the valyaunt and vertuous Knight Dom Diego. It shal be hee, or
 else I wil dye for it, whych shal haue the recompense of his trou-
 bles, and shal feele the caulme of that Tempest, whych presently
 holdeeth hym at Inker, amyd the most daungerous rockes that e-
 uer were.

By this meanes Roderico knew the way howe to keepe promise
 wꝛth

Dom Diego and Gineura.

with his friends, which layed in expectation of the same. The two dayes past, whereof the Page had spoken, the beloued of Gineura, sayled not to come, and with him two Gallants of Biskaye, balaunt Gentlemen, and well exercised in Armes. That Nighte Roderico wente to see the olde Wydowe Lady, the Mother of the Mayden, and sending opportunity to speake to the Page, hee said vnto hye: I see my Friend, accordingly as thou diddest tell mee, that ye are vppon departing, the Steward of the house being now returned. I pray the tel mee, if thou haue made of mee, or of any thyng that I am able doe for thee, assuring thee, that thou shalt obtaine and haue what so euer thou requirest. And therewithall I haue thought good to tell thee, and geue the warning (for thine owne sake specially) that thou keepe all thynges close and secrete, that no slander or dishonour do followe, to blot and deface the fame and prayse of thy Mistresse. And for my selfe I had rather dye, than once to open my mouth, to discouer the least intent of this enterpryse. But tell mee, I praye thee, when do ye depart? Sir (quod the Page) As my Mistresse saith, to Morrow about ten or eleuen of the Clocke in the Evening, when the Lady hir Mother shall bee in the sound of hir first sleepe. The Knight hearing that, and desirous of no better time tooke his leaue of the Page, and went home, where hee caused to bee sente for tenne or twelue Gentlemen, his Neighbours and Tennants, whom he made priuy of his secretes, and Pertakers of that he wote about to deliuer out of Captiuitie and miserie, the chiefe of all his friendes. The Nighte of those two Louers departure, beinge come, Dom Roderico, which knewe the way where they should passe, bestowed him selfe and his Companie in Ambush, in a little Groue, almost three Miles of the Lodging of this fugitive Gentlewoman: where they hadde not long tarried but they hearde the tramplinge of horse, and a certaine whispering noyse of People riding before them. Howe the Nighte was somewhat cleare, which was the cause, that the Knight amonges the thronge, knewe the Gentlewoman besides whome rode the Miserable Wretche that hadde stolne hir awaye. Whome so soone as Roderico perceyued full of despyte, moued with extreme

the passion, welding his launce into his rest, brake in the nea-
 rest way vpon the infortunate louet, with such vehemency, as nei-
 ther coate of Maile or Placard was able to saue his life, or war-
 raunt him to keepe company with that troupe which banded vn-
 der Ioues Ensigne, was miserably slayne, by the guide of a blind
 naked, and thienish litle boy. And when he saw he had done that
 he came for, he sayd to the rest of the Company: My friends, this
 man was carelesse to make inuasion vpon other mens ground.
 These poore Biskayes surprysed vpon the sodaine, and seeing the
 ambushment to multiply, put spurres to their horse in the best ad-
 vantage they could for expeditiō, leauing their Conduct or guid ga-
 ping for breath, and geuing a signe that he was dead, Whiles the
 other were making their selues ready to runne away, two of Ro-
 derico his men, couered with Sharkes, armed, & vnknewne came
 to seale vpon sorrowfull Gineura, who beholding her frende
 deade, began to weepe and Crye so straungely, as it was maruell
 that his breath sayled not. Th trayterous Cheeues (sayd she) and
 bloudy Murderers, why do ye not addresse your selues to execute
 cruelly vpon the rest, sith you haue done to death hym, that is of
 greater value than you all? Ah my deare friend, what crooked
 & gricuous Fortune haue I, to see thee groueleng dead on ground
 and I abiding in life, to be the pray of murderous Cheeues, and
 thou so cowardly berriued of life? Roderico with his face coue-
 red, drew neare vnto her, and sayde: I beseech you Gentlewoman,
 to forget these strange fashions of complaynt, sith by them ye bee
 not able to reuiue the dead, ne yet make your end of griefes. The
 maiden knowing the voyce of hym that had slayne her frend be-
 gan to cry out more fiercely than before. For whych cause one of
 the Gentlemen in company with Roderico, hauing a blacke coun-
 terfait Beard with two Lunets, in manner of Spectacles, very
 large and greete, that couered the most part of his face, ap-
 proched neare the bawful maiden, & with bigge voyce and terrible
 talk, holding his dagger vpon his white & delicate breast, said vnto
 her: I swear by the almighty God, if I heare thee speak eny word
 more, I wil sacrifice thee vnto y^e ghost of y^e varlet, for whom thou
 makest hym none, who deserued to end his daies by y^e gallow tree
 rather than by the hands of a Gentleman. Holde thy peace there-
 fore

Dom Diego and Gineura.

For thou foolish girl, for greater honour and more ample Bene-
 fit is meant to thee, than thou hast deserued. Ingratitude onely
 hath so ouerwhelmed thy good Nature, as thou arte not able to
 iudge who be thy friends. The Gentlewoman fearing death, which
 as she thought was present, held hir peace, downe alonges w hose
 Eyes a riuier of Teares dyd run, and the passion of whose heart,
 appeared by assiduell sighes, and neuer ceassing sobbys, which in
 end so qualtsyd hir cheare, that the exterious sadnesse was whole
 inclosed wpythin the mynd and thought of the afflicted Gentlewo-
 man, Then Roderico caused the body of the dead to be buryed in a
 litle Countrey Chappell, not farre out of theyr way. Thus they
 trauayled two dayes befoze Gineura knew any of them, that had
 taken hir away from hir loue: who permitted none to speake
 vnto hir, nor she to any of hir company, being but a waiting maid,
 and the page that hadde dyscouered al the secretes to Dom Rode-
 rico.

A notable example surely for stolne and secrete marriages, wher-
 by the honour of the contracted partes, is most commonly blem-
 shed, and the Coummandement of GOD violated, whose word
 enioyneth obedience to Parents in all rehytfull causes, who if for
 any lycht offence, they haue power to take from vs the inheritance
 whych otherwys naturall law would giue vs, what ought they of
 duety to doe, where rebellious Chyliden abusing theyr goodnesse,
 do consume without feare of Liberty, the thyng that is in theyr
 free wyll and gouernement. In like maner diuers indiscrete and
 folysh mothers are to be accused, which suffer their daughters of
 tender and chyldeish age, to be enamored of theyr seruants, not re-
 membryng how weake the flesh is, how prone and ready men be to
 do euyl, and how the seducyng spirite waityng stil vpon vs, is pro-
 chue & prone to surpyse and catch vs wpythin his Snares, to the
 intent he may resorce in the ruine of soules washed and redeemed
 wpyth the bloud of the Son of God. This troupe drawing neare
 to the caue of Dom Diego, Roderico sent one of his mē to aduer-
 tise him of their commyng, who in the absēce of his frende, felled
 & sustained with hope, shortly to see the onely Lady of hys heart,
 accompaned wpyth a merry and ioyfull Trayne, so soone as hee
 had

had somewhat chaunged his wilde manner of Lyfe, he also by lyt-
tle and lyttle gayned a good part of hys lusty and fresh colour, &
almost had recovered that beauty which he had when he first be-
came a Citizen of those desertes.

Now hauing vnderstanded the message sent vnto him by Ro-
derico, God knoweth if with that pleasaunt tydings he felt a mo-
tion of Bloud, such as made all his members to leape & dance,
whych rendred hys Wynde allonned, for the onely memoire of
the thyng, that possed hys mynd vp and downe, not able to bee
waped in equall Balance whercof rather he ought to haue made
reioyse than complayne, being assured to see hir, of whome he de-
maunded onely grace & pardō, but for recovery of hir, he durst not
repose any certayne Iudgement. In the Ende hoping by hys
head lyke one ryfen from a long and sound sleepe, hee sayd: Praise
be to G D D, who yett before I dye, hath done me great pleasure,
to suffer me haue a sight of hir, that by causing my Watirdome,
continuerh hir stubburne manner of Lyfe, whych shall procure in
like sort myne bitter ruine and decay. Upon the approach of whom
I shall goe more sorrowfull, charged with incomparable loue, to be-
sit the ghosts beneath, in the presence of that cruel swete, that now
tormenteth me with the tickly tentation, and who sometimes
hath made me tast a kind of Honey sugred with better Gal, more
daungerous than the suck of Poyson and vnder the vermillion
rudde of a new sprouted Rose diuinely blowen forth, hath hydden
secrete Thornes the prickes whereof hath me so lyuely touched,
as my Wound cannot well bee cured, by any Baulme that may
be thereunto applyed, without entoying of that myne owne misse.
happe, moste happy or without that remedy, whych almost I fee-
le resting in death, that so long and ostentymes I haue desired,
as the true remedy of all my paynes and grefe. In the meane,
whyle Dom Roderico, whych tyll that tyme was not knowne vn-
to Gineura dyew neare vnto hir by the way as he rode, and talked
wth hir in this sorte: I doubt not (Gentle woman) but that you
think your self not wel contented to se me in this place, in such cō-
pany & for occasiō so vnseemely for my degre & state, & moreouer kno-
wying

Dom Diego and Gineura.

ing what injury I seme to do vnto you, that euer was, & am so affectionate and friendly to the whole Booke of your race and Lineage, and am not ignoraunte that vpon the first brante you may iudge my cause vniust to carry you away from the handes of your frend, to bring you into these desertes, wilde, and solitary places. But if he considered the force of that true amity, which by vertue sheweth the common Bondes of hearts and myndes of Men, and shall measure to what end this acte is done, without to much staying vpon the lyght apprehension of Choler, for a beginnyng somewhat troublesom, I am assured the (that if you be not wholly deppriued of reason) you shall perceiue that I am not altogether worthy blame nor your selfe utterly boryd of fault. And bycause we draw neare vnto the place, whether (by the help of God) I meane to conduct you, I beseech you to consider, that the true Seruaunt whych by all seruice and duety studieth to execute the commaundementes of him that hath puissance ouer him, doth not deserue to bee beaten or drituen away from the house of his maister, but to be fauored and chertished, and ought to receiue equal recompense for his seruice. I speake not this for my selfe, my deuotion beinge bowed elswhere but for that honest affection which I beare to all vertuous and chaste persons. The effect whereof I will not deny to tell you in tyme and place, where I shall vse such modesty towards you, as is meete for a maiden of your age and state. For the greatnesse of Noble Men and puissant, doth most appeare and shew forth it self, when they vse Mildenesse and Gentlenesse vnto those, to whome by reason of their Authority they mighte execute cruelty & malice. Now to the end that I do not make you doubtfull long. Al that which I haue done and yet meane to doe, is for none other purpose but to ease the grieuous paines of that most faithfull louer that loueth at this Dape vnder the Circle of the Moone, It is for the good Knighte Dom Diego, that loueth you so dearely and still worshippeth your Noble fame who bicause he will not shew himselfe disobedient, liueth miserably amonge white beas, amid the craggy rocks and mountaines, and in the deepe solitudes of comfortlesse dales & vallies. It is to him I say that I do bring you, protesting vnto you by othe Gentlewoman that the

misery

misery wherein I saw him, little more than vii Weekes past, toun-
 cheth me so neare the heart, as if the Sacrifice of my life sufficed
 alone, (and without letting you to feele this painfull voyage) for
 the solace of his matirbome I would spare it no more, than I do
 mine owne endeour and honoꝝ, besides the hazarding of the losse of
 your good grace and fauour. And albeite I wel perceiue, that I do
 grieue you, by causing you to enter this painfull iourney, yet I be-
 sech you that the whole displeasure of this fact may bee imputed
 vnto my charge, & that it would please you louingly to deale with
 him, who for your sake vseth so great violence against himself. Gi-
 neura as a woman half in despayre for the death of hir friend, be-
 haued hir selfe like a mad woman void of wit and sense, and the
 simple remembraunce of Dom Diego his name so assauned her,
 (which name she hated far more than the pangs of death) that she
 staied a long time, hir mouth not able to shape one word to speake.
 In the end vanquished with impacience, burning with choler, and
 trembling for sorow, looked vpon Dom Roderico with an Eye no
 lesse furious, than a Tigresse caught within the Net, and seeth
 befoze his face hir young fawnes murdered, wringing hir hands
 and beating hir delicate brest, she vsed these or such like woordes:
 Oh bloudy traitor and no more knight, is it of thee that I oughte
 to looke for so detestable a villany and treason? How darest thou
 be so hardy to entreat me for an other, that hath in myne owne pre-
 sence killed him, whose death I will pursue vpon thee, so longe as
 I haue life within this body? Is it to thee false theefe and murde-
 rer, that I ought to render accompte of that which I ment to doe?
 who hath appointed thee to be arbitrator, or who gaue thee com-
 mission to capitulate the Articles of my mariage? Is it by force
 then, that thou wouldest I should loue that vnfaithfull knight,
 for whom thou hast committed and done this acte, that so longe
 as thou liuest shal blot & blemish thy renoume, & shal be so wel fix-
 ed in my mind, & the wounds shal cleaue so neare my heart, vntill
 at my pleasure I be reuēged of this wrong? No, no, I assure thee
 No force done vnto mee, shall neuer make mee otherwyle dis-
 posed, than a mortall Enimy both to thee which art a Theefe and
 rauisher of an other mans wife, & also to thy desperate frend Dom
 Diego

Dom Diego and Gineura.

Diego, which is the cause of this my loss: And now not satisfied
 with the former wrong done unto me, thou goest about to deceive
 me under the Colour of good and pure friendship. But sith wic-
 ked Fortune hath made me thy Prisoner, doe with me what thou
 wilt, and yet before I suffer and endure that, that Traytor Dom
 Diego doe enjoy my Virginitie, I will offer up my life to the sha-
 dows and Ghosts of my faithfull friend and husband, whome
 thou hast so traiterously murdered. And therefore (if honestly I
 may or ought entreate mine Camp.) I pray thee that by doinge
 the duty, thou suffer vs in peace, and greeue Licence to mee, thy
 Page, and my two poore Maydens to depart whether we list God
 forbid (quod Roderico) that I should doe a Trespasse so shame-
 full, as to deprive my dearest friend of his joy and contentation,
 and by falsifying my faith be an occasion of his death, and of your
 loss, by leaving you without company, wandring amidst this wil-
 dernesse. And thus he continued his former discourse and talk, to
 reclaim thes cruell Damosels to haue pity vpon his poore pryn-
 sent, but he gained as much thereby, as if he had gone aboute to
 number the Sands alongs the Sea Coastes of the maine Oce-
 an. Thus deuising from one talke to an other, they arrived neare
 the Caue, which was the stately house of Dom Diego: where Gi-
 neura lpyghted, and saw the poore amorous Knight, humbly falling
 downe at his feete, all forworne, pale, and disfigured, who wee-
 ping with warme teares, said vnto hit: Alas my deare Lady, the
 alone and onely mistresse of my heart, do you not thinke that my
 penance is long tynge for the sinne which ignorantely I haue
 committed, if euer I haue don any fault at all? Behold I haue con-
 ceined in your absence, what pleasures haue nursed mine hope, &
 what consolation hath entertained my life: which truly had it
 not bene for the continual remembraunce of your diuine Beauty.
 I had of long time abyeuinated the pains which do renew in me so
 many times p pangs of death: as oftentimes I thinke vpon my vnkind-
 nes shewed vnto me by making so litle accopt of my fidelitie: whych
 can not that reuelue the same in good part, wer it so perfect as any
 assurance were able to make it. Gineura swelling with sorrow
 and

and full of feminine rage, blushing with fury, his eyes sparklinge
 forth his chollerick conceits, vouchsafed not so much as to giue
 him one word for answer, and because she would not looke vp-
 pon him, she turned his face on the other side. The poore and afflic-
 ted Louer, seeing the great cruelty of his felonous Mistresse still
 kneeling vpon his knees, redoubling his armes, fetching Sighes
 with a voyce, that seemed to bee drawne by force from the bottome
 of his heart, proceeded in these wordes: *Sith the Sincerity of my* „
fayth, and my long seruite Madam Gineura, cannot persuaide you „
that I haue bene most Obedient, faythfull, and very Loyal „
seruaunt towards you, as euer any that hath serued Lady or Gen- „
tlewoman, and that without your fauour and grace it is impossi- „
ble for mee any longer to liue, I doe very humbly beseech you, for „
that all other comfort is denied me, if there bee any gentlenesse and „
courtesie in you, that I may receiue this onely grace at your hands „
for the last that euer I hope to craue: Which is, that you bring „
thus grieuously offended with me, would do iustice vpon that vn- „
fortunate man, that vpon his knees doth instantly craue the same. „
Grant (cruell mistresse) this my request, doe vengeance at your „
pleasure vpon him, which willingly yeldeth himselfe to death with „
the effusion of his poore innocent bloud to satisfie you, and verily „
farre more expedient it is for him thus to die, by appealing your „
wrath, than to rest on liue to your discontentment or annoyance. „
Alas, shall I be so vnforgunate, that both life and death should bee „
denied me by one person of the world, whom I hoped to content & „
please by any sort or meanes what so euer restinge in mine humble „
obedience? Alas Gentlewoman rid mee from this Torment, and „
dispatch your selfe from the griefe you haue to see this vnhappy „
Knight, who would say and esteeme himselfe most happy (his life „
being toshome vnto you) if he may content you, by death done by „
your owne handes, such other fauor he cannot expect or hope for. „
The Mayden hardened in his Opinion, stood still immoueuable
 much like vnto a Rocke in the midst of the Sea, disquieted with a
 tempest of billowes, and fomy Waues, in such wise as one word
 could not be procured from his mouth. Which vnlucky Dom Di-
 ego perceiuing, attached with the feare of present death, and saye

An.

linge

Dom Diego, and Gineura.

lyng his Naturall force fell downe to the Grounde, and fainting
said: Ah, what a recompence doe I receiue for this so faythfull
Loue? Roderico beholding that ruefull sight, whilst the others
went about to relieue Dom Diego, repaired to Gineura, and full
of heautnesse mingled with fury, sayd vnto hir: By God (false fi-
dish Woman) if so be that I doe chaunge my mind, I will make
thee feele the smarte, no lesse than thou shewest thy selfe dishonou-
rable to them that doe thee honour: Wrt thou so carelesse of so
greate a L O R D as this is, that humblyeth himselfe so lowe to
such a Crumpe as thou art? who without regarde either to his
renoume, or the honour of his House, is content to bee abandoned
from his noble state, to become a fugitiue and straunger? What
cruelty is this for thee to mispyple the greatest humblity that man
con Imagin? What greater amends canst thou wsh to haue, yea
though the offence which thou presuppolest had ben true? Now (if
thou be wise) chaunge thy Opinion, except thou wouldest haue
mee doe into so many pieces, the cruel corpe and vnfaithful heart,
as once this pooze Knight did in parts the unhappy hauke, which
through thy folly did breede vnto him this distresse, and to thy self
the name of the most cruell and disloyall Woman that euer lyued.
But what greater benefite can happen vnto thee, than to see thy
Gentleman utterly to forget the fault, to conceiue no sinister sus-
pition of thy running away, crauing pardon at thy Hands, and is
contented to sacrifice him selfe vnto thine Anger, to appease & myti-
gate thy rage? Now to speake no more hereof, but to proceede in
that which I began to say, I offer vnto thee then both death and
Loue, choose whether thou lyst. For I swear againe by hym that
seeth and heareth all thinges, that if thou play the foole, that thou
shalt feele and proue me to be the cruellest Ennemy that euer thou
hadst: and such a one as shall not feare to imbrue his hands with
the bloud of hir that is the death of the greatest friend I haue, and
truest Knight that euer bare armes. Gineura hearing that reso-
lute aunswere, shewed hir selfe to be nothing afrayd nor decla-
red any token of feare, but rather seemed to haue encouraged Ro-
derico, in braue and mannish sort, farre diuers from the simple-
city of a Young and tender Mayden, as a Man would say, such
a one

a one as had neuer felt the assaults and troubles of aduerse for-
 tune. Wherefore frowning hir Browes, and grating hir Teeth
 wyth closed fist, and Countenance very bold, she made him ans-
 were: Th thou Knight, whych once gauest assault to commit a vil-
 lany and Treason, thinkest thou now without remorse of Conscie-
 ence to continue thy mischefe? I speak it to thee Willayne, whych
 hauing shed the Bloud of an honest Man than thou art, fearest
 not now to make mee a Companion of hys Death. Which thyng
 spare not hardly to accomplishe, to the intent that I liuinge, may
 not be such a one as thou falsly iudgeth me to be: for neuer Man
 hitherto vaunted, and neuer shall, that hath had the spoyle of my
 dearest Jewell: from the fruit whereof, lyke an arrant Chiefe,
 thou hast depyrred my loyall Spouse. Now doe what thou lyst:
 for I am farre better content to suffer death, be it as cruel as thou
 art mischieuous, and borne for the disquieting and vexation of
 honest Maidens then yelde vnto thy furies: not withstanding I
 humbly beseech Almyghty G O D, to geue thee so much plea-
 sure, contentation and ioy in thy loue, as thou hast done to me, by
 hastening the death of my deare Husband. O G O D, if thou bee
 a iust G O D, such a one, as from whom we thy pooze Creatures
 do beleue, al iustice to proceede, thou I say which art the Ram-
 pire and refuge of al iustice, poure downe thy vengeance & plague
 vpon these pestiferous Thieues and murderers, which haue pre-
 pared a worldely plague vpon me thisne innocent damsel. Wh wye-
 ked Roderico, think not that death can be so feareful vnto me, but
 that with good heart, I am able to accept the same, trusting ve-
 rily that one day it shal be the cause of thy ruine, & the ouerthrowe
 of him, for whom thou takest al these paines. Dom Roderico mar-
 uelously rapte in sense, imagined the Woman to be fully bent a-
 gainst hym, who then had puissance (as he thought,) ouer hys own
 heart: and thinking, what he sawe hys moued with like rage against
 him, as she was against Dom Diego, stode stil so perplexed and
 vnde of ryghte minde, as hee was constrained to sitte downe, so
 feeble he felt hym self for the onely remembraunce of hys euill de-
 meanor. And whylest this Pageant was a doing, the handmayd
 of Gineura, and hys Page, inforced to persuaide their mystrisse to

Dom Diego and Gineura.

haue compassion vpon the Knight that had suffered so much for
hir sake, and that she would consent to the honest requests and good
counsell of Roderico. But she which was stubboznelly bent in hir
sonde persuasions, made them aunswere: What fooles? are you
so much bewitched, eyther with the fained teares of this disloyall
Knight, whych colozably thus doth torment himselfe, or els are yee
Inchaunted with the venomous honny and tyrannicall brauery of
the Cheefe which murdered my husbände, and your mayster? Th
vnhappy captiue mayden, is it my chaunce to endure the assault of
such Fortune, when I thought to liue at my best ease, and thus
cruelly to tomble into the handes of him, whom I hate so much
as he sayneth loue vnto me? And mozeouer my vnlucky fate is not
here with content, but redoubleth my sorrowe, euen by those that be
of my trayne, who ought rather to incourage mee to dy, than con-
sent to so vnreasonable requests. Ah loue, loue, how euill be they
recompenced which farythfully doe Homage vnto thee? And why
should not I forget all Affection, neuer hereafter to haue mynde
on man to proue beginning of a pleasure, which tasted, and felt
bryngeth moze displeasure than euer ioy engendzeth delight. Alas,
I neuer knewe what was the fruite of that which so straungely
did attach me, and thou O trayterous and theewishe Loue, haste
ordayned a banquet serued with such bitter dishes, as forced I am
perforce to taste of their egre sweetes: Auaunt sweete folly, auaunt
I doe henceforth for euer let thee slip, to embrace the death, where-
in I hope to finde my greatest rest, for in thee I finde noughtie else
but heapes of strayingne Passions. Auoyde from me all mishap,
flee from me ye furious ghostes and fappies most vnkinde, whose
gaudes & toyes dame loue hath wrought to keepe occupied my lo-
uing minde, and suffer me to take ende in thee, that I may liue in
an other life without thee, being now charged with cup of griefe,
which I shall quasse in venomous dryncke soaked in the Sops of
bitternesse. Sharpen thou thy selfe, (O death vnkinde) pre-
pare thy Darte, to strike the Corpse of hir, that shee may voyde
the Quarells shotte agaynst hir by hir Aduersary. Ah pooze
hearte strip thy selfe from hope, and qualifie thy desires. Cease
henceforth to wishe thy Lyfe, Seeing, and feelinge the appoynt-
poynted sight

pointed fight of loue and Life, combattung within my minde, els
 where to seeke my peace in an other world, with him to lop, wheche
 for my sake was sacrificed to the treason of barlets handes, who
 for the perfitte hooorde of his desires, noughte else dyd seeke but to
 soile his bloudy filkes with the purest blonde of my loyall friend.
 And this flood of Teares do shed to faciate his felonous moode
 that is the iust shortening of my dolefull Dares. When she had
 thus complayned, she began horribly to torment hir selfe, that the
 cruellst of the company were moued with compassion, to see hir
 thus stragely straught of hir wits: neuertheles they did not disci-
 tinue by duety to sollicite hir to haue regard to that which poore
 sayntng Dom Diego dyd endure. Who so soone as wyth freshe
 fountayn Water hee was reuiued, seeing still the heauinesse of
 his Lady, and hir increased disoaine and choler againste hym bas-
 nished in diuers soundings: which moued Roderico from stude
 deepe wherein he was to ryse, whereunto the rage of Gineura had
 cast him downe, because forgetting all imaginarie affection of his
 Lady, and propossing his duety befoze his Eyes, wherch ech Gen-
 tleman oweth to Gentle Damsels, styl beholding with honoura-
 ble aspect the grefe of the martyzed wylderneffe knyght, fighing
 yet in former grefes, he sayd vnto Gineura. Was, is it possible,
 that in the heart of so young and delicate a maiden, there may bee
 harborzed so straunge fury and vnreasonable rage? O God, the ef-
 fect of the cruelty resting in this Woman, painting it selfe in the
 imaginatiue force of my mind, hath made me feare the like myse-
 happe to come to the cruell state of this disauenturous gentlemā.
 Notwithstanding (O thou cruell brast) thinke not that thy
 fury shall stay me from doing thee to death, to rid thee from follye
 and disoayne, and this vnfortunate louer from despayre and trou-
 ble, verily beleuing, that in tyme it shalbe knowne what profit the
 World shall gayne by purgeng the same of sutch an infected pla-
 gue as is an unkynd and arrogante heart: and it shall seele
 what willie ryseth by thyne ouerthrowe. And I do hope besydes
 in tyme to come, that Men shall prapse this deede of myne,
 who for preseruyng the Honoure of one House, hath cho-

Dom Diego, and Gineura.

sen rather to doe to death two offenders, than to leaue one of them alīue, to obscure the glōry and brightnesse of the other. And ther-
foze (sayd he) turning his face to those of his traine) Cut the
throte of this stubborne and froward beast, and doe the like to the
that be come with hir, shew no moze fauor vnto them all, than that
curst Trumpet doth mercy to the life of that miserable Gentle-
man, who lieth a dying there for loue of hir.

The Hayden hearing the cruel sentence of hir death, cryed out
so loud as she coulde, thinking rescue woulde haue come, but the
pooze Wench was deceiued: for the desert knew none other, but
those that were abiding in that troupe. The Page & the woman
seruant exclaimed vpon Roderico for mercy, but he made as though
he heard the not, & rather made signe to his mē to do what he cō-
maunded. When Gineura sawe that their death was purposed in
deede, confirmed in opinion rather to dy, than to obey, she said vn-
to the executioners: My friends, I beseech you let not these imo-
centes abide the penance of that which they neuer committed.
And you Dom Roderico, be reuenged on me, by whome the fault.
(if a womā's faith to hir husband may be termed a faulte) is don.
And let these infortunate depart, that bee God knoweth guiltles
of any crime. And thou my friend, which liuest amonges the sha-
dowes of faithfull louers, if thou haue any feelinge, as in deede
thou prouest being in another world, behold the purenesse of mine
heart and fidelity of my loue: who to keepe the same inuolable, do
offer my self voluntarily to the death, which this cruell tyrant pre-
pareth for me. And thou hāgman the executioner of my toyes, and
murderer of the immortal pleasures of my loue (sayd she to Rode-
rico) glut thy unsatiable desire of blood, make dronke thy mind w
murder, & boast of thy little triumph, which for all thy threats or
persuassible words, thou canst not get fro the heart of a simple mai-
den, ne carry away the victorie for all the battred breath, made into
the rampare of hir honour. When she had so said, a Man woulde
haue thought that the memory of death had cooled hir heate, but
some serued hir as an assurd solace of hir paynes. Dom Diego
being come to himself and seing the discourse of that tragedy, now
addressed

addressed to the last act and end of that life and stage of faire and
 goldenlocked Gineura, making a vertue of necessity, recouered a
 litle corage to saue, (if it were possible) the life of hir, that had put
 her owne in hazard miserably to end. Having slayed them that
 held the maiden, he repayed to Dom Roderico, to whom he spake
 in this wise: I see wel my good Lord and great friende, that the
 good will you beare me, causeth you to vse this honest order for
 my behalf, whereof I doubt if I should lyeue a whole hundred
 yeares, I shall not be able to satisfy the least of the bondes where,
 in I am bound, the same surpassing all mine ability and power.
 Yet for al that (deare friend) sth you see the fault of this missehap
 to arise of my predestinate ill lucke, and that man cannot auoyde
 things once ordained, I beseech you do me yet this good pleasure
 (for all the benefits that euer I haue receiued) to send back again
 this Gentlewoman with hir trayne, to the place from whence you
 toke hir, wpyth like assurance & conduct, as if shee were your sister,
 for I am pleased with your endeuor, and contented with my mis-
 fortune, assuring you fir besides, that the trouble which she endu-
 reth, doth far moze greue my heart than al the paine which for
 hir sake I suffer. That hir sorow then may decrease and mine
 may renue again, that she may lyeue in peace, and I in Warre for
 hir cruell beauty sake, I will waite vpon Clotho, the Spynner
 of the threden life of man vntill she breake the twyssed fate that hol-
 deth the fatall course of my dolefull yeares. And you Gentlewo-
 man lyeue in rest, as your pooze suppliant, wretched Dom Diego,
 shalbe citize of those wylde places, and haunt you hardely that yet
 were the best beloued maiden that euer liued. Maruellous truly
 be the forces of loue, when they discover their perfection: for by
 their meanes things other wise impossible be reduced to such fa-
 cility, as a man would iudge that they had neuer bene so hard to
 obtaine, and so painefull to pursue. As appeared by this damsel,
 in whome the wash of fortune the pynche of lealosse, the intollera-
 ble rage of hir frendes losse, had ingendred a contempte of Dom
 Diggo, an extreame desire to be reuenged on Dom Roderico, and
 a tediousnesse of longer Lyfe. And now putting of the baile of
 blinde appetite, for the esclarifying of hir vnderstandyng Eyes,

Don Diego, and Gineura.

and breaking the Adamant Rocke planted in the middes of his
breast, he beheld in open sight the Redfastnesse, patience and perse-
ueration of his great friend, for that supplication of the Knight
had greater force in Gineura, then all his former seruises, And
full well she shewed the same, when throwng his selfe vpon the
specke of the desperate Gentleman, and embracing him very lo-
uingly she said vnto him: Ah sir, that your felicity is the begyn-
ning of my great ioy of Mynd, wherch saoureth now of sweetenes
in the very same, in whome I imagyned to be the Wellspringe of
bitternesse. The diminution of one griefe is, and shall bee the in-
crease of a bonde, such as for euer I will call my selfe the moste
humble slaue of your honor, lowly beseeching you neuertheless to
pardon my follies, wherewith full fondely I haue abused youre
patience, Consider a while sir, I beseech you, the Nature and se-
crecie of loue. For those that be blinded in that passion, thinke the
selues to be perfecte Secers, and yet be the first that commit most
filthy faulces. I doe not denie any committed wrong and trespasse,
and doe not refuse therefore the honest and gentle Correction that
you shall appointe mee, for expiation of myne offence. Ah my Ho-
norable Lady (answered the knyght) all rapt with pleasure, & halfe-
way out of his wyes for ioy, I humbly beseech you inflect vpon
my poore wretched body no further panges of Death by remem-
bring the gloze of my thought, with the recitall byngeth with it a
tast of the traualles wherch you haue suffered for my ioy & contenta-
tion. It is therfore (quod she) that I thinke my self happy: for by
that meanes I haue knowne the perfect qualpities that be in you,
and haue proued two extremities of vertue. One consisting in your
constancy & loyalty wherby you may haunt your selfe aboute hym
that sacrificed his Lyfe vpon the bloudy body of his Ladye who
for dying so, finished his Traualles, Where you haue chosen a life
worse than death, no lesse paynefull a hundred times a Day, than
very death it self. The other in the clemency wherewith you calme
& appeale the rage of your greatest aduersaries. As my self which
before hated you to death, vanquished by your curtesie do confesse
that I am double bound vnto you, both for my lyfe and honor: and
hearte

heartly thanks do I render to the Lord Roderico for þe violence he did vnto me, by which meanes I was induced to acknowledge my wrong, and the right which you had to complaine of my beastly resistance. It is wel, sayd Roderico, sth without perill of honoz we may returne home to our houses: I intend therfore (sayd he) to send word befoze to the Ladies your mothers of your returne, for I know how so wel to couer and excuse this our enterpryse and secrete tozneys, as by Gods assistance no blame or displeasure shall ensue thereof. And like as (sayd he smiling) I haue builded the fortreffe which shot into your campe, and made you sitte, euen so I hope (Gentlewoman) that I shalbe the occasion of your victoꝝe, when you combat in close campe, wth your sweete cruel Ennemy. Thus they passed the tozney in pleasaunt talk, recompensling the 2. Louers with al honest & vertuous intertainment for their griefs and troubles past. In the meane while they sent one of their Seruants to the two widow Ladies, which were in greate care for their Children, to aduertise them that Gineura was gone to visite Dom Diego, then being in one of the castles of Roderico, where they were determined if it were their good pleasure, to consummate their mariage, hauing giuen faith and affiance one to the sother. The mother of Gineura, could not heare tel of moze pleasant newes: for she had vnderstanded of the foolish flight and escape of hir daughter, with the steward of hir house, wherof she was very sorrowful, & for grief was like to die, but assured & recomfoꝝed wth those newes she failed not to mete the mother of Dom Diego, at the appointed place whether the 2. louers were arriued two daies befoze. Ther þe mariage of that fair couple (so long desired) was solemnised with such magnificēce as was requisite for þe state of those two noble houses. Thus þe tozment indured, made the love to sauour of some other taste than they do feele, which without paine in þe exercise of loues pursue, attain the top of theꝝ desires: And truly their pleasure was altogether like to him þe nourished in superfluous delicacy of meates cā not aptly so wel iudg of pleasure, as he which sometimes lacketh þe abidante. And verily loue without bitternesse, is almost a cause without effects, for he that shall take away greifs and troubled fancies from Louers, depꝛiueþ them

Dom Diego and Gineura.

them of the praise of their steadfastness, and maketh vayne the glory of their perseuerance: For hee is vnwoorthy to beare away the price and Garland of triumph in the Conflict, that behaueth himselfe like a Coward, and doth not obserue the lawes of armes and manlike duetties incident to a combat. This Historie then a Mirror for loyall Louers, and Chaste Suters, and maketh them detest the vnshamefastnesse of those, which vpon the first view do followe with might and mayne, the Gentlewoman, or Lady that giueth them good face, or Countenance whereof any gentle heart, or mynde, nourished in the Schoolehouse of vertuous education, will not bee squeremishe to those that shall by chaste salutation or other incountry, doe their courteous reuerence. This Historie also yeldeth contempt of them, which in their affection forget themselves abasing the Generosity of their Courages, to be reputed of fooles the true champions of loue, whose like are they that desire such regarde. For the perfection of a true Loner consisteth in passions, in sorrows, griefes, martirdomes, or cares, and much lesse arriuerh he to his desire, by sighes, exclamations, Weapings, an child he playnts: For so much as vertue ought to be the bande of that indissoluble amity, which maketh the vniõ of the two seuered bodies of that Woman man, which Plato describeth, & causeth man to trauell for hys whole accomplishment in the true Pursure of chaste loue. In which labour truely, fondly walked Dom Diego, thinking to finde the same by his dispayre amiddest the sharp solitary Deserts of those Pyrene Mountaynes. And truely the duety of his perfect friende, did more liuely disclose the same (what fault so euer he did) than all his Countenances, eloquent letters or amorous Messages. In like manner a man doth not know what a treasure a true Friende is, vntill hee hath proued his excellency, specially where necessity maketh him to taste the sweetenes of such delicate meate. For a frend being a seconde himselfe, agreeth by a certayne naturall Sympathie & attonement to th' affections of him who he loueth, both to participate his toyes and pleasures, and to sorrowe his aduersity, where Fortune shall vse by some misadventures, to shewe his accomed mobility.

Salim-

Salimbene, and Angelica.

¶ A Gentleman of *SIENA*, called *ANSELMO SALIMBENE*, curteously and gently deliuereth his enemy from death. The condemned party seeing the kinde parte of *SALIMBENE*, rendreth into his hands his sister *ANGELICA*, with whom he was in loue, which gratitude and curtesie, *SALIMBENE* well marking, moued in Conscience, would not abuse hir, but for recompence tooke hir to his VVife.

The. XXX. Nouell.

WE do not meane here to discouer the Sumptuousness and Magnificence of Palaces, Stately, and wonderfully to the view of men, ne yet to reduce to memory the marvellous effectes of many Industry to builde and lay Foundations in the deepest Chanel of the mayne sea, ne to describe their ingenious Industry, in breaking the Craggy Mountaynes, and hardest Rocks, to ease the crooked Passages of weary wates, for Irmies to marche through inaccessible places. Onely now do we pretend to shewe the effectes of loue, which surmount all Opinion of common thinges, and appeare so miraculous as the founding, and erecting of the Collosai, Collosai, Theatres, Amphitheatres, Pyramides, and other woorkes wonderfull in the World, for that the hard indured path of hatred and displeasure longe time begoon, and obstinately pursued with strange cruelty, was conuerted into loue, by the effect of conoord,
such

Salimbene and Angelica.

such as I knowe none, but is so much astonned, as hee maye haue good cause to wonder, considering the stately foundations, vpon which Kings and greate Monarches haue employed the chiefeest reuenues of theire prouinces. Now like as Ingratitude is a vice of greatest blame & discommendation amongst men, euen so Gentlenesse and kindnesse ought to beare the title of a most commendable vertue. And as the Thebans were accused of that crime, for their great Captaynes Epaminondas and Pelopidas, So the Platens (contrarywise) are praised for their solempne obseruation of the Grekes benefitts, which deliuered them oute of the Persians bondage. And the Sicyonians beare away the pryse of eternall praise, for acknowledging the good turnes receiued of Aratus, that deliuered them from the cruelty of the tyrants. And if Philippo Maria, Duke of Milan, deserued eternal reproch for his ingratitude to his wife Beatrix, for the secreete killing of hir, he being enryched with hir goodes and treasures: a barbarous Turke borne in Arabia, that carry the praise, who being vanquished in Arabia by Baldouine, kyng of Hierusalem, and he and his Wife taken prisoners, and his treasures fallen into the hands of that good kyng, issued of the Loraine bloud, who neuerthelesse seeing that the Christian had deliuered him, and restored againe his wife would not be vanquished in magnificence and liberalitie, and much lesse beare the name of an unkind prince, but rather when Baldouine was overcome of the infidels, and being rettyred within a certaine city, the Admiral of Arabie, came to him in the night, and telling him the deathe of his companions, conueyed hym out of the City, and was hys guide vntill he sawe hym free from perill I haue alleaged the Premysse, because the History which I purpose to recyte, aduoucheth two examples not Vulgare or Common, the one of very great Loue, and the other of such acceptation and knowledgng thereof, as I thought it meet the same should mark from the Acquayntaunce of vs Englyshe Men. And that they alone should haue the Benefitt thereof which vnderstand the Italian tongue, supposing that it shall bring some fruite and commodity to this our Englyshe Soyle that ech Wycht may frame their life on those which in straining Countreies far from vs, haue liued vertuouly without reproch that myghte soyle or spotte their Name.

from vs, haue lyued vertuously without reproche that might soyle
or spot their name.

In Siena then (an auncient, and very noble Citie of Toscare,
which no longe time past was gouerned by hir Magistrates, and
liued in hir own lawes and liberties, as the Lucquois, Pisans, and
Florentines do) were two families very rich, noble, and the chiefe
of the Citie called the Salimbene, and Montanines, of the Race
and Stock whereof, excellent men in their Common wealth haue
descended, very good, and expert Souldiers for conduct of Ar-
mies. Those two houses in the beginning were so great frendes, &
frequented such loue and familiarity, as it seemed they had bene
but one house and bloude, dayly vsinge eche others company, and
banketting one another. But Italy in all times being as it were a
Stoie house of troubles, and a very marre of sedition, bandes,
and partialities, specially of ciuill warres in euery Citie, it coulde
not be that Siena shoulde alone enioy hir liberty in peace, and ac-
corde of Cittizeng, and haunt hir selfe to bee free from knowledge
of particuler debate. For of warres shee had good experience as
gainst the Florentines, who by long remembraunce haue don what
they could to make hir subiect vnto them. Howe the cause of that
discorde rose euen by them which kept the Cittizeng in vnitie and
concord, and was occasioned by those. 2. houses the noblest, & most
puissant of their common wealth. It is not vnknewne to any man,
that antiquity ordayned it to be peculiar for nobility, to trayne by
there childzen in huntinge, aswell to bolden and Rosell theym in
daungers, as to make them stronge, and accustomed in trauayle,
and to force the thyn the delicate yle & great Idlenes which accom-
pany honozable houses, & those of gentle bloude, forsomuch as by
the pursuite of Beastes, sleights of warre bee obserued: The
Hounds be the square battell, the Greyhoundes be the flankarts
and Wynges to follow the entrie, the hofseman serueth to giue
the Chace, when the Game speedeth to couert, the Hoznes be the
Trumpets to sounde the Chace and Rette, and for encouragemēt
of the Dogges to run. To be shoyt, it seemeth a very Campe in
battayle, ordayned for the pleasure and passetyme of noble youth.
Neuerthelesse, by hunting diuers missefortunes doe arise, and sun-
dyr daun-

Salimbene and Angelica.

and sundry daungers haue happened by the same. Meleager lost his Lyfe for the victorie of the wild Boare of Callydonia. Cephalus was slaine for kylling his deare beloued Pocris, and Acastus was accursed for murdering the Kings sonne of whome hee was the Tutor. VVilliam Rufus, one of our English Kings, the son of the Conquerour, was killed with an Arrow in the Arrow rest by a French Gentleman called VValter Tyrel, as he was pursuing the Harte. Other histories reposite dyuers perils chaunced in hunting, but yet the same worthy to be cheryshed, frequented & vsed by good aduise and moderate pastyme. So the huntinge of the wilde Boare despyled the City of Siena, with the bloud of hie owne Citizens, when the Salimbenes and Montanines bypon a daye in an assembled company, incountring bypon a greate & fierce Boare, toke hym by force of men and Beastes. When they had don, as they were banquetting and communing of the unbleness of their dogs, ech man praising his owne, as hauing done beste, there rose greate debate amongs them, and proceeded so farre, as fondly they began to reuile one another with wordes, and from taunting termes to earnest blowes, wherewith diuers in that thirmysh were hurt on both sides: In the end the Salimbenes had the worse, and one of the principall sayne in the place, which appalled the rest, not that they were discouraged, but attending time and season of reuenge. This hatred so strangely kindled betwene both partes, that by litle and litle, after many combats and ouerthrowes of epyther side, the losse lyghted bypon the Montanines, who with their wealth and rychesse were almost brought to nothing, and thereby the rygour and Choler of the Salimbenes appeased, none being able to resist them, and in space of time forgot all iniuries. The Montanines also that remayned at Siena, liued in quyet, wythoute chalenge or quarell of their aduersaries, howbeit mutuall talke & haunt of others company bitterly surceased. And to say the truth, there were almost none to quarell wythall, for the whole Bloude and Name of the Montanines rested in one alone, called Charles the Sonne of Thomas Montanine, a young man so honest & well brought vp, as any then in Siena, who had a syster, that for beauty, grace,

grace, curtesy and honesty, was comparable with the best in all
 Thoscane. This pooze young Gentleman had no great reueneue,
 for that the patrimoine of his predecessors was wasted in charges
 for entertainment of Souldiers in the tyme of the hurly burly &
 debates aforesaid. A good parte also was confiscate to the Cham-
 ber of Siena for trespasses and forfeitures committed: with the re-
 mayne he sustained his family, and indifferently maintained hys
 pozte soberly within his owne house, keeping his Alter in decent &
 moderate order. The Maiden was called Angelica, a Name of
 trouth, without offence to other, due to hir. For in very deepe in
 hir were harbozed the vertue of Curtesy and Gentlenesse, & was so
 wel instructed and nobly brought vp, as they which loued not the
 Name or race of hir, could not forbear to commend hir, & wylle
 theyr owne daughters to be hir lyke. In such wise as one of hir
 chiefest foes was so sharply beset with hir vertue and beauty, as
 he lost his quiet sleepe, and lust to eate and drinke. His name was
 Anselmo Salimbene, who woulde willingly haue made sure to
 marry hir, but the discorde past, quite mortified his desire, so soone
 as he had deuised the plot wythin his brayne and fanlle. Notwith-
 standing it was impossible that the loue so lyuely grauen and ro-
 ted in his mind, could easily be defaced. For if once in a day he had
 not seene hir, his heart did fele the torments of tolling flames, and
 wished that the hunting of the Boze, had neuer decayed a family so
 excellent, to the intent he myght haue matched himself with hir,
 whome none other could displace out of his remembraunce, that
 was one of the rycheest Gentlemen and of greatest power in Sie-
 na. Now for that he durst not discouer his amorous grieue to any
 person, was the chiefest cause that martired most his hearte, and
 for the auncient festred malice of those two families, he despayred
 for ever, to gather either floure or fruite of that affection, presu-
 posing that Angelica would neuer fixe hir Loue on him, for that
 his Parents were the cause of the defaute & ouerthrow of *le* Mon-
 tanine house. But what? There is nothing durable vnder the hea-
 uens. Both good and euill haue theyr reuolution in the gouernes-
 ment of humane affayres? The amities and hatredes of Kinges
 and Princes, be they so hardened, as commonly in a Moment tye
 is not

Salimbene and Angelica.

is not seene to be a hearty Friende, that lately was a cruell Foe, and spyed naught else but the ruine of his Aduersary? Wee see the variety of Humayne chaunces, and then doe iudge at eye what great Simplicitie it is to say a settle certayne, and infallible iudgement vppon mans vnstayed doings. He that erst gouerned a king, and made all things to tremble at his word, is sodaynely throwne downe, and dyeth a shamefull death. In like sorte, another whych looketh for his owne vndoinge, seeth himselfe aduanced to hys estate agayne, by rerenge ouer his Enimies. Calir Bassa gouerned whilom the great Mahomet, that wan the Empire of Constantinople, who attempted nothing without the adutce of that Bassa. But vpon the sodayne he saw himselfe relected, and the next day strangled by commaundement of him, which so greatly honoured him, and without iust cause did him to a death so cruell. Contrarywise Aragon the Tartarian entring Armes against his Uncle Tangodor Cavi, when hee was vpon the Poynt to lose his Lyfe for his rebellion, and was conueyed into Armenia to be executed there, was rescued by certayne Tartarians the household seruants of his dead vncle, and afterwards Proclaymed King of Tartary about the yere. 1285. The example of the Emperesse Adaleda is of no lesse credit than the former, who being fallen into the hands of Beranger the Usurper of the Emperre, escaped his fury & cruelty by flight, and in the ende married to Ocho the firste, sawe hir wrong reuenged vpon Beranger and all his Race by hir Sonne Ocho the second. I aduouch these Hystories to proue the mobilitie of fortune, & the change of worldly chaunces, to th'ende you may see that the very same misery which followed Charles Montanine hopsted him aloft agayne, and when he looked for least succour, he sawe desueraunce at hand. Now to prosecute our Hystory, know yee that while Salimbene by little and little pined for loue of Angelica, whereof hee was ignoraunt and carelesse, and albeit hee curteously rendred health to him, when sometimes in his amorous fit he beheld hir at a Window, yet for all that hee neuer so much as gessed the thoughts of hir louing enemy. During these haps it chaunced that a rich Cittizen of Siena, hauing a ferme adioyning to the Lands of Montanine, desirous to encrease his Patrimony

and an

Montanine, desirous to encrease his patrimonie, and annex the same vnto his owne, and knowing that the yong Gentleman wanted many thinges, moued him to sel his inheritance, offering him for it in ready money, a *M. Ducates*, Charles which of al *h* wealth and substance left him by his auncesser, had no more remayning but that countrey *Ferme*, and a *Palace* in the *Citty* (so the rich *Italians* of ech *Citty*, terme their houses,) and with that lytle lyued honestly, and maintained his sister so wel as he could, refused flatly to dispossesse himselfe of the portion, that renewed vnto him the happy memozy of those that had ben the chief of all the *Common Wealth*. The couetous wretch seeing himselfe frustrate of his pray, cōcētued such rancor against *Montanine*, as he purposed by right or wrong to make him not only to forsaite the same, but also to lose his lyfe, following the wicked desire of tyrannous *Iesabell*, that made *Nabor* to be stoned to death, to extort and wrongfully get his vineyard. About that time for the quarels and common disorders raigning thzoughout *Italy*, the *Nobility* were not assured of safety in their Countreys, but rather the common sort and rascal number, were the chief rulers and gouerners of the common wealth, whereby the greatest part of the *Nobility* or those of beste authority being banished, the villanous band, and grossest kind of common people made a law (like to the *Athenians* in the time of *Solon*) that all persons of what degree & condition so euer they were, which practized by himselfe or other meanes the restoring or reuocation of such as were banished out of their *Citty*, should lose and forsaite the summe of *M. Florens*, and hauing not wherewith to pay the condemnation, their head should remain for gage. A law no doubt very iust and righteous, senting rather of the barbarous cruelty of the *Goths* and *Vandales*, than of true christians, stopping *h* retire of innocents exiled for particular quarels of *Citizens* incited one against another, and rigorously rewarding mercy & curtesy, with execution of cruelty incomparable. This *Citizen* then purposed to accuse *Montanine* for offending against the law, bicause otherwise he could not purchase his entent, and the same was easy inough for him to compasse, by reason of his authority and estimation in the *Citty*: for the *Endytemente*

Salimbene and Angelica.

and plea was no sooner red & giuen, but a number of poore knights appeared to depose against the poore Gentleman, to bear witness that he had trespassed the Lawes of the Countrey, and had sought meanes to introduce the banished, with intent to kill the gouerners, and to place in state those factious, that were the cause of the Italian troubles. The miserable Gentleman knewe not what to do, ne how to defend himself. There were against him the Whore and the vii. Barres, the state of the City, the Doctoz and Judge of the Courte, the wtnelless that gaue euidence, and the law wherch condemned him. He was sent to Wyson, sentence was pronounced against him with such expedition, as he had no leysure to consider his affayres. There was no man, for feare to incurre the displeasures of the Magistrates, that durste open hys mouth to speake or make sute for hys deliuerance. Like as the most part of frendes in these dayes resembling the crow, that flyeth not but after carrion to gorge his rauenous Crop, and such friends doe visite the house of the frend but for profit, reuerencing him so long as he is in prosperitie, accordyng to the Poets complaynt.

*Like as the purest golde in fieri flames is tried,
Euen so is fayth of fryends in hard estate descried.
If hard missehap doth thee affray,
Ech of thy friends do flee away,
And he which erst full friendly semde to thee,
A friend no more to thy poore state is hee.*

And simple Weyghtes ought not to bee afrayde, and thinke amysse if frendes doe flee away, with Wyntes and great Lords incurre such hap and Fortune. The great leader of the Romaine Armes, Pompeius, the honoz of the people and Senate of Rome, what companion had he to flee with hym? Wherch of his auncient friends toke paine to rescue and deliuer him from his Enimies hands which did pursue him? A king of Egypt which had known and found this good Romane Wynt a kind & gentle frend, was he that killed him, & sent his head to his Victoz & vn-satiable greedy gutte Iulius Cesar, falslyng his promysed fayth, & forgetting hys receiued pleasures. Amongst al the comforts which this poore

Siena Gentleman found, although but a cursed Traitor, was
 this unfaithfull and pestiferous Camaleon, who came and offered
 him at the pleasure and kindnesse he was able to do. But the bars
 let attended conuenient tyme to make him taste his porson, and
 to let him see by effect, how dangerous a thing it is to be il neigh-
 bozed, hoping after the condemnation of Montanine, he shouide
 at pleasure purchase the Lordshippe, after whrch with so open
 mouth he gaped. Duer whome he had hys well: for two or thre
 dayes after the recitall of the endytement, and giuing of the eue-
 dence, Charles was condemned, and hys fine selled at M. f. 10
 rins to be payed within. xij. dayes, but wch time to remaine in
 Pryson. And for default of such payment to loose his head, be-
 cause he had infringed the Lawes, and broken the Statutes of
 the Senate. This sentence was very difficult for poore Monta-
 nine to digest, who saw all his goodes like to be despoiled and
 confiscate, complaining specially the fortune of fayre Angelica his
 sister, whrch all the tyme of the imprisonment of his deare Bro-
 ther, neuer went out of the house, ne ceased to weepe and lamente
 the hard fortune whereinto their family was lyke to fall by that
 new mischaunce: *Alas* (said the fayre curteous damsel) will the
 heauens neuer be appeased but continually extend their wrathe
 vpon our deplored family, and shal our mischaps neuer cease?
 Had it not bene moze tollerable for our consumed bloude, that the
 dissentions past, had ben tried by dent of sword, than to see the pre-
 sent innocency of the young Gentleman my brother in daunger to
 be innocently accused and put to death, throught the vniustice of
 those, which beare mortal malice to noble bloud, & gloze in depre-
 uation of the whole remembrance of the same? O dampnable state
 I muste hale the guiltlesse to the gibet and irreuocable sentence of
 those iudges remaining in a city, which men cal free, albeit a con-
 fused multitude hath the vpper hande, and may so bee, that Na-
 ture hath produced them to treade vnder foote noble Wightes
 for their Offences. Ah deare Brother, I see well what is
 the cause. If thou hadst not that lytic Lordshipp in the Countrey,
 and Pryncely House in the City, no man would haue enuied thine

Salimbene and Angelica.

estate, or could haue charged thee with any any Crime, which I
 " would to God, thou hadst not onely enterprised, but also brought
 " to passe, to the intent thou mightest haue ben reuenged of þe wrong
 " which these cankered Charles ordinarily do vnto my Noble blood:
 " But what reason is it that marchants and artificers, or the sonnes
 " of villaines should rule a common Wealth: O happy Countreys
 " where kings giue Lawes, and Princes see by proued sight, those
 " persons which resemble them, & in their places beare the sway.
 " And O unhappy we, that be the slaues of a waitwarde state, per-
 " uerted by corruption. Why ded our predecessors minde to stablysh
 " any liberty at al, to thrust the same into the confused gouernement
 " of the commons of our Countrey? We haue still the Frenchmen at
 " our table, or the people of our highest Bishop, or else those crafty
 " Florentines, we be the common pray of al those that list to follow
 " the haunt, and that which is our extreamest misery, we make oure
 " selues the very slaues of them, that of right ought to be reputed the
 " vilest amongs vs all. Ah deare Brother that thy wretched tyme
 " is come, the onely hope of our decayed family. Thou hadest neuer
 " bene committed to Warde, had not thy false assured foes bene as-
 " sure of witnessse to condemne thee. Ah that my life mighte raun-
 " some thine, and redeme agayn thyne estate and succor, thou shoul-
 " dest be sure that forthwith Angelica would prepare hir self to bee
 " the pray of those hungry rauening Wolves, which bleat and bel-
 " low after thy Lands and Lyfe. Whyle this fayre Damself of Sie-
 " na in this sort ded torment hir self, pooze Montanine seeinge that
 " he was brought to the last extremity of his desired hope, as eche
 " man naturally doth seke meanes to prolong his lyfe, knowing that
 " all other help fayled for hys deliuerance, except he sold his land,
 " aswel to satisfy the fine, as to preuaile in the rest of his Affaires,
 " sent one of the gailers to that wretched full vsurer the cause of hys
 " Calamity, to offer him his land for the pryce and sum of a My Du-
 " rates. The pernicious & trafterous villain seeinge þe Montanine
 " was at his mercy, and stode in the water by to the very throte, and
 " knew no moze what to do, as if already he had triumphed of hys
 " life and Land so greatly coueted, answered him in this manner:
 " My friend thou shalt say to Charles Montanine, that not long ago

I would willingly haue giuen him a good Summe of Money for his ferme, but Athens that time I haue imployed my Money to some better profit: And albeitt I was in minde to buy it, I would be loth to giue aboue. 7. C. Florins, being assured that it cannot be so commodious, as my Money is able to buyng yearly Gayne into my Purse.

See how Auarice is the Pickpurse of secret and hidde gayne, and the very Whirlepoole of Honesty, and Conscience, couetinge nought els but by vnrighteous way of other mens goods, to accumulate and heape together. The aboundance whereof bringeth no greater good hap vnto the gluttonous Owner, but rather the minde of such is more miserable, and carryeth therewithall more decrease of quiet, than increase of fleshy much. The couetous man beareth no loue but to his Treasure, nor exerciseth charity but vnto his Coasters, who, than he would be disposed therof had rather sell the life of his naturall Father. This detestable Willayne hauing sometimes offered. M. Ducates to Charles for his Enheritaunce, will now doe so no more, aspiring the totall Ruine of the Montaigne Family. Charles aduertised of his minde, and amazed for the Counsels decree, well saw that all thinges contraried hys hope and expectation, and that he must needes dye to satisfie the excessive and couetous Lust of that Cormorant, whose mallice hee knew to be so vehement, as none durst offer him Money, by reason of the unhappy desire of this neuer contented Warlet: For which consideration thoroughly resolved to dye, rather than to leaue hys poore Sister helpless, and without reliefe, & rather than he would agree to the bargayne tending to his so great losse and disadvantage, and to the Tyrannous dealing of the wicked Cormorant of hys Lyfe, seeing also that all meanes to purge and auerre his innocency, was taken from him, the small decree of the Judges being already passed, he began to dispose himselfe to repentaunce and saluation of his Soule, making complaine of his Mishaps, in this manner.

*To what hath not the heauens hatefull bin,
Since for the ease of man they weaue such woo?*

Os 3.

By di

Salimbene, and Angelica.

By diuers toyles they lap our crosses in
With cares and griefes, whereon our mischiefes growe:
The bloody hands and Sword of mortall foe,
Doe search mine euill, and would destroy me quite,
Through heynous hate, and hatefull heaped spite.

Wherefore come not the fatall sisters three,
That draw the line of life and death by right?
Com furies all, and make an ende of mee,
For from the world, my sprite would take his flight.
Why comes not nowe fowle Gorgon full in sight,
And Typhons head, that deepe in hell remaynes?
For to torment the silly soules in paynes?

It better were for mee to feele your force,
Than this missehap of murthering enuyes rage,
By curssed meanes and fall vpon my Corse,
And worke my ruine amid my flourishing age:
For if I were dispatch'de in this desire,
The feare were gone, of blacke infernall fire.

O Gods of Seas, and cause of blustering winds,
Thou Eolus and Neptune to I say,
Why did you let my Barke such fortune finde
That safe to shore I came by any way?
Why brake yee not, agaynst some Rocke or Bay,
The Keele, the Sterne, or els blew downe the Mast,
By whose large sayles, through furing seas I past?

Had these things hapt, I had not seene this houre,
The house of dole, where wofull sprites complayne,
Nor vserers on me had vs'de such power,

Nor

Nor I had seene depaynted in disdayne,
 The God of care, with whom dead Ghosts remayne.
 Who howles and Skrekes in hollow trees and holes,
 Where Charon raygues, among condemned soules.

Ab, ab, since hap will worke my wretched end,
 And that my ruine by iudgement is decreed:
 Why doth not happe such happy fortune send,
 That I may lead with me the man in deede,
 That saynd his fayth, and saylde me at my needs,
 For gayne of golde, as vsurers do God knowes,
 Who cannot spare the dropping of their nose?

I should haue slayne the slaue that seru'd me so,
 Oh God forbid, my hands were brued in blood,
 Should I desire the harme of friend or foe?
 Nay better were to wishe mine en'my good:
 For if my death I thoroughly understood,
 I should make short the course I haue to run,
 Since rest is got, when worldly toyle is done,

Alas, alas, my chiefeft way is this,
 A guiltlesse death to suffer as I can,
 So shall my soule be sure of heauens blisse,
 And good renoume shall rest behinde me than,
 And body shall take end where it began,
 And fame shall fly before me, ere I flit
 Vnto the Gods, where Ioue in throne doth sit.

O God conuert, from vyce to vertue now,
 The heart of him that falseth fayth wyth me,
 And chaunge his minde, and mend his maners throw,

Oo 4.

That

Samibene, and Angelica.

*That he his fault and fowle offence may see,
For death shall make my fame immortall bee:
And whiles the Sunne which in the beaueus doth shine,
The shame is his, and honor shall be mine.*

*Alas I mourne not for my selfe alone,
Nor for the fame of my Forefathers olde,
'Tys Angelike, that causeth me to mone,
'Tys she that fillies my brest with fancies colde,
'Tys shee more worth, than was the fliee of golde,
That mooues my minde, and breeds such passions strange,
As in my selfe I feele a wonderous change.*

*Haue pittie Lord of hir and mee this day,
Since destiny thus hath sundred vs in spite,
O suffer not hir vertues to decay,
But let hir take in friendship such delite,
That from hir brest all vice be banisht quite.
And let hir like, as did hir noble race
When I poore man am dead, and out of place.*

*Alas my hand would write these wofull lines,
That feeble sprite denyes for want of might,
Wherefore my heart in brest consumes and pines,
With deepe desires, that far is from mans sight,
But God he sees myne innocencie and right,
And knowes the cause of myne Accuser still,
Who seekes my bloud to haue on me his will.*

When Charles thus complained himselfe, and throughly was determined to be, great pittie it was to see how faire Angelica did rent hir Face, and reare hir golden Locks; when she saw how impossible it was to saue hir obstinate brother from the cruel sentence pronounced vpon him, for whom she had employed all hir wits and

fayre speech, to perswade the neerest of his kin to make sute. Thus
 gessed she alone full of such hoauinesse & bepatton as they can think
 whiche see themselves deppriued of things & they esteeme most dere.
 But of one thing I can wel assure you, that if ill fortune had per-
 mitted that Charles should haue bin put to death, the gentle damsel
 also had breathed forth the final gasp of his sorrowfull life, yeldinge
 therewithall the last end of the Montanine race and family. What
 booteth it to hold proceffe of long discourse? Beholde the last day
 is come deferred by the Iudges, whereupon he must eyther satis-
 fie the fine, or dye the next day after like a rebel & Traytor: agaynst
 the state, without any of his kin making sute or meane for his deli-
 uerance: Albeit they visited the fayre mayden, and comforted hir
 in that hir wretched state, instructing hir how shee should gouerne
 hir selfe patiently to suffer things remedlesse. Angelica accompa-
 nied with his kin, and the maidens dwelling by, that were his com-
 panions, made the ayre to sound with outcries & waymentings, &
 she hir selfe exclaymed like a woman distraught of wits, whose
 plaints & multitude assised with like exultations & outcries, way-
 ling the fortune of the yong gentleman, & sorrowfull to see & mayde
 in daunger to fall into some mishap. As these things were thus be-
 wayled, it chaunced about. 9. of the clocke at night, that Anselmo
 Salimbene, he whom we haue sard to be surprised with the loue of
 Angelica, returning out of the Countrey, where he had remayned
 for a certayne time, and passing befoze the house of his Lady, accor-
 ding to his custome heard the voyce of women & maydens which
 mourned for Montanine, and therewithall sayd: the chiefeest cause
 of his stay was, for that he saw go forth out of the Pallace of hys
 Angelica, diuers Women makinge Moane, and Lamentation:
 Wherefoze he demanded of the neyghboys what noyse that was, &
 whether any in those Quarters were dead or no. To whom they
 declared at length, al that which yee haue heard befoze. Salimbene
 hearing this Noyse, went home to his house, and being secretly en-
 tred into his chāber, began to discourse with himselfe vpon that ac-
 cident, and fantasying a thousand things in his heade, in the ende
 thought that Charles should not so be cast away, were he iustly or
 innocently condemned, and for the only respect of his sister, that
 he might

Salimbene, and Angelica

shee might not bee left destitute of the Goods, and Inheritance.
Thus discoursing diuers things, at length he sayd: I were a
very simple person nowe to rest in doubt, with Fortune is more curi-
ous of my felicity than I could wishe, and seeketh the effect of my
desires, when least of all I thought vpon them. For behold, Mon-
tanine alone is left of all the mortall enturies of our house, whych
to morrow openly shall lose his head like a rebell and seditious per-
son, vpon whose Vnclesters, in him shall I be reuenged, and the
quarrell betweene our two Families, shall take ende, hauinge no
more cause to feare renewing of discorde, by any I can descend from
him. And who shall let mee then from inioying hir, whom I doe
loue, hir brother being dead, and his goods confiscate to the Seig-
niorie and she without all Maينتenance, and Reliefe, except the
ayde of hir onely beauty and curtesie? What maينتenance shall
she haue, if not by the loue of some honest Gentleman, that for his
pleasure may support hir, & haue pittie vpon the losse of so excel-
lent beauty? Wh Salimbene, what hast thou sayd? Hast thou alrea-
dy forgottē that a Gentleman for that onely cause is esteemed aboue
all other, whose glorious facts ought to shine before the brightnesse
of those that force themselves to followe vertue? Art not thou a
Gentleman borne, & bred in noble house, Issued from the Loynes
of gentle and noble Parents? Is it ignoraunt vnto thee, that it
pertayneth vnto a noble and gentle heart, to reuenge receyued In-
iuries himselfe, without seeking ayde of other or else to pardon
them by doing clemency and princely curtesie, burying all desire of
vengeaunce vnder the Tombe of eternall oblivion? And what
greater gloire can man acquire, than by vanquishing himselfe, and
chastising his affections & rage, to bynde him which neuer thought
to receyue pleasure or benefit at his hand? It is a thing which ex-
ceedeth the common order of nature, and so is it meete and requi-
site, that the most excellent doe make the effects of their excellency
appeare, & seeke meanes for the immortality of their remembraunce.
The great Dictator Cesar was more praysed for pardoning his
enemies, and for shewing himselfe courteous and easie to be spoken
to, than for subduinge the braue and haughtie Galles and Britons,
or vanquishing the mighty Pompee. Dom Roderico Viuario, the
Spani-

Spaniard, although he might haue bene reuenged vpon Dom Pi-
 etro, king of Aragon, for his infidelitie, because he went about to
 hinder his voyage agaynst the Saracens at Grenado, yet woulde
 not Punishe or Raunsome him, but taking him Prisoner in the
 Warres, suffered him to goe without any Tribute, or any exacti-
 on of him and his Realme. The more I followe the example of
 mighty Personages in things that be good, the more notorious &
 wonderfull shall I make my selfe in their rare and noble deedes.
 And not willing to forget a wrong done vnto me, whereof may I
 complayne of Montanine? What thinge hath hee euer done a-
 gaynst me or mine? And albeit his Predecessors were enemies to
 our Family, they haue therefore bozne the Penance, more harde
 than the same deserued. And truly I should be asrayde, that God
 would suffer me to tumble into some mishap, if seeing one afflicted,
 I should reioyce in his affliction, and take by his decay an argu-
 ment of toy and pleasure. No, no, Salimbene is not of minde, that
 such fond Imagination shoulde Bereue good will to make hym
 selfe a Freende, and to gayne by liberality and curtesie hir, which
 for hir only vertue deserueth a greater Lord than I. Being assu-
 red, that there is no man (except he were dispoled of all good na-
 ture & humanity) specially bearing the loue to Angelica, that I do,
 but he would be loze to see hir in such heauinesse and dispayre, &
 would attempte to deliuer hir from such dolorous grtise. For if
 I loue hir as I do (in deede, must not I likewise loue all & which
 she earnestly loueth, as him that is nowe in daunger of death for a
 simple fine of a thousand Florens? That my heart doe make ap-
 preere what the loue is, which maketh me Tributary and Subiect
 to sayre Angelica, & that eche man may knowe, that furious loue
 hath vanquishd kings and great monarches, it behoueth not me to
 be abashed, if I which am a man and subiect to passions, so well as
 other, doe submit my selfe to the seruice of hir, who I am assu-
 red is so vertuous as euen very necessity cannot force hir to forget
 the house, whereof she rooke hir originall. Wauent thy selfe then O
 Angelica, to haue forced a heart of it selfe impregnable, and giuen
 him a wound which the stoutest Lads, might sooner haue depri-
 ued of it selfe, than put him out of the way of his gentle kinde: And
 thou

Salimbene, and Angelica

thou Montanine, thinke, that if thou wilt thy selfe, thou winnest to day so hearty a frende, as only death shall seporate the vnion of thy wayne, and of all our posterity. It is I, say it is I my selfe, that shall excell thee in duety, pornting the way for the wisest, to get honoꝛ, & violently cōpel the mooued myndes of those þe be our aduersaries, desiring rather vainely to forgo myne own life, than to giue ouer the vertuous cōceipes, which be already gristed in my minde. After this longe discourse seeing the tyme required diligence, hee tooke a thousand Ducats, and went to the Treasurer of the sines, deputed by the state, whom he founde in his office, and sayde vnto him: I haue brought you sir, the Thousande Ducates, which Charles Montanine is bounde to pay for his deliuerance. Tell them, and gleue him an acquittance that presently hee may come forth. The Treasorer woulde haue giuen him the rest, that exceeded the Summe of a Thousand Florens: But Salimbene refused the same, and receyuing a letter for his discharge, he sent one of his Seruants therewithal to the chiefe Capler, who seeing that the Summe of his cōdemnation was payd, immediately deliuered Montanine out of the Prison where he was fast shut, & fettered wth great, & weyghy Gines. Charles thinckinge þe some Frier had bin come to confesse him and that they had shewed him some mercy to doe hym to death in Prison, & abroade in open shame of þe world he might not deface þe Noble house whereof he came, was at first sight astonned, but hauing prepared himselfe to die prayd God, & besought him to vouchsafe not to forget him in þe sorrowful passage, wherein the stoutest and courageous many times be fayne and inconstant. He recommended his Soule, he prayd forgiveness of his sinnes: and aboue all, hee humbly besought the goodnesse of God, that it wuld please him to haue pitty vpon his Sister, and to deliuer hir from all Infamy and dishonour. When he was caried out of Prison, and brought before the Chiefe Capler, sodaynely his Gines were discharged from his Legges, and euery of the Sanders by looked merily vpon hym, without speakinge any Woordes that might affray hym. That Curtesie vnlooked for, made hym attende some better thyng, and assured hym of that whych before by any meanes hee durste not thincke. And hys expectation

ration was not deceived. For the Gayler sayde vnto hym:
 Bee of good Cheare Sir, for behold the Letters of your dis-
 charge, wherefore you may goe at libertie whether you list. In say-
 ing so, he opened the Pryson, and licenced Montanine to departe,
 prayng him not to take in ill part his intreaty and hard impy-
 sonment, for that hee durst doe none other, the State of the City
 hauing so entoynd hym. May not ech Wyght now behold how
 that the euent of loue be diuers from other passions of the mind?
 How could Salimbene haue so charitably deliuered Monranine,
 the hatred being so long tyme rooted betweene the two houses, if
 some greate occasion whych hath no name in Loue, had not altred
 his Nature, and extinguisht hys affection? It is meritorious
 to succour them whome we neuer saw before, sith nature moueth
 vs to doe well to them that be lyke our selues. But faith surmoun-
 teth there, where the very naturall inclynation feeleth it self con-
 strayned, and seeth that to be broken, whych obstynately was pur-
 posed to be kept in mynde. The graces, gentlenesse, Beauty, mild
 behauour and allurement of Angelica, had greater force ouer Sa-
 limbene, than the humilitie of hir Brother, although he had knee-
 led a hundred tymes before hym. But what heart is so brute, but
 may be made tractable and Mylde, by the Contemplation of a
 thyng so rare, as the excellent Beauty of that Siena Mayden, and
 woulde not humble it selfe to acqurye the good graces of so per-
 fect a Damself? I will neuer accuse man for being in Loue wth
 a fayre and vertuous Woman, nor esteeme hym a slaue, whych
 painefully serueth a sobre Mayden, whose heart is fraught wth
 honeste affections, and Mynd wth desyre tending to good ende.
 Well worthy of blame is he to be deemed whych is in loue wth
 the outeward hew, and prayseth the Tree onely laden with flou-
 res, without regard to the fruct, whych maketh it worthy of co-
 mendation. The young maiden must needes resemble the floure
 of the Spring time, vntill by hir constancy, modesty, and chastity,
 she hath vanquished the concupiscence of the flesh, & brought forth
 the hoped fructe of a Virgine and Chastitee not Common,
 Otherwse, shee shall bee lyke the inrolled Shouldeer, whose va-
 liance hys only mind doth wytnes, and the offer whych he maketh
 to hym

Salimbene and Angelica.

to him that doth register his name in the muster booke. But when the effect of seruyce is toynd with his attempt, and prooue belyeth not hys promise, then the Captain imbraceth him, and aduanceth him, as a glasse for his affaires from that time forth.

The like of Dames hauing passed the assaults and resisted the attempts of theyr assaillants which be honest, not by force being not requyred, but inclyned by their owne nature, and the diligence of theyr chaste and inuincible heart. But turne we againe vnto oure purpose, Montanine, when he was deliuered, forthwith wente home to hys house, to comfort hir, whom he was moze than sure to be in great distresse and heauynesse for his sake, and whych had so much neede of comfort as he had, to take his rest. He came to the gate of his Pallace (where beynge knowne that it was Montanine) his sister by any meanes coulde not bee made to beleue the same: so impossible seeme thyngs vnto vs, which we most desyre.

They were, all in doubt like as wee reade that they were, when S. Peter escaped Herods Payson by the Angels meanes.

When Angelica was assured that it was hir Brother, sobbes were layde aside, sghes were cast away, and heauy weepings conuerted into teares of ioy, she went to imbrace and kisse hir Brother, praisinge GOD for hys deliuerance, and making account that he had ben raised from death to lyfe, considering his stoutnes of minde rather bent to dye than to forgo his Land, for so smal a pryce.

The Dames that were kin vnto hym, and tarried there in Company of the maiden half in dispayre, least by dispayre and fury they might fall into outrage therby to put hir lyfe in peril, with all expedition aduertised their husbands of Montanines Liberty, not looked for, who repayed thither, as wel to refoyce with him in his ioy and good fortune, as to make their excuse, for that they had not trauiayled to red him from that misery. Charles whych cared nothing at al for those mouth blessings, dissembled what he thought, thanking them neuerthelesse for their visitation and good remembrance they had of hym, for visiking & comforting his sister which honoz, he esteemed no lesse than if they had employed the same vpon his owne person. Their friends & kinfolk being departed, & a su-

red that none of them had payde his ransome, hee was wonder-
 fully astonned, and the greater was his grefe for that he could not
 tell what hee was, whych withoute requeste, had made so gentle a
 ppoofe of his lyberality: if he knew nothing, farre moze ignoraunce
 was his syster, forsomuch as she dyd thinke, that he had changed
 his mind, and that the horrour of death had made him sel his con-
 try inheritance, to hym whych made the first offer to buy the same:
 but either of them deceyued of their thought went to bed. Monta-
 nine rested not all the Nyght, hauyng still befoze his eyes, the vn-
 knowne image of hym that had deliuered him. His bed serued his
 turne to none other purpose, but as a large field of some long sal-
 ley withyn a Wood, for waikes to make discourse of hys myndes
 conceyts, sometimes remembryng one, sometimes another, with-
 out hitting the blanke and namyng of hym that was his deliuerer,
 vnto whome he confessed him selfe to owe hys seruice and duty so
 long as hee lyued. And when hee saw the Day begyn to appeare,
 and that the Mornyng, the Chauntcurrou of the Day, summoned
 Apollo to harnesse hys Horse to begynne his course in our He-
 misphere, he rose and went to the Chamberlaine or Treasurer,
 sutch as was deputed for receypt, of the fines, sessed by the
 State, whom he saluted, and receyuing like salutation, he pray-
 ed hym to shewe hym so much pleasure, as to tell hym the parties
 name, that was so lyberall to satisfye his fine due in the Esche-
 quer of the State. To whome the other answered: None other
 hath caused thy deliuerance (O Montanine) but a certain per-
 son of the World, whose Name thou mayst easily gesse, to whome
 I gaue an acquittance of thyne imprisonmente, but not of fustis-
 summe, because hee gaue me a Thousand Ducates for a Thou-
 sand Florens, and woulde not receyue the ouerplus of the debte,
 whych I am readye to deliuer thee wth thyne aquyttaunce. I
 haue not to doe wth the Moneys (sayd Charles) onely I pray you
 to tell me the name of him that hath don me this great curtesy, &
 hereafter I may acknowledge him to be my friend. It is sayd the
 Chamberlayne) Anselmo Salimbene, who is to bee commended
 and prayd aboute all thy parents and kinne, and came hither very
 late to byng the Moneys, the surpluse whereof, behold here it
 is. God

Salimbene and Angelica.

is God forbid (sayd Montanine) that I sho uld take awaye that,
 whych so happily was brought hither to rid me out of payne: and
 so went away with his acquittance, his mind charged with a nu-
 mber of fantasies for the fact don by Salimbene. Being at home at his
 house, he was long time stayed in a deepe consideration, desirous
 to know the cause of that gentle parte, proceeding from him whose
 Parentes and Ancesters were the capitall Enemies of his race.
 In the end lyke one rising from a sound sleepe, he called to mynd,
 that very many times he had scene Anselmo with attentius Eye
 and fixed looke to behold Angelica, and in eyng hir very louyng-
 ly, he passed euery day (before the gate) not shewing other coun-
 tenaunce, but of good will, and with frendly gesture, rather thā
 any Ennemies Face, saluting Angelica at all tymes when he met
 hir. Wherefore Montanine was assured, that the onely loue of
 Salimbene towards his Sister caused that delgueraunce, conclud-
 ing that when the passion doth proceede of good loue, seized in
 gentle heart and of noble enterpryse, it is impossible but it muste
 byyng forth the maruellous effects of vertues gallantize, of ho-
 nesty and curtesy, and that the spryite wel bozne, can not so much
 hide hys gentle nourture, but the fyre must flame abroade, and
 that whych seemeth difficult to bee brought to passe, is facilitie,
 and made possible by the conceytes and indeuors so wel employ-
 ed: Wherefore in the Ende not to be surmounted in Honesty, ne
 yet to beare the marke of one, that vnthankfully accepteth good
 turnes, he determyned to vse a great prodigality bypon him, that
 vnder the name of foe, had shewed himselfe a moze faithful friend,
 then those y bare good face, & at neede wer furthest off from afflic-
 ted Montanine, who not knowing what present to make to Salim-
 bene, but of himselfe and hys Sister, purposed to impart his mind
 to Angelica, & then bypon knowledge of hir wil to perfoyme his in-
 tent. For which cause vnderstanding that his gracious enimp was
 gone into the Countrey, he thoughte well to consider of his de-
 terminatyon, and to breake with hir in hys absence, the better to
 Execute the same, bypon his nexte retourne to the Citie.
 Hee called Angelica asyde, and beyng bothe alone together,
 hee bled these or such lyke Wordes: You knowe deare Si-
 ster,

her, that the higher the fall is, the more dangerous and greater
 greefe he feeleth that doth fall from highe than hee that tumbleth
 downe from place moze low and of lesser deepenes. I speake this,
 because I cal to mind the condition, nobility, and excellency of our
 ancessers, the glozie of our race, and riches of all our house, which
 constraineth me many tymes to sigh, & sheade a streame of teares,
 when I see the sumptuous palaces that were the homes and rest-
 ing places of our fathers, and grand fathers, when I see on al
 parts of this City, the Armes, and Scutcheons painted and im-
 boyled, bearyng the mark of the Antiquity of our house, & when
 I beholde the stately marble tombes and brassen Monuments, in
 dyuers our Temples erected for perpetuall Remoyne of many
 Kinghtes and generalles of warres, that sorted forth of the Mon-
 tanine race; and chyetly I neuer enter thys great Palace, the reme-
 nant of our inheritance and patrimony, but the remembraunce
 of our ancessers, so glaunceth ouer mine Hearte, as an hundred
 hundred tymes, I wylh for Death, to thynke that I am the Post
 alone of the misery and decay fallen vppon the name and famous
 famillye of the Montanines, whych maketh me thinke our Life to
 be vnhappy, being downe fallen from such felicity, to feele a my-
 sery most extreams. But one thing alone ought to content vs, that
 amid so great pouerty, yf luck, ruine and abasement, none is able
 to lay vnto our charge any thing vntoworthy of the nobility & the
 house, whereof we be descended, our lyfe being confor[m]able to the
 generositie of our predecessors: whereby it chanceth, that although
 our pooze estate be generally knowne, yet none can affirme, that
 we haue forsighned the vertue of them, which vertuously haue ly-
 ued before vs. If so bee wee haue receiued pleasure or benefite of
 any man, neuer disdained I with al duety to acknowledge a good
 turne, stil shunning the vyce of ingratitude, to soyle the reputa-
 tion: wherein hitherto I haue passed my lyfe. Is there anye blot
 which moze spotteth the renoume of man, than not confessing re-
 ceiued benefites and pleasures perfourmed in our necessity? You
 know in what perill of death I was, these few daies past, through-
 their false surmise which neuer loued me, and how almost mira-
 culously I was redeemed out of the hangmans hands, & p[er] cruell sen-

Salimbene and Angelica.

tence of the vnrphteous Magistrate, not one of our kin offrenge
 themselves in deede oz word for my defense, which forceth mee to
 say, that I haue felt of my kin, which I neuer thought, and haue
 tasted, such commodity at his hands, of whome I neuer durst ex-
 pect oz hope for pleasure, relief, aide oz any comfort. I attended
 my deliuerance by sute of those whome I counted for kin and
 frends, but the same so soone vanished, as the Necessity and pe-
 ryll were present. So pressed with woe, and forsaken of frends, I
 was affrayde that our aduersaries (to remoue all feare and sus-
 pition in tyme to come) would haue purchased my totall ruine, &
 procured the ouerthrowe of the Montanines name, by my Death,
 and appoched end. But good God, from the place whereof I fea-
 red the danger, the calme arose, which hath brought my Warke to
 the haue of health, and at his hands where I attended ruine, I
 haue tasted assistance and sustentation of myne honoz and lyfe. And
 playnely to procede, it is Anselmo Salimbene, the son of our aun-
 cient and capital enemies, that hath shewed himself the very lye-
 all and faithfull frend of our family, and hath deliuered your bro-
 ther by payment to the State, the summe of a Thousand Ducats
 to raunsome the life of him, who thought him to be his moste cru-
 el aduersary. A Gentlemans heart in dede, and gentle mind, whose
 rare vertues do surpasse all humaine vnderstanding. Friends v-
 nited together in band of Amity, amaze the World by the effects
 not vulgar in things whych they do one for an other. But they
 surmounteth all, a mortall Ennemy, not reconceled oz requyred,
 without demaund of assurance for the pleasure which he doth, pay-
 eth the debts of his aduersarie: which facte exceedeth all conside-
 ration in them, that discover the factes of men. I can not tel what
 name to attribute to the deede of Salimbene, and what I ought to
 call that his curtesy, but this must I needes proceid, that the ex-
 ample of his honestie and gentleness is of such force, and so much
 hath vanquished me, as whether I shal dye in payne, oz lyue at
 ease, neuer am I able to exceede his lyberallty. Now my life be-
 yng engaged for that which he hath don to mee, and hee haupnge
 deliuered the same from infamous Death, it is in your handes
 (deare

(deare Sister) to practize the deuple imagined in my mind, to the in-
 tent that I may be onely bound to you for satisfiſying the libera-
 litye of Salimbene, by meanes whereof, you which wepte the
 death and wayled the loſt libertye of your Brother, doe ſee me free
 and in ſafety hauing none other care but to be acquitted of hym, to
 whome both you and I be dearely bound. Angelica hearing hir
 brother ſpeak thoſe words, and knowing that Salimbene was he,
 that had ſurpaſſed all their kinne in Amity and comforte of theyr
 familie, answered hir brother, ſayinge: I woulde neuer haue
 thought (good Brother) that your deliuerance had come to paſſe
 by him whole name euen now you tolde, and that our Enemies
 breaking al remembrance of Iuncient quarrels, had care of the
 health and conſeruatiō of the Montanines. Wherefore if it were
 in my power I woulde ſatisfy the curteſy and gentleneſſe of Anſel-
 mo, but I know not which way to begin the ſame, I being a maid
 that knoweth not how to recompence a good turne, but by acknow-
 ledging the ſame in heart: and to go to render thanks, it is neither
 lawfull or comely for me and much leſſe to offer him any thyng
 for the little acceſſe I haue to his houſe, and the ſmall familiari-
 ty I haue with the Gentlewomen of his kinne. Notwithſtanding
 Brother, conſider you wherein my power reſſeth to ayde & helpe
 you, and be aſſured (myne honor ſaued) I will ſpare nothyng for
 your contentment. Siſter (ſayd Montanine) I haue of long time
 debated with my ſelf what is to be done, and deuised what myght
 be the occaſion that moued this young Gentleman to be ſo greates
 kindneſſe toward mee, and hauing diligently pondered and waied
 what I haue ſcene and knowne, at length I founde that it was
 the onely force of Loue, which conſtrained his affection, and alte-
 red the auncient hatred that he bare vs, into new loue, that by no
 meanes can be quenched. It is the couert fire which Loue hathe
 kindled in his intrayles, it is Loue which hath rayſed the true ef-
 fects of gentleneſſe, and hath conſum'd the conceits of diſpleaſed
 mind. O the great force of that amorous alteration, which vpon
 the ſodain exchanging, ſeemeth impoſſible to receiue any more chaſg
 or mutation. The onely Beauty and good grace of you Siſter,

Salimbene and Angelica.

hath induced our gracious Enime, the seruauit of your perfects
ons, to delouer the pooze Gentleman forlozme of all good fortune.
It is the honest lpe & commendable behauiour of Angelica Mon-
tanine, that hath incited Anselmo to doe an acte so praisse worthe,
and a deebe so kinde, to procure the deliuerance of one, which loo-
ked not for a chaunce of so great consequence. Th gentle younge
gentleman, Th princely minde, & heart noble & magnanimous. I
las how shall it be possible that euer I can approche the honest li-
beralltye wherewith thou hast bound me for euer? My lpe is thine,
myne honour dependeth of thee, my goodes be tyed to thee. What
reletheth then, if not that you (Mster) boorde of cruelty do vse no vn-
kyndnesse to hym that loueth you, and who for loue of you hathe
prodeggally offred hys owne goodes to ryd me from payne & dys-
honor? If so be, my lpe and sauergarde haue ben acceptable vnto
thee, and the sight of me dyscharged from Dysson was ioful vn-
to thee: if thou gauest thy willing consent that I should sel my pa-
trimony, graunt presently that I may with a great, rare, and pre-
cious present, requyte the Goodnesse, Pleasure and curtesye that
Salimbene hath done for your sake: And syth I am not able to
goodes of Fortune to satisfie his bounty, it is your person which
may supply that default, to the intent that you and I may be quyt-
ted of the Obligation, wherein we stand bound vnto him. It be-
houeth that for the offer and reward of Honey whych he hath im-
ployed, we make present of your Beautye, not selling the pryce of
your chastity, but delueryng the same in exchange of curtesye,
beyng assured for hys gentlenesse and good Mourtoure sake, hee
will vse you none otherwyse, or vsurpe any greater authoritie o-
uer you, than Vertue permitteth in ech gentle and Noble hearte.
I haue none other means of satisfaction, ne larger raunsome to
render free my head from the Tribute whych Salimbene hathe
geuen for my Lyfe and Liberty. Chynke (deare Sister) what
determinate aunswere you will make me, and consider if my re-
quest be meete to be denyed. It is in your choise and pleasure to
deny or consent to my demaund. If so be that I be denyed & loose
the meanes by your refuse to be acquitted of my defender, I had
rather forsaake my Citty and Countrey, than to lye heere with
the

the title of ingratitude, for not acknowledging so greate a pleasure. But alas, with what Eye shall I dare behold the Nobility of Siena, if by greate unkindnesse I passe vnder silence the rarest friendship that euer was deuised? What heartes sorrow shall I conceiue to bee pointed at with the finger, like one that hath forgotten in acknowledging by effects, the receiued pleasure of my deliuerance? No (sister) either you must bee the quier of my Wnde, and the acquittance of vs bothe, or else must I dye, or wander like a vagabond into straunge Countries, and neuer put foote agayne into Italy. At those words Angelica stode so allonned and confused, and so belldes hir selfe, like as wee see one distraught of sense that feeleth himself attached with some amaze of the Palsie. In the end recouering hir spztes, and bee blubbered al with teares, hir stomacke panting like the Bellowes of a forge, she answered hir brother in thys manner: I knowe not louyng Brother by reason of my troubled minde howe to answer your demaund, which seemeth to be both ryght, and wronge, righte for respect of the bond, nor so, in conside ratio of my request. But how I proue the same, and what reason I can alleadge and discouer for that prooue, hearken me so patiently, as I haue reason to complayne and dispute vpon this chaunce moze hard and difficulte to auoide, than by reple able to be defended, Alth that I ye and the hazarding thereof is nothing. in regarde of that which you well haue me to present with too exceeding prodigall Liberality, and I would to God that Life mighte satisfie the same, than be sure it should so soone be employed, as the promise made thereof. Alas good God, I thought that when I sawe my brother out of Prison, the neare distresse of death, wherein vniustly he was thown, I thought (I say) and firmly did beleue, that fortune the Enemy of our joy, had vomitted at hir poison, and being despoyled of hir fury and crabbed Nature had broken the bloude and Venemous Arrowes, wherewith so longe tyme she hath plagued our familly and that by resting of hir selfe: shee had gyven some rest to the Montanine house of al theyr troubles and misaduentures. But I (O miserable wight) do see and feele how far I am deuided from

Salimbene and Angelica.

" my hope, & deceiued of mine opinion, stich the furious stepdame, ap-
 " peareth before me with a face more fierce and threatening, then euer
 " she did, sharpening hir selfe against my youth in other sort, than e-
 " uer against any of our race. If euer she persecuted our auncesters,
 " if she brought them to ruine & decay, she now doth purpose wholly
 " to subuerthe the same, and throw vs headelong into the bottomlesse
 " pit of all misery, exterminating for all together, the remmaunte
 " of our consumed house. Be it either by losse of thee (good brother)
 " or the violent death of me which cannot hazarde my Chastity for
 " the price of myne unhappy life: Th good God, into what anguish
 " is my minde exponed, and how doe I feelee the force and Violence
 " of froward Fortune? But what speake I of fortune? How doth
 " hard lucke insue, that is predestinated by the heauens vpon our
 " famill? Must I at so tender yeares, and of so feeble kinde make
 " choyse of a thing, which would put the wyldest vpon Earth vnto
 " their shifts? My heart doth sayle me, reason wanteth and Iudge-
 " ment hangeth in ballaunce by continuall agitations, to see how I
 " am vyuen to the extremity of two dangerous straits, and enui-
 " ronned with fearefull leoperdies, forcibly compelled either to bee
 " deuided and seperated fro a thee (my Brother,) whome I loue as
 " boue mine owne life, and in whome next after God I haue fixed
 " and put my hope and trust, hauing none other solace, Comfort and
 " helpe, but thee, or else by keeping thee, am forced to giue vnto an o-
 " ther, and know not how, the precious treasure which beyng once
 " lost, cannot be recovered by any meanes, and for the gard and con-
 " seruation whereof: euery woman of good iudgement that loueth
 " vertue, ought a thousand times to offer hir selfe to death (if so ma-
 " ny wayes she could) rather than to blot or soyle that inestimable
 " Jewell of chastity, wherewith our lyfe is a true lyfe: contrary-
 " wylse she which fondly suffreth hir selfe to be diseased and spoyled
 " of the same, and looseth it without honest title, albeit she be a lye,
 " yet is she buried in the most obscure caue of death, hauing lost the
 " honour which maketh Waydens march with head vpright. But
 " what goodnesse hath a Ladye, Gentlewoman, Maiden, or Wyfe,
 " wherein she can glory, hir honoz being in doubt, and reputatyon
 " darkened wylth infamie? Wherefo serueth the imperyll House
 of

of Augustus, in those Ladies that were intituled the Emperours
 Daughters, when for their villany, they were unworthy of the
 title of chaste and verruous? What profited Faustina the Emperi-
 all Crowne vpon hir head, hir chastity thorough hir abhominable
 Life, being rapt and despoiled? What wronge hath bene done to
 many simple Women, for being buried in the Tombe of darke o-
 bliuion, which for their vertue and pudique Lysse, merited Eter-
 nall prayse? Oh Charles my Brother deare, where hast thou be-
 showed the Eye of thy foreseeing mynde, that without prouidence
 and care of the same due to honest Dames, and chaste Damocels
 of our family, hauing lost the goods and fathers inheritance,
 wilt haue me in like sort forgoe my Chastity, whych hitherto I
 haue kept with heedefull diligence Wilt thou deare Brother by
 the pryce of my virginity, that Anselmo shall haue greater victo-
 ry ouer vs, than he hath gotten by sight of Sword vpon the al-
 lied remnaunt of our house? Art thou ignorant that the woundes
 and diseases of the Mynde, be more vehement than those which af-
 flict the Body? Oh I unhappy mayden and what ill lucke is re-
 serued for me, what destiny hath kept me all this day to be pre-
 sented for Venus Sacrifice, to satisfy a young mannes lust, which
 coueteth (peradventure) but the spoile of mine hono? Oh happy the
 Romain maide, slayne by the proper hands of hir woeful father
 Virginius, that she myght not be soyled with infamy, by the Le-
 cherous embracements of rauenous Appius, which desired hir
 acquaintance. Was that my brother doe not so, rather I woulde
 to God of his owne accord he be the infamous minister of my life
 ready to be violated, if God by his grace take not my cause in
 hand? Was death, why dost thou not throwe against my hearte
 thy most pearcing dart, that I may goe waite vpon the shadowes
 of my thyre happy Parents, who knowing this my grefe, wyl
 not be roride of passion to help me wayle my woeful state. O God
 why was not I choaked & strangled, so sone as I was taken forth
 the secrete embracements of my mothers Wombe, rather than to
 arrive into this mishap, that either must I lose the thing I dreame
 most deare, or die in the violence of my proper hands? Come death,

pp. 4.

come,

come, and cut the vnhappy threede of my woefull Lyfe: Slope the
 pace of teares with thy trenchant Darte that streame outragious-
 ly downe my face, and close the breathing wind of sighes, whych
 hynder thee from doing thine office vpon my heart, by suffocation
 of my lyfe and it: When she had ended those Wordes, hir speache
 dyd faile, and waxing pale and faint, (sitting vpon hir steele) she
 fared as though that very death had sitten in hir place. Charles
 thynking that his sister had bene deade, mated with sorowe, and
 desirous to lyue no longer after hir, seeing he was the cause of that
 sownyng, fell downe dead vpon the Ground, mouing neither had
 nor foote, as though the soule had ben departed from the bodye.
 At the nopsle which Montaigne made by reason of hys fall, Ange-
 lica reuiued out of sowne, and seeinge hir Brother in so pittifull
 pleght, and supposiing he had bene dead for care of hys request, for
 beyng berieued of hir Brother, was so moued, as a litle thyng
 would haue made hir do, as Thisbe dyd, when she biewed Pyra-
 mus to be slayne. But conceyuing hope, she threw hir self vpon
 hir Brother, cursing hir Fortune, bannynge the Starres of cruel-
 ty, and hir lawles speech, and hir self for hir little loue to hir bro-
 ther, who made no refusall to dye to saue his Lande, for reliefe
 of hir: wher she demped to yeld hir self to him that loued hir with
 so good affection. In the end she applied so many remedies vnto
 hir brother, sometimes casting cold water vpon his face, some-
 times pinching and rubbing the temples and pulses of his armes
 and his mouth with vineger, that she made hym to come agayne:
 and seeing that his eyes were open, beholding hir intentuely with
 countenance of a man half in despayre, she saied vnto him: For
 so much brother as I see fortune to bee so frowarde, that by no
 meanes thou canst auoide the cruel lot, which launceth me into the
 bottome of mortall misery, & that I must aduenture to folowe the
 induozs of thy minde, & obey thy will, which is moze gentle and
 Noble, than fraught with reason, I am content to satisfy the same
 & the loue which hitherto thou hast boyn me. Be of good cheere,
 and doe wpyth mee and my body what thou list, glue and presente I
 same to whom thou pleasest. Wel be thou sure, & so sone as I shal
 bee out of thy handys and power. I wel be called or esteemed thine
 no moze

no more, and thou shalt haue lesse authoritie to stay me from doing
the deuises of my fantasie, swearing and protesting by the Almightie
to GOD, that neuer man shall touch Angelica, except it be in mar-
riage, and that if he assay to passe any further, I haue a heart that
shall incourage my hands to sacrifice my Life to the Chastitie of
Noble Dames which had rather dye than liue in slaunder of dys-
honesty. I will die a body without defame, and the Wynde word
of consent, shall receiue no shame or filth that can soile or spot the
same. In saying so, she began again to weepe in such aboundance,
as the humors of hir bryane ranne downe by the issue of bothe hir
Eyes. Montanine albeit sorrowfull beyond measure to see his ge-
nle and chaste sister in such vexation and heauinesse, reioysed yet in
his mind, that she had agreed to his request, which presaged the
good lucke that afterwarde chaunced vnto him, for hys Liberall
offer. Wherefore sayd he to Angelica, I was neuer in my life so
desirous to liue, but that I rather choose to dye, than procure a
thinge that shoulde turne thee to displeasure and griefe, or to ha-
zarde thine honor and reputation in daunger or perill of damage,
which thou hast euer knowne, and shouldest haue still perceiued
by effect, or more properly to speak, touched with thy finger if that
incomparable and rare curtesie and Liberality of Salimbene had
not prouoked me to requyre that, which honesty thou canst not
geue, nor I demaunde without wronge to thee, and prejudice to
mine owne estimation and honoure. But what the feare I haue
to be deemed ingrate, hath made me forget thee, and the great ho-
nesty of Anselmo maketh me hope, yea and steadfastly beleue, that
thou shalt receiue none other displeasure, but to be presented vnto
him whome at other times we haue thought to be our mortal en-
nemy. And I thinke it impossible that he wil vse any villany to hit
whome he so feruently loueth, for whose sake he feareth not the ha-
tred of his friends, and disdaind not to saue him whome he ha-
ted, and on whome he myght haue bene reuenged.
And forsomuch sister, as the face commonly sheweth the signe
token of the heartes affection, I pray thee by any meanes declare
no sad countenance in my presence of Salimbene, but rather cheere vp
thy face, dye by the aboundance of thy teares, & he by seeing thee
full

Salimbene and Angelica.

full and more, may be moued to continue his curtesy and bfe thee
honestly, being satisfied with thy liberallty, and the offer that I
shall make of our seruice.

Here may be seene the extremitie of two dyuers thinges, duety
combatting wth shame, reason being in contention wth himself.
Angelica knew and confessed that hir brother did but his duetye, &
that she was bound by the same very bond. On the other side, hir
estate and virginal chastity, brake the endeuors of hir duety, and
denyed to doe that whych she esteemed ryght. Neuerthelesse shee
prepared hir self to follow both the one and the other: and by ac-
quitting y duety to hir brother, she ordayned the meane, to discharg
him of that, which he was bound to his benefactor, determininge
neuerthelesse rather to dye, than shamefully to suffer hir selfe to
be abused, or to make hir lose the honour, which made hir glister
amongst the maidens of the city, and to deface hir good fame by
an acte so villanous. But that speciall rare vertue was more sin-
gular in hir, than was that continency of Cyrus the Persian King
who fearing to be forced by the allurements of the excellēt beauty
of chaste Panthea, would not suffer hir to be brought into his pre-
sence, for feare that hee bringe surmounted with folish lustes,
should force hir, that by other meanes could not be perswaded to
breake the holy lawes of Mariage, and promised faith to hir hus-
band. For Salimbene hauing in his presence, and at his com-
maundement hir whome aboue all thyngs he loued would by no
meanes abuse his power, but declared his gentle nature to bee of
other force and effect, thā that of the aforesaid king as by reading
the successe of this hystorie you shal perceiue.

After that Montanine & his sister had vttered many other words
vpon their determination, & that the saye maiden was appeased
of hir sorrow, attending the issue of that which they went about to
begin: Anselmo was come home out of the Countrey, whereof
Charles hauing intelligence, about the second houre of the night,
he caused his sister to make hir ready, & in company of one of their
seruaunts that carried light before them, they came to the lodgings
of Salimbene, whose seruaunt seeing Montanine so accompanied
to knocke at the Gate, if hee did marnel I leaue for you to think,
by

by reason of the displeasure and hatred which he knew to bee betwene the two families, not knowing that which had already passed for the beginning of a final peace of so many controuersies: for which cause so assented as he was, he went to tel his master that Montanine was at the gate, desirous secretly to talke vnto hym. Salimbene knowing what company Charles had with him, was not vnwilling to goe downe, & causing two Torches to be lighted, came to his gate to entertaine them, & to welcome the brother and the sister, wth so great curtesie and friendship as he was surprised with loue, seeing befoze his eyes the sight of hir & burned hys heart incessantly, not discoueryng as yet the secrets of his thought by making hir to vnderstand the good wyl he bare hir, & how much he was hir seruant. He could not tel wel whether he was incharmed, or his eyes dafelled, or not wel wakened from sleepe when he sawe Angelica, so amazed was he with the straungenesse of the fact, and arriual of the maiden to his house. Charles seeing hym so confused, and knowing that the great affection he bare vnto his sister, made him so perplexed & besides himself, said vnto him. Sir, we would gladly speake wth you in one of your Chambers, that there myght be none other witness of our discourse, but we three together. Salimbene which was rapt wth toy, was able to make none other answeare, but, Goe we whether you please. So taking his Angelica by the hand, they went into the Hall, and from thence into his chamber, which was furnished accordinge to the state & riches of a Lord, he being one of the welthiest and chiefe of the City of Siena. When they were set downe, and all the seruants gone forth, Charles began to say to Salimbene, these Wordes: You may not thinke it straunge (Sir Salimbene) if against the Lawes and Customes of our Common Wealthe, I at this tyme of the Night doe call you by, for knowinge the Wande wherewith I am bound vnto you, I must for ever confesse and count my selfe to be your slaue & bondman, you hauing don a thing in my behalf & deserueth my name of Lord & master. But what vngateful man is he that will forget so great a benefitt, as that which I haue receiued of you, holding of you, life, goods, honoꝝ, & this mine own sister that

Salimbene and Angelica.

that entoreth by your meanes the presence of hir brother and his
rest of mind, not losing our noble reputation by the losse prepared
for me through vnrighteous iudgement, you hauing stated the ru-
ine both of his and mine, & the rest of our house & kin. I am ryghte
glad sir, that this my duty & seruice is bounden to so vertuous a
Gentleman as you be, but exceeding sorry, that fortune is so fro-
wards & contrary vnto me, that I am not able to accomplishe my
good will, and if ingratitude may lodge in mind of a ready Gen-
tleman, who hath no helpe but of himselfe and in the well of his
chast sister, and minde vnited in two persons onely saued by you,
duty doeth requyre to present the rest, and to submit al that is left
to be disposed at your good pleasure. And because that I am well
assured, that it is Angelica alone which hath kindled the flame
of desire, and hath caused you to loue that which your predeces-
sours haue deadly hated, that same sparke of knowledge, which
our misery could not quench with all his force, hath made his way,
and shewed the path whereby we shall auoide the name of ingrate
and forgetfull persons, and that same which hath made you lybe-
rall towards me, shalbe bountifully bestowed vpon you. It is An-
gelica sir which you see present heere, who to discharge my band,
hath willingly rendred to be your owne, submittinge his selfe to
your good will, for euer to be yours. And I which am his bro-
ther, and haue receiued that great good will of his, as in my po-
wer to haue his will, do present the same, & leaue his in your hands,
to vse as you would your owne, praying you to accept the same, &
to consider whose is the gift, and from whence it commeth, and
how it ought to be regarded. When he had sayd so, Montanino
rose vp, and without further talke, went home vnto his house.
If Anselmo were abashed at the Montaninos arriuall, and aston-
ned at the Oratation of Charles, his sodain departure was more to
be maruelled at, & therewithal to see the effect of a thing which he
neuer hoped, nor thought vpon. He was exceeding glad & sorrowfull to
see himself in the company of his, whose he desired aboue al things of
the world, but sorry to see his heauy and sorrowfull for such chance.
He supposed his being ther, to procede rather of his good
and

and gentle Nature, than of the Wardens will and lpyng. For
 whych cause taking hir by the hand, and holding hir betwene hys
 armes, he vsed these or sutch lyke wordes: Gentlewoman, if euer I
 had felt and knowne with what Wyllyng the varietie and lychtynesse
 of worldly thynges do lye, and the gaynes of inconstant fortune,
 at this ptesent I haue scene one of the most manifest pteses which
 seemeth to me so straunge, as almost I dare not beleeue what I
 see before myne Eyes. I know well that it is for you, and for the
 seruice that I beare you, that I haue broken the effect of that ha-
 tred, whych by inheritaunce I haue receiued against your House,
 and for that deuotion haue deliuered your Brother. But I see,
 that Fortune wyl not let mee to haue the upper hand, to bee the
 Conquerer of hir sodaine pangs. But you your self shall see, and
 euery man shall know that my heart is none other than noble, and
 my deuises tend, but to the exploit of all vertue and Gentlenesse:
 wherefore I pray you (sayd he kissing hir louingly) be not sad, and
 doubt not that your seruaunt is any other now, hauing you in his
 power, than he was when he durst not dyscouer the ardent Loue
 that vexed him, and held him in feeble state, ful of desire & thought
 you also may bee sure, that he hath not had the better hande ouer
 me, ne yet for his curtesy hath obtained victorie, nor you for obey-
 ing him. For with that you be myne, and for sutch yeldded and giue
 to me, I wyl keepe you, as hir whome I loue and esteeme aboue al
 thyngs of the World, making you my Companion and the one
 ly mistresse of my goodes, heart, and wyl. Thinke not that I am
 the frend of Fortune, and practise pleasure alone without ver-
 tue. It is modesty which commaundeth me, & honesty is my guide
 of my conceits. Assure you then, & repose your comfort on mee:
 for none other than Angelica Montanine, shall be the wyfe of Au-
 selmo Salimbene: and during my life, I wyl bee the frend,
 the defender and supporter of your house. At these good newes,
 the drouse and wanderyng Spirite of the fayre Siena mayd a wa-
 ked, who endyng hir teares and appeasing hir sorow, rose vp, &
 made a very lowe reuerence vnto hir curteous frend, thanking
 hym for hys greate and incomparable liberalite, promysing all
 seruyce,

Salimbene and Angelica.

seruice, duetie, and Amitye, that a Gentlewoman ought to beare
vnto him, whom God hath reserued for hir Spouse and husband.
After an infinite number of honest embracements and pleasaunte
kisses giuen and receiued on both parties, Anselmo called vnto
him one of his Tutes that dwelled with in him, to whome he de-
liuered his new Conquest to keepe, and speedily without delay he
sent for the next of his kinne and dearest friends: and being come,
he intreated them to keepe him company, in a very bzgent & weigh-
ty businesse he had to do, wherein if they shewed themselves dis-
gent in his request, doubtful it is not, but he addrest speede for
accomplishment of his Enterpryse. Then causeng hys Tute and
welbeloued Angelica to come forth, he carryed them (not without
their great admiration) to the pailace of Montanine, whither be-
ing arryued: he and hys Companie were well intertayned of the
sayd Montanine, the Brother of saye Angelica. When they were
in the Hall, Salimbene sayd to his Brother in law that should be:
Senior Montanine, it is not long sithens, that you in Company
of my faire Gentlewoman heere, came home to speake wryth mee,
desirous to haue no man prisyue to the effect of your conference.
But I am come to you with this troupe to disclose my minde be-
fore you al, and to manifeste what I purpose to doe, to the intente
the whole World may know your good and honest Nature, and
vnderstand how I can be requited on them, which in deuoz to gra-
tifie me in any thing. Having said so, & euery man being set down,
he turned his talk to the rest of the company in this wise I doubt
not my friends and Noble Dames, but that ye much muse and
maruell to see me in this house so late, and in your company, and
am sure, that a great desire moueth your minds to know for what
purpose, the cause, and why I haue gathered this Assemblie in a
time vnlooke for, and in place where none of our race and
kinne of long time did enter, and lesse did meane to make hither
their repaire. But when you doe consider what vertue and good-
nesse resteth in the heartes of those men, that shunne and auoide
the brutishnesse of Wynde, to followe the reasonable part, and
which properly is called Spirituall, you shall thereby perceiue,
that when Gentle kynde and Noble Heart, by the great mistresse
dame

same Nature, be grafted in the myndes of Men, they cease not to
 make appeare the effect of their doings, sometime producing one
 vertue, sometimes another, which cease not to cause the fructe of
 such industry both to blome and beare: In such wise, as the
 more those vertuous actes and commendable workes, do appeare
 abroade, the greater diligence is imploied to searche the matter
 wherein she can cause to appeare the force of vertue and excellen-
 cy, conceiuing singular delectation in that hir good and holy deue-
 ry, which byngeth forth a fruct worthy of such a stocke.
 And that force of minde & Generosity of Noble Heart is so firme
 & sure in operation, as although humane thinges be vnstable and
 subiect to chaung, yet they cannot be seuered or disparcelled. And al-
 though it be the Blisse and white, whereat fortune dischargeth al
 hir darts and shaftes, the creaking shooting and assailing the same
 round, yet it continueth stable and firme like a Roche and Cypse
 beate[n] wth the violent fury of waues rising by wind or tempest.
 Whereby it chaunceth, that riches & dignitie can no more aduance
 the heart of a slaue and villaine, than pouerty make vile and abase
 the greatnesse of courage in them that be procreated of other blasse
 than of common soyle, whych daily keepe the maiesty of their ope-
 ginall, and lye after the instincte of good and Noble Bloude,
 wherewith their auncesters were made Noble, and sucked that
 same vertue out of the Teates of Pourles Breastes, who in
 the myddes of troublesome trauayles of Fortune that doe assaile
 them, and depresse theyr modesty, their face and Countenaunce,
 and theyr factes full well declare theyr condition, and doe to vn-
 derstande, that vnder such a Misery, a Mynde is hydde,
 which deserueth greater Euerdon than the eigre taste of Ca-
 linitie. In that dyd glowe and syne the Pourke of the Pers-
 sian and Median Monarch, beyng nourished amonges the sal-
 les and Stables of hys Grandfather, & the gentle kinde of the
 founder of stately Rome sockeld in the Shepercoates of Pen-
 ces Shepheards. Thus much haue I sayd, my good iordes and
 dames, in consideration of y noble corage & gentle minde of Charles
 Moeraine, and of his siller, who without prejudice to any other I
 dare

Salimbene and Angelica.

dare to say, is the paragon and mirrour of all chaste and courteous
maiden, well trayned by, amonges the whole Troupe of those
that lye this day in Sicilia, who beeing brought to the ende and
last point of their ruine, as euery of you doth knowe, and they
race so sore decayed, as there remaineth but the onely Name of
Montanine: Notwithstanding they neuer lost the heart, desire, ne
yet the effect of the curtesie, and naturall bounty, whych euery doth
accompany the mynde of those that be Noble in deede. Whych is
the cause that I am constrained to accuse our Ancesters, of to
much cruelty, and of the litle respecte whych for a controuersie
occurred by chaunce, haue pursued them with such mortall re-
uenge, as without ceasing, with all their force, they haue assayed
to ruinate, abolyshe, and for euer adnichilate that a ryght Noble
and illustre race of the Montanines, amongs whome if neuer any
goodnesse appeared to the Worlde, but the Honesty, Gentlenesse,
Curtesie and vertuous maners of these twayne here presente, the
Brother and Sister, yet they ought to be accompted amonges the
ranke of the Noblest and chiefeest of our City, to the intent in time
to come it may not be reported, that wee haue esteemed and cha-
rityshed Riches and dyssolite mucke, more than vertue and modesty.
But imitating those excellent gouerners of Italy, whych held the
Romane Empire, let vs rather reuerence the Vertuous Doore,
than prayse or pryse the Rich, giuen to vice and wickednesse. And
for so much as I do see you all to be desirous to knowe the cause
and argument, whych maketh me to vse this talke, and forceth
mee to prayse the curtesie and goodnesse of h Montanines, pleaseth
you to stay a litle with patience, and not thinke the tyme tedious,
I meane to declare the same. Plainely to confesse vnto you (for
that it is no cryme of Death, or heinous offence) the gifts of na-
ture, the Beauty and Comelynesse of fayre Angelica heere pre-
sent, haue so captiuate my Mind, and depriued my heart of Lib-
erty, as Night and Day trauelling how I might discouer vn-
to hir my martirdom, I did consume in such wise, as losing lust
of slepe and meate, I feared ere long to be either dead of sorrow or
estranged of my right wits, seing no meanes how I might auoide
the same, because our two houses and families were at contin-
all

all debate : and albeit conflicts were ceased , and quarrelles forgotten , yet there rested (as I thought) a certaine desire both in the one and the other of offence , when time and occasion did serue . And yet mine affection for all that was not decreased , but rather more tormented , and my greife increased , hopelesse of help , which now is chaunced to me as you shall heare . You doe know , and so do all men , howe within these fewe daies past , the Lord Montaigne here present , was accused befoze the Seniorie , for trespasses against the Statutes and Edicts of the same , and being Prisoner , hauing not wherewith to satisfie the condemnation , the Law affirmed that his life should recompence and supply default of Money . I not able to suffer the want of hym , which is the brother of the dearest thing I esteeme in the Worlde , and hauing not hir in possession , nor lyke without him to attayne hir , payed that Summe , and deliuered hym . He , by what meanes I know not , or how he coniectured the beneuolence of my deede , thynking that it proceeded of the honest Loue and affection which I bare to gracious and amiable Angelica , wel considering of my curtesie , hath overcome me in prodigalitye he this Night came vnto me , with his Sister my mistresse , yelding hir my slaue and Bondwoman , leauyng hir with me , to doe with hir as I would with any thing I had . Behold my good Lordes , and yee Noble Ladies and Cousins , and consider how I may recompence this Benefite , and be able to satisfie a present so precious , and of such Value and regard as both of them be , such , as a right puissant prince and LORD , may be contented with a ducy so Liberall and Jewell inestimable of two offered thynges . The assistants that were there , could not tell what to say , the discourse had so much drawne their myndes into diuers fantasies and contrary opinions , seeing that the same requyred by deliberation to be considered , befoze lightly they vttered their myndes . But they knew not the intent of him , which had called them thither , more to testifie his fact , thā to iudge of the thing he wēt about , or able to hinder & let the same . True it is , that the ladies viewing & marking the amiable countenance of the Montaigne Damself , woulde haue iudged for hir , if they feared not to

Salimbene and Angelica.

bee refused of hem, whome the thyng did touche most neere.
 Who wthout longer staye, opened to them al, what he was pur-
 posed to do, saying: Sith ye do spende tyme so long vpon a mat-
 ter already meant and determyned, I will ye to knowe, that ha-
 uing regard of mine honour, and desirous to satisfie the honesty of
 the Brother and Sister, I mynde to take Angelica to my wyfe and
 lawfull spouse, vnting that whych so long tyme hath bene deuy-
 ded, and making in two bodyes, whilom not well accorded and
 agreed, one lyke and vniforme v^{er} yll, prapring you ech one, ioyfully
 to lye with me, and your selues to reioyse in that alliance, whych
 seemeth rather a worke from Heauen, than a deepe concluded by
 the Counsell and industrie of Men. So lykewyse all wedded
 feeres in holy Wedlocke (by reason of the effect and the Autho-
 of the same, euen G O D him selfe, whych byd ordayne it firste)
 bee wyrtten in the infallible booke of hys owne prescience, to the
 intent that nothing may decay, whych is sustayned with the migh-
 ty hand of that Almighty G O D, the G O D of widders, which
 verily hee hath displayed ouer thee (deare Brother) by makinge
 thee to fall into distresse and daunger of death, that myne Angeli-
 ca, beinge the meane of thy deliuerance, might also bee cause of
 the attonement which I doe hope henceforth shall bee, betwene so
 Noble houses as ours be. Thys small decree reueled in open
 audience, as it was, against their expectation, and the ende that
 the hundred of Anselmo looked for, so was the same no lesse strange
 and bashfull, as ioyfull and pleasaunt, feeling a sodain ioy, not
 accustomed in theyr mynde, for that vnion and alliance. And al-
 beit that their ryches was vnequall, and the dowry of Angelica
 nothing neare the great wealth of Salimbene, yet all Men dyd
 deeme him happy, that hee had chaunced vpon so vertuous a ma-
 den, the onely Modestie and Integritie of whome, deserued to
 bee coupled with the most honourable. For when a man hath re-
 specte onely to the beauty or Riches of hir, whome he meaneth to
 take to Wyfe, hee most commonly doth incurre the Mischiefe,
 that the Spryte of dyssention intermeddleth amyd theyr house-
 hold, whereby Pleasure vanishing with Age, maketh the ruf-
 led face (beset with a Thousand wrynkeled furrowes) to growe
 pale.

pale and dyde . The Wyfe lykewyse when she seeth hir goodes to surmount , the substance of hir wedded Husband, she aduanceth hir hearte, she swelleth wth pryde , indenuoyng the upper hand and souerainty in all thyngs , whereupon it riseth , that of two frayle and transitorye things, the building which hath so feeble foundation , can not indure, man being borne to commaund, and can not abyde a mayster ouer hym , being the chiefe & Lord of hys Wyfe . Now Salimbene , to perfourme the effect of hys curtesie, gaue his fayre Wyfe the moytie of his Lands and goods, in fauoure of the Mariage, adopting by that meanes, Montanine to bee his Brother , appointing hym to be heyre of all hys goodes in case he deceased wythout heyres of his Body . And if G O D did send hym Children , he instituted him to bee the heyre of the other halfe which rested by hys donation to Angelica his new espouse . Whom he married solempnely the Sunday folowing , to the great contentation and maruell of the whole City, whtch long time was afflicted by the ciuile dissentions of those two houses.

But what? Sutch be the variettes of worldly successe, and sutch is the mischief amongs men , that the same which honestly hath no power to winne , is surmounted by the disgrace and misfortune of watched time , I neede not to alleage here those amongs the Romans, which from great hatred and malice were reconciled with the indissoluble knot of Amity : forsomutch as the dignities and Honoures of theyr City prouoked one to flatter and fawne vpon an other for particular profit , and not one of them attained to sutch excellencie and renoume , as the foresayd did , one of whome was vanquished with the fire of an amorous passion , whtch forcyng nature hir selfe , brought that to passe, that which could neuer haue bene thoughte or imagyned . And yet Men well accuse loue, and painte hir in the Colours of foolyshe Furze and raging Madnesse . No no, Loue in a gentle heart is the true subiect and substance of Vertue , Curtesy , and Modest Maners, expellynge all Cruelty and Vengeance, and nourishyng peace amongs men . But if any do violate and prophane the holy Lawes of Loue, and peruert that which is Vertuous , the faulte is not in that holpe Sancte , but in hym whtch foloweth it without sayll , and kno-

Salimbene and Angelica.

with not the perfection. As hapneth in euery operation, that of it selfe is honest, although defamed by those, who thinking to vse it, doe filthily abuse the same, and cause the grosse and ignozant to condemne that is good, for the folye of such inconstant fooles: In the other is painted a heart so horde of the bloody and abhominable sinne of Ingratitude, as if death had ben the due remedy and meane to satisfie his band and ducty, he would haue made no conscience to offer himselfe frankly and freely to the dreadfull passage of the same. You see what is the force of a gentle heart wel trained by, that would not be vanquished in curse spe and liberality. I make you to be iudges, (I meane you) that be conuersant in loues causes and that with a Iudgement passionlesse, boide of partiality. doe discourse vpon the factes and occurrentes that chaunce to men. I make you (I saye) Iudges to giue sentence, whether of thzee caried away the pryse, and most bound his companion by liberrall acts, and curtesie not forced. You see a mortall enemy sorrow for the misery of his aduersary, but solycited therunto by the ineuitable force of Loue. The other marcheth with the glozy of a present so rare and exquisite, as a great Monarch would haue accepted it for Anguler sauoz and prodigality. The maiden stepeth forth to make the thirde in ranke, with a loue so stard & charity wonderfull towards hir brother, as being nothyng assured whether he to whome she offered hir selfe were so Moderate, as Curteous, she yeldeth hir selfe to the losse of hir chastity. The first assayeth to make himselfe a conquerour by marriage, but she diminishing no tote of hir Noble mind, he must seeke else where hys pryse of victozy. To hir a desyre to kill hir selfe (if thinges succeeded contrary to hir minde) myght haue stopped the way to hir great glozy, had she not regarded hir virginity, more than hir own Lyfe. The second seemeth to go half constrained, and by maner of acquittall, and had hys affectyon bene to render hymselfe Slaue to hys Foe, hys Patron and preseruer, it would haue diminished his pryse.

But Athens inoughe wee haue hercof discoursed, and bene large in treatie of Tragicomicall matters, intermyxed and suaged (in some parte) with the Enteruiues of doloze, modesty, and indifferente

Indifferent good hap, and in some wholly imparted the dreadfull
 endes like to terrible beginnings, I meane for a reliefe, and after
 such some sweete bankets, to interlarde a licentious refection for
 sweetening the mouthes of the delicate: And do purpose in this No-
 uell insuing, to manifest a pleasaunt dispozt betweene a Wydow
 and a Scholler, a passinge Practise of a crafty Dame, not well
 schooled in the discipline of Academicall rules, a surmountinge
 science to trade the nouices of that forme, by ware foresight, to in-
 countre those that by laborious trauaile and nightly watch, haue
 studied the rare knowledge of Mathematicall, and other hidden
 and secrete Artes. Wishing them so well to beware, as I am des-
 trous to let them know by this rudiment, the successe of such at-
 temptes,

Mistresse Helena of Florence.

A Wydow called Mistresse *HELENA*, wyth
 whom a Scholler was in loue, (shee louing an o-
 ther) made the same Scholler to stande a whole
 Wynters night in the Snow to wayte for hir, who
 afterwarde by a sleight and Pollicie, caused hir
 in Iuly, to stand vppon a Tower starker naked a-
 monges Flies & Gnats, and in the Sunne.

The. XXXI. Nouell.



Turne we now a little from these sundry haps, to
 solace our selues wyth a merry deuice, and plea-
 saunt circumstance of a Schollers loue, and of
 the wily guily Subtilties of an amorous Wy-
 dow of Florence. A Scholler returned from Pa-
 ris to practise hys knowledge at home in his owne

Countrey, learneth a more cunning Lecture of Mistresse Helena,

Ag 3.

than he

Mistresse Helena

than he did of the subtillest Sorbone Doctoꝝ, oꝝ other Mathema-
ticall from whence he came. The Scholler as playnly hee had ap-
plied his booke, and earnestly harkned his readings, so he simple
meant to be a faithfull Louer and deuout requirant to this Jolly
dame, that had bowed hir Deuotion and promised Pilgrimage to
an other Sapnet. The Scholler vpon the first view of the Wy-
dowes wandring Lookes, forgetting Ouides Lessons of Loues
guiles, pursued his conceipt to the bittermost. The Scholler ne-
uer remembꝛed how many valiaunt, wise, and learned men, wan-
ton Women had seduced and deceyued. Hee had forgot how Ca-
tullus was beguiled by Lesbia, Tibullus by Delia, Propertius by
Cynthia, Naso by Corionna, Demetrius by Lamia, Timotheus by
Phryne, Philip by a Greeke mayden, Alexander by Thays, Han-
niball by Campania, Cæsar by Cleopatra, Pompeius by Flora,
Pericles by Aspaga, Psammiticus the king of Ægypt by Rhodope,
and diuers other very famous by Women of that Name. Hee
had not ben wel trayned in holy writ, oꝝ heard of Samsons Dalida,
oꝝ of Salomons Concubins, but like a playne dealinge man, bele-
ued what she promised, followed what she bad him, waited whiles
she mocked him, attended till shee laughed him to scoꝛne. And yet
foꝝ all these Jolly pastimes inuented by this Widdow, to deceyue
the pooꝛe Scholler, she scaped not free from his Logike rules, noꝝ
salte from his Philosophy. He was forced to turne ouer Aristotle,
to resolue his Porphyrie, and to gather his Wits about hym to
requite this louing Peate, that had so charitably best witt him. He
willingly serched ouer Ptolome, perused Albumazar, made haste
to Haly, yea and foꝝ a shifte besturred him in Erra Pater, foꝝ mat-
ching of two contrary Elements. Foꝝ colde in Chyristmasse holy
dayes, & Frost at Twelstide, shewed no moꝛe force in this pooꝛe
learned Scholler, than the Sunnes heate in the Feries of Iuly.
Gnats, Flies, and Waspes, at Noone dayes in Sommer vpon
the naked tender Corpse of this fayre Widdow. The Scholler
stoode belowe in a Court, benoommed foꝝ colde, the Widdowe
preached a losfe in the top of a Tower, and fayne woulde haue had
Water to coole hir extreme heate. The Scholler in his Shyre be-
decked wyth his demissaries. The Widdow so Naked as hir
Graund:

Graundmother Cue, wethout Vesture to shroud hir. The Wydow by magike Arte what so euer it cost, woulde fayne haue recovered hir lost Louer. The Scholler well espying his aduantage when hee was asked counsell, so Incharmed hir with his Sillogismes, as he made hir to mount a Tower, to curse the time that euer she knew him or hir Louer. So the Wydow not well beaten in causes of Schoole, was whipt with the Rod, wherewith shee scourged other. Was good Woman, had she known that olde malice had not bene forgotten, shee woulde not haue trusted, and lesse committed hir selfe to the Circle of his Enchauntments. If women wist what dealings are wth mē of great reading, they would amongs one hundred other, not deale wth one of thee meanest of those that be Bookish. One Girolamo Ruscelli a learned Italian making pretty notes for the better elucidation of the Italian Decamerone of Boccaccio, iudgeth Boccaccio himselfe to be this Scholler, whom by an other name he termeth to be Rinieri. But whatsoever that Scholler was, he was truly to extreme in reueng, and therein coulde vse no meane. For hee neuer left the poore feeble soule, for all hir curteous Words and gentle Supplication, vntill the Skin of hir flesh was parched with the scalding Sunne beames. And not contented with that, delt his Timose also to hir Mayde, by sending hir to help hir Mistresse, where also she brake hir Legge. Yet Phileno was more pittfull ouer the. 3. Pemphes and fayre Goddesses of Bologna, whose Hystoꝝy you may reade in the. 49. Bouell of my former Tome. He fared not so roughly with those, as Rinieri did with thys, that sought but to gayne what she had lost. Well, how so euer it was, and what differency betweene either of them, this Hystoꝝy ensuinge, more aptly shall geue to vnderstande.

Not long Athens, there was in Florence, a young Gentlewoman of worshipfull parentage, fayre and comely of personage, of courage stout, and abounding in goods of Fortune (called Helena,) who being a widow, determined not to mary agayne, bicause she was in loue with a yong man that was not vopde of Natures good gifts, whom for hir owne Tooth, aboue other shee had spect-

Mistresse Helena

ally chosen. In whom (setting aside all other care) many tymes (by meanes of one of hir maydes which she trusted best) she had great pleasure and delight. It chaunced about the same time that a yong Gentleman of that Citie called Rinieri, hauinge a great time studied at Paris, returned to Florence, not to sell his Science by retaple, as many doe, but to knowe the reasons of things, and the causes thereof, which is a speciall good exercise for a Gentleman. And being there honoured and greatly esteemed of all men, aswell for his courteous behauiour, as also for his knowledge, he liued like a good Cittizen. But it is commonly seene, they which haue best vnderstandinge and knowledge, are soonest tangled in Loue: euen so it hapned, with this Rinieri, who repayng one day for his pastetime to a feaste, this Madame Helena clothed all in blacke, (after the manner of Widowes) was there also, and seemed in his eyes so beautifull and well fauored, as any woman that euer he saw, and thought that hee might bee accounted happy, to whom God did shewe so much fauoure, as to suffer him to be cleped betweene hir Armes: And beholdinge hir diuers tymes and knowing that the greatest and dearest things cannot be gotten without labour, he determined to vse all his endeuour and care in pleasing of hir, that thereby he might obtayne hir loue, and so enjoy hir. The yong Gentlewoman not very bashfull, conceyuing greater opinion of hir selfe, than was needefull, not castinge hir Eyes towards the Ground, but rolling them artificially on euery side, and by and by perceyuing much gazing to be vpon hir; espied Rinieri earnestly beholding hir, and sayd smiling to hir selfe: I thinke that I haue not this day lost my time in comming hither, for if I bee not deceyued, I shall catch a Pigeon by the Nose. And beginning certayne times stedfastly to looke vpon him, she forced hir selfe so much as she could, to seeme very earnestly to beholde him: And on the other part thinking, that the more pleasaunt and amorous she shewed hirselfe to be, the more hir beauty should be esteemed, chiefly of him whom specially shee was disposed to loue. The wise Scholler giuing ouer his Philosophy, bent all his endeuour here vnto, and thinking to be hir seruant, learned where she dwelt, & began to passe before hir house vnder pretence of some other occasion:

Non : Whereat the Gentlewoman reioysed for the causes before-
 sayde, sayning an earnest desire to looke vpon him. Wherefore the
 Scholler hauing found a certayne meane to bee acquainted wyth
 hir Mayde, discovered his loue : Praying hir to deale so with hir
 mistresse, as he might haue hir fauor. The maide promised him ve-
 ry louingly, incontinently reporting the same to hir mistresse, who
 with the greatest Scoffes in the Worlde, gaue eare thereunto and
 sayd : Seest thou not from whence this Goodfellowe is come to
 lose al his knowledg & doctrine that he hath brought vs frō Paris. ”
 Now let vs deuise therefore how he may bee handled for going a- ”
 bout to seeke h, which he is not like to obtaine. Thou shalt say vns ”
 to him, when hee speaketh to thee agayne, that I loue him better ”
 than he loueth me, but it behooueth me to saue mine honoure, and ”
 to keepe my good name and estimation amongst other Women. ”
 Which thinge, if he be so wise (as hee seemeth) hee ought to E-
 steeeme and Regarde. Th poore Wench, she knoweth not wel, what
 it is to mingle Huswauery w learning, or to intermeddle distaues
 with bookes. Now the mayde when she had founde the Scholler,
 tolde him as hir mistresse had commaunded : Whereof the Schol-
 ler was so glad, as he with greater endeuor proceeded in his enter-
 prise, and began to write Letters to the Gentlewoman, which were
 not refused, although he could receiue no answers that pleased
 him, but such as were done openly. And in this sorte the Gentle-
 woman long time fed him with delays. In the ende she discovered
 all this new loue vnto hir frend, who was attached with such an
 Aking Disease in his heade, as the same was fraught with the
 Reume of Jealousie : Wherefore she to shewe hir selfe to be sus-
 pected without cause (very carefull for h Scholler) sent hir mayde
 to tell him, that she had no conuenient time to doe the thinge that
 should please him, Arhens he was first assured of hir loue, but ho-
 ped the next Christmasse holly dayes to be at his commaundemēt:
 Wherefore if he would vouchsafe to come the night following the
 first holly day, into the Court of hir house, she would wayte there
 for his comming. The Scholler the best contented man in the
 Worlde, sayled not at the time appoynted, to go to the Gentlewo-
 mans h use : Where being placed by the Mayde in a base Court,
 and shut

Mistresse Helena

and shut fast within the same, he attended for hir, who Suppinge
with hir friende that night, very pleasauntly recited vnto him all
that she had determined then to doe, saying: Thou mayst see now
what loue I doe beare vnto him, of whom thou hast foolishly con-
cepued this Jealousie. To which wordes hir Freende gaue care
with great delectation, desiringe to see the effect of that, whereof
she gaue him to vnderstand by wordes. Now as it chaunced the
day befoze, the Snowe fell downe so thicke from aboue, as it coue-
red the Earth by which meanes the Scholler within a very little
space after his arriual, began to be very colde, howbeit hopinge
to receiue recompence, he suffred it patiently. The Gentle woman
“ a little while after, sayd vnto hir Freende: I pray thee let vs goe
“ into my chaumber, where at a little Window wee may looke out,
“ and what he doth that maketh thee so Jealous, and herken what
“ aunswere he will make to my Mayde, whom of purpose I will
“ send forth to speake vnto him. When she had so sayde, they went
“ to the Window, where they seeing the Scholler (they not seene of
“ hym,) heard the Mayde speake these wordes: Rinieri, my My-
“ stresse is the angriest Woman in the World, for that as yet she ca-
“ not come vnto thee. But the cause is, that one of hir Brethren is
“ come to visite hir this Euening, and hath made a long discourse of
“ talke vnto hir, and afterwardes bad himselfe to Supper, and as
“ yet is not departed, but I thinke hee will not tary longe, and then
“ immediatly she will come. In the meane tyme she prayeth thee to
“ take a little payne. The Scholler beleeuing this to be true sayde
“ vnto hir: Require your Mistresse to take no care for mee till hir
“ leasure may serue: But yet entreat hir to make so much hast as
“ she can. The Mayde returned and went to Bed, and the Dame of
“ the house sayd then vnto hir frend. Now Sir, what say you to this?
“ Doe you thinke that if I loued him, as you mistrust, that I
“ would suffer him to tarry beneath in this great colde to coole him-
“ selfe? And hauing sayd so, she went to Bed with hir frende, who
then was partly satisfied, and all the night they continued in greate
pleasure and solace, laughing, and mocking the miserable Schol-
ler that waiked by & downe the court to chase himselfe, not know-
ing where to sit, or which way to auoyde the colde, and cursed the
long

long tarynge of his mistresse Brother, hoping at euery noyse he heard, that she had come to open the doze to let him in, but his hope was in vayne. Now she hauinge sported hir selfe almost till midnight, sayd vnto hir frend: How think you (Sir) by our Scholler, whether iudge you is greater, his Wylsome, or the loue that I beare vnto him? The colde I I make him to suffer, wil extinguishe the heate of suspition which yee conceiued of my wordes the other day. Yee say true (sayd hir frend,) and I do assure you, that like as you are my delight, my rest, my comfort, and all my hope, euen so I am yours, and shalbe during life. For the confirmation of which renewed amity, they spared no delights which the Goddesse doeth vse to serue and imploy vpon hir seruants and suters. And after they had talked a certayne time, she sayd vnto him: For Gods sake (Sir) let vs rise a litle, to see if the glowing fire which this my new loue hath dayly writtten vnto me, to burn in him, bee quenched or not. And rising out of their Beds, they went to a little Window, and looking downe into the Courte, they sawe the Scholler daunsing vpon the Snow, whereunto his shiuering teeth were so good Instruments, as he seemed the trimmest Dauncer that euer trode a Cinquepace after futch Musicke, being forced thereunto thzough the great colde which he suffered. And then she sayde vnto him: What say you to this my frende, doe you not see how cunningge I am to make men daunce without Taber, or Pipe? Yes in deede (sayd hir Louer) yee be an excellent Musitian. Then (quod she) let vs go downe to the doze, and I will speake vnto him, but in any wise say you nothing, and we shal heare what reasons and arguments he will frame to mooue me to compassion, and perchaunce shal haue no little pastime to behold him. Whereupon they went downe softly to the doze, and there without opening the same, shee with a soft boyce out at a little whole, called the Scholler vnto hir. Which hee hearing, began to prayse God and thancke hym a thousande times, beleeuing verily that he should then be let in, and appoaching the doze, sayd: I am heere mine (owne sweete heart) open the doze for Gods sake, for I am like to die for Cold. Whom in mocking wise she answered: can you make me beleue (M. Scholler) that you are so tender, or that the colde is so great as you asseme

firme

Mistresse Helena

"Arise, for a little Snow newly fallne downe ? There be at Paris
"farre greater Snowes than these be, but to tell you the truth, you
"cannot come in yet, for my Brother (the deuell take him) came yesternight
"to supper, and is not yet departed, but by and by hee will
"be gon, and then you shall obtayne the effect of your desire, assuring
"you, that with much ado I haue stolne away from hym, to
"come hither for your comfort, praying you not to thincke it longe.
"Madame sayd the Scholler, I beseech you for Gods sake to open
"the doze, that I may stand in couert from the Snow, which with
"in this houre hath fallen in great aboundaunce, and doth yet continue:
"And there I will attend your pleasure. Alas sweet friend
"(sayd she) the doze maketh such a noyse when it is opened, that it
"will easily be heard of my brother, but I will pray him to depart,
"that I may quickly returne agayne to open the same. Goe your
"way then (sayd the Scholler) and I pray you cause a great fire to
"be made, that I may warme mee when I come in, for I can scarce
"feele my selfe for colde. Why, it is not possible (quod the Woman)
"if it be true that you wholly burne in loue for me, as by your sundry
"Letters written, it appereth, but now I perceyne that you
"mocke me, and therefore tary there still on Gods name. His frende
"which heard all this, and tooke pleasure in those wordes, went away
"gayne to Bed with hir, into whose eyes no slepe that night coulde
"enter for the pleasure and sport they had with the poore Scholler.
"The vnhappy wretched Scholler whose teeth chattered for colde,
"faring like a Stozke in cold nights, perceyuing himselfe to be mocked,
"assayed to open the doze, or if he might goe out by some other way:
"And seeing it impossible, stalling by and downe like a Lyon, cursed
"the nature of the time, the wickednesse of the woman, the length of
"the Night, and the Folly and Simplicity of himselfe: and conceyuing
"great rage, and despyght agaynst hir, turned so daynely the long
"and seruient loue that he bare hir, into despyght & cruell hatred,
"deuising many and diuers meanes to be reuenged, which he then
"farre more desired, than hee did in the beginninge to lye with his
"Widow. After that longe and tedious night, day approached, and
"the dawning thereof began to appeare: Wherefore the mayde instructed
"by hir mistresse, went downe into the Court,
"and saw

and seeming to haue pity vppon the Scholler, sayde vnto hym:
 The Diuell take hym that euer he came hyther this Night, for
 hee hath bothe let vs of sleepe, and hath made you to be frozen for
 colde, but take it patiently for this tyme, some other Night must
 be appointed. For I know well that neuer thynge coulde chaunce
 more displeasantly to my Mistresse than this. But the Scholler,
 full of dysdayne, lyke a wylde man which knew well that Threats
 and menacynge wordes, were weapons without hands, retayned in
 hys Stomacke that whiche intemperate wylle, wouid haue broken
 forth, and with so quiet Wordes as hee coulde, not lettynge
 hymselfe to bee angry, sayd: In dedde I haue suffred the worst
 Night that euer I dyd, but I knowe the same was not throughe
 your mistresse fault, because shee hauing pity vppon me, and as
 you say, that which cannot be to Night, may be done another time,
 commend me then vnto hir, and farewe'l. And thus the poore
 Scholler suffer for colde, so well as hee coulde, retourned home
 to his house, where for the extremitie of the tyme and lacke of
 sleepe beyng almost deade, he threwe hymselfe vppon his bed, and
 when he awaked, his Armes and Legges had no feeling. Where-
 fore he sent for Physitions and tolde them of the colde he had ta-
 ken, who incontinently prouided for his health: and per for at their
 best and spedie remedies, they could scarce recover his Joints &
 newes, wherein they did what they could: and had it not bene
 that he was yong, & the Sommer appproching, it had ben to much
 for him to haue endured. But after he was come to Healtie, and
 grewe to be lusty, sicrete Malice still resting in his breaſte, hee
 thought vpon reuenge. And it chaunced in a litle tyme after, that
 Fortune prepared a new accident to the Scholler to satisfy his de-
 ſire, because the young man which was beloued of the Gentlewo-
 man, not caring any longer for hir, fel in loue with an other, & gaue
 ouer the solace and pleasure he was wont to doe to mistresse He-
 lena, for which despite she consumed herself in wepings & lamētā-
 tions. But hir maid hauing pity by hir mistresse sorrowes, kno-
 wing no meanes to remoue the melancoly which she conceiued for
 the losse of hir friend, & seeing the Scholler daily passe by according
 to

Mistresse Helena

to his common Custome, conceiued a foolish beliefe that his
mistresse friend might be brought to loue hir agayne, and wholly
recovered, by some charme or other sleight of Necromancie, to bee
wrought and brought to passe by the Scholler. Which deuise she
tolde vnto hir mistresse, and she vndiscretely (and without due co-
sideration, that if the scholler had any knowledge in that science, he
would helpe himselfe) gaue credite to the words of hir mayde, and
by and by said vnto hir, that shee was able to bring it to passe, if
he would take it in hande, and therewithall promised assuredly, &
for recompense he should vse hir at his pleasure. The mayde dili-
gently tolde the Scholler hereof, who very ioyfull for those newes,
said vnto himselfe: O God, prayes be thy name, for now the time
is come, that by thy helpe I shall requite the iniuries done vnto
me by this wicked Woman, and be recompensed of the great loue
that I bare vnto hir: And answered the mayde: Go tell thy mi-
stresse that for this matter she needs to take no care, for if hir friend
were in India, I can presently force him to come hither, and aske
hir forgiveness of the fault he hath committed agaynst hir. And the
maner, and way how to vse hir selfe in this behalfe, I will giue
hir to vnderstand when it shal please hir to appoint me: and sayle
not to tell hir what I say, comforting hir in my behalfe. The
mayde caried the answer, and it was concluded, that they should
talke moxe hereof at the Church of S. Lucie, whither being come,
and reasoning together alone, not remēbryng that she had brought
the Scholler almost to the poynct of death, she reuerled vnto him
all the whole matter, and the thing which he desired, praying him
instantly to helpe hir, to whom the scholler said: True it is La-
dy, that amongst other things which I learned at Paris, the arte of
Necromancie, (whereof I haue very great skill,) is one: But
bycause it is much displeasunt to God, I haue made an othe
neuer to vse it, eyther for my selfe, or for any other: Howbeit the
loue which I beare you, is of such force, as I cannot deny you a-
ny request, yea and if I should be damned amongst all the deuils
in hell, I am ready to perforce your pleasure. But I tell you be-
fore, that it is a harder matter to be done, than paradiuement you
believe

helene, and specially where a Woman shall prouoke a Man to
 loue, or a Man the Woman, because it can not be done by the
 proppr Person, whome it doth touche, and therefore it is meete,
 what soeuer is done, in any wyse not to bee affrayde, for that the
 conturation must bee made in the Pryght, and in a solitarie place
 wythout Companye: Which thing I know not how you shal bee
 disposed to doe. To whom the Woman more amorous than wise,
 answered: Loue pycketh mee in such wyse, as there is nothing
 but I dare attempt, to haue him againe, that causelesse hath for-
 saken me. But tel me I beseech you wherein it behoueth that I be
 so bold and hardy. The Scholer (subtil enough) said: I muste of
 necessity make an image of brasse, in the name of him that you de-
 sire to haue, which being sent vnto you, you must when the Mone
 is at hir ful, bath your selfe stark naked in a running riuier at the
 first houre of sleepe. vii. times with the same image: & afterwards
 being stil naked, you must go by into some tree or house inhabi-
 ted, and turning your selfe towardes the Northside thereof with
 the image in your hand, you shal say. vii. times certain words, that
 I wil giue you in writing, which when you haue done, two dams-
 sels shal come vnto you, the fairest that euer you saw, & they shal
 salute you, humbly demaundryng what your pleasure is to com-
 maund them: to whome you shal willingly declare in good order
 what you desire: & take hede aboue al things, that you name not
 one for an other: and when they begone, you may descend downe to
 the place where you left your Apparell, and array your selfe a-
 gayne, and afterwards retourne home vnto your house, and as-
 sure your selfe, that befoze the mid of the nexte Pryghte following,
 your frend shal come vnto you weepng, and cryng Wercye
 and forgiuenesse at youre Handes. And know yee, that from that
 tyme forth, he will neuer forsake you for any other.

The Gentlewoman hearing those words, gaue great credyte
 therunto: and thought that already she helde hir frend betwene
 hir Armes, and very topyfull sayd: Doubt not sir but I will ac-
 complish al that you haue intorned me: and I haue ynterest place,
 in the World to doe it: for vppon the valley of Arno, very neare,
 the Ryuer syde, I haue a Manors house, secretly to wooke any
 attempt

Mistresse Helena

attempt that I list: and now it is the moneth of Iuly, in which
 tyme bathing is most pleasaunt. And also I remembre that not
 far from the Riuier, there is a litle Courte inhabited, into which
 one can scarce get by, but by a certain Ladder made of the saut tree,
 which is already there, whereuppon the Shepherds do sometime
 ascende to the turrasse of the same Courte, to looke for their cat:
 tell when they be gone astray: and the Place is very solitarie out
 of the way. Into that Courte will I goe by, and trust to execute
 what you haue requyred me. The Scholer which knew very well
 both the village whereof she spake, and also the Courte, right glad
 for that he was assured of his purpose, sayde: Madame, I was
 neuer there, ne yet doe knowe the village, nor the Courte, but if it
 bee as you saye, it is not possible to finde anye better place in
 the Worlde: Wherefore when the tyme is come, I will send you
 the Image, and the prayer. But I heartily beseech you, when you
 haue obtained your desire, and do perceiue that I haue well ser-
 ued your turne, to haue me in remembraunce, and to keepe your
 promise: whych the Gentlewoman assured hym to doe without
 faile, and taking hir leaue of him, she retired home to hir house.
 The Scholer so full for that his deuise should in deede come to
 passe, caused an image to be made with certaine Characters, and
 wrote a talke of a Tubbe in stede of the prayer. And when her saue
 tyme he sent them to the Gentlewoman, aduertising hir that the
 Night following, she must doe the theng he had appoynted hir.
 Then to procede in his enterpryse, he & his man went secretly to
 one of his frends houses that dwelte harde by the towne. The
 Woman on the other side, and hir Mayde repaired to hir place:
 where when it was Night, making as though she would go slepe
 she sent hir Mayde to Bed: afterwards about ten of the Clocke
 she conueyed herself very softly out of hir lodgng, and repayed
 neare to the Towne vpon the riuer of Arno, and looking aboute
 hir, not seeing or perceiuing any man, she vnclothed hir selfe, and
 hidde hir apparell vnder a bush of Thoznes, and then bathed hir
 selfe with the Image, and afterwarde stark naked
 holding the same in hir hand, she went towardes the Courte. The
 Scholler at the beginning of the Nighte being hydden with his
 seruants

seruant amongst the willowes and other trees neere the Cour, saw all the aforesayde thinges, and hir also passing naked by him, (the whitenesse of whose body surpassed as he thought, the darknesse of the night, so farre as blacke exceedeth white) who afterwards behelde hir Stomack, and the other partes of hir body, which seemed vnto him to bee very delectable. And remembrynge what would shortly come to passe, he had some pittie vpon hir on the other side, the temptation of the flesh sodaynely assailed hym, prouoking him to issue forth of the secret corner, to Surprisse hir, and to take his pleasure vpon hir. But calling to hys remembrance what shee was, and what great wrong hee had sustayned, his mallice began to kindle agayne, and did remoue his pittie, and lust, continuing still stedfast in his determination, suffering hir to passe hir Jorney. The Wydow being vpon the Cour, and turning hir face towards the Porth, began to say the wordes which the Scholler had giuen hir. Within a while after the Scholler entered in very softly, and tooke away the Ladder whereupon she got vp, and stood still to heare what she did say and doe. Who hauing 7. times recited hir prayer, attended the comming of the two damels: For whom she wayted so long in bayne, and therewithall began to be extremely colde, and perceiued the dawning of the day appeare. Wherefore taking great displeasure that it came not to passe as the Scholler had tolde hir, she spake these wordes to hir selfe: I doubt much least this Scholler will rewarde mee with such another night, as wherein once I made him to waite: But if he haue done it for that respect, he is not well reuenged, for the nights now want the third part of the length of those then, besides, the cold that he indured, which was of greater extremity. And that the day might not discouer hir, she woulde haue gone downe from the Cour, but she found the Ladder to be taken away. Then as though the Wo: Ide had molten vnder hir feete, hir heart began to fayle, and fayingtinge, fell downe vpon the Carrasse of the Cour, and when hir force reuiued agayne, she began pitifully to weep and complayne. And knowing well that the Scholler had done that deeде for reuenge, shee grew to be angry with hir selfe, for that shee hadde Offended another, and to much trusted hym

Rr. whom

Mistresse Helena

whom she ought (by good reason) to haue accounted hir enemy.
 And after he had remayned a great while in this plight, then loo-
 king if there were any way for hir to goe downe, and percepuinge
 none, she reuened hir weeping, whose minde great care and sorrow
 did pierce saying thus to hir selfe: O vnhappy wretch what will
 thy brethren say, thy Parents, thy Neighbour, and generally all
 they of Florence, when they shall vnderstande that thou hast bene
 found heere naked? Thy honesty which hitherto hath bene neuer
 stained, shall now bee blotted with the stain of shame, yea and if
 thou were able to finde (for reamdy hereof) any matter of excuse
 (such as might be founde) the wicked Scholler (who knoweth all
 thy doings) will not suffer thee to ly: Th miserable wretch, that in
 one houres space, thou hast lost both thy frende and thyne honour.
 What shall become of thee? Who is able to couer thy shame?
 When shee had thus complained hirselfe, hir sorrowe was not so
 great as shee was like to cast hirselfe headlong downe from the
 Toure: But the Sunne being already risen, she approached neare
 one of the corners of the Walle, espying if she could see any Boy
 keeping of Cattell, that she might send him for hir Mayde. And it
 chaunced that the Scholler which lay and slept in couert, awaked,
 one espying the other, the Scholler saluted hir thus: Good mo-
 row Lady, be the Damsels yet come? The Woman seeing, and
 hearing him, began agayne bitterly to weepe, and prayed him to
 come vp to the Toure, that she might speake with him. The Schol-
 ler was thereunto very agreeable, and she lying on hir belly vpon
 the terrasse of the Toure, discovering nothing but hir head ouer the
 side of the same, sayd vnto him weeping: Rinieri, truly if euer I
 caused thee to endure an ill Night, thou art now well reuenged on
 me: for although it be the moneth of Iuly, I thought (because I
 was naked) that I should haue frozen to death this night for cold,
 besides my great, and continuall Teares for the offence which I
 haue done thee, and of my folly for beleeuing thee, that maruell
 it is mine eyes do remayne within my head: And therefore I pray
 thee, not for the loue of me, whom thou oughtest not to loue, but
 for thine owne sake which art a gentleman, that the shame & payne
 which I haue sustayned, may satisfy the offence and wrong I haue
 committed.

committed agaynst thee: cause mine apparell I beseech h to bee ”
 brought vnto me, that I may goe downe from hence, and doe not ”
 robbe mee of that, which afterwarde thou art not able to restore, ”
 which is, myne hono r : for if I haue deceyued thee of one night, ”
 I can at all times when it shall please thee, render vnto thee for ”
 that one, many. Let it suffice thee then with this, & like an honest ”
 man content thy selfe by being a little reuenged on me, by makinge ”
 me to know now what it is to hurt another. Do not I, pray the pra- ”
 cise thy power against a woman: for the Eagle hath no fame for co- ”
 quering of the Dove. Then for the loue of God, and for thine ho- ”
 no r sake, haue pittie and remorse vpon me. The Scholler with a ”
 cruell heart remembryng the insury that he had receyued, and seeing ”
 h r so to weepe and pray, conceived at one instaunt both pleasure, ”
 and grieve in his minde: pleasure of h reuenge which he aboue all ”
 things desired, and grieve mooued his manhoode to haue compas- ”
 sion vpon the miserable woman. Notwithstanding, pittie not able ”
 to ouercome the fury of his reuenge, he answered: Mistresse He- ”
 lena, if my prayers (which in dede I could not moysten with teares, ”
 ne yet sweeten them with sugred wordes, as you doe yours now) ”
 might haue obtained that night wherein I thought I should haue ”
 dyed for colde in the Court full of snowe, to haue bene conuered by ”
 you into some couert place, an easie matter it had bene for mee at ”
 this instant to heare your suite. But if now more than in times ”
 past your hono r do waxe warme, and that it greueth you to stand ”
 starke naked, make your prayers to him, betweene whose Armes ”
 you waxe not offended to be naked that night, wherein you hearde ”
 me trot by and downe your Courte, my Teeth chattering for colde ”
 and marching vpon the Snow: And at his handes seeke releefe, ”
 and pray him to bring your Clothes, and fetch a Ladder that you ”
 may come downe: Force your selfe to set your hono r s care on him ”
 for whom both then, and now besides many other times, you haue ”
 not feared to put the same in perill: Why doe you not cal for him ”
 to come and help you? And to whom doth your help better apper- ”
 tayne than vnto him? You are his owne, and what things will he ”
 not proude in this distresse of yours? Or else what person will ”
 hee seeke to succour, if not to helpe and succour you? Call him (D ”

Br 2.

foolish

Mistresse Helena

foolish woman) and proue if the loue which thou bearest him, and thy wit together with his, be able to deliuer the from my folly, where (when both you were together) you tooke your Pleasure. And now thou haste Experience wheather my folly or the Loue whych thou diddest beare vnto him, is greatest. And be not now so Lpberall, and Curteous of that which I go not about to seke Reserue thy good Rights to thy beloued freende, if thou chaunce to escape from hence aliuē: For from my selfe I cleerely discharge you both. And truely I haue had to much of one: And sufficient it is for mee to bee mocked once. Whereouer by thy crafty talke bitered by subtrill speache, and by thyne vntimely prayse, thou thinkest to force the getting of my good will, and thou callest me Gentleman, balliaunt man, thinkinge thereby to withdraue my halp. aunt minde from punishing of thy wretched body: But thy flatteries shall not yet bleare minne vnderstanding eyes, as once with thy vnfaithfull promises thou diddest beguile my ouerweeninge wit. I now to well do know, and thereof thee well assure, that all the time I was a Scholler in Paris, I neuer learned so much as thou in one night diddest teach mee. But put the Case that I were a balliaunt man, yet thou art none of them vpon whom balliaunce ought to shewe his effectes: And for the ende of such tormenting and passing cruell beasts, as thou art, only death, is fittest rewarde: For if a Woman made but halfe these playnts, there is no man, but woulde, assuage his reuenge. But yet as I am no Eagle, and thou no Doue, but a most venomous Serpent I intend so well as I can, to persecute thee mine auncient enemy, with the greatest mallice I can deuise, which I can not so properly call reuenge, as I may terme it Correction: For that the reuenge of a matter ought to surmount the Offence, and I will bestow no reuenge on thee: For if I were disposed to apply my mynde there vnto, for respect of thy displeasure done to me, thy Lyfe should not suffice, nor one hundred moze like vnto thine: Whiche if I took away, I should but rid the Worlde of a most vile, and wicked woman. And to say the Truth, whst other art thou then a Druiill except a little beauty in thy face, which within few yeares will vanishe and consume: For thou tookest no care to kill, and destroy an ho-

an honest man (as thou euen now diddest terme me) whose Life,
 may in tyme to come bee more profitable to the Worlde, than an
 hundred thousand such as thyne, so long as the Worlde indureth.
 I wil teach thee then by the paine thou sufferest, what is it to mock
 such Men as bee of skyll, and what maner of thyng it is to de-
 lude and scoone poore Schollers, geuing thee warning hereby,
 that thou neuer fall into such folly, if thou escapest this. But if
 thou haue so great a will to come downe as thou sayest thou hast,
 why dost thou not throwe downe thy selfe headlonge, that
 by breaking of thy Necke (if it please God) at one instante thou
 rid thy selfe of the payne, wherein thou sayest thou art, and make
 mee the beste contented man of the Worlde. For this tyme I
 will say no more to thee, but that I haue done enough to make
 thee clime so high. Learn then now so wel as thou maist get down
 as thou didst know how to mock & deceyue me. Whyle þ Schol-
 ler had preached vnto hir these words, the wretched woman wepte
 continually, and the time stil did passe away, the Sunne increas-
 ing more and more: but when the Scholler held his peace, she replied
 O cruell man, if that curst night was grieuous vnto thee, and
 my fault appeared great, can not my youth and Beauty, my Tea-
 res and humble Prayers bee able to mittigate thy Wrath and to
 moue thee to pity: Do at least thou mayst bee moued and thy cru-
 ell minde appeased for that onely act, let me once again be trusted
 of thee, and sith I haue manifested al my desire, pardon me, for
 this tyme, sith thou hast sufficiently made me feele the penance of
 my sinne. For, if I had not reposed my trust in thee, thou hadst
 not now reuenged thy self on me, which with desire most spitefull
 thou doest full well declare. Gue ouer then thine anger, & par-
 don me henceforth: for I am determined if thou wilt forgive mee,
 and cause me to come downe out of this place, to forsake for e-
 uer that vnfaithfull Louer, and to receiue thee for my only friend
 and Lord. Whereouer where thou greatly blamest my beauty, e-
 seeming it to be short, & of smal accōpt, such as it is, & the like of o-
 ther womē I know, not to be regarded for other cause but for pas-
 time & pleasure of youthly mē, & therfore not to be contēned: & thou

Mistresse Helena

“ thy self truly art not very old: and albeit that cruelly I am intrea-
“ ted of thee, yet can I not beleue that thou wouldest haue me so mis-
“ serably to die, as to cast my selfe down headlong, like one despe-
“ rate, before thine eyes, whome (except thou were a lier as thou see-
“ mest to be now) in time past I did wel please and like. Haue pitie
“ then vpon me, for Gods sake, for the Sunne begins to grow exces-
“ ding hot, and as the extreame and bitter cold did hurt me the last
“ Night euen so the heat beginneth to molest me. Whereunto the
“ Scholler which kept hir there for the nonce, and for his pleasure,
“ answered: Mistresse you did not now commit your faith to me for
“ any loue you bare, but to get that again, which you had lost, wher-
“ fore that deserueth no good turne, but greater pain: And fondlye
“ thou thinkest this to be the onely meanes, whereby I am able to
“ take desired reuenge. For I haue a thousand other wayes, and
“ a thousand Trappes haue I layed to tangle thy feete, in makinge
“ thee beleue that I dyd loue thee: in such wyse as thou shouldest
“ haue gone no where at any tyme, if thys had not chanced, but thou
“ shouldest haue fallen into one of them: and surely thou couldest
“ haue faile into none of them, but would haue byed thee more a-
“ noyauce and shame than this (which I chose not for thyne ease,
“ but for my greater pleasure.) And besides if all these meanes had
“ fayled me, the pen should not, wherewith I would haue display-
“ ed thee in such Colours, as when the simple bryte thereof hadde
“ come to thyne eares, thou wouldest haue desired a thousand times
“ a Day, that thou hadst neuer bene bozn. For the forces of the pen
“ be farre more vehement: than they can esteeme that haue not pro-
“ ued them by experience. I swear vnto thee by GOD, that I doe
“ reioyse, and so wil to the end, for this reuenge I take of thee, and
“ so haue I done from the beginning: but if I had with pen painted
“ thy manners to the Worlde, thou shouldest not haue ben so much
“ ashamed of other, as of thy selfe, that rather than thou wouldest
“ haue looked mee in the face agayne, thou wouldest haue plucked
“ thyne Eyes oute of thy head: And therefore reprocue no more
“ the Sea, for beeing increased with a litle Wooke. For thy
“ loue, or for that thou wilt be mine own, I care not, as I haue al-
“ ready told thee, & loue him again if thou canst, so much as thou
“ wilt,

wisse, to whome for the hatred that I haue borne, I presently bear
 so much good will agayne, and, for the pleasure that he hath don
 thee now, You be amorous & couet the loue of young men, bicause
 you see they? Colour somewhat fresh, their beard moꝛ black, their
 bodieꝛ well shapꝛd to daunce and runne at Tylt and Rꝛyng, but al
 these qualitieꝛ haue they had, that be growne to elder yeares, and
 they by good experyence know what other are yet to learn. Howe-
 ouer you deeme them the better horsemen, bicause they can fornye
 moꝛe myles a day than those that be of farther yeares. Cruely I
 confesse, that with great paynes they please such Venerial Gen-
 tlewomen as you be, who doe not perceyue (like sauage Beastes)
 what heapes of euill doe lurke vnder the forme of fayre apparance
 Young men be not content with one Louer, but so many as they
 behold, they do desire, and of so many they think themselues woꝛ-
 thy: Wherefoꝛe their loue cannot be stable. And that this is true,
 thou mayst now be thine owne wytnesse. And young men thynkyng
 themselues woꝛthy to be honoured and cherisheꝛ of they? Ladies,
 haue none other gloꝛy but to vaunt themselues of those whome
 they haue enioyꝛd: whych fault maketh many to yeld themselues
 to those that be discrete and wise, and to such as be no blabbes oꝛ
 Tales. And where thou sayest that thy loue is knowne to none,
 but to thy mayde and me, thou art deceiued, if thou beleue the same
 foꝛ al the inhabitants of the streete wherein thy Louer dwelleth.
 and the streete also wherein thy house doth stand, talks of nothyng
 moꝛe than of your Loue. But many times in such cases, the par-
 ty whome such Whete doth touch, is the last that knoweth it.
 Howeouer, young men do robbe thee, where they of elder yeres do
 gꝛue thee. Thou then (whych hast made such choyse) remayne to
 him whome thou hast chosen, and me (whom thou flouted) gꝛue
 leaue to apply to an other: foꝛ I haue found a Woman to bee my
 frend, whych is of an other discretion than thou art, and knoweth
 me better than thou dost. And that thou mayst in an other world
 be moꝛe certayne of myne Eyes desire, than thou hitherto art,
 Thowse thy selfe downe so soone as thou canst, that thy soule al-
 ready (as I suppose) receiued betwene the armes of the diuel hym

Mistresse Helena

self may se if mine eyes be troubled or not, to view thee breake thy
" specke. But bicause I think thou wilt not do me that good turne,
" I say if the Sunne begin to warme thee, remember the cold thou
" thou madest me suffer, which if thou canst mingle with that heat,
" no doubt thou shalt feele the same moze temperate. The comfort-
" lesse Woman seeing that the Schollers words tended but to cru-
" ell end, began to weepe and said: How then with nothing can moue
" thee to take pity for my sake, at lest wise for the loue of hir, whome
" thou saiest to be of better discretion than I, take some compassion:
" For hir sake (I say) whome thou callest my friend, pardon mee
" and bying hither my clothes that I may put them on, and cause
" me if it please thee to come downe from hence. Then the Scholler
" began to laugh, and seing that it was a good while past, iii. of the
" clocke, he answered: Well go to, for that womans sake I can-
" not wel say nay, or refuse thy request, tel me where thy garments
" be, and I will go seke them, and cause thee to come downe: She
" beleuing hym, was somewhat comforted, and told hym the place
" where she had bestowed them. And the Scholler going out of the
" Courte, commaunded his seruauent to tarry there, & to take heed
" that none went in vntil he came againe. Then he departed to one
" of hys friends houses, where he wel refreshed himselfe, and after-
" wards when he thought time, he layd him downe to slepe. At that
" space mistresse Helena whych was styll vpon the Courte, and re-
" comforted with a litle foolish hope, sorrowfull beyonde measure,
" began to sit downe, seeking some shadowed place to bestow hir
" selfe, and with bitter thoughts and heauy cheare in good deuoti-
" on, waped for his coming, now musling, now weeping, then ho-
" pyng, and sodaynely disparrying the Schollers retourne with hir
" Clothes: & chaunging from one thought to another, like one that
" was weary of trauel, & had take no rest al the night, she fel into a
" litle slumbye. But the Sun whych was passing hote, being aboute
" noone, glaunced his burning beames vpon hir tender body and bare
" head, with such force, as not only it singed the flesh in sight, but also
" did chipe & parch the same with such roasting heat, as she which sound-
" ly slepte, was constrained to wake: & feeling that raging warmth,
" del-

desirous somewhat to remoue hir self, she thought in turning that all hir tosted flesh had opened and broken, like vnto a skyn of parchement holden against the fire: besides with payne extreme, hir head began to ake, with such vehemence, as it seemed to be knocked in pieces: And no maruel, for the pavement of the Cour was so passing hotte, as neither vpon hir feete, or by other remedy, she could find place of rest. Wherefore without power to abide in one place, she still remoued to and fro weeping bitterly. And moreover, for that no Wynd did blow, the Cour was haunted with such a swarme of Flies, and Gnats, as they lighting vppon hir parched flesh, did so cruelly bite and stinge hir, that euery of them seemed worse than the pycke of a Medie, which made hir to bestirre hir hands, incessantly to beate them off cursing still hir selfe, hir Lyfe, hir friend and Scholler. And being thus and with such pain bitten and afflicted with the vehement heat of the Sun, with the flies and Gnats, hungry, and much more thyrsty, assailed with a thousand grieuous thoughts, she arose vp, and began to loke about hir if she could heare or see any person, purposing whatsoeuer came of it to call for helpe. But hir ill fortune had taken away al this hoped meanes of hir reliefe: for the Husbandmen & other Laborers were al gone out of the fields to shrowd theselues from the heate, of the day sparing their trauail abrode, to thresh their corn & doe other things at home, by reason whereof, she neither saw nor hearde any thing, except Butterflies, humble bees, crickets, & the riuer of Arno, which making hir lust to drinke of the water, quenched hir thirst nothing at al, but rather did augment the same. She sawe besides in many places, woodes, shadows & houses, which likewise did bynde hir double grief, for desire she had vnto the same. But what shal we speak any more of this unhappy woman? The Sunne above, & the hot Cour pavement below, wth the bitings of the flies and gnats, had on euery part so dyressed hir tender corpe, that where before the whitenesse of hir body did passe the darkenesse of the Night, the same was become red, all arayed and spotted with goze bloud, that to the beholder and viewer of hir state, she seemed the most ill fauored thyng of the Worlde: and rempyning in this pleggh without hope or counceyl, she looked rather for Death than other

Mistresse Helena

other comfort. The Scholler after the Clocke had sounded thre
in the after noone, awaked, and remembryng his Lady, went to the
Toure to see what was become of hir, and sent his man to dinner,
that had eaten nothing all that day. The Gentlewoman hearing
the Scholler, repayed so feeble and tormented as shee was, vnto
the trap doore, and sitting vppon the same, pittifully weeping be-
gan to say: Riniere, thou art beyond measure reuenged on me,
for if I made thee freee all night in mine open Court, thou haste
tossed me to day vppon this Toure, nay rather burnt with heate
consumed me: and besides that, to dye and sterue for hunger, and
thirst. Wherefore I pray thee for Gods sake to come vp, and sith
my heart is saynt to kill my selfe, I pray thee heartely speedily to
do it. For about all things I desire to dy, so great and bitter is
the torment which I endure. And if thou wilt not shewe me that
sauoz, yet cause a glasse of Water to be brought vnto me, that I
may moysten my mouth, sith my teares bee not able to coole the
same, so great is the drouth and heate I haue within. Wel knew
the Scholler by hir voyce, hir weake estate, and sawe besides the
most part of hir body all tossed with the Sunne: By the viewe
whereof, and humble sute of hir, he conceiued a little pittie. Not-
withstanding he aunswared hir in this wise: Wicked Woman
thou shalt not dy with my hands, but of thine owne, if thou desire
the same, and so much Water shalt thou haue of me for coolinge
of thine heate, as dampned Diues had in hell at Lazarus handes,
when he lifted vp his cry to Abraham, holdinge that saued wighte
within his blessed bosome, or as I had fire of thee for easing of my
colde. The greater is my griefe that the vehemence of my colde
must be cured with the heate of such a stinking carlon beast, and
thy heate healed with the coldnesse of most Shote, and sauorous
Water distilled from the orient Rose. And where I was in daun-
ger to loose my Limmes, and life, thou wilt renew thy beauty like
the Serpent that caseth his Skin once a yeare. Oh miserable
wretch (sayd the woman) God giue him such Beauty gotten in
this sorte, that wiltheth me such euill. But (thou more cruell than
any other beast) what heart haste thou, thus like a Tyaunte to
deale with me? What more grievous payne coulde I endure of
thee, or

hee, or of any other, than I do, if I had killed, and done to death
 thy parents, or whole race of thy stocke, and kin with most cruell
 torments. Truly I know not what greater tyranny coude be
 sed agaynst a Trayter that had sacked or put a whole Citty to the
 sword, than that thou haste done to me, to make my flesh to bee the
 foode and rost meate of the Sunne, and the baite for licozous flies,
 not bouchsasing to reach hither a simple glasse of Water whych
 would haue bene graunted to the condemned Theefe, and Man-
 queller, when they be haled forth to hanging, yea wine most com-
 monly, if they aske the same. Now for that I see thee still remayne
 in obstinate minde, and that my passion can nothing mouue thee, I
 will prepare patiently to receiue my death, that God may haue
 mercy on my soule, whom I humbly beseech with his righteous
 eyes to beholde that cruell fact of thyne. And with those woordes,
 she appoched with payne to the middle of the terrasse, Despayring
 to escape that burning heate, and not onely once, but a thousande
 times, (besides hir other sorowes) she thought to sowne for thirft,
 and bitterly wept without ceasing, complayning hir mishap.

But being almost night, the Scholler thought hee had done
 enough, wherefore he tooke hir clothes, and wrapping the same in
 his seruants cloke, he went home to the Gentle womans house
 where he founde befoze the gate, hir mayde sitting al sad and hea-
 uy, of whom he asked where hir mistresse was. She (sayd she) I
 cannot tell, I thought this morning to finde hir a Wed. where I
 left hir yester night, but I cannot finde hir there, nor in any other
 place, ne yet can tell wheather to goe seeke hir, which maketh my
 heart to throb some misfortune chaunced vnto hir. But (as quod
 she) can not you tell where she is? The Scholler answered: I
 would thou haddest bene with hir in the place where I left hir,
 that I might haue bene reuenged on thee so well, as I am of hir.
 But beleue assuredly, that thou shalt not escape my handes vntill
 I pay thee thy desert, to the intent hereafter in mocking other, thou
 mayst haue cause to remember me. When hee had sayde so, hee
 willed his man to giue the mayde hir Mistresse Clothes, and
 then did bidde hir seeke hir out if shee would. The Seruaunte
 did his Masters commaundement, and the Mayde hauinge
 receiued

Mistresse Helena

receptued them, knewe them by and by, and markinge well the Schollers wordes, she doubted least hee had slayne hir Mistresse, and much adoe shee had to refrayne from Crying out. And the Scholler being gone, shee tooke hir Mistresses Garments, and ran vnto the Toure.

That day by hap, one of the Gentlewomens labouring When had two of his Hogges runne a stray, and as he went to seeke the (a little while after the Schollers departure) he approached neare the Toure, looking round about if he might see them. In the busse searche of whom hee heard the miserable playnt that the unhappy Woman made, wherefore so loude as he coulde, he cried
 "out: Who weepeth there aboute? the Woman knewe the Voicce of
 "hir man, and calling him by his name, shee sayde vnto him: Goe
 "home I pray thee to call my mayde & cause her to come by hither
 "vnto me. The fellow knowing his mistresse voicce sayd vnto hir:
 "What Dame, who hath boyned you by so hygh? Your mayde hath
 "sought you at this day, and who would haue thought to finde you
 "there? He then taking the Staues of the Ladder, did set it by a
 "gappe in the Toure as it ought to be, and bounde the steppes that
 "were wanting, with fastenings of Wyllowe twiggges, and such
 "like pliant stuffe as he could finde. And at that instant the mayde
 "came thither, who so soone as she was entred the Toure, not able
 "to forbear hir voyce, beating hir hands, shee began to cry: Alas
 "sweete Mistresse where be you? She hearing the voyce of hir
 "Mayde answered so well as shee could: Ah (sweete Wench) I
 "am heere aboute, cry no more, but bring me hither my clothes.

When the mayde heard hir speake, by and by for joy, in haste she mounted by the Ladder, which the Labourer had made ready and with his helpe gat by to the Terrasse of the Toure, and seeing hir Mistresse resembling not a humayne body but rather a wodden faggot halfe consumed with fire, all weare and withered, lying a long sturke naked vpon the Grounde, shee began with hir Nipples to wreke the griefe vpon hir Face, and wept ouer hir with such vehemency as if she had beene deade. But hir Dame prayed hir for Gods sake to holde hir peace, & to help hir to
 make

make hir ready : And vnderstanding by hir, that no man knewe where she was become, except they which caried home hir clothes, and the Labourer that was present there, shee was somewhat recomforted, and prayed them for Gods sake to say nothing of that chaunce to any person. The Labozer after mutch talke, and request to his Mistresse, to be of good cheere, when shee was risen vp, caried hir downe vpon his Necke, for that she was not able to goe so farre, as out of the Toure. The pooze Mayde which came behinde, in goinge downe the Ladder without takinge heede, hir foote sayled, and fallinge downe to the Grounde, shee brake hir Thigh, for grieve she roared, and cryed out lyke a Lyon. Wherefore the Labourer hauing placed his Dame vpon a greene banke, went to see what hurt the Mayde had taken, and perceyued that she had broken hir Thigh, he caried hir likewise vnto that banke, and placed hir besides hir mistresse, who seeing one mischicfe vpon another to chaunce, and that she of whom she hoped for greater help, than of any other, had broken hir Thigh, sorrowfull beyonde measure, renewed hir cry so miserably, as not onely the Labourer was not able to comforte hir, but he himself began to weepe for company. The Summe hauinge trauayled into his Westerne course, and taking his farewell by settling himselfe to rest, was at the poynt of goinge downe. And the pooze desolate woman vniwilling to be benighted, went home to the Labourers house, where taking two of his Brothers, and his Wyfe, returned to fetch the Mayde, and caried hir home in a Chayze. Then cheering by hys Dame with a little fresh water, and many fayre Wordes, he caried hir vpon his Necke into a Chaumber, afterwardes his Wyfe made hir warm Drinke and Meates, and putting of hir clothes, layd hir in hir Bed, and tooke order that the mistresse, and maide that night were caried to Florence, where the Mistresse full of lies, deuised a Tale all out of order of that which chaunced to hir, and hir Mayde, making hir Brethren, hir Sisters, & other hir neighbours beleue, that by fluth of Lightning, & euill Spites, hir face and body were Blistered, and the Mayde broken vnder the Arse bone with a Thunderbolt. Then Physicians were sent for, who not without great grieve, and payne to the Woman (which many tymes

Mistresse Helena of Florence.

tymes left hir Skin Sticking to the Sheetes) cured hir cruell fe-
uer, and other hir diseases, and lyke wise the mayde of hir Thigh:
which caused the Gentlewoman to forget hir Louer, and from that
time forth wisely did beware and take heede whom she did mocke,
and where she did bestow hir loue. And the Scholler knowinge
the Mayde had broken hir Thigh, thought himselfe sufficiently
reuenged, ioyfully passing by them both many times in Silence. Be-
holde the reward of a foolish wanton widow for hir Mockes and
Flouts, thinking that no great care or more poudent heede ought
to be taken in testing with a Scholler, than with any other com-
mon person, nor well remembryng how they doe know (not all, I
say, but the greatest parte) where the Diuell holdeth his Tayle:
and therefore take heede good Wyues, and Wydowes, how you
giue your selues to mockes and daliaunce, specially of Schollers.
But nowe turne we to another Wyddow that was no amorous
Dame, but a sober Marrone, a motherly Gentlewoman, that
by pittie, and Honey Redeemed, & Raunsomed a Kings
Sonne out of myserable Captiuitie, that was br-
terly abandoned of all his friendes. The
manner and meanes how, the Nouell
ensuing shall shewe.

Camiola

Camiola, and Rolande.

A Gentlewoman and Wydow called *CAMIO-
LA*, of hir own minde Raunfomed *ROLAND*
the Kyngs Sonne of Sicilia, of purpose to haue
him to hir Husband, who when he was redeemed
vnkindly denied hir, agaynst whom very Elo-
quently she Inueyed, and although the Law pro-
ued him to be hir Husband, yet for his vnkind-
nes, shee vtterly refused him.

The. XXXII. Nouell.

*V*sa a Gentlewos-
man of *Apulia*,
magnetagned ten
Thousande Ro-
mayne souldiers
within the walles
of Cannas, & were
the remnaunte of
the army after the
ouerthrow there:
and yet hir State
of Rycheesse was
saufte & nothyng
dimynished, and
left thereby a wo-
rthy Testimony of

Liberality as *Valerius Maximus* affirmeth. If this worthy wo-
man *Busa* for Liberality is commended by aunient Authoys: If
she deserue a Monument amongs famous Wryters for that spi-
rit bent vertue which so brightly blasoneth the Heroicall natures of
Noble:

Camiola, and Rolande.

Noble dames, then may I bee so bolde amonges these Nouels to bring in (as it were by the hand) a Wyddow of Messina, that was a Gentlewoman bozne, adozned with passing beauty and vertues. Amonge the rancke of which hir comely Qualities, the vertue of Liberality glistered like the moorninge Starre after the Night hath cast of his darke, and Cloudy Mantell. This Gentlewoman remayning in Wyddowes state, and hearing tell that one of the Sonnes of Federicke, and Brother to Peter that was then King of the sayd Islande called Rolande, was certed Prisoner to Naples, and there kept in miserable Captiuitie, and not like to bee redeemed by his Brother for a displeasure conceyued; nor by any other, pittying the state of the young Gentleman, and moued by hir gentle, and couragious disposition, and specially with the vertue of liberality, raunsomed the sayd Rolande, and craued no other interest or vsurp for the same, but him to his husband, that ought by on his knes to haue made sute to be hir slaue and seruauant for respect of his miserable state of Imprisonment. An affiaunce betweene them was concluded, and he redeemed, and when hee was returned, hee falsed his former sayth, and cared not for hir. For which unkinde part, she befoze his friends inueryeth agaynst that ingratitude, and bitterly forsaketh him, when (soze ashamed) hee would very fayne haue recovered hir good wil. But she like a wise Gentlewoman well waying his inconstant mynde befoze marriage, lusted not to taste, or put in pzoofe the fructs and successe thereof. The intire Discourse of whom you shall briefely and presently vnderstand.

Camiola a widow of the City of Siena, the Daughter of a gentle Knight called Signor Lorenzo Toringo, was a Woman of great renoume and fame, for hir beauty, liberality and shamesfastnesse, and led a life in Massina, (an aunient City of Sicile) no lesse commendable than famous, in the company of hir parentes, contenting hir selfe wpyth one onely Husbande, while she liued, which was in the tyme when Federick the thirde was King of that Ile: And after their death she was an hepye of very great wealth and ritchesse, which were alwayes by hir conserued and kept in maruellous honesty. Howe it chaunced that after the death of Federick, Pe-

ter suc.

ter succeedinge, by his Commaundement a great Army by Sea was equipped from Messina, vnder the conduct of Ihon Countee of Chiaramonte, (th: most Renowned in those dayes in Feats of Warre,) for to ayde the people of Lippary, which were so strongly and earnestly besleged, as they were almost all dead and consumed for hunger. In this Army, ouer, and besides those that were in pay, many Barons, and Gentlemen willingly went vpon their own proper cosses, and charges, as well by Sea as Lande, onely for fame, and to be renowned in armes. This Castell of Lippari was assaulted by Godefrey, of Squilario a balliaunt Man, and at that time Admirall to Robert King of Ierusalem, and Sicile: Which Godefrey by long Siege & assault had so famished the people within, as daily he hoped they would surrender. But hauing Aduertisement (by certayne Witgandens which he had sent abroade to scour the Seas) that the Enimies Army (which was farre greater than his) was at hand, after that he had assembled all his Navy together in one sure place, he expected the euent of Fortune. The Enimies so soone as they were leasid and possessed of the place, without any resistance of the places abandoned by Godefrey, caried into the Citty at their pleasure all their victualles, which they brought wyth them, for which good happe and chaunce the sayde Countee Ihon being very much encouraged and puffed vp wyth pryde, offred Battell to Godefrey. Wherefore he not refusing the same, being a man of great corage, in the right time fortified his Army with Boordes, Timber, and other Rampiers, and hauing put his Navy in good order, he encouraged his Men to fight, & to doe balliauntly the next day, which done, hee caused the Ankers to bee wayed, and and giueing the signe, tourned the prowes of hys Shyppes agaynst the Sicilians Army, but Countee Ihon who thought that Godefrey would not fight, and durst not once looke vpon the great army of the Sicilians, did not put his Fleete in order of fight, but rather in readinesse to pursue the enimies. But seeing the Courage and the appproch of theim that came agaynst him, began to feare, his heart almost sayling him, and repented him that he had required his Enimy to that which he thought neuer to haue obtayned. In such wise as mistrusting the Battayle,

Sh.

with

Camiola, and Rowlande.

with troubled minde, changing the order giuen, & notwithstanding not to seeme altogether fearefull, incontinently caused his Shippes to be put into order after the best maner he could for so little tyme, himselfe giueing the signe of battell. In the meane while their enemies being approached neere vnto them, and making a very greate noyse with Cryes, and Shoutes furiously entred the Sicilians, which came slowly forth, and hauing first throwne their Hookes, & Grapples to stay them, they began the fight with Dartes, Crosse-bowes, and other Shot, in such sort as the Sicilians being amazed for the sodayne mutation of Councell, and all enutronned with feare, and the Souldiers of Godefrey percepuing the same, entred their enemies Shippes, and comming to blowes, euen in a moment all was filled with bloud, by reason whereof the Scicilians then despayring of themselves, and they that feared turning the prowes, fled away: But neuerthelesse the Victoꝝe reclininge towardees Godefrey, many of their Shippes were drowned, many taken, and diuers Pinnasses by force of their Dares escaped. In that fight died fewe people, but many were hurt, and Ihon the Captayne Generall taken Prisoner, and with him almost all the Barons, which of their owne accordes repayed to those Warres, and besides a great number of Souldiers, many Ensignes aswell of the field, as of the Gallies, and specially the mayne Standerd was taken. And in the ende, the Castell being rendred after long Voyages, and great Fortunes by Sea, they were charned, caried to Naples & there imprisoned. Amongst those Prisoners, there was a certayne Gentleman called Rowlande, the naturall Sonne of King Federick deceased a yong Prince very comely and valyaunt. Who not being redeemed, taried alone in prison very sorowfull to see all others discharged after they had payd their Raunsome and himselfe not to haue wherewith to furnish the same. For king Pietro (to whom the care of him appertayned by reason hee was his Brother) for that his warres had no better successe, and done contrary to his commaundement, conceyued displeasure so wel agaynst him, as all others which were at that battell. Howe hee then being prisoner without hope of any liberty, by meanes of the

dampishe

dampishe pryson, and his feete clogged with prons, grewe to bee
 sicke and feeble. It chanced by fortune, that Camiola remem-
 bzed him, and seeing him forsaken of his brethren, had compass-
 on vpon his misshap, in such wise, as she purposed (if ho-
 nestly she might doe the same) to set hym at libertie. For the ac-
 complishment whereof without prejudice of hir honour, she sawe
 none other wayes but to take him to husband. Wherefore shee
 sent diuers vnto him secretly, to conferre if he would come forth
 vpon that condition, whereunto he willingly agreed. And perfor-
 ming ech due ceremonie, vnder promised faith, vpon the gift of a
 ring willingly by a deputy espoused Camiola, who with so much
 diligence as she could, payed two thousand Crownes for his ran-
 some, and by that meanes he was deliuerd.

When he was retourned to Messina, he repayed not to his
 Wyfe, but fared as though there had neuer bene any such talke
 betwene theym: Whereof at the beegynninge Camiola be-
 ry much maruelled, and afterwarde knowinge his unkind-
 nesse, was greatly offended in hir heart against him. Notwithsta-
 nding, to the entent she might not seeme to be grieved without rea-
 son, before she proceeded any further, caused him louingly to be tal-
 ked withal, and to be exhorted by folowing his promise to consu-
 mate the mariage. And seeing that he denied euer any such Con-
 tract to be made, she caused him to be summoned before the Eccle-
 siasticall Iudge, by whome sentence was giuen that hee was her
 husband by euidence of his owne letters, and by witnesse of cer-
 tayne other personages of good reputation, which afterwards he
 himself confessed, his face blushing for shame, for that he had for-
 gotten such a manifest benefite and good turne. When the kynde
 part of Camiola done vnto him, was thoroughly known, he was by
 hys Brethren reproued and checked for hys villany: whereupon by
 their instigation, & the perswasion of his frends, he was contented
 by humble request to desire Camiola to performe the Nuptials. But
 the gentlewoman which was of great courage, in the presencc of diuers
 her to him, wher he required hir therunto, answered him in this ma-
 ner: Rowland I haue great cause to render thanks to almyghty

Camiola, and Rowlande.

God, for that it pleased him to declare vnto me the prooue of thine
vnfaithfulnesse, before thou didst by any meanes contaminate (vn-
der colour of mariage) the purity of my body, and that through
his fauour, by whose most holy name thou wentest about to abuse
me by false and perjured Oth, I haue foreseene thy Trampery and
deceypt, wherein I beleue I haue gayned more, than I shoulde
haue done by thee in mariage. I suppose that when thou were in
person, thou didst meane no lesse, than now by effect thou shew-
est, and diddest thinke that I forgetting of what house I was, pre-
sumptuously desired a Husband of the Royal bloud, and therefore
wholly inflamed with thy loue, diddest purpose to beguile mee by
denying the Trough, when thou haddest recovered liberty thro-
ugh my Money, and thereby to reserue thy selfe for some other
of more famous Alliance, beinge restored to the former degree.
And thereby thou hast giuen prooue of thy will, and what minde
thou haddest so to do if thyne ability had bene correspondent. But
God, who from the lofty Skyes doth beholde the humble & low,
and who forsaketh none that hopeth in him, knowing the sinceritie
of my Conscience, hath giuen mee the grace by little trauayle, to
breake the bands of thy deceypts, to discouer thine ingratitude, &
make manifest thine infidelitie, which I haue not done only to dis-
play the wrong towardes me, but that thy Brethren and other thy
friends might fro henceforth know what thou art, what assistance
they ought to repose in thy faith, & thereby what thy friends ought
to looke for, & what thine enemies ought to feare. I haue lost my
Money, thou thy good name. I haue lost the hope which I had
of thee, thou the fauour of the Kinge, and of thy brethren: I the
expectation of my mariage, thou a true and constant Wife: I the
fruits of charity, thou the gayne of amity: I an vnfaithfull hus-
band, thou a most pure and lopall Wyle. Now the Gentlewomen
of Sicilia doe maruaile at my Magnificence, and Beauty, and by
prayes aduance the same vp into the heauens: and contrarywise
euery of them doe mock thee, and deeme thee to be Infamous.
The Renowned W:pters of ech Countrey will place me amongst
the ranke of the noblest Dames, where thou shalt be depressed,
and throwne downe amongst the Heapes of mosse vnhynde.

True it

True it is, that I am somewhat deceyued by deliuering out of
 Prison, a yong man of Royall, and noble race, in neede of whom
 I haue redeemed a Rascall, a Lier, a falsifier of his faith, & a cru-
 ell Beast: And take heede hardily how thou do greatly esteeme thy
 selfe, and I wish thee not to think that I was moued to draw thee
 out of Prison, and take thee to Husbände for the good qualities
 that were in thee, but for the memozy of auncient benefits which
 my father receyued of thine (if Federick, a king of most sacred re-
 memb'raunce were thy father, for I can scarcely beleue, that a sonne
 so dishonest should procede from so noble a gentleman as was that
 famous Prince.) I know well thou thinkest that it was an un-
 worthy thing, that a Widow not being of the Royall blood should
 haue to husband, the sonne of a Kinge, so strong and of so goodly
 personage, which I willingly confesse: But would haue thee a
 little to make me answer (at the least wise if thou canst by reason)
 when I payd so great a sum of money to deliuer thee from bondage
 and captiuitie, where was then the nobility of thy Royall race?
 Where was thy force of Youth? And where thy Beauty? If not
 that they were closed vp in a terrible Prison, where thou wast de-
 sturned in bitter griefe, and sorowe, and there with those naturall
 qualities, couered also in obscure darknesse, that compassed thee
 round about. The ill fauoured noyse and iangling of thy chaines,
 the deformity of thy face forced for lack of light, and the stench of
 the infected Prison that prouoked sicknesse, and the forsaking of
 thy Friends, had quite debased al these perfections wherewith now
 thou seemest to be so lusty. Thou thoughtest me then to be worthy,
 not onely of a yong man of a royall blood, but of a God, if it were
 possible to haue him, & so soone as thou (contrary to all hope) didst
 once visite thy natural Countrey, like a most pestilent person with-
 out any difficulty, haile chaunged thy mynde, and neuer since thou
 wast deliuered, once did call into thy remembraunce how I was
 that Camiola, that I was shee (alone) that did remembre thee:
 that I was (shee alone) that had compassion on thy mi hap, and
 that I was onely she, who for thy health did imploy all the goods
 I had. I am, I am (I say) that Camiola, who by hir Honeys raff-
 somed thee out of the hands of the Capitall enemies of thine Fa-

Camiola, and Rowlande.

" cellers, from Fetters, from Prison: And finally deliuered thee
 " from Misery extreme, before thou were altogether settled in dis-
 " payre. I reduced thee agayne to hope, I haue reuoked thee into
 " thy Countrey, I haue brought thee into the Royall Pallace, and
 " restored thee into thy former Estate, and of a Prisoner weake, and
 " ill fauoured, haue made thee a younge Prince, strong, and of fayre
 " aspect. But wherefore haue I remembred these things, whereof
 " thou oughtest to bee very mindefull thy selfe, and whych thou art
 " not able to deny? Sith that for so great benefitts thou hast rendred
 " me such thanks, as being my husband in deede, thou haddest the
 " face to deny me mariage, already contracted by the deposition of
 " honest Witnesses, and approued by Lettres, Signed with thine
 " owne hande. Wherefore diddest thou despise me that hath deliue-
 " red thee? Yea and if thou couldest haue stayned the Name of hir
 " with Infamy, that was thine onely Refuge, and Defender, thou
 " wouldest gladly haue giuen cause to the common people, to thinke
 " lesse than Honesty of hir. Art thou ashamed (thou Man of little
 " Iudgement) to haue to Wyfe a Wyddowe, the Daughter of a
 " Knight? O how farre better had it ben for thee to haue bene asha-
 " med to breake thy promised fayth, to haue dispised the holy & dread-
 " full name of God, and to haue declared by thy cursed unkindnes,
 " how full fraught thou art with Vice. I doe confesse in deede that
 " I am not of the Royall bloud: Notwithstanding from the Cra-
 " dle, being Trayned, and brought vp in the Company of Kinges
 " Wyues, and Daughters, no great maruayle it is, if I haue In-
 " dued and put on a Royall heart and manners, that is able to get, &
 " purchase royall Nobility. But wherefore doe I multiply so many
 " wordes? No, no, I will be very facile, and easie in that wherein
 " thou hast ben to me so difficult, and hard by resisting the same wth
 " all thy power. Thou hast refused heretofore to be mine, and ha-
 " uing vanquished thee, to be such, frankly of myne owne accord,
 " I doe graunt that thou art not. Abide (on Gods name) with thy
 " royall Nobility, neuertheless defiled with the spot of Infidelity.
 " Make much of thy youthly lustinesse, and of thy transitory beau-
 " ty, and I shal be contented with my Wyddow apparell, and shall
 " leaue the riches which God hath geuen me to Wyues more honest
 than those

than those that might haue come of thee. Iuaunt thou wretched
 pong man, and sith thou art coumpted to be vnwozthy of me, learne
 with thine own experience, by what subtilty and guiles thou ma-
 est betray other dames, satisfieth it for me to be once deceyued. And
 I for my parte fully determine neuer to tary longer with thee, but
 rather chasty to lye without husband, which lye I deeme farre
 moze excellent than with thy match continually to be coupled.

After shee had spoken these words, shee departed from him, and
 from that time forth, it was impossible eyther by prayers, or Ad-
 monitions to cause hir chaunge hir holy intent. But Rowland al
 confused, repenting himselfe to late of hys Ingratitude, blamed of
 ech man, his eyes fixed vpon the ground, auoyding not onely the
 ppresence of his byethzen, but of all sorts of people, daily led from
 that time forth, a most miserable life, and neuer durst by reason to
 demaunde hir againe to Wife, whom he had by disloyalty refused.
 The King and the other Barons, marueyling of the noble heart
 of the Lady, singularly commended hir, and exalted hir prayles by
 into the Skyes, vncertayne neuerthelesse wherein shee was most
 woorthy of prayse, eyther for that (contrary to the couetous nature
 of Women) she had raunsomed a pong man with so great a Summe
 of Money, or else after she had deliuered him, and sentence giuen
 that he was hir Husbände, she so couragiously refused him, as an
 unkinde man, vnwozthy of hir company.

But leaue we for a tyme, to talke of Widowes, and let vs see
 what the Captayne, and Lieutenaunt of Nocera can alledge vpon
 the discourse of his cruelties, which although an ouer cruell Hys-
 story, yet depaynteth the successe of those that apply their myndes
 to the Spoytes of Loue, such Loue I meane, as is wan-
 tonly placed, and directed to no good purpose, but for
 glutting of the Bodys delight, which both cor-
 rupteth nature, maketh feeble the body,
 lewdly spendeth the time, and special-
 ly offēdeth him who maketh pro-
 clamatiō, that Whoremō-
 gers & adultrers shal ne-
 uer Inherite his
 Kingdome.

The

The Lords of Nocera.

Great cruelties chaunced to the Lords of *NOCEA* *RA*, for adultery by one of them committed with the Captaynes wyfe of the forte of that Citty, with an enterprife moued by the Captaine to the Cittyzens of the same for Rebellion, & the good and dutyfull aunfwere of them : with other pityfull euents ryfing of that notable and outrageous vyce of whoredome.

The. XXXIII. Nouell.



THE furious rage of a Husband offended for the chastity violated in his Wyfe, surpasseth all other, & ingendzeth mallice agaynst the doer whatsoeuer he be. For if a Gentleman, or one of good nature, cannot abyde an other to doe him any kinde of displeasure, & much lesse to hurt him in hys Body, how is he able to endure to haue his honour touched, specially in y^e part which is so neere vnto him as his owne Soule? Man, and Wyfe being as it were one body and one will, wherein Men of good Iudgement cannot well like the Opinion of those which say that the honour of a iusty and couragious person dependeth not vpon the fault of a foolish woman. For if that wer true which they so lightly banter, I would demaund why they be so animated & angry against them which adorne their head with braunched Hornes, the Ensignes of a Cuckolde. And truly nature hath so well provided in that behalfe, as the very sauage Beastes doe fight, and suffer death for such honest Jealousie. Yet will I not prayse, but rather accuse aboue al faulty men, those that be so fondly Jealous, as eche thinge troubling

troubling their mindes, be asrayde of the flies very shadowe that
 buzze about their faces. For by paynting and molestinge thep-
 selues with a thing that so little doth please and content them, vntill
 manifest, and euident prooofe appeare, they display the folly of
 their mindes imperfection, and the weaknesse of their Fantasie.
 But where the fault is knowne, and the Vice discovered, where
 the Husbände seeth himselfe to receiue Damage in the soundest
 part of his moueable goods, reason it is that he therein be aduised
 by timely deliberation and sage Foresight, rather than with head-
 long fury, and raging rashnesse to hazard the losse of his honour,
 and the ruine of his life and goods. And like as the farth & fidel-
 ty of the vndeiled Bed hath in all times worthily ben commended
 and rewarded: Euen so he that polluteth it by Infamy, beareth his
 penance of the same. Portia the Daughter of Cato, and wife of
 Brutus shall be praised for euer, for the honest and inuolable loue
 which she bare vnto hir beloued husband, almost like to lose hir life
 when she heard tell of his certayne death. The pudicity of Paulina
 the wife of Seneca appeared also, when she assayed to dy by the same
 kinde of death wherewith hir Husband violently was tormented
 by the vniust commaundement of the most cruel and horrible Em-
 peroure Nero. But Whores, and Harlottes hauing honest Hus-
 bands, and well allied in Kin, and Ligneage, by abandoning their
 bodies, doe prodigally consume their good Renoume: Pea but if
 they escape the Magistrates, or auoyde the wrath of offended hus-
 bandes for the wrong done vnto them, yet they leaue an immortall
 slander of their wicked life, and youth thereby may take exam-
 ple aswell to shun such shamelesse Women, as to followe those
 Dames that be Chaste, and Vertuous. Now of this contempt
 whych the Wyfe beareth to hir Husband, do rise very many times
 notozious slanders, and such as are accompanied with pasinge
 cruelties: Wherein the Husbände ought to moderate his heate,
 and calme his choler, and soberly to chastise the fault, for so much
 as excessiue wrath, and anger, doe Eclipse in man the light of rea-
 son, and such rages doe make them to be semblable vnto Beute,
 and reasonlesse Beastes: Where it is to be angry for thinges done
 contray to Right, and Equity, but Temperaunce, and Modesty
 is necessa-

The Lords of Nocera.

is necessary in al occurrentes, bee they wyth vs, or against vs But if to resist anger in those matters, it be hard and difficulte yet the greater impossibility there is in the operation, & effect of any good thinge, the greater is the gloze that banquisheth the Affection and mastereth the first motion of the minde which is not so impossible to gouerne, and subdue to reason, as many do esteeme.

A wise man then cannot so farre forget his duty, as to exceede the Boundes, and Limits of reason, and to suffer his mynde to wander from the Siege of Temperaunce, which if he doe after hee hath well mingled Water in his Wyne, hee may chaunce to finde cause of Repentaunce, and by desire to repaize his Offense augment his fault, Anne being so prompt and ready in man, as the crime which might bee couered with certayne Justice, and coloured by some lawe or righteous cause, maketh him many tymes to fall into detestable Vice, and Synne, so contrary to mildnesse and modesty, as the very Exaunts themselves would be abhorre such wickednesse. And to the ende that I do not trouble you with Allegation of infinite numbres of examples, seruing to this purpose, ne reder occasion of tediousnes for you to reuolue so many booke, I am contented for this present, to bring in place an Hystory so ouer cruell, as the cause was not mutch vnreasonable, if duty in the one had bene considered, and rage in the other bridled and foreseene, who madly murdered and offended those that were nothing guilty of the Facte, that touched him so neare. And although that these be matters of loue, yet the Reader ough not to be grieued nor take in euill parte, that we bee still in that Argument. For we doe not hereby goe about to Erect a Schoolehouse of Loue, or to teache Youth the wanton Toyes of the same: But rather bring forth these Examples to withdrazw the plyant, and tender Age of this our time, from the pursuite of like Follies, which may (were they not in this sort warned) ingender like Effects that these our Hystories do recoumpt, and whereof you shall bee Partakers by reading the discourse that followeth.

Pece must than vnderstand, that in the time that Braccio Montone, and Sforza Attendulo florished in Italy, and were the chiesest of the Italian men of warre, there were three Lords & brethren, whych

which held vnder their authoritie and Puisseance Foligno, Nocera, and Treuio, parcell of the Dukedome of Spoleto, who gouerned so louingly their Landes together, as without diuision, they magnetayned themselves in great Estate, and lyued in Brotherly con corde. The name of the Eldest of these thre Lordes, was Nicholas, the second Caesar, the yongest Conrade, gentle Personages, wise and welbeloued so well of the Noble men their Neighbour, as also of the Cittizens that were vnder their Obersaice, who in the ende shewed greater loyalty towards them, than those that had swoyne their fayth, and had giuen pledges for confirmation, as yee shal perceiue by reading, what insucth. It chaunced that the eldest oftentimes repaying from Foligno to Nocera, and lodging still in the Castell, behelde with a little to mutch wanton Eye, the Wyfe of his Liutenannt whych was placed there with a good number of dead payes, to Guard the Fort, and keepe vnder the Cittizens, if by chaunce (as it happeneth vpon the new erection of Estates) they attempted some newe enterpryse agaynst their Soueraygne Lordes. Howe this Gentlewoman was very fayre, singularly delighting to be looked vpon: Which occasioned the Lord Nicholas, by perceyuing the wantonnesse and good will of the Wyfresse of the Castell, not to refuse so good occasion, determining to prosecute the intoying of hir, that was the Bird after which he hunted, whose Beauty and good grace had deeply wounded his Mind, wherin if he forgot his duety, I leaue for al men of good iudgement to consider. For me thinke that this young Lord ought rather to loue and cherishe his Liutenannt that faithfully and trustily had kept his Castell & Forte, than to prepare agaynst him so Trayterous an Attempt, and Ambushe. And if so bee hys sayd Liutenannt had bene accused of felony, mysprisson, or Treason (yet to speake the trouth) hee might haue deliuered the charge of his Castell vnto an other, rather then to suborne his Wyfe to folly. And ought likewise to haue considered that the Liutenannt by puttinge his trust in him, had iust cause to complayne for Rauihtinge hys Honour from hym in the Person of hys Wyfe, whom hee ought to haue loued without any affection to Infrindge the holy Lawe of Amitie, the breakinge whereof

dissolucth

The Lords of Nocera.

dissolueth the duety of ech Seruaunt towarde his Soueraygne
 Lord and mayster. To be short, this blinded Louer yeiding no re-
 sistance to loue, and the foolish conceipt which altereth the iud-
 gements of the wisest, suffred his fante to roue so farre vnto hys
 Appetites, as on a daye when the Lieutenante was walked
 abroade into the Castell, to view the Shoulidours and deade payes
 (to pleasure him that sought the meanes of his displeasure) he
 spake to the Gentlewoman his Wyfe in this manner: Gentlewo-
 man, you being wise and curteous as ech man knoweth needefull
 it is not to vse long or Rethoricall Orations, for so much as you
 without further supply of talk do clearely perceue by my Looks,
 Sighes, and earnest Viewes, the loue that I beare you, which
 without Comparison nippeth my Heart so neare as none can
 feele the parching paynes, that the same poore position of me doth
 suffer. Wherefore hauing no great leysure to let you further vn-
 derstand my mynde, it may please you to shewe me so much fa-
 uour as I may be receyued for him, who hauing the better right
 of your good grace, may therewithall enjoy that secret Acquain-
 taunce, which sutch a one as I am deserueth: of whom wee shall
 haue better experience if you please to accept him for your owne.
 This mistresse Lieutenant which compted hir selfe happy to be
 beloued of hir Lorde, and who tooke great pleasure in that ad-
 uenture, albeit that shee desyred to lette hym knowe the good
 well that shee bare vnto him, yet dissembled the matter a little, by
 aunswearing him in this wise: Your disease Sir is sodayne, if in
 so little time you haue felt sutch excesse of malady: But perchance
 it is your heart that bring ouer tender, hath lightly receyued the
 pricke, which no doubt will so soone vanishe, as it hath made so rea-
 dy entry. I am very glade (Sir) that your heart is so merily dis-
 posed to dalliance, and can finde some matter to contriue the su-
 perfluite of tyme, the same altering the diuersity of mans comple-
 xion, accordingly as the condition of the hourely Planet guideth
 the nature of euery wight. It is altogether otherwise (answered
 hee) for being come hither as a master and Lord, I am become a
 seruaunt and slaue: And briefly to speake my minde, if you haue
 not pittie vpon me, the disease which you call sodayne, not only will
 take in.

take increase, but procure the death and small ruine of my heart. 33
 Th^e Sir (sayd the Gentlewoman) your griefe is not so deeply roo- 33
 ted, and death so present to succcede, as you affirme, ne yet so rea- 33
 dy to grieve ouer the place, as you protest, but I see what is the 33
 matter, you desire to laugh mee to scoyne, and your heart craueth 33
 something to solace it selfe which cannot be idle, but must imploy 33
 the vacant tyme vpon some pleasaunt Toyes. You haue touched 33
 the pricke (answered the Louer) for it is you in deede where 33
 vpon my heart doth toy, and you are the cause of my Laughter and 33
 pastetime, for otherwise all my delights were displeasures, and you 33
 also by denying me to be your seruant, shall abbreuiate, and shor- 33
 ten my liuing daies, who onely retoyseth for choyse of such a mys- 33
 fresse. And how (replied she) can I be assured of that you say? 33
 The disloyalty, and infidelity of man being in these daies so faste 33
 vntied, so hastily following one another, as the Shadow both the 33
 Body, wheresoeuer it goeth. Onely experience (say he) shall make 33
 you know what I am, and shall teach you wheather my heart is a- 33
 ny thing different from my wordes and I dare bee bolde to say, 33
 that if you vouchsaife to doe mee the pleasure to receiue mee for 33
 your owne, you may make your vaunt to haue a Gentleman so 33
 saythfull for your friend, as I esteeme you to be discrete, and as I 33
 desire to let you taste the effect of mine affection, by such some ho- 33
 nest order as may be deuised. Sir (sayd she) it is well and aduised- 33
 ly spoken of you, but yet I thincke it straunge for such a Gen- 33
 tleman as you be, to debase your honoz to so pooze a Gentlewoman, 33
 and to goe about both to dishonoz me, and to put my life in pearill. 33
 God forbid (answered the Lord Nicholas) if I be cause of any 33
 flaunder, and rather had I dye my selfe than minister one simple 33
 occasion whereby your fame should be brought in question. Onely 33
 I doe pray you to haue pittie vpon me, and by vsing your curtesie, 33
 to satisfie that which my seruice and saythfull friendship doth co- 33
 strayne, and binde you for the comfort of him that loueth you bet- 33
 ter than himselfe. We will talke moze thereof hereafter (answers 33
 red the Lieutenantants Wyfe) and than will I tell you mine ad- 33
 uise, and what resolution shall follow summe of your demaunde. 33
 Now now Gentlewoman (sayd he) haue you the heart to leaue me 33
 boode

The Lords of Nocera.

" boyde of hope, to make me languish for the prologation of a thing
 " so doubtful, as the delays bee which loue deferreth? I humbly
 " pray you to tell me whereunto I shall trust: to the intent that by
 " punishing my heart for prooue of this enterprize, I may chastise
 " all mine Eyes by reuing from them the meanes for euer more to
 " see that which contenteth me best, and wherein resteth my solace,
 " leauing my minde full of distress, and my heart without final stay,
 " vpon the greatest Pleasure that euer man coulde choose. The
 " Gentlewoman would not loose a Noble man so good and perfect:
 " Whose presence already pleased hir aboue all other thinges, and
 " who voluntarily had agreed to hys request, by the onely Signe
 " of hir Gestes, and Lookes, sayde vnto him smilinge with a very
 " good grace: Doe not accuse my heart of lightnesse, nor my minde
 " of infidelity and treason, if to please and obey you, I forget my du-
 " ty, and abuse the promise made vnto my Husband, for I swear vn-
 " to you (Sir) by God, that I haue more forced my thought, and of
 " long time haue constrained mine appetites in dissembling the loue
 " that I beare you, than I haue receiued pleasure, by knowing my
 " selfe to be beloued by one agreeable to mine affection. For which
 " cause you shall finde me (being but a poore Gentlewoman) more
 " ready to do your pleasure, and to be at your commaundement, than
 " any other that liueth betwene of greater Doit, and regarde than I
 " am. And who to satisfie your request, shall one day sacrifice that fi-
 " delity to the zealous fury of hir husband. God defend (sayd þe young
 " Lord) for we shal be so discrete in our doings, and so seldome com-
 " muncate, and talke togeather, as impossible for any way to discry-
 " the same. But if mishap will haue it so, and that some ill lucke doe
 " discouer our dealinges, I haue shift of wayes to colour it, and
 " power to stop the mouthes of them that dare presume to clatter &
 " haue to do with our priuate conference. All þe I know wel inough
 " (Sir) (sayd she) but it is great simplicity in such things for a man to
 " trust to his authority, the forced inhibition whereof shall prouoke
 " more babble, than rumour is able to spreade for all his rattling talk
 " of our secret follies. Whereouer I would be very glad to do what
 " pleaseth you, so the same may be without slander. For I had ra-
 " ther be, than any should take vs in our priuities and famillier pas-
 " times:

times: let vs be contented with the pleasure that the ease of our
 loy may graunt, and not with such contentation as shal offend vs,
 by blotting the clerenesse of our good names. Concluding then
 the time of their new acquaintance, which was the next day at noone,
 whē the Lieutenaut did walke into the Citie, they ceased their
 talke for feare of his enteruiew. Who (vpon his retourne) doing
 reuerence vnto his Lord, tolde him that hee knewe where a wilde
 Boare did haunte, if it pleased him to see the pastime. Whereun-
 to the Lord Nicholas fained louingly to giue eare (although as
 gainst his will) for so much as hee thought the same Huntinge
 should be a delay for certayne dayes to the ensuing, (pretended &
 assured) of his beloued. But he was so much or more exprest
 with the raging and intollerable fire of loue, speedily found mea-
 nes to satisfie his louers sute, but not in such manner as was de-
 sired of either partes, wherefore they were constrained to defer
 the rest vntill an other time. This pleasaunt beginning so allured
 the Lord of Nocera, as vnder the pretence of huntinge, there was
 no weeke that passed, but hee came to visite the Warrener of his
 Lieutenaut. And this order continuing without any one little
 suspicion of their loue, they gouerned themselves wisely in the
 pursute thereof. And the Lord Nicholas vsed the game and spoyle
 of Hunting, and an infinite number of other exercises, as the run-
 ning of the Ring, & Tennis, not so much thereby to finde meanes
 to enioy his Lady, as to auoyde occasion of Jealousie in his Hus-
 band, being a very familiar vice in all Italians, the Cloake where-
 of is very heauy to beare, and the disease troublesome to sustayne.
 But what? Like as it is hard to beguile an Usurer in the ac-
 count of his money, for his continuall watch over the same, and
 slumbring sleepes vpon the Bookes of his reckonings & accounts
 so difficult it is to deceiue the heart of a zealous man, and special-
 ly when he is assured of the griefe which his heade conceyueth.
 Argus was neuer so cleere eyed for all his hundred Eyes ouer
 Iupiters Lemman, as those Louers be, whose opinions be ill affec-
 ted ouer the chastity of their Wives. Whoeuer what foole, or
 Wile is hee, who seeing such vndiscrete familiarity of two Lo-
 uers, the

The Lords of Nocera.

uers, the priue gestures and demeanors without witness, they
solne walke at vntymely houres, and sometimes they embrace-
ments to straght a comon before seruants, that would not doubt
of that whych most secretly did passe: True it is that in England
where Liberty is so honestly obserued as being alone or secre-
te conuersation giueth no cause of suspition) the same mighte haue
bene hoyme withall. But in Italy, where the Parents theselues
be for the most part suspected, (if there had bene no facts in deed
committed) that familiarity of the L^o R^o D Nicholas, with his
Lieutenantes Wyfe was not suffrable, but exceeded the Bound
of reason, for so much as the Commoditie whych they had chosen
for posseling of thei loue, (albeit the same not suspitious) animat-
ed them afterwards to frequent their familiarity and despoite to
frankly, and without discretion: whych was the cause that for-
tune (who neuer leaue the toyen of men without giuing there-
unto some great alarme,) being enuious of the mutuall delightes
of those two louers, made the husband to doubt of that whych hee
would haue dissembled, if hono^r could so easily be lesse, without
reproch, as bloud is shed without perill of Lyfe, But the matter
being so cleare, as the fault was euident, specially in the party
whych touched him so neare as hymselfe, the Lieutenante before
he would enterpryse any thing, and declare what he thought, des-
ired throughe to bee resolued of that whych hee sawe as it were
but in a Cloude, and by reason for his conueyned Opyinion hee
dealt so warely and wisely in those affaires, and was so subtil an
espiall, as one day when the louers were at thei game, and in
their most straitte and secrete embracements, he biewed them cou-
pled with other leasly, than he would haue wished, and colled with
straighter hands then reason or honesty did permit. He saw with-
out being scene, wherein he felt a certaine ease and Contentment,
for being assured of that he doubted, and purposed to ordeyne a
sowye refection after their delightfome banquet, the simple louers
ignozaunt by signe or coniecture, that their enterpryses were dis-
couered. And cruely it had ben more tollerable and lesse hurtful
for the Lieutenante, if euen then hee had perpetrated his
ben-

vengeance, and punished them for their wickednesse, than to vse
 the Cruelty wherewith afterwarde he blotted his renoume, and
 soyled his hands by Bedlem rage in the innocent blood of those
 that were not pxture to the folly, and lesse guilty of the wronge
 don vnto him. Now the Captain of the Castell for al his dissimula-
 tion in couering of his griefe, and his felony and Treason inten-
 ded against his soueraigne L O R D, which he desired not yet
 manifestly to appeare, was not able any more from that time forth
 to speake so louingly vnto him, nor with such respect and reue-
 rence as he did before, which caused his Wife thus to say vnto hir
 Louer: My Lord I doubt very much least my husband doth per-
 ceue these our common practizes, and secrete familiar dealings, &
 that he hath some Hammer working in his heade, by reason of the
 Countenance, and vnheareful entertaynement which he sheweth
 to your Lordship, wherefore myne aduise is, that you retire for a
 certayne tyme to Foligno. In the meane space I wil marke and
 espye if that his alteration be conceiued for any matter against vs,
 and wherefore his wonted lookes haue put on this new alteration
 and chaunge. All which when I haue (by my espial and secret prac-
 tize sounded) I will speedily aduertise you, to the end that you may
 prouide for the sauegard of your faithfull and louing seruauant.

The young Lord, who loued the Gentlewoman with al his heart
 was attached with so great griefe, and dyuened into such rage, by
 hearyng those wicked Newes, as euen presently he woulde haue
 knowne of hys Lieutenauant, the cause of his dyswonted cheare.
 But weyghing the good aduise whych his woman had giuen him,
 paused bypon the same, and promysed hir to doe what she thought
 best. By reason whereof, geuyng warning to his Seruan-
 tes for hys departure, he caused the Lieutenante to be called
 before hym, vnto whome hee sayde: Captayne: I had thoughte
 for certayne Dayes to spoyle and passe my tyme but hearing tell
 that the Duke of Camarino commeth to Foligno, to debate with
 vs of matters of importaunce, I am constrained to departe, and
 do pray you in the meane time to haue good regard vnto our affai-
 res, and if any newes doe chaunce, to aduertise the same with all
 Expedition. Sir (sayd the Captayne) I am sorrye that now

Et i.

when

The Lordes of Nocera.

when our pastetime of hunting might yelde some good recreation
 vnto your honour, that you doe thus forsake vs, notwithstanding
 sith it is your good pleasure, we will cease the chase of the wyld
 Boze till your retourne. In the meane time, I will make ready
 the Coardes and Tramelles, that vppon your comming, nothing
 want for the furniture of our sport. The **LORD** Nicholas,
 seeing his Lieutenaut so pleasauntly disposed, and so little bent
 to Choller, or zealous fantasie, was perswaded, that some other
 toy had rather occupied his Minde, than any suspition betweene
 his Wife and hym. But the subrell Husband searched other
 meanes to be reuenged, than by kylling him alone, of whom he re-
 ceued that dishonour, and was moze craftie to enterpryse, and
 moze hardie to execute, than the Louers were wyle or well adui-
 sed to pzeuent and wythstande his sleighes and pollicies. And
 albeit that the Wyfe (after the departure of hir frend) assa-
 yed to drawe from him the cause of his altered cheare, yet coulde
 shee neuer learne, that hir Husband had any ill Opinton of theyr
 Loue. For so many tymes as talke was moued of the **LORD**
 Nicholas, hee exalted his prayse vp into the Heauens, and com-
 mended hym aboue all his Brethren. All whych hee dyd to be-
 guyle the pollicies of hir, whome he saw to blush, and many times
 chaunge Colour, when she heard him spoken of, to whom she bare
 better affection than to hir Husband, vnto whom (in very dede) she
 did owe the faith and integritie of hir body. This was the very
 toyle which he had laid to intrap those amozous persons, and pur-
 posed to rid the World of them by that meanes, to remoue from
 before his eyes, the shame of a Cuckoldes title, and to reuenge the
 inturie don to his reputation. The mistresse of the Castel serpege
 that hir husband (as shee thought) by no meanes did vnderstande
 hir follies, desired to continue the pleasure, which either of them
 desired, and which made the thirde to die of phrenesie, wrote to the
LORD Nicholas, the letter that foloweth.

My Lord, the feare I had, that my husband should perceiue
 our loue, caused me to intreat you certaine daies past, to disconti-
 nue for a time, the frequentation of your owne house, whereby I
 am not a litle grieved, that contrary to my wil, I am defrauded

of your presence, whych is far more pleasaunt vnto me, than my husbandes flatteries, who ceaseth not continually to talke of the honourable behauiour, and commendable qualities that be in you, and is sorry for your departure, because he feareth y^e you mislike your entertainment, whych should be (sayth he) so greivous and noysome vnto him, as death it selfe. Wherefore I pray you sir, if it be possible, and that your affaires doe suffer you, to come hither, to the end I may enjoy your amiable presence, and vse the Liberty that our good hap hath prepared, through the little tealoose of my husband your Lieutenant: who I suppose before it be long will intreat you, so great is his desire to make you pastime of hunting within your owne Lād and territory. I praye not then to come I beseech you, and we will so well consider the gouernement of our affaires, as the best sighted shall not once discry the least suspition therof, recommending my selfe most humbly (after the best manner I can) to your good Lordship.

This Letter was deliuered to a Lackey to beare to the Lord Nicholas, and not so pitifully done, but the Lieutenant immediately espied the deceipt, whych the sooner was disciphned, for so much as he dauely lay in wayte to find the meanes to reuenge the wrong done vnto him, of purpose to beate the iron so long as it was hotte, and to execute his purpose before his Wife tooke heede, and felte the endeuor of his Enterpryse. And because that shee had assayed by diuers wayes to sound his heart, and felc whether he had conceiued displeasure against the Lord hir loue, the Day after wherein she had wyrtten to hir friend, hee sent one of his Men in poste to the three Lordes, to requyre them to come the next Day to see the pastime of the fayrest and greatest wild Boze, that long tyme was bred in the Forrests adioyning vnto Nocera. Albeit that the Countrey was fayre for courtinge, and that dyuers tymes many fayre Bozes haue ben encountered there.

But it was not for this, y^e he had framed his errand, but to trap in one toyle & snare the thre brethren, whom he determined to sacrifice to the aultar of his vengeance, for the expiation of their elder brothers trespassse, and for soyling the Nuptial bed of his seruāt.

The Lordes of Nocera.

He was the wilde Boze whome he meant to strike, hee was the prey of his insatiable and cruell Appetite. If the fault had ben generall of all thzee together, he had hadsome reason to make them passe the backe of one equall fortune, and to tangle them with in one net, both to preuent thereby (as he thought) his further hurt, and to chastise their leude behauiour. For many tymes (as Lamentable experience teacheth) Noble men for the onely respecte of their Nobility, make no Conscience to doe wrong to the honoz of them, whose reputation and honesty they ought so wel to regard as their owne.

Herein offended the good Prince of the Iewes Dauid, when to vse his Bersabe without suspition, he caused innocent Vrias to bee slayne, in lieu of recompence for his good seruice, & diligent execution of his behests. The children of the proud Romane king Tarquinius, did herein greatly abuse them selues, when they violated that noble Gentlewoman Lucrece, whom all histories do so much remembre, & whose chastity, all famous writers do commend. Vppon such as they be, vengeance ought to be don, & not to defile the hands in the blood of innocents, as the Parents and Kinsmen of deade Lucrece did at Rome, and this Lieutenaut at Nocera, vppon the Brethren of him that had sent him into Cornwall, without passing ouer the Seas. But what? Anger proceeding of such wronge, surmounteth all phrenesse, & exceedeth all the boundes of reason, and man is so deuoyd of Wits, by seeing the blot of defamation, to layght vpon him, as he seeketh all meanes to hurt and displease him that polluteth his renoume. All the race of the Tarquines for lyke fact were banished Rome, for the onely brute whereof, the husband of the faire rauished wife, was constrained for auoid the Place of his natiuitie. Paris alone violated the body of Menelaus, the Lacedemonian King, but for reuenge of the rauished Greeke, not onely the glorie and Richesse of stately Troy, but also the most parte of Asia and Europa, was ouertourned and defaced, if Credyte may be giuen to the recordes of the Tuncient. So in this fact of the Lieutenaut, the LORD Nicholas alone, had polluted his bed, but the reuenge of the cruel man extended further, and his fury ragged so farre, as the guiltlesse were in greate Daunger to beare the

the penance,, which shall be well perceived by the discourse that foloweth. The Captaine then hauing sent his message, and being sure of his intent (no lesse than if he already had the brethren in his hold, vpon the point to couple them together with his wife, to send them all in pilgrimage to visite the faithfull sozt, that blason their loues in an otherwoylde, wyth Dydo Phyllis, and sutch like, that moze for dispayre, than loue bee passed the straites of death) caused to be called befoze him in a secrete place, al the souldiers of the Fort, and sutch as with whome he was sure to ppeuayle, to whom not without theading forth some teares, in heauie Countenance, he spake in this maner.

My Companions and Friends, I doubt not but yee bee abashed to see me wrapt in so heauy plyght, & appeare in this forme befoze you (that is to say) bent & heauy, panting with sighes, & all contrary to my custome, in other state and maner, than my courage and degree requyre. But when ye shall vnderstand the cause I am assured that the case whych seemeth straunge to you, shall be thought iust and ryght and so will perfourme the thing where. in I shall employe you. Ye knowe that the first point that a Gentleman ought to regarde, consisteth not onely in repelling the injury done vnto the body, but rather it behoueth that the fight begin for the defense of his honoz, which is a thinge that proceedeth from the Minde, and resozteth to the Body, as the Instrament to worke that which the spyryte appointeth. Now it is honour, for conseruation whereof, an honest man and one of good Courage feareth not to put hymselfe in all perill and daunger of death and losse of goodes, referring hymselfe also to the garde of that whych toucheth as it were oure owne reputation. In sutch wyse as if a good Captaine doe suffer hys souldier to be a wycked man, a Robber, a Murderer and an exacter, he beareth the note of dishonoz albeit in all his doings he gouerneth his estate after the rule of honesty, & doth nothing that is unworthy his vocation. But what he being a head vntied to sutch members, if the partes of that vntied thing be corrupt and naught, the head must needes bear the blot of the fault befoze referred to the whole Body. Alas

Et 3.

(sayd

The Lordes of Nocera.

“ (sayd he sighing) what parte is more neare, and dearer to Man,
“ than that which is giuen vnto him for a Pledge and Comfort du-
“ ring his Life, and which is contorned to be bone of his bone, and
“ flesh of his flesh, to breath forth one Mynde, and to thinke with one
“ heart and equall wil. It is of the Wyfe that I speake, who being
“ the moztie of hir husband, ye ought not to muse If I say, that the
“ Honour of the one is the rest of the other, and the one infamous
“ and wycked, the other feeleth the troubles of such mischiet, and
“ the Wyfe being carelesse of hir honoz, the husbands reputation is
“ defiled, and is not worthy of prayse, if he suffer such shame vnre-
“ uenged: I must (Com panions and good friends) here dyscouer
“ that whych my heart would faine kepe secrete, if it were possible,
“ and must rehearse a thing vnto you, which so sone as my Mouth
“ would faine kepe close, the Wynde assayeth to force the ouerture.
“ And loth I am to do it, were it not that I make so good accompt
“ of you, as ye being tied to me with an vnseparable Vnity, will
“ yeld me your comfort and Wyde against him that hath done mee
“ this Villany, such as if I be not reuenged vpon, needes must I
“ be the Executioner of that vengeance vppon my selfe, that I am
“ loth to spue in this dishonoz, whych all the dayes of my life (with-
“ out due vltion) like a Worme wyl torment and gnaw my con-
“ science. Wherefore before I goe any further, I would knowe
“ whether I myght so well trust your aide and succour in this my
“ busynesse, as in all others I am assured you would not leave mee
“ so long as any breath of life remained in you. For without such
“ assurance, I do nout purpose to let you know the pricking nattle
“ that pierceth my heart, nor the grefe that griueth me so neare,
“ as by vntering it without hope of help I shall open the Gate to
“ death, and dye without reliefe of my desire, by punishing him, of
“ whome I haue receyued an iniury more bloudy than any man can
“ doe. The Souldiers whych loued the Captaine as theyr owne
“ Lyfe, were sozry to see him in such estate, and greater was theyr
“ dolour to heare wordes that tended to nothing else but to fury, ve-
“ geaunce, and murder of hymselfe. Wherefore all wth one
“ accorde promysed theyr helpe and mayne force towarde and a-
“ gainst all men for the byrreng to passe of that whych hee dyd
“ meane

meane to requyre. The Lieutenaut assured of his Men conceyued heart and Courage, and continuing his Oration and purpose, determened the slaughter and ouerthrowe of the thre Trinicien Brethren, (for that was the surname of the Lordes of Foligno,) who pursued his Oration in this maner:

Know ye then (my Companions and good Friends) that it is my Wife, by whome I haue indured the hurt and losse of myne honour, and she is the party touched, and I am he that am most offended. And to the ende that I do not hold you longer in suspense, and the party be concealed from you, whych hath don me this Outrage: Ye shall vnderstand that Nicholas Trinicio, the elder of the thre Lordes of Foligno and Nocera, is he, that against all ryght and equity hath suborned the Wife of his Lieutenaut, and soyled the Bed of him, whereof he ought to haue ben the defender and the very bulwarke of his reputation. It is of hym my good Friends, and of his that I meane to take such vengeance, as eternall memozy shall display the same to all posterity: and neuer LORD shal dare to doe a like wrong to mine, without remembraunce what his duety is, which shall teach hym how to abuse the honest seruice of a Gentleman that is one of his owne trayne. It resteth in you both to holde by your hand, and keepe your promise, to the end that the Lord Nicholas, decaying and mocking me, may not trust and put assistance in your force, vnto whych I heartily do recommend my selfe. The Souldiers moued and incited with the wickednesse of the LORD and with the wrong done to him, of whome they receyued wages, swore a gayne to serue his turne in any exploit he went about, and requyred hym to be assured, that the Trinicien Brethren should be ouerthrowne, and suffer deserued penaunce, if they might lay hands vpon them, and therefore willed him to seke meanes to allure them thither, that they might be dispatched. The Lieutenaut at these wordes renewing a chearefull Countenaunce, and shewing hymself very tofull for such successe, after he had thanked his Souldiers, and very louingly embraced the chieft of them, reuealed his deuised policy, and hoped shortly to haue them at his commaundment win the Fort, alleaging that he had dispatched two Messen-

The Lordes of Nocera.

gers vnto them, and that his wife also priuily had sent hie page:
vnto whome he purposed to geue so good a recompense, as neuer
more she should plant his hornes so hygh, vnder a colour of gen-
tle entertaynement of hie ribauid and friend, They were scarce
resolued vpon this intent, but newes were brought him, that the
next day morning, the three lordes accompanied with other Nob-
ility would come to Nocera, to hunt that huge wyld Beeste, wher-
of the Lieutenant had made so greates auant. These newes did
not greatly please the Captaine, forsomuch as he feared, that his
purpose could not (conueniently) be brought to passe, if the compa-
ny were so great. But when he considered that the Lordes alone,
should lodge within the Fort, he was of good cheare again, & staied
vpon his first intent. The Trinicicns the next day after came ve-
ry late, because the LORD Berardo of Varano Duke of Came-
rino, desired to be one and also the two brethren taried for Con-
rade, who was at marriage, and could not assist the Tragedie that
was played at Nocera, to his great hap & profit. To this troupe
came to Nocera late, and hauing supped in the City, the LORD
Nicholas, and the Duke of Camerino went to Bed in the Fort,
Caesar the brother of Trinicio tarping behind with the Crane, to
lodge in the city. Stay here a while (ye Gentlemen) ye I say, that
pursue the secreete sleights of loue, neuer put any great trust in for-
tune, which seldome keperh his promise with you. Ye had neede
therfore to take good heede, least ye be surpyssed in the place, wher
priuily you geue the assault, and in the act wherein ye desire the as-
sistance of none. See the barbarous cruelty of a Lieutenant, which
loued rather to kill his coyrtual in his cold blood, than otherwise
to be reuenged, when he saw him a bed with his Wife, purposely
that the example of his farr might be the better knowne, and the
secreet slaunder more euident, from the roote whereof did spring an
infinite number of Murders and mischises. About midnight, the
when all thinges were at rest vnder the darke silence of the nyght
the Lieutenant came to the Chamber of the Lord Nicholas, ac-
companied with the most part of the Watch, and hauing stopt by
the peoman of his Chamber, hee so dressed the Companion of
his Bedde, as for the first proofe of his curtesie, he caused hys
Hem.

Members and priuy partes to to be cut of, saying vnto him with
 cruell disdayne: Thou shalt not henceforth (wretched wretch) wield
 this launce into the rest, thereby to batter the honour of an ho-
 nester man than thy self. Then lanching his stomache with a pier-
 cing blade, he tare the hart out of his belly, saying: Is this thy trap-
 terous Heart that hath framed the plot and deupled the enterpryse
 of my shame, to make this infamous villaine without Life, and
 his renoume without prayse? And not content with this Cruelty,
 he weakt the like vpon the remnaunt of his body, that sometimes
 the runnagate Medea did vpon hir innocent brother, to saue the
 Life of hir selfe, and of hir friend Iason. For he cut him into an
 hundred thousand pteces, geuing to euery Member of the poore
 murdered soule hir word of mockery and contempt. Was it not
 sufficient for a tyrannous husband to be reuenged of his shame,
 and to kill the party which had defamed him, without vsing so
 furious Anotomie vpon a dead body, and wherein there was no
 longer feeling? But what? Ire beynge wythout measure, and an-
 ger wythout Wydole or reason, it is not to be wondred, if in al his
 actes the Captayne ouerpasse the iust measure of vengeance.
 Many would thinke the committed murder vpon Nicholas, to
 bee good and iud: but the Justice of an offense, ought not so longe
 time to be conceyled, but rather to make him feelee the smart at the
 very tyme the deede is done, to the ende that the nypping greefe
 of pestilent treason wrought against the betrayed party, be not ob-
 scured and hydden by sodayne rage and lacke of reason, rising in
 the Mindes first motions, and thereby also the faulte of the guilt-
 ty, by his indiscretion couered: otherwys there is nothing that
 can colour such vice. For the law indifferently doth punish eue-
 ry man, that without the Magistrates order taketh authoritie to
 benge his owne wrong. But come we againe vnto our purpose.
 The Captayne all imbued in bloud, entred the Chaumber of
 the Duke of Camerino, whome wyth al the rest of the strangers
 that were wythin the Castle, hee lodged (without speakynge any
 worde) in a deepe and obscure Wyson. Beholde, what rest
 they tooke that Myghte, whych were come to hunt the Wyde
 Boare. For wythout traunspyring farre, they were intrapped
 in the

The Lordes of Nocera.

in the subtil engines and Nettes of the furious Lientenaunte, who when the morning bedecked with his vermilion cleare began to shewe his selfe, when all the Hunters dyd put them selues in readynesse, and coupled by their Dogges to marche into the fildes, behold, one of the Captaynes cruell Ministers wente into the City, to cause the **L O R D** Cesar to come and speake to his brother Nicholas, & intreated him not to tarry, for he and the Duke were dysposed to shewe hym some dysport. Cesar whych neuer suspected the least of these chaunced murders, desired not to be praped agayne, but made haste to the Butcherie like a lamb and in the companie of the Wolves themselves that were in readynesse to kyll hym. He was no sooner in the Court of the Castle, but seuen or eyght Warlets apprehended hym and his Men, and carryed hym into the Chaumber (bound lyke a Theefe) where in the Members of his Miserable Brother were cut of, and dispersed, whose Corps was pitifully gozed and arraped in Bloud. If Cesar were abashed to see himselfe bound and taken prisoner he was more aslonned when he percepued a body so dysmembred, and which as yet he knewe not. Blas (sayd he) what sight is this? Is this the Boie whych thou hast caused vs to come hither to hunt within our very Fort? The Captayne rising vp, all imbued wth bloud, whose face and voyce promised nothing but Murder to the miserable young Gentleman sayd: See Cesar, the Body of thine adulterous brother Nicholas, that infamous whozmonger, and marke if this be not his head: I woulde to God that Conrade were here also that ye might all thre be placed at this sumptuous Banket, which I haue prepared for you. I sweare vnto thee then, that this should be the last Day of all the Trinicien race, and the end of your Tyrannies and wicked Life, But sith I can not get the effect of that whych my heart desireth, my minde shall take repast in the triumph which Fortune hath ordeined. Cursed be the marriage and Wedding at Treuio, that hath hyndred me of an occasion so apte, and of the meanes to dispatch a matter of such importance as is the overthrow of so many tyrants. Cesar at this sentence stood so still, as whilom dyd the wyfe of Loth, by seeing the City on fire, and consume into ashes: by
by the

The Lordes of Nocera.

of Equitie, and that Lordes of good lyfe and conuerſation ought
to be obeyed, defended and honored. But where inuaſion and
ſeasure is againſt ryght, where the people is ſpoiled, and Lawes
violated, it is no conſcience to diſobey and abolish ſuch Mon-
ſters of Nature. The Romanes the prime age of their Common
Wealth ſul wel declared the ſame, when they baniſhed out of their
City that proud race of the Tyrant Tarquine, and when they were
about to exterminate al the rootes of cruelty and Tyrannical po-
wer. Our Neighboꝝ the Sicillians once dyd the like vnder the con-
duct of Dion, againſt the diſruded fury and wilful cruelty of De-
nis the Tyrant of Syracuſa, and the Atheniens againſt the Chel-
dzen of Piliſtratus. And ye that be ſoyted from the ſtocke of thoſe
Samnites, which in times paſt ſo long heald by their Heades a-
gainſt the Romane force, will ye be ſo very cowardes and weak
hearted for reſpect of the title of your ſeigniorie as ye dare not to
me to attempt a valiant enterpryſe for reducing your ſclues into
libertye, and to expell that vermyne broode of Tyrants which
ſwarmed through out the whole Regyon of Italy. Well pee bee ſo
mated and dumpe, as the ſhadow alone of a ſond and inconfiſt
young man, ſhall holde your Noſe to the Grindſtone, and drawe
you at his luſt lyke an Oxe into the ſtall: I feare that if ye ſaw
your Wiues and Daughters haled to the paſſetyme and pleaſure
of theſe Tyrantes, to glutte the whoꝛedome of thoſe Synckinge
Goate Bucks, moꝛe Lecherous and filthy than the ſenſeleſſe ſpar-
rowes: I feare (I ſay) that ye durſt not make one Sygne for
demonſtratyon of your Wrath and dyspleaſure. No, no (my
maſters of Nocera,) it is hyghe tyme to cutte of the Hydra hys
heads, and to ſtrangle hym wrythin hys Cau. The tyme is come
(I ſay) wherein it behoueth you to ſhewe your ſclues lyke Men,
and no longer to diſſemble the caſe that toucheth you ſo neare.
Conſyder whether it bee good to follow myne aduſe, to repoſ-
ſede agayne the thyng whych is your owne, (that is) the free-
dome wherein your Anceſters gloꝛified ſo much, and for which
they feared not to hazarde theyꝝ Goodes and Lyues. It will
come good cheape, if you be ruled by me, it will redound to your
treble Fame, if lyke Men ye follow mine aduſe, whych I hope
to let

to let you shortly see without any great peryll or losse of your Citizens Blood. I haue felt the effect of the Trinicien Tyrannye, and the rigor of their vnrighteous gouernment, which hauing be-
 gone in me, they will not faile, if they be not chastised in time, to
 extend on you also, whome they deeme to be their slaues. In like
 manner I haue first begon to repress their boldnesse, and to with-
 stand their leud behauiour: yea and if you wylende to vnderstande
 ryght from wrong, an easy matter it will be to perfourme the rest,
 the time beinge so commodious, and the discouery of the thinge
 whereof I haue made you priuy, so conuenient. And know ye, that
 for the exploit of mine intent, and to bring you agayne altogether
 in Liberty, I haue taken the two Lordes Nicholas and Cesar per-
 sonners, attending till fortune do bring to me the third, to pay him
 with like money and equall guerdon, that not onely you may bee
 free and settled in your aunient priuiledge, but my heart also satisf-
 fied of the wrong which I haue receiued by their iniustice. Welcome
 (Masters) that the thing whych I haue done: was not withoute
 open intury receiued, as by keeping it close I burst, and by telling
 the same I am ashamed. I will kepe it secrete notwithstanding, &
 shal pray you to take heede vnto your selues, that by vniuersal con-
 sent, the mischiefe may be prevented. Deuise what answer you wyl
 make me, to the intent that I by following your aduise, may also be
 resolued vpon that I haue to do, without Preiudice but to them
 to whome the case doth chieflly appertayne. During at this dis-
 course, the wycked Captayne kept close the Murder which hee
 had committed, to drawe the Worme out of the Nocerines
 Rose, and to see of what Wynde they were, that vpon the in-
 telligence thereof, he myght woozke and follow the tyme accor-
 dyngly. Hee that had seene the Citizens of Nocera after that
 sedetious Oratton, would haue thought that he had heard a mura-
 mure of Bees, when issuing forth their Wyues, they light amidst
 a pleasunt Herber, adozned and beautified with diuers coloured
 floures. For the people flocked and assembled togethers, and be-
 gan to grudge at the imprisonment of their LORDE, and the trea-
 son committed by the Lieutenante, thinking it very straunge
 that

The Lordes of Nocera.

that he which was a household seruaunt durſt be ſo bold to ſeaſe on
thoſe to whome he ded owe all honour and Reuerence. And do af-
ſure you that if he had ben below, as he was vpon the rampire of
the Walles, they had toꝛne him into ſo many pieces, as he had
made Gobbets of the **LORD** Nicholas Wode. But ſeing that
they could not take him, they went about to ſeeke the deſtuerance
of them, whome they thought to be yet alive: and one of the cheſt
of the Cier in the ſtame of them all ſhortly and byreſſe, answered
him thus. If mallice did not well diſcouer it ſelte in the ſugred
and Traiterous compoſition of thy wooꝛdes (O Captayne) it
were eaſy enough for an inconstant People (bent to chaunge, and
deſtrous of innouations,) to heare and do that, which ſutch a trat-
toꝛ and flatterer as thou art doſt propoſe: but we hauing til now
indured nothing of the Triniciens that ſauoꝛeth of Tyranny, cru-
elty, or exceſſe, we were no leſſe to be accused of felony, than thou
art guilty of Rebels crime, by ſeaſpꝑg vpon the Perſons of thy
Lords, if we ſhould yelde credyt to thy Serpents hiſſing, or lend
aide to thy traiterous practiſe, thou goeſt about againſt them who
innoblyng thee, are trapterouſly berieued of that which concerned
their reputation and greatneſſe. We be an honeſt People and
faithfull Subjects. We will not be both Wicked and vnhappy
at once, and without cauſe expell our heads out of our common
Wealth, ſho though they ſhould perpetrate the miſchiefes whych
thou haſt alleadged. Vppon ſutch ſhouelties and ſtraunge facts
we ſhall take newe aduiſe and Councell. To be ſhort, thou ſhalt
pleaſure vs to ſet our Lordes at Liberty, and thou like a wyſe
ma ſhalt doe thy duety, & ſatiſſy a People which eaſily can not en-
dure that a ſubiecte do wꝛong to thoſe to whome he owꝛth obedi-
ence. And feare not to receiue anye euill of them, noꝛ yet to feele
anoyꝛance, for wee will take vppon vs by honeſt meanes to
craue pardon for thy fault howe haynous ſo euer it be. But if thou
continue thine offence, be ſure that the **LORD** Conrade ſhall be
aduertiſed, and with all our power we ſhall ſuccour him, by foꝛce
to let thee feele the Nature of Treason, and what reward is in-
cydent to the practizers of the ſame. The Captaine albeitt he was
abashed with that aunſwere, & ſaw that it would not be wel wꝛth
him

him, if he did not prouide speedy remedy and order for his affaires, as well for the comming of the Lord Conrade, as of the brother of the Duke Camerino, told the Citizens that within three or foure dayes he would giue them a resolute answer, and so it might be, yelde vnto theyr wylls, and delpue them whome he had in holde. These gentle answers dyd nothing stay the Citizens for the accomplishment of that which they thought best to do, knowing also so that the gallant had not commenced that Tragedy, but for other toyes whych his vngacious head had framed for a further intended Myschiese, for which cause they assembled their Council, and concluded that one should ryde in poste to the Lord Conrade, (the third and remnaunt of the Brethren,) that hee myght come to take order for the delpuraunce of Nicholas and Caesar whome they thought he had reserued still alpye in Captiuitie. The Nocerines shewed this curtesie (not but that they woulde gladly haue bene at liberty, if the way had bene better troden,) as well for the lyttle trust they reposed in the Captayne, who they thought would be no more gentle and faithfull, than he shewed himselfe to be loyall to his Maisters, as for that Conrade was well beloued of the Lordes his Neighboys, and specially of the imprysoned Duke and his Brother Braccio Montone, who had the Italiā men of Warre at his pleasure, and that the Noble men woulde assiste him wryth all their power. Wherefore they considered that the fairesst & best way, for auoiding of factions, was to kepe themselves trusty, and true, and by not hearkening to a Traitor, to bynd their soueraigne Lord with such vncety and obedience, as the vnkindest man of the world woulde confesse & acknowledge for the consequence of a matter of such importance. The seditious captaine on the other side void of hope, and in greater rage than hee was before, perswaded in hys folly, not without foreseeing howe hee myght saue himselfe, which hee had pollitickely brought to passe, if God had not shortened his waye, by payment of Usury for hys Weckednesse, and by very diligence of them in whome hee reposed hys truste, the manner and howe, immediately doth follow.

So soone as he had giuen ouer the Councell of the Citizens, &
a lyttle

The Lordes of Nocera.

a litle bethought him what he had to do, he called befoze him two yong Men, whom aboue al others he trusted best. To these yong men he deliuered all his Gold, Siluer & Jewels, that they might conuey the same out of the iurisdiction of his Lords, to the intende that when he saw hymself in daunger, he myght retire to the place where those gallants had befoze carryed his furniture, and mounting them vpon two good Steedes, he let them forth at the Posterne gate, praying them so soone as they could to retourne aduertisement of their abode, and that speedily he would send after them hys Chylde, and the rest of his moueables, telling them that he specially committed his Lyfe and goodes into their hands, and that in time and place he would acknowledge the Benefite don vnto him in that distresse. The two that were thus put in trust for sauergard of hys thyngs, promysed vnto him Golden Wylls and Miracles: but so soone as they had lost the sight of theyr maister, they deuised another complotte and determined to breake faith to him, which was forsworne, and who made no conscience not onely to reuolt, but also cruelly to kill his soueraigne Lordes. They thought it better to ryde to Treuio, to tell the Lord Conrade the pittifull end of his brethren, and the imprysment of the Duke of Camerino, thā to seeke rest for him, whome God permitted not to be saued, for his heinous Anne already committed, and for that which he mente to do vppon hys Wyfe. For all the diligence that the Nocerines had made, yet were the Lieutenantes Men at Treuio befoze them, and haung filled the Eares of Conrade with those heauy Newes, and hys Eyes with Teares, his Wynde with sorrow, and Spyyte with desyre to be reuenged, and as Conrade was about to mount on horse backe wyth the Trayne hee had, the Citizens were arryued to disclose the Imprysment of his brethren. To whome Conrade made aunswere: I would to GOD (my friends) that the tyrant had ben contented w the litle cruelty whereof you speake, for then I would finde the meanes to agree the parties vpon ſ knowledge of their variāce. But (alas) his malice hath passed further, & hath beaustly slaine my brethren: but I swear by the almighty God, that if he giue me life, I wil take such, and so cru-

ell vengeance on him, as he shall be a Glasse to all his lyke, for
 punishment of a fault so horrible. Depart my friends, depart and
 get you home, dispose your watch and gard about the Castell, that
 the traier do not escape: and assure your selues that this your loue
 shall neuer be forgotten, and you shall haue of me not a Tirant as
 he maliciously hath protested, but rather such a LORD, and
 better also, than hitherto ye haue me proued. If Conrado had
 not ben pressed with heauynesse, he had chaunted goodly Songes
 against the Treason of the Lieutenannt, and would haue accused
 his Brother of indiscretion, for trusting him, whose wyfe hee had
 abused, and wel did know that he espyed the same. But what? The
 busynesse requyred other things than Wordes: and extreame fol-
 ly it is to nippe the Dead with taunts, or with bayne wordes to a-
 buse the absent, speciall where blition and reuenge is easy, and the
 meanes manifest to chastise the temerity of such, and to be acquy-
 ted of the wrong done vnto him I cannot do it hymselfe. Conrade
 then toke his way to Tuderto, where then remained the LORD
 Braccio, and thereof was LORD and Gouvernour, and had al-
 so vnder his gouernement Perugia, and many other Cityes of the
 Romane Church, and who wyth the dignity of the great Consta-
 ble of Naples, was also Prince of Capua, to him the Trinicien
 Brother all be spent wyth Teares and transported wyth choller
 and griefe, came to demaunde succor for reuenge of the Lieute-
 nants Trespasse, saying: For what assuraunce (my Lord) can
 Princes and great Lordes hope hencefoorth, when their very ser-
 uants shall ryse, and by constraining their Maisters, make assay
 to vsurp their seignories wherein they haue no title or interest?
 Is this a reuenge of wrong, in seede of one to kill twaine, and
 yet to wishe for the thirde to dispatch the World of our race? Is
 this to pursue his ennemy, to seeke to catch hym in trappe, whych
 knoweth nothing of the quarell, and to make hym to suffer the
 payne? My two Brethren be dead, our Cousin Germaine the Duke
 is in prysen, I am heere comfortlesse, all sad and penitente before
 you, whome I likewise this matter toucheth, althoughe not so near
 as it doeth me, but yet with lyke dishonor. Let vs go (my Lorde)
 let vs goe I beseech you to visite our good hoste that so rudely in

Ab.

treareth

The Lords of Nocera.

"teeth his Cheekes which come to bite him, and let vs beare him a
 "reward, that he may taste of our coming, let vs goe befoze hee
 "saue himselfe, that with little trauaile and lesse harme to an other,
 "the ribauld may be punished, who by his example if he longer liue,
 "may increase courage both in Seruants to disobey, and in Sub-
 "jects to rebell, without conscience, agaynst their heads, and gouer-
 "ners: It is a case of very great importaunce, and which ought to
 "be followed with all rigor and cruelty. And he ought neuer to bee
 "supported, comforted or fauored, which shall by any meanes attempt
 "to reuolt or arme himselfe agaynst his Prince, or shall constrain
 "him or hir that is his Soueraygne Lord, or Mistresse. Is not a
 "Prince constituted of GOD to be obeyed, loued, and cherished of
 "his Subjects? Is it not in him to make and ordaine lawes, such
 "as shalbe thought needefull and necessary for Common wealth?
 "Ought not he then to be obeyed of his subjects & vassals? Dught
 "they then to teach the head, and commaund the chiefest Member of
 "their body? I do remember a tale (my Lord) recited by Menenius
 "Agrippa that wise, and Notable Romaine, who going about to
 "reconcile the commons with the Senate, alleaged a fit and conue-
 "nable example. In time past (quod he) when the partes of Man-
 "kinde were at variance, and euery member would be a Lord, ge-
 "nerally conspiring, grudging & alleaging, how by their great tra-
 "uaile, paynes, and carefull ministry, they prouided all furniture,
 "and maintenance for the belly, and that he like a sluggish Beast
 "sloode still, and enjoyed such pleasures as were giuen him, in this
 "murmure and mutine, al they agreed that the hands should not in-
 "terfer, the Mouth should not feede, the Teeth should not make it
 "seruiceable, the Feete should not trauaile, nor Heade deuise to get
 "the same: and whylest euery of them did forsake their seruice and
 "obedience, the belly grew so thin, and the Members so weake and
 "feeble, as the whole body was brought to extreme decay, and ru-
 "ine, whereby (sayd Agrippa) it appeareth that the seruice due vnto
 "the Belly (as the chiefe portion of man) by the other Members is
 "most necessary, the obeying and nursing of whom doth inquit force
 "and vigor into the other parts through which we doe liue, and bee
 "refreshed, and the same digested & dispersed into the vaines, and
 vitall

blall powers ingendzeth mature and fine bloud, and mayntaineth
 the whole State of the body, in comely forme and order. By which
 grim comparison, applyed to ciuile warre was deflected and molli-
 fied the stout corage & attempts of the multitude. Euen so agreeing
 with Agrippa, if the Members grudge, and disabe against their
 chiefe, the State must grow to ruine. To be short, in certaine haps a
 Trayter may be chearished, and that hath falsified his first sayth :
 but treason and periury euermoze be detested as vices execrable.
 In this deede neyther the thing, noz yet the doer hath any colour of
 excuse, the trespassse and cause for which it is don being considered.
 Suffiseth it Sir, for so much as there is neyther time noz cause
 of further discourse, what neede we to decide the matter, whych of
 it selfe is euident : Beholde mee heere a pooze Trinician Brother
 without byethzen, soylelesse without a Foxt at Nocera. On the other
 part consider the Duke of Camerino in great distresse and daun-
 ger, to passe that strait of deatch my Byethzen did. Let vs goe (I
 pray you) to deliuer the Captiue, and by reuenging these offenses,
 and murders to settle my Citty in former State, and freedome,
 which the villayne goeth about to take from me, by encouraginge
 my Subjects to reuolt and enter armes, thereby to expel our house
 from the Title of the same. As Conrade spake these woords, and
 with great grauity, and constancy pronouncing sundry tokens of
 sorow, the Conestable of Naples wroth beyond measure for these
 vnpleasent newes, and full of grieve and choller against the trayte-
 rous Lieutenaunt, swore in the hearing of them all, that he would
 neuer rest one good sleepe vntill that quarell were auenged, and
 had quited the outrage done to the Lord Conrade, and the wrong
 which he feit in him for the imprisonment of the Duke of Came-
 rino. So he concluded, and the Shoulours were assembled tho-
 rough out all the parts of the Conestables Lands, vpon the ende
 of the weeke to march agaynst the Foxt of Nocera, the Cittizens
 whereof had layd diligent Scout, and watch for the escape of the
 Captayne, who withour bashfulnesse determined with his men to
 defend y same, and to prouz fortune, making himselfe beleue that
 his quarell was good, and cause iust to withstand them y shoulde

Wh.

haue.

The Lords of Nocera.

haue the heart to come to assaile him. The Constable in the meane time sent a Trumpet to Nocera, to summon the Captaine to surrender, and to tell the cause of his reuolt, and at whose prouocation hee had committed so detestable a Treason.

The Captaine well assured and boldned in his Wyckednesse, answered that he was not so well fortified to make a surrender so good cheape, & for so small a pryce to forgo his honoꝝ and reputation: and furthermoze, that his wit was not so slender, but hee durst deuise and attempt such a matter without the councei of any other, and that all the deedes and deuises passed till that tyme, were of his owne inuention. And to be euen with the wrong done to his honoꝝ by the Lord Nicholas Trinicio, for the violation of his Wiues Chastity, he had committed the Murders (tolde to Braccio) beyng angry, that all the Tyrannous race was not in his hand to spell, to the end he mighte deliuer his Countrey, and put the Citizens in Liberty, albeit that sondly they had refused the same as vntwoꝝthy of such a Benefite, and well deserued that the Tyrants should take them at theyꝝ pleasure, and make them also theyꝝ common slaues and Drudges. The Trumpet warned hym also to render to hym the Duke, because he was guiltlesse of the facte, whych the Captaine regarded so little as he did the first demaundes, whych was the cause (the Company being arriued at Nocera, and the Constable vnderstanding the litle accompte the Castell Gentleman made of his summons) that the battry the very day of theyꝝ arriuall was laid and shotte against the place with such thunder and dreadfull thumpes of Canon shot, as the hardiest of the Mortpayes within, began to faint. But the coꝝage and litle feare of theyꝝ chyeffe, retired theyꝝ hearts into theyꝝ bellies.

The breach being made againe, the Constable who feared to lose the Duke in the Captaines Fury, caused the Trumpet to sum-mone them with in to fall to Composition, that Bloudshed might not stirre theyꝝ Shouldeours to further cruelty. But so much gaped this second warnyng as the first, for which cause the nexte day after the assault was gyuen, where if the assaulte was ballat, the resistance was no lesse than bolde and venturous. But what can Thirtie or Fortie Men doe agaynst the Force of a whole countrey

Countrey, and where the Generall was one of the ballaunte, and wisest Captaynes of hys tyme, and who was accompanied with the floure of the Neapolitane footemen. The assault continued 4: or 5. Houres, but in the end the Dead payes not able to sustayne the force of the assaillants, forsooke the Breache, and assaying to saue themselves, the Lieutenannt retired to the Ripe of the Fort, where his Wife continued prisoner, from the time that the two brethren were slaine. Whiles they without, ruffled in together in heapes amonges the defendantes, the Duke of Camerino, with his Men, found meanes to escape out of Prison, and therewithal began furiously to chastise the ministers of the disloyal Captaine, which in little tyme were cut al to pieces. Conrade being within found the Captayns Father, vppon whom he was reuenged, and killed him with his owne hands. And not content with that, caried into further rage, and fury, he slashed him into gobbets, & threwe them to the dogs. Truly a straunge maner of reuenge, if the Captains cruelty had not attempted like inhumanity. To bee shorte, horrible it is to repeate the murders done in that Surre, and hurly burly. For they that were of the Captaynes part, and taken, receiued all the straungest and cruellest punishment that man could deuise. And were it not that I haue a desire in nothing to beely the Authoz, and lesse will to leaue that which he had wyrtten vpon the miserable end of those that were the ministers & seruants to the barbarous tyranny of the Captayne, I would passe no further, but conceale that which doth not deserue remembraunce, except to auoide the example, which is not straunge, the Cruelty of reuenging heart in the nature of Man, in al times growinge to such audacity, as the torments which seeme incredyble, be lyable to credite as wel for those we reade in auncient Histories, as those we heare tell of by heare say, and chauncyng in our tyme. Hee that had the vpper hand of his Enimy, not content to kyll, but to eate with his rauinous teeth the heart disentrayde from his aduersary, was hee lesse furious than Conrade, by makinge Anatomy of the Captayns Father. And he that thrust Gallicazze Fogase in to the mouth of a Canon, tying hys Heade vnto hys Knees, and causing him to be caried by the violent force of Gunpowder into a

The Lordes of Nocera.

Citty from whence he came, to bribe and corrupt certayne of hys enemies army, did he shew himselfe to be moze courteous than one of these. Leauing a part those that he past, to touch the miserable ende wherewith Conrade caused the said tribute of the Captains souldiers to bee paid. Now amongst these some were tied to the Taples of wilde Horses, and trapped ouer Hedges, and Wulles, and downe the steepnes of high Rocks, some were haled in pieces, and afterwards burnt with great Hartrydome, some were deuaded and parted aloue in four quarters, other sowed naked wpythin an Ore Hyde, and so buried in Earth vnto the Chin, by whych torments they finished their Liues with fearful gronings.

Will ye say that the Bull of Perillus, or Diomedes Horses, were afflictions moze cruell than these? I know not what ye call cruelty, if these acts may beate the title of modesty. But all thys, proceeded of wpyth and disdayne of epyther partes. The one dysdained that the seruauant should be his head, and the other was offended, that his soueraygne Lord should assay to take that from him, which his duty commaunded him to keepe. Conrade toke in ill part the treason of the Captayn, who beyond measure was angry, that the Lord Nicholas had made him a brother of Vulcās order, and registred him in the booke of husbands, which know that they dare not speake. In summe, the one had right, and the other was not without some reason, and notwithstanding both surmounted the boundes of mans milde nature. The one ought to content hymselfe (as I haue sayd) for being reuenged on him that had offended him, and the other of the murder done, duringe the assault without shewing so bloudy tokens of cruelty, and so apparant euidence of tyranny, vpon the ministers of the bytall & bloudy Captayne, who seeing his father put to death with such Hartrydome, and his men so straitely tormented, was banquished with choller dyspayre and impatience. And albeit the Captayne had no greates desire to hurt his Wyfe, yet was he surmounted with such rage, as appprehending hir, and binding hir hands and feete, he besought him mercy, and crauing pardon for hir fautes at the hands of God and hym, he threw hir downe from the highest Towe of the Ripe vpon the pavement of the Castle court, not without teares
and a.

and abashment of al, which saw that monstrous and dreadful sight which the Souldiers viewing, they fired the Courte, and with fire and smoke forced the Captaine to come forth, and by like meanes made him, his Brother and Chyl dren to tread the daunce that his Wyfe before had done. Conrade by and by caused those boides to be throwne forth for foode to the Wolues, and other raueninge Beasts, and Byrdes liuing vpon the pray of Carrion, causing also his Brethren honourably to be burped, and the Gentlewoman that had bozne the penance worthy for hir fault. Such was the end of the most myserable, and worst gouerned loue, that I thinke man hath cuer red in wytyng, and which doth clearly witnessse, that there is no pleasure so great but Fortune by chaunging and turning hir Wheele maketh a hundred times more bitter than desire of such top both yelde delighe. And farre better it were (besides the offence done to God) neuer to cast Eye one Woman, than to bozrd or proue them, to rayse such Schlaunders and Facts which cannot be recounted but with the hozrour of the Hearers, nor wytten but to the great grieve of those that muse and study vpon the same: Notwithstanding for instruction of our life, both good and bad Examplis bee introduced and offred to the view of ech degree, and state. To the end that Whoredome may bee a-norded, and bowtye Pleasure eschued, as most Hoytal and pernicious Plagues that doe infect as well the Body and Reputation of man, as the integrity of the Minde. Besides that ech man ought to possesse his owne Wessell, and not to couet that is none of hys, vnseemely also it is to sollicite the Nephghboys Wese, to procure thereby the disunction and defaite of the whole bond of marriage, which is a Treasure so deare and precious, and carleth so greates grieve to him that seeth it defaced, as our Lord (to declare the grauity of the Fact) maketh a comparison of his Wrath agaynst them which runue after Straunge G O D S, and applreth the honour due vnto him to others that doe not deserue the same, with the iust disdaine, and ryghtfull Choller of a Zealous Husbande, fraught with despyght to see himselfe dispoyled of the Deasure, and Possession onely giuen to him, and not subiect to any other, whatsoeuer he be. Learne here also (O yee husbande) not

The Lordes of Nocera.

to fly with so nimble wing, as by your owne authoritie yee seeke
reueing without fearing the follies and sleauders that may insue.
Your sorrow is iust, but it behoueth that reason doe guide your
fantasies, and brydle your ouer sodayne passions; to the intent that
yee come not after to sing the dolefull Song of repentaunce, like
vnto this foolish man, who hauing done more than he ought, & not
able to retire without his ouerthrow, threw himselfe into the bot-
tomlesse gulfe of perdition. And let vs all fixe fast in memory, that
neuer vnruled rage, and wilful choller bringeth other benefit than
the ruine of him that suffereth himselfe to runne headlonge into
thesame, and who thinketh that all that is naturall in vs, is also
reasonable, as though Nature were so perfect a worckwoman, as
in mans corruption she could make vs Angels, or halfe Gods.
Nature following the instinct of that which is naturall in vs,
doth not greatly stray from perfection, but that is geuen to
few, and those whom God doth loue and choose. And
Vertue is so seldome founde, as it is almost im-
possible to imitate & perfection. And briefly
to say, I will conclude with the Au-
thor of this present Hysto-
ry:

*Anger is a fury short,
To him that can the same excell:
But it is no laughing sport
In whom that senselesse rage doth dwell.
That pang confoundeth ech mans wits
And shameth him with open shame,
His honour fades in frantike fits,
And blemisheth his good name,*

A cruel

A cruell facte of Soltan Solyman.

The horrible and cruell murder of *SOLTAN SOLYMAN*, late the Emperor of the Turkes and father of *SELYM* that now raigneth, done vpon his eldest Sonne *MVSTAPHA*, by the procurement, and meanes of *ROSA* his mother in lawe, and by the speciall instigation of one of his noble men called *RYSTANVS*: where also is remēbred the wilful death of one of his Sons named *GIANGIR*, for the griefe he cōceiued to see *MVSTAPHA* so miserably strangled.

The. XXXIIII. Nouell.



Went two yeares past or thereabouts I translated this present *Tragedy* out of the Latine tongue. And for the rarenes of the fact, and the dishnaturall part of that late furiose Enemy of God, and his Sonne Christ: I dedicated the same to the right honorable, my speciall good Lord, with all vertues, and nobility, fully accomplished, the Lord Cobham Lord Warden of the cinque Portes, by the name of Sir Villiam Cobham Knight. And because I would haue it to continue in mans remembraunce thereby to reue the auncient detestation, which we haue, and our Progenitors had against that horrible Tefmagant, a Persecutor of Christians, I haue insinuated the same amongs the rest of these Poetels. For of one thing I dare make warrantise that auncient Writers haue not remembred, nor old Poets reported a more notorious or horrible Tragedy or fact executed against nature, then that on

that vnnaturall murder done by the sayd enemy of Christianity, the late Soltan Solymán, otherwile called the great Turke. I remember the description of Neros Parricide vpon his lounge Mother, of purpose to behold the place of his birth, I call to memory also the wicked Murther of Orestes, on hys Mother Clytemnestra. I also consider the vnfatherly part of Tantalus, who with the flesh of of his owne sonne Pelops, feasted the Gods. All which are not farre different from this pestiferous fact, and may with the same, and the lyke bee comparable by any Man heretofore committed. This Hellish Champrón hys owne Sonne, of hys owne Seede, Naturally conceaued within hys mothers Wombe, vnnaturally in his owne presence most miserably did kill. O pitifull case But alas, boide of pittie to a pitiflesse man. O cruell fact, but not other cruell to him that liued a cruell Man. What Beast be he neuer so woude, or Savage, can suffer his Ponglings to take harme, much lesse to doe them hurte hymselfe: What fierce Lyonesse can infeste hys owne Whelp, which with Naturall paines brought it into light: But what doe I stand vpon Lamentation of the case, and leaue the burenesse of this Madman far bruter then Lyons, vnconsidered: The burenesse of this fury so farre exceedeth Beasts, as Reasonable perfect Farreasonable. The fury of the Deuill, whom he serueth so ragéd in his tyrannous life, as loe, he slay his owne Sonne. The care of God, and Christe was so farre out of his sighte as hee subuerted Nature. The libidonous lustes of this Lecherous Infidell, so surmounted the boundes of reason, as the fire thereof consumed his owne flesh, This Enemy of Christe was so bewitched, as the dorage of his infidelitie consented to murder. And as tyranny like a Lord possessed his Braine in huntinge after the blood of Christians, so Tyranny like an Enchaunter with the Sorcery of Feminine adulation shed the blood of his owne begotten. Thus as tyranny was the Regent of his lyfe most wicked, so Tyranny was the Plague of his owne generation.

For as the Wyter of this History reporteth, it was thought that the same was done by Diuine Prouidence. And lyke as this unhap-

this unhappie father was a deadly Enemy vnto Christ and his Church, so this pong Whelp was no lesse a floder of Chritian Bloud. No doubt a very froward Impe, and a towarde Champion for the diuels Theatre: And as it is sayd hereafter, so goodly a pong man in Statute & other externe qualities of the body, as Nature could not frame a better. So excellent, & couragious in Feates of armes as Bellona herselfe could not procreate a lustier.

This Historie in the Latin tongue is written by Nicholas Mofan a Burgonian boyne, a man so well in the warfare of good learning (as it appeareth) as in the seruice of the warres wel expert. Who being a Souldiour in Hercules warres (the old Champion of Christendome, and Pagane Enemy, Charles the fift) was sore wounded and taken Prisoner in Bulgaria, in the yeare of our Lord, 1552. and continued Captiue till September, 1555. almost three yeares. Whose Misery, Trouble, Famine, Colde, and other Torments by him sustayned, during the sayd time, if it should bee declared, perhaps would seeme incredible. But when the Turke had kept him in miserable bandes two yeares, and saw he could not obteyne that Raunsome, wherch he immesurably requyred, at length sent him to the Castell of Sirigon, where for a certayne time he remayned hampered with double charynes vpon his Necke, Handes, and Feete. And within sometime after his coming thither he was made to toyle in the day, like a common slaue, to hew and carry Woode, keepe Horse, sweepe Houses, and such other busines. Which Wurdgery, he was glad to doe, aswell for exersyse of his Members, which with colde yrons were beuomed, as also to get Breade to relieue his hunger. For when hee had done his Quite, his Maister gaue him Bread, Onions, Garlick, Cheese, and such other fare: and at Night was sent agayne to Prison, where hee was watched with a Watch, that for Debre was condemned to perpetual Prison, of whom he learned many things, aswel of their Lawes, Religion, warlike Affairs, & other maners of the Turkes, as also of the order of this horrible fact don by Solyman. And by the report of his sayd Companie in prison, he digested the same into y^e forme of this history. And after this
man had

A cruell facte.

man had payed his Ransome, and was set at liberty, he arrived into the parties of Chyppedome. The Verity of which is such, as it is not onely crediblie because this Man dyd write it who was three Yeares there resident, and in manner aforesaid, heard the truth thereof, but also is warranted, by sundry Marchant Men, Travellers into farre Countreies, faithfully verifing the same to bee true. And before I draw to the discourse of the Story, I will set downe some of the manners of Solymans greatest States and fauorites, and the pyncipal offices and honours of that hellish Monarchy. As Mustapha, Machomet, Baiafich, Selim, Gianger, Chrustam, and Hibrahim. This Hibrahim was so dearely beloued with the Emperour Solyman, as he exercised the Office of Vefiri, which is nexte to the Emperour, the chyeffest in degree of honoꝝ. Who by increas of that Office, became moze wealthy in Treasure then Solyman himselfe, which when he perceived, without any respect of the honoꝝable office, or the honoꝝ of the party, neglecting in respect of richesse (according to the natural desire of Auarice, wherewith the greedy Appetites of h stocke are endued) all religion, honour, Parents, countrey, friends or amity, he caused in his owne presence, his head to be stricken of adding the treasures of the said Hibrahim to his owne Coasers, & placed one Kustanus to succede in his office. Besides which honoꝝable places ther be diuers degrees of honoꝝ, as Muchky which is of that honoꝝ with them as the chief bishop or Pope in other Countreies and of such authority with the Emperour, that alwel in time of Peace, as also in Warres, he determineth vppon nothing without the counsel of Muchi.

Bascha (which we commonly call V Valcha) is the Lieutenant of a Prouince. But so lowmuche as all other offices and dignities, depend only vpon the Emperour, & are bestowed as he listeth, none of them hauing any thing proper that he may call his owne: the sayd Baschas in all Prouinces, euery three yeare are chaunged after the disposition of the Emperour, and continue no longer Gouernours, than the sayd terme, without his special decree, and commandement, And this chaunge and seuerall mutation, is done for two causes. First that notwithstanding the sayd Offices are be-

Gowed

Bestowed by turnes, yet they which are most excellent in prowes
of Armes, and Valiaunce, are best in fauour, and are placed in
the most fertile Countreyes. But the maner in the disposition of
the same Office is now degenerated, for where in tyme past the
same were bestowed vppon the best Captaynes and Souldyers,
in these Dayes, are through Fauoure and Money, throughly cor-
rupted. So that now amonges them all thynges for Money are
venalia, ready to be solde, and yet the same vnknownen to the Em-
perour him selfe. The other cause, of the alteration and chaunge
of the sayd Baschæ, and the Chyefest cause as I haue learned is,
least through theyr longe abode in the sayd Prouinces so to them
assigned, by some incydent occasion they myght entre familiaritie
with the Chrestians, and in successe of tyme, be conuerted.

The Turkes haue also amonges them certayne Noble Men
which in theyr Language they call Spahy, and it is the first degree
of honour, but it hath no discent or succession to the Posterity, and
they onely deserue the tytle thereof, whych in Warrelke Affay-
res behaue them selues moste Manfully, and who at length are
preferred to another degree of honour, and are called Subasche,
which worde so farre as I can vnderstande, may be referred to
the Title of Baron. Next to the same Subaschæ here is another
called Begg. But here is meete to be knowne howe that worde
is taken amonges them two wayes, for generally all they which
excell other in any promotion are called Beggi. That is to say
Lordes or Maysters. But if it be meant Angularly or properly,
then it signifieth not simply a Captaine (for they call a Captaine
Aga) but also an Earle. And if the sayd Begg chaunce to be endu-
ed by the Emperour with the order of Knyghthoode, then hee
is called Sanggakegg. And they likewise are accustomed to bee
transposed from County to county, as the Baschæ are, the same
do not descend to their heires, but when the Earle is dedde. And
then both the promotion and county, are by the Emperour giuen
to another. And hereby it appeareth that no man hath any thyng
proper or his own, and therfore they cal themselves, Padiscahun-
cullari. That is to say, the Emperours bondme. Here also I ought
to entreat of the manners of the Turkes in theyr Warres and the
fundz

of Soltau Solyman.

sondy offices therein. In what sorte they leuy, and muster their Souldiers, the order of their marching, the order in putting the same in array, and by what diligence they vse their Skouts, and Wardes, all which had bene necessary to haue bene spoken of, but that I might not be tedious. And yet of one thing for a conclusion I intend to speake of, which is of the Ianischari.

The sayd Ianischari are the whole strength of the Turkes battell, who neuer obtayne victoꝝ, but the same is attributed to their ballsaunce. They bee very expert, and skillfull in the vse of small shot, and great Ordnance, and in that kinde of defence and munition, they chiefly excell. And as I haue red, the Turke hath continually in wages. 30. M. of the sayd Ianischari. They haue aboute other many singular priuiledges, in so much as the name of a Ianischarus is in such reuerence amongs them, that notwithstanding any offence, or crime, done by them woꝝthy capitall death, they in no wise shalbe punished, except befoꝝe the committing of the offence, they be deuiued of their estate by their Captaynes. These priuiledge also they haue aboute others, that vnlesse they lye in Campe, they bee neuer compelled to watch nor warde, without great necessity do force them. And for this they be hatefull and odious to other Souldiours. It is sayd, that all they be Christian mens children. And in those countreys which he vanquisheth, he chooseth out the Boyes of the same, such as he thinketh meete, and carrieth them away, and byingeth them by in his owne trade, and lawes, with exercise of feates in armes, and being growen to ripe yeares, and mans state, they be allotted amongs the number of Ianischari. And thus much touching the maners, dignities, and offices of that Turkish broode. Now to the Hy story.

Bee it knowne therefore, that Solyman had of a certayne bonde Woman this Mustapha, to whom from his Youth hee gaue in charge the Countrey of Amasia. Who with his Mother continually ressaunt in the sayd countrey, became so forwarde in feates of armes, as it was supposed of all men, that hee was giuen vnto their countrey by some heauenly pꝛouidence. This Mustapha, with his Mother being placed in the sayd Countrey, it chaunced that the Kinge his Father was beyonde measure wrapt with the
beautie

beauty of another of his Concubins called Rosa, of whom hee begat foure sonnes, and one daughter. The eldest of the Sonnes was called Machomer, to whom the Province of Caramania was assigned. The second, Baiafith, who enioyed the countrey of Magnesia. The third called Selymus, to whom after the death of Machomer the eldest, the sayd Countrey of Caramania was appointed. The fourth Iangir, whose surname, by reason hee was crooked backed, notwithstanding his pregnant Wit, was Gibbus. And his daughter he bestowed in marriage vpon Rustanus Bascha, who when Hibrabim was put to death, exercised the office of Vezier as is aforesayd (which office we vse to call the President of the Consayle) and according to his natural disposition to couetousnesse, abusing the sayd office, altered and chaunged all maner of thinges belonging to the same. He diminished the Souldiours wages, being by them called Ianischari. He abated the stipends of the Captayns, whom they nominate Samiachi. Hee also sealed vpon the Provinces yearely Taxes and Tributs. And herewith being not satisfied, he ordayned a fine vpon the charges of the kings household, whereby he sought, but to accumulate vnto himselfe, infinite treasures, gotten by deceitfull extortion, through occasion wherof, he was suposed to be a faythfull, and diligent Seruaunte, and thereby greatly insinuated himselfe into the kings fauour, little regarding the hatred and displeasure of others. In the meane time, this Rosa of whom mencion is made before, perceiving hir selfe before others to be beloued of the Kinge, vnder the Cloake of deuotion declared vnto Muchty (which is the chiefe Bishop of Machomers religion) that she was affected with a Godly zeal: to builde a Temple, and Hospitall for Straungers, to the chiefe God, & honoz of Machomer: but she was not minded to attempt that same without his aduice. And therefore shee asked whether the same woulde bee acceptable to God, and profitable for her health & her soule. Wherevnto Muchty answered: that the worke to God was acceptable although to hir soule it was nothing auailable. Adding further, that not onely all hir Substaunce was at the Kinges disposition, but hir Life also, being a Bondwoman. And therefore that worke woulde be more profitable to the Kinge. With which answer

A cruell fact.

swere the woman in hir minde dayly being troubled, became very pensiffe, like one that was boyde of all comfort. The King being advertised of hir sorrow, very gently began to comfort hir, affirming that shortly he would finde sutch meanes, as she should enioy the effect of hir desire. And forthwith manumised hir & made hir free, a witing, and instrument made in that behalfe, according to their custome, to the intent she might not be at commaundement any moze to be yoked in bondage. Hauinge in this soze obtained this fanoure, the sayd Rosa, with a great Masse of Money determined to proceede in hir entended purpose. In the meane season, the King wythout measure being incensed wyth the desire of the sayd Rosa, as is aforesayd, sent for hir by a messenger, willing hir to repaire to the Court. But the crafty Woman, vnskillful of no pollicy, returned the Messenger with subtile answer, which was, that he should admonish the King hir Lord and Soueraigne, to call to his remembraunce aswell the lawe of honesty, as also the precepts of his owne lawes, and to remembre she was no moze a Bondwoman, & yet she could not deny but hir life remained at the disposition of his maiesty, but touching Carnall copulation to be had agayne with his person, that could in no wise be done, without committing of sinne most heynous. And to the intent he should not thinke the same to be sayned or deuised of hir selfe, she referred it to the iudgement of Muchty. Which answer of repulse, so excited the inflamed affections of the King, as setting all other businesse a part, he caused the Muchty to be sent for. And giuing him liberty to answer, he demaunded whether his Bondwomen being once manumised, could not be knowne carnally without violation of the lawes? Whereunto Muchty answered: that in no wise it was lawfull, vnlesse befoze he should with hir contract matrimony. The difficulty of which Lawe in sutch soze augmented the Kings desires, as being beyond measure blinded with Concupiscence, at length agreed to the marriage of the sayd manumised woman, and after the Nuptial writings according to the custome were ratified, and that he had giuen vnto hir for a Dowry. 5000. Soltan Ducats, the marriage was concluded, not without great admiration of all men, especially for that it was done contrary to the ble

the vse of the Ottomane Ligneage, For to eschew Society in gouernement, they marry no free or lawfull Wyues, but in their steads to satisfie theyr owne pleasures, and libidinous Appetites (wherein most vily, and stithely aboue any other Nation they chiefly excell) they chose out of diuers Regions of the World the most Beautifull, and sayest Wenches, whom after a kyngly sorte very honourably they bring vp in a place of their Courte, which they call Sarai: and instruct them in honest, and ciuile manners, with whom also they vse to accompany by turnes, as they pleasure most lyketh. But if any of them do conceiue, and bring forth childe, then she aboue all other is honoured, and had in reuerence, and is called the Solranes most worthy. And such after they haue brought forth childe, are bestowed in marriage vpon the Pteres and Nobility, called Baschaz, and Sangacz.

But now to returne to our purpose. This manumised Woman being aduanced through Fortunes benefite, was esteemed for the chiefe Lady of Asia, not without great happinesse succeeding in al hir affayres. And for to satisfie of hir ambitious entents, there wanted but only a meane and occasion, that after the death of Solyman, one of hir own children might obtayne the Empire. Where vnto the generositee and good behauiour of Mustapha was a great hinderaunce, who in deede was a yongman of great magnanimity, and of Wit most excellent, whose Stomack was no lesse courageous, than he was manly in person, and force. For which qualities he was meruailously beloued of the Souldiours and Men of warre, and for his wisdom and iustice very acceptable to the people. All which things this subtile woman considering, she priuely vsed the counsaile of Rustanus for the better accomplishing of hir purpose, knowing that he would rather seeke th'aduancement of his kinsman and the brother of his owne Wyfe, as reason was, then the preferment of Mustapha, with whom she certaynely knew that Rustanus was in displeasure. For in the beginning, as he sought meanes to extenuate the liuings of all other (as is aforesayd) so also he went about (but in vayne) to plucke somewhat from Mustapha. Whereby he thought that if he should once obtayne the gouernment, he would scarce forget such an injury, and

For,

there.

A cruell facte

thereby not only in hazarde of his Office, and dignity, but also in daunger of losse of his heade. All which thinges, this wicked woman pondering in hir vngratious Stomacke, went about to insert into the Kings mynde, no small suspitions of Mustapha, saying that he was ambitious and bolde vpon the fauour and good wil of all men (wherewith in deede he was greatly endued) and relying in his force, let no other thing to be expected, then oportunitie of time to aspire to the Kingdome, and to attempt the slaughter of his father. And for the better cloaking of the matter, he caused Rustanas at conuenient tyme, more at large to amplifie and set forwards hir mallice, who alwayes had in charge all principall and weyghty affayres. In whom also was no lacke of matter to accelerate the accusation and death of the yongman. Moreouer to such as were appoynted to the administration of the countrey of Syria, he priuely declared, that Mustapha was greatly suspected of his father, commaunding euery of them dilligently to take heede to his estate, and of all such things as they eyther saw or percepued in him, withall expedition to send aduertisement, affirming that the more spightfully they wrote of him, the more acceptable it should be to the Kinge. Wherefore diuers times Rustanus being certified of the kingly Estimation, Magnanimity, Wyledome, and Fortitude of Mustapha, and of his beneuolence and liberality towards all men, wherewith he greatly conciled their fauour, and how the ardent desires of the People, were inclined to his election: he therefore durst not take vpon him to be the first that should sow the seede of that wicked conspiracy, but deliuering his Letters to the vngratious Woman, left the rest to the deuise of his unhappy brayne: But Rosa espying oportunitie of time to succcede hir unhappy desire, ceased not to corrupt the Kings mynde, sometimes with promise of the vse of other Women, and sometimes with sundry other adulations: So that if mention was made of Mustapha at any time, she woulde take such occasion to open the Letters, as might serue most apt for hir purpose. And she was not deceyued of hir expectation. For taking a conuenient time, not without teares (which Women neuer want in cloaked matter) she admonished the Kinge of the perill wherein he stood

he doode, remembryng amongs other thinges, how his Father Selymus by such meanes depyrved his owne Father both from his Kingdome, and Life, instantly requiringe him by that example to beware. But these Arguments of suspicion, at the first brunt seemed not probable to the Kyng, & therefore by this meanes the deuill the Woman could little preuaile, which when hir enuious Stomacke percepued, she began to direct hir mischieuous mynde to other deuises, seeking meanes with popson to destroy the yonge man. And there wanted not also, gracelesse persons, prompt and ready to accomplishe that mischieuous fact, had not diuine prouidence resisted the same. For Rosa sent vnto Mustapha a sute of Apparell in the name of his Father, which by marueylous craft was enuened with Popson. But Mustapha in no wyse would weare the sayd apparell, befoze one of his slaues had assayed the same, whereby he preuented the Mischiefe of his vngenerous Stepmother, opening to all men the deceit of the popson. And yet this pestilent Woman ceased not to attempt other Enterprises. She went about to purchase vnto hir the good will and familiarity of the Kyng in such sort as the like neuer obtained in the Courte of Ottoman, (for she vsed certayne Sorceries through the helpe of a Woman a Jewe boyne, which was a famous Enchauntresse, to wyne the loue of the Kyng, and thereby perswaded hir selfe to procure greater things at his hands) in so much as she obtained that hir Children by course should be resident in their Fathers Courte, that by the continuall presence and assiduell flatteringe, they might get the loue of their Father. So that if Mustapha did at any time come to the Court, by that meane she might haue a better meanes to rid him of his life, if not, to tarry a time, wherein he should be dispatched by the help of others. But Mustapha not repaying to the Courte (for the Kyngs children do not vse to go out of their Countreys assigned vnto them, without their Fathers knowledge, nor to repaire to Constantinople, with any number of men of Warre, to receiue their Inheritance till their Father be deade) she deuised another mischiefe. For enioying hir former request, she recovered another, also hauing brought to passe that not onely in the Citty, but also in the

A cruell facte

countrey, hir children should attend vpon their Father. Yea, and
Giangir & crookedbacked should alwayes attend on his father in his
Warres. But the Stepmothers deuise for certayne yeares han-
ging as it were in ballance, at length Fortune thoroughly fauoured
hir wicked endeouours. For the Bascha which had the protection of
Mustapha, and the gouernment of the Province of Amasia. (For
euery one of the Kyngs chyldren haue one Bascha, that is to say a
Liutenaunt, which doe answer the people according to the lawes
and geue orders for the administration of the Warres, and also
euery one of them haue a learned Man to Instruct them in good
discipline, and Princely qualitties) the sayd Bascha I say deuised
Letters wherein was contayned a certayne treatise of Marriage,
betwene Mustapha and the Kyngs Daughter of Persia, and how
he had referred the matter to the Ministers of the Temple, to the
intent that if it had not good successe, he should be free from all
suspition, and sent the same Letters to Rustanus, who greatly re-
ioysed, for that he hoped to bring his desired purpose to good ef-
fect. And fearing the matter no longer, incontinently he bittered
the same to Rosa, who both together, forthwith went into the
Palace, and discovered the whole matter to the King. And to the
intent they might thoroughly incense the Kyngs mynde with suspi-
cions, that before was doubtfull, and deliberatiue in the matter,
to put him out of all doubt, they affirmed that Mustapha like an
ambitious man, sought meanes to conspyre his death being incen-
sed like a Madman to the gouernment of his large Emperre, con-
trary to nature, and Law diuine. And to the intent better credit
might be giuen to their subtile Suggestions, they alleaged the
Treaty of Marriage betwene Mustapha and the King of Persia,
the deadly and aunient enemy of the Ottoman Ligneage. For res-
pect whereof, he ought diligently to take heede, least by con-
feyning the power of the Persians with the Sangachi, and Ianischari,
which are the Captayns, and Souldiours, whose good willes he
had with his liberallty already tryed to his fauour, in short time,
would go about to depriue him of his Kingdome and Lyfe. With
these accusations and such lyke they had so farre stirred the king,

as he

he himselfe sought the Death of his owne Sonne , in manner as foloweth.

Therefore in the yere of our Lord 1552. he caused to be published with al expedition throughout his prouinces, that the Persians had made their hauntes how they would inuade the Countrey of Syria, win the Cities there, & carry away the Captiues, & also would destroy euery place wth fier & Sword, in such sort as no man should withstand them. Wherefore to prouide against the sayd proude and haughty Bagges , hee was forced to send Rustanus thither with an Armie . The Souldiours being leuted, hee pryncipally commaunded Rustanus in as secret manner as hee could and without any Tumulte to lay handes vpon Mustapha, and to bring hym bound to Constantinople. But if he could not conveniently bring that to passe, then to dispatch hym of hys Lyfe by such meanes as he could . Rustanus receyuing this wycked and cruell Commaundement, marched towardes Syria wth a power. Wher when he arryued Mustapha, hauing knowledge thereof setting all other busynesse a part, being accompanied with the Lustrest and best appoynted Men of Warre in al Turkey to the Numbre of seuen Thousande, hee directed hys Iorney also towardes Syria. Wherof when Rustanus had vnderstandenge, and perceyued hee could not well accomplysh the wycked desire of the King, immediatly retourned backe agayne to Constantinople, in such haste that hee durste not abyde the sight of the Duste rered into the Ayre by Mustaphaes Horse Men, and much lesse hys commyng . When the Souldyers were rettyed Rustanus declared to all Men that the Countrey was in good quiet , and pryncipally repayed to the Kinge , and vntiered to hym the cause of hys resourne , addyng further, that as farre as hee coulde see by manifeste Signes , and Coniectures , the good Welles of all the Armie were inclined to Mustapha, and so; that cause in so dangerous an Enterpryse hee durste not aduenture with open Warres, but leste all to the consideration of hys Hatred . This repozte bred to the cruell Father (who norynge degenerated from the Naturall Tyrannye of hys Ancestors) greater Suspicious; for reuenge-

A cruell facte

ment, whereof he most wickedly toke further aduise.

The yere folowynge he commaunded an huge Army to be le-
ued once againe making Proclamation that the Persians with a
greater Power would invade Syria, and therefore thought it mete
that he himselfe for the Common sauegarde of them all, ought per-
sonally to repaize thither with a power to withstande the in-
uozs of his Enemies. The Army being assembled, and al furni-
tures prouided in that behalfe, they marched forwarde, and
within fewe dayes after the cruell Father folowed. Who beinge
come into Syria, addressed a messenger to Mustapha, to commaund
him forthwith to repaize vnto him, then being encamped at Ale-
pes. And yet Solymane could not keepe secreete the mortall hatred
he bare to hys Sonne from others, although he employed dys-
gent care for that purpose, but that the knowledge thereof came
to the Eares of one of the Bascha, and others of Honour. Co-
monges whome Achmat Bascha pryncipally sent Woorde to Musta-
pha, to the intent he myght take the better heede to himselfe. And
it seemed not without Wonder to Mustapha, that his Father,
without necessary cause, shoulde argue in those partes with so
great a Number. Who notwithstanding, knowing hymselfe
innocente, although in extreame sorrow and penitens of mynd
determined to obey hys Fathers Commaundement although he
shoulde stand in Daunger of hys Life. For hee esteemed it a
more honest and laudable part to incurre the Perill of Death in
Obedience to hys Father, then to lyue in contumelye by disobedy-
ence. Therefore in that great anxietie and care of Wynde, deba-
tyng many thynges with hymselfe: At length he demaunded of a
learned Man whych continually was conuersaunt with hym in
hys House (as is afore sayde,) whether the Emperre of the whole
World or a vertuous Life ought rather to be wished for. To
whome this Learned Man most Godly answered: That hee
whych diligently weped the Gouvernement of this Worlde, shall
perceiue no other Felicity therein then a bayne and foolyshe ap-
parance of goodnesse. For there is nothyng (quod hee) more
fraple or vnshure then the Worldes prosperitie. And it byngeth
none other fructes but feare, sorrow, troubles, suspicions, mur-
ders

ders, Wickednesse, vnrighteousnes, spoyle, Pouerty Captiui ty and such lyke whych to a man that affecteth a blessed Lyfe, are in no wyse to be wished for. For whose sake who so list to enjoy them, leaseth the happines of that Lyfe. But to whome it is gyuen from aboue to way and consider the fragiltye and thozynes of thys state (whiche the Common People deemeth to be a Lyfe) and to resist the vanities of the World, at length to embrace vertue, to them truly in heauen there is a Place assigned and prepared of the highest G D D, where hee shall inherite perpetuall Joyes, and the Felicity of the Lyfe to come wth whych aunswer Mustapha beyng somewhat pycked in conscience, wonder fully was satisfied, as being tolde of him which seemed by a certayne Prophecy to pronosticate his ende.

And carrying vpon no longer disputation, immediately directed his Iourney towards his cruell Father. And vsing that expedition he could, arriued at the place where his Father encamped, and not farre from the same he pitched his pavillion. But this expeditie arriual of Mustapha did inculcat a greater suspicion in the wycked Father. And Rustanus was not behynde wth iyes, and other subtill informacions to set forwarde the same.

And after he had called together the commō Souldiours and the chiefe men of Warre in the Army, hee sente them to meete wth Mustapha, who without any tarrying most readily obeyed his commaundement, to put themselves in readines. In the meane time this crafty Uerlet, shewing by outward countenance, the hid enuy that lay secrete in his heart, forthwith repaired into the Kynges Pavillion, and without shame or honesty told the King, howe almost euery one of the principall Souldiours of their owne accord went to meete Mustapha. Then the King being troubled in mind, went forth of his tent, & perswaded to himself that Rustanus Wordes were true: Now Mustapha lacked not sondry tokens of his vnhappy fate. For not thre daies before he should take his Iourney about 5 hysake of day in 5 morning being in slepe, he dreamed 5 he saw Machomet clad in gorgeous apparel, to take him by the hand, & lead him into a most pleasāt place beautified wth sūdyr turrets & sumptuous buildings hauing in it a most delectable garden, who shewing hi al those things to his sūger spake these wordes Here

¶ 41

(quod h)

of Soltan Solyman.

he) doe they rest for euer, which in the World haue lyued a Godly and iust Life, and haue bene Aduauncers of Law and Iustyce, and contemptners of vice. And turning his face to the other syde, he saw two swifte and broad Riuers, the one of them boyled more blacke then Pitch. And in the sayd Riuers many were drowned, whereof some appeared aboue Water crying with horrible voices Mercy, Mercy. And there (quod he) are tormented all such, which in the World most wickedly haue committed Mischiefe: and the chiefe of them he sayed were Princes, Kinges, Emperours, and other great Men. With that Mustapha awaked and calling the said learned Man vnto him, bittered his dreame. And pausing a litle whyle (for the superstitious Machometistes attribute much Credite to dotage of dreames) being ful of sorrow and pensinesse, at length answered That the vision was very dreadfull for that it pronosticated extream peril of his life. Therefore he required him to haue diligent respect thereunto. But Mustapha beinge of great valiaunce and fortitude, hauing no regard to the aunswer aforesaid, couragiously replied with these wordes. Shall I suffer my self to be vanquished with vaine and childish feares? Nay I wil rather take a good heart, and make hast to my father, for I am assured that alwayes from time to time I haue honored his majesty accordyng to my duety, in so much as neyther Fete traueled, nor Eye looked, much lesse heart thought agaynst his will to desyre or couet to raigne, except it had pleased the highe G O D to haue called hys Maiesty from this Lyfe to a better. And besydes that my Wynde was neuer bente after hys Death to beare rule, excepte Generall Election of all the Army, to the intent I myghte entre the Imperiall Seate wpythout slaughter, Bloudshed, or any other cruell fact, and thereby preserue the friendship of my Brethren inuolunt, and free from any spot of hatred. For I alwayes determyned, and chose rather (since my fathers pleasure is so) to end my Life like an obedyent Child, than continually to raigne, & be counted of al men, obstinate & disobedient, especially of mine enemies. When he had spoken those wordes, hee made hast to his father. And at his arryual to the Campe, so sone as he had pitched his Tent he apparelled himself al in white, and putting

putting certain letters into his bosome, which the Turkes vse to do, when they go to any place (for in supersticious they vse martiallous dotage) he proceeded towards his father, intending with reuerence (as the maner is) to kisse his hand. But when hee was come to the entry of the tent, he remembred himself of his Dagger which he wore about him, and therefore vngirding himselfe he put it of for auoiding of al suspicion. Which don, when he was entred the Tent, he was very curteously (with such reuerence as behoued) welcomed of his fathers Eunuches. And when he saw no man else, but the seat royal, where his father was wont to sitte readye furnished, with a sorrowful heart stode still, and at length demanded where his father was. Who answered that forthwith hee would come in presence. In the meane season he saw seuen dombe men (which the Turke vseth as Instruments to kepe his secrets, and priuily to do such murders as he commaundeth) and therewith immediately was wonderfully mased, saying. Beholde my present Death, and therewith stepped aside to auoide them but it was in vaine. For being apprehended of the Eunuches, and garde was by force drawen to the place appointed for him to loose hys Life, and sodainely the dombe Men fastened a Bowstring about his Necke. But Mustapha, some what struing, requyred to speak but two Wordes with his father. Which when the wicked paricide his father hearde, beholdinge the Cruell Spectacle on the other side of the Tente, rebuked the dombe Men, saying: Will you neuer execute my Commaundement, and doe as I bid you? Wyl you not kyll the Traitor, which these ten yeres space would not suffer me to slepe one quiet Night? Who when they harde him speake those cruell Wordes, the Eunuches and dombe Men threwe him prostrate vpon the ground, and cording the string with a double knot, most pittifully strangled him. Which wicked and cruel facte being done, the Bascha that was Lieue. enaunt of Amasia was also apprehended by the Kynges Commaundement, and likewise beheaded in hys owne presence. This facte also commytred, hee caused to bee called before hym Ganger the Crokebacke, who was Ignorant of that was done, and Iestynge with hym as though hee had done a thyng worse
this

A cruell facte.

this commendation, bad him to go and meete his Brother Mustapha: who with a ioyful cheere made hast to meete him. But when he came to the place and saw his infortunate Brotherly strangled and dead vpon the earth, it is impossible to tell with what sorrow he was affected: And he was scarce come to the place, but his wicked Father sent Messengers after him, to tell him that the King had giue him all Mustapha, his Treasures, Horsemen, Bondmen, Pavillions, Apparell: Yea, and moreouer the Province of *Amasia*. But Giangir conceiuing extreme sorrow for the cruell murder of his deere brother, with lamentable teares spake these wordes. Oh cruell and wicked Dogge yea, and if I may so call my father. Oh Traytor most pestilent, do thou enioy Mustapha his Treasures, his Horses, Furnitures, and the sayd Countrey to. Is thy heart so vnnaturall, cruell, and wicked, to kill a yongue man so notable as Mustapha was, so good a Warriour, and so worthy a Gentleman as the Ottoman house neuer had or shall haue the like, without any respect of Humanity or Zeale naturall? By Sanct Mary I neede to take heede least hereafter in like maner thou as impudently do triumph of my death, being but a crokebacke and deformed man. When hee had spoken theese wordes, plucking out his Dagger, he slew himselfe. Whereof when the Emperour had aduertisement, he conceiued inspeakable sorrow. But for al that, his sorrowfull heart vanquished not his couetouse minde. For he commaunded all Mustaphes Treasure, and other Furnitures to bee brought into his Tent. And the Souldiours thinking the same should be giuen amongst them made as much haste to dispatche his commafidement. In the meane tyme Mustaphes Souldiours (not knowing what was become of their Master) seeing such a number runne in heapes without order came forth of their Camp to withstande their foolish tumult, who very manfully, not without much slaughter withstoode the same. And when the flame of that Tragicall tumult was byuted amongst the Kings souldiers, (who perceiuing the same more and more to waxe hot,) they went forth to succour their fellowes, but the Onset being giuen on all sides, the fight on both parts was so fierce, as in short space there were

were slayne very neere the number of two thousande men besides the hurt & wounded, whereof the number was greater. Howbeit this Woyle had not bene thus ended, had not Achmat Bascha, a graue and wise man, and for his experimentes in the Warres of great aucthority amongst the souldiers giuen them back, & repressed their fury. Who turning himselfe towards Mustaphes souldiers with smiling countenance & milde words appealing their furious stomacks spake these wordes. Why my deere brethren and freends wil yee now degenerate from your olde accustomed wise dome, sufficiently tried in you these many yeares past, & will now resist the comāundement of the great Soltan the lord & soueraigne of vs all? I canot chuse (as God that help me) but meruayle what should mooue you whom hitherto I haue proued to be so notable and valiant men, that in this ciuile conflict, you should bend your force vpon your own frends, & raise by such a spectacle to the Ottoman enemy, against whom heretofore you haue very prosperously & manfully fought, and therewith by mutuall slaughter to make them reioyse, whom heretofore with the like, you haue made heauy and penfull. Therefore my fellowes as you tender your own bakiaunce and Magnanimity, take heede, that by your own folly you do not lese the estimation of your wonted fortitude and wisdom, wherein hitherto you haue excelled all men. And reserue your force, which you now more then inough haue used amongst your owne fellowes till you come against your Enemies, where you shall haue a more laudable, and better occasioned to vse it. With these wordes and the like spoken by Achamat Bascha, the Souldiours were somewhat appeased, and all thinges were frankly suffered to bee caried out of Mustapha hys Pauplion to the Kynges. But when the death of Mustapha came to the knowledge of the Janischari, and the rest of the Army, forthwith began another sedition. And after the Trumpets had blownen the onser, there was such a Tumult and Ayre amongst the Souldiours, mixte wryth sundry Lamentations, and Teares, that like Madmen with great violence, they ran into the Courte, with theyr Swords naked in theyr hands ready bent to strike. And this renued and sudden Ayre so terrified the Kyng, that hee wisse not what

A cruell facte.

what to do who for all the dampes would needes haue fled . But being perswaded of his Counselloures to tarry, hauing throughe Necessity, gotten occasion to attempt that wherch in the tyme of hys most security he durst scarce haue enterprysed, went forth and with sterne Countenaunce, spake to hys Shoulders in this manner.

What rumors, what tumultes, and what mad partes are these, wherewith so proudeley in this sort ye disquiet me ? What meane these enflamed countenances? What signify these haughty gestures, these proude and and angry lokes? Doe you not remembre that I am your King that hath Power and Authorite to gouerne and rule you ? Are you determynd in this sort to spot your Tuncpent and inuincible ballaunce, and the notable Warrefare of your predecessours, with the bloud of your Emperour.

And while the King was speaking these Words, the Souldiers boldly answered, how they cōfessed him to be the same, whome many yeares ago they chose to be their Kinge And for that hee alleaged how they had with their goodd seruice in the Warres acquired vnto him many great conquests and had diligently kepte the same: All that they did of purpose that he should vse towards them againe a godly Authorite and iust Gouvernement, and not vnaduisedly should lay his bloudy handes vppon euery iuste Man, and so to staine and defile himselfe with the Bloud of Innocēts. And againe, where he laide to their charge, that they were issued from their Cabanes armed with Weapon, they affirmed the same to be done in a iust quarell, euen to reuenge the slaughter of innocent Mustapha, and for that they ought not to haue such a Kinge as should worke his anger vppon them that had not deserued it. Farther they required that they might cleare themselves openly of the offence of Treason, wherof falsly they were accused by Mustapha his Enemies and to haue their accuser to be brought forth in open presence. And sayde moze that before he personally did appeare before the Iudgement Seat Face to Face to giue euidence, sub talionis poena accordinge to the Law, they would not vnarme nor yet disable themselves. And whyles these thinges were debated betwene th' emperour & the souldiers, the cruelty of f fact so moued
all men

all men to teares, that the King him selfe seemed to take great repentaunce for his horrible deede, and promysed the Souldiours that they should haue their requests, and went about with sayre perswasions to mittigate (as much as lay in him) their furious stomakes. Howbeit the Souldiours gaue diligent heede to their watch and warde euery man in his place appoynted, that the king might not secretly conuey himselfe away, and so deceyue them of his promisses, and the expectation of their requests. In the meane time the King depriued Rustanus of all his offices, and promotions, and tooke away from him the priuy Signet whereof he had the keeping, and deliuered it to Achmat Bascha. Rustanus amazed with the terror and feare of the Souldiours thinking himselfe scarce in good security amongs his owne men, secretly conueyed himselfe to Achmat Bascha his Chaulcon, and asked counsell of him what was best to be done in so doubtfull, and daungerous a case. Who aduised him therein to haue the kings aduice, and as he commaunded him so in any wyse to doe. Which counsaile maruellously satisfied the mynde of Rustanus. And without any longer delay by certayne Messengers which were his faithfull, and famillier frendes required the Kings aduise. Whereunto the King answered that forthwith without longer tariaunce he should auoyde his syght, and absent himselfe from his Campe. Who replied that without Money and other furnitures, he could not conveniently execute hys commaundement. But the King bad hym to do what hee list, for he would in no wise giue hym leaue to haue any longer time or space to deliberate the matter. At length Rustanus without further stay, as guilty of his cursed deuises, accompanied with eyght of his trustiest frends directed his Iorney to Constantinople, & bring much expedition (as feare in fearefull matters putteth Spurres to the Horse) came to Constantinople: and there with Rosa & other the Conspiratours expected the euents of Fortune not without danger of their liues. Whereouer it was sayd of Solyman, whose Conscience bewaged the beastlynnes of his abhominable facts, being pricked wth a superstitious rep^{er}ance, determined to trauele on pilgrimage to Mecha, & proceeding in his voyage, he was driue by meanes of the Persians force to go to Hierusalem there

A cruell facte.

there to offer sacrifice for the death of his Sonne, which they call Corba. But now to conclude, and somewhat to speake of Mustapha or rather by way of admonition this one thing to say of him, that the sayde Mustapha was so acceptable and well beloued of all men for his warlike experience, and for his redinesse to sheade Christian bloud, that they supposed the like would neuer be in the Ottoman house more towards to enlarge, and amplexie their Emperre, or promysed greater things for the perfourmance thereof. In so much as then they dyspayred so of their Enterprises, as this Prouerbe rose by amongs them, Gietti Soltan Mustapha, which signifieth an utter dyspayre in thinges which they thought before to goe about.

Therefore we haue good cause to reforce for the death of this cruell enemy that should haue raygned, and to thinck the slaughter of him not be done without Gods speciall prouidence, who in this sorte hath prouided for vs. And at length to be wise, and abstayne from ciuile Warre and dissencions. And with common force to set vpon this wicked Tarmegant, considering that he is not onely a generall Enemy to our Countrey and Lyfe, but also to our Soules. Which thing if we do, it will not be so hard a matter to withstand the force of this enemy of Christendome, as if we doe not, it will be dangerous through our continuall discorde

to geue him occasion to inuade the rest of Europe,

& so with his tyranny bring the same to bitter

destruction, which God that is omnipotent

forbid, who bring vs to vnitie

through his Sonne Iesus

Christe A.

men.

The Kinge of Marocco.

The great Curtesie of the Kyng of *MAROCO*, (a City in *BARBARIE*) toward a poore Fisherman, one of his Subiects, that had lodged the Kyng, being strayed from his Company in hunting.

The. XXXV. Nouell.



EOr somutch as the more than beastly cruelty recounted in the former History, doth yeilde some lowre taste to the minds of those that be curteous, gentle and well conditioned by nature, and as the Stomacke of him that dayly vseth one kinde of meate, be it neuer so delicate and daynty, doth at length lothe, and disdain the same, and bitterly refuseth it. I now chaunge the Diet, leauing murders, slaughters, despayres, and tragicall accidents, & turne my stile to a more pleasaunt thing, that may so well serue for instruction of the noble to follow vertue, as that which I haue already written, may rise to their profit, warely to take heede they fall not into such deformed and filthy faults, as the name and prayse of man be defaced, and his reputation decayed: if then the contraries be knowne by that which is of diuers natures, the villany of great cruelty shalbe conuerted into the gentlenesse of milde curtesie, and rigoꝝ shalbe condempned, when with sweetenesse and generosity, the noble shall assaye to wene the heart, serutice, and affected deuotion of the basest foꝛe: So the greatnesse & nobility of man placed in dignitie, and who hath puissaunce ouer other, consisteth not to shew himseife hard, and terrible, for that is the manner of Tyrants, bicause he that is feared, is consequently hated, euill beloued,

The Kinge of Marocco.

beloued, and in the ende forsaken of the whole World; which hath bene the cause that in times past Princes aspiring to great Conquests, haue made their way, more easie by gentlenesse and Curtesie, than by fury of armes, stablishing the foundations of their dominions more firme & durable by those meanes, than they which by rigoꝝ and cruelty haue sacked townes, ouerthrowne Cities, depopulated Prouinces, and wasted Landes with the bodies of those, whose liues they haue deppriued by dent of sword, vnder the gouernement & authoritie ouer other, carreyeth greater subiection, than puissance. Wherefoꝛe Antigonus, one of the successors of great Alexander (that made all the Earth to tremble vpon the recitall of his name) seeing that his Sonne behaued himselfe arrogantly, and wethout modesty to one of his Subjects, reprovoued and checked him, and amongst many wordes of chastisement and admonition, sayd vnto him: Knowest thou not my Sonne, that the estate of a King, is a noble and honourable seruitude: *Keoall* wordes (in deede) and meete foꝛ a King: Foꝛ albeit that eche man doth reuerence to a King, and that he be honoured, and obeyed of all, yet is hee foꝛ all that, the Seruaunt, and publike Minister, who ought no lesse to defend his Subject, than the Subject to do him honour and Homage. And the moze the Prince doth humble himselfe, the greater increase hath his gloꝛy, and the moze wonderfull he is to euery Weight. What aduaunced the Gloꝛy of Iulius Caesar, who first depressed the Senatorie State of gouernment at Rome: Where his Victories atchieued ouer the Galles and Britons, and afterwarde ouer Rome it selfe, when he had vanquished Pompee: All those serued his tourne, but his greatest fame rose of his Clemency and Curtesie: By the which Vertues hee shewed himselfe to be gentle, and fauourable euen to those, whom hee knewe not to loue him, otherwise than if hee had bene their mortall Enemy. His Successors as Augustus, Vespasianus, Titus, Marcus Aurelius, and Flavius were worthily noted foꝛ clemency: Notwithstanding I see not one drawe neere to the great Courage, and Gentlenesse, toynd with the singular Curtesie of Don Roderigo Viuario the Spanyarde surnamed Cid towarde

toward King Picro of Aragon that hindred his expedition a-
gainst the Moors at Grenadoc. For hauing vanquished the sayde
King, and taken hym in Battell, not onely remitted the reuenge
of his wrong, but also suffered hym to go without ransome, and
tooke not from him so much as one Forre, reseruing it to bee a
better exploite to winne such a King with curtesse, than beare the
name of cruell, in putting hym to Death, or sealing byon his land.
But bicause acknowledging of the pooze, and enriching the final,
is commendable in a Prince, than when he sheweth himselfe gen-
tle to his lyke, I haue collected this discourse and facte of Kinge
Mansor of Marocco, whose Chyldezen (by subtil and fained religi-
on) Cherif succeeded, the Sonne of whom at this day intoryeth the
kingdomes of Su, Marocco, & the most part of the illes confinynge
byon Ethiopia. This hystoꝝ was told by an Italian called Ni-
cholaso Baciadonne, who bypon this accydent was in Affrica, &
in traffike of Marchandise in the Land of Oran, situated bypon
the coast of y South seas, and where the Geneuois and Spanya-
rds vse great entercourse, bicause the countrey is faire, wel peo-
pled, and wher the inhabitants (although the sople be barbarous)
lyue indifferent ciuill, vsing great curtesse to Straungers, and
largely departing their goodes to the pooze, towards whom they
be so earnestly bente, and louing, as for theyr Liberality and py-
tiful almesse, they shame by Chyrtians. They mainteine a great
numbre of Hospitallers, to relieue and intertaine the pooze and
needy, wherein they shew themselves moze deuout than they that
be bounde by the law of Iesus Christe, to vse Charity towards
theyr byethzen, w moze curtesse & greater myldnesse. These Orani-
ens delight also to recorde in wytyng the successe of thinges that
chaunce in their time and carefully reserue the same in Memoꝝ,
whych was the cause that hauyng registred in theyr Chronicles,
(wytyten in Arabic letters, as the most part of those Countreys
do vse) this presēt hystoꝝ, they imparted the same to the Geneuois
marchants, of whom the Italian authoꝝ cōfesseth to haue receyued
the copie. The cause why y Geneuois marchant was so diligeṛ to
make y enquirie, was by reason of a City of that prouince, builte
through the chaunce of this hystoꝝ, and which was called in

The Kinge of Marocco.

theſe Tongue, Ceſar Elcabor, ſo much to ſay, as A great Pallace. And becauſe I am aſſured, that curteous Wyndes will deliſht in deedes of Curteſie. I haue amonges other the Nouelles of Bandello, choſen by Francoiſ de Belleforeſt, and my ſelf diſcoureſed theſe, albeit the matter be not of great impoſſance. For greater thyngs and moze notopious curteſies haue bene done by our own Kings and Wynces, As that of Henry the eight a Wynce of notable memozye in hys Progreſſe into the North the xxxii. yere of his raigne, when he deſdained not a poze Wyllers houſe, being ſtragled from his trapne, buſily purſuing the Hart, and ther by knowne of the Wyller, was welcomed with homely cheare, as hys mealp houſe was able for the time to miniſter, and afterwardeſ for acknowledging his willing Wynde, recompenced him wth daynties of the Courte, and a Wyncely rewarde. Of Edward the thyrde, whoſe Royall Nature was not diſpleaſed pleaſauntly to viſe a Wayſaring Tanner, when deuyded from his Company, he mette hym by the way not far from Comwoth in Straffordſhire, and by cheapening of his welfare ſtede (for ſtedineſſe, ſure and able to carry him ſo farre as the ſtable doze) grewe to a pryce, and for exchaunge the Tanner craued ſiue ſhillings to boote betwene the Kings and his. And when the King ſatiſfied with diſpoſt, deſtred to ſhem himſelf by ſounding his warning blaſſe, aſſembled all hys Traime, and to the great amaze of the pooze Tanner, (when he was guarded wth the Traime) he well guerdone his good Paſſtime and familiar dealing, with the order of Knighthood and reaſonable reuenuue for the maintenaunce of the ſame. The lyke Examplis our Chronicles, memozy, and repozte plentifully doe auouche and witneſſe. But what is this Wyſſoye is the moze rare and worthy of notyng, for reſpect of the Peopel and Countrey, where ſeldome or neuer Curteſie haunteth or ſindeth harbozough, and where Nature doth byyng forth greater ſtoze of monſters, than thynges worchy of pryſe.

This great King Manſor then was not onely the Temporall Lord of the Countrey of Ora and Marocco, but alſo (as is ſaid of Prete Iean,) Wyſhop of his Law and the Mahomet Wyſſe, as he is at theſe Day that raigneth in Feze, Sus, and Marocco. Now theſe

this Prince aboute all other pleasure, /loued the game of Hunting. And he so much delighted in that pastetime, as sometime he would cause his Centes in the myd of the desertes to be erected, to tye there all Nyght, to the end, that the next day he might renew his game, and defraud his men of idlenesse, and the Wild beasts of rest. And this manner of Life he vsed still, after he had done Justice and hearkened the complaintes for which his Subiectes came to disclose thereby there griefes. Wherein also he toke so great pleasure, as some of our magistrates do seeke their profite, whereof they be so squeemish, as they be desirous to satysfy the place wherunto they be called, and render all men their righte due vnto them. For with there Whibery and Sacred Golden Hunger, Kings and Princes in these daies be ill serued, the people wronged, and the wycked out of feare. There is none office almost how villanous so euer it be, but is washed in the Water of Whibery, and clenched in the holly drop, wherewith the Poets saine Iupiter to corrupt the daughter of Acrisius fast closed within the brazen Toure. And who is able to resist that, which hath subdued the highest powers?

Now returne we fram our wanderings: This greate Kenge Mansor on a day assembled his People to hunt in the marish and fenny Countrey, that in elder age was not farre of from the City of Alela, which the Portugalles holde at this present, to make the way more free into the Isles of Molucca, of the most part wherof their King is Lord.

As he was attentife in folowing a Beare, and his pastime at the best, the Elements began to darke, and a great tempest rose, such as with the storme and violent Winde, scattered the trayne far of from the King, who not knowing what way to take, nor into what place he might retire, to auoid the tempest, & greatest that he felt in al his life, would w a good wil haue ben accompanied as the Troiane Aneas was, whē being in like pastime a fear he was constrained to enter into a Caeue with his Queene Dido, where he perfourmed the Ioyes of hys vnhappy Marriage. But Mansor beerynge without Companie, and wihoute any Caeue at hande, wandered alonges the Champayne so carefull of hys Lyfe, for feare of Wyde Beastes, whych flocke together

The Kinge of Marocco.

in those desertes, as the Courtiers were pensive, for that they knew not whether the Prince was gone. And that which chiefly grieved Mansor, was his being alone without guide: And for all he was well mounted, he durst passe no further for feare of drawing, and to be destroyed amidst those Warthes, whereof all the Countrey was very full: On the one side he was freighted with Thunderclaps, which rumbled in the ayre very thicke and terrible. On the other side the lightning continually flashed on his face, the roaring of the Beasts appalled him, the ignorance of the way so assailed him, as he was affraide to fall into the running Brookes, whych the outrageous raignes had caused to swell and rise. It is not to be doubted, that orisons and prayers unto his greates prophet Mahomet were forgotten, and doubtfull it is whether he were more deuout when he went on Pilgrimage to the Idolatrous Temple of Mosqua. Hee complained of ill lucke, accusing Fortune, but chiefly his owne folly, for giuing himselfe so much to hunting, for the desire whereof, hee was thus straggled into vnknown Countreies. Sometimes he rauid and bemytted his Gall against his Gentlemen and household seruants, and threatened death vnto his garde, But afterwards, when reason overshadowed his sense, he saw that the tyme, and not their negligence or little care caused that disgrace. He thoughte that his Prophet had poured downe that tempest for some notable sinne, and had brought him into such and so dangerous extremity for his faults. For which cause he lifted vp his Eyes, and made a thousand Mahomet-mowes, and Apish mocks (according to their manner.) And as he fixed his eyes aloft vp to the heauens, a flash of lightning glaunced on his face so violently, as it made him to holde downe his head, like a little Chylde repproued of his master. But he was further daunted and amazed, when he saw the night approach, which with the darkenes of his cloudy Mantell, stayed his pace from going any further, and brought him into such perplexity, as willingly he would haue forsaken both his hunting and company of his Seruants to be quit of that Daunger. But God carefull of good Vnderes (with what law so euer they be trapped vp,) and who maketh the Sunne to shine vpon the iust & vniuste,

prepared

prepared a meanes for his sauegarde, as you shal heare. The Africane King being in this traunce, and naked of all hope, necessity (which is the clearest looking glasse that may be found,) made him diligently to loke about, whether he could see any persone by whome he might attayne some securitie. And as he thus bent himselfe to discry all the partes of the Countrey, he saw not far of from him, the glimpse of a light which glimmered out at a little Window, whereunto he addrest himselfe. and perceiued that it was a simple Cabane situate in the middelt of the Fennes, to which he approched for his succor and defense in the time of that tempest. He reioysed as you may think, and whither his heart leapt for joy, I leaue for them to iudge which haue assayed like daungers, how be it I dare beleue, that the saylers on the seas feele no greater joy when they arriue to harborough, than the King of Marocco dyd: or when after a Tempest, or other perill, they discrye vppon the prowe of their shyppe, the bryghtnesse of some clyffe, or other land. And this King hauing felt the tempest of Wind, ratine, haile, lyghtenpnyng, and Thunder claps, compassed round aboute with Harthes and violent Streames of little Riuer, that ran along his way thought, he had found Paradise by chauncing vpon that rusticall lodge. Now that Cottage was the refuge place of a poore Fisher man, who liued and sustented his Wife and children with Eeles which he toke alongs the ditches of those deepe and huge Harthes. Mansor when he was arriued at the doore of that great pallace, couered & thacked wih Beede, called to the wryth-in, who at the first would make no answer to the Dyce that tarried there comming at the Gate. Then he knocked againe, and in louder voyce than befoze, which caused this Fisher man, thinkinge that he had bene some rippier (to whome he was wont to sell hys ware, or else some straunger strayed out of his way,) speedily wote out, and seeinge the Kinge well mounted and richlye clothed, and albeit he tooke him not to be his soueraigne L^o R^o D^o yet he thought he was some one of his Courtly Gentlemen. Wherefoze hee sayde: What fortune hath dyuen you (sir) into these so deserte and solitarie Places, and such as I marvel that you were not drowned a hundred tymes, in these

The Kinge of Marocco.

are full: It is the great God (answered Manfor which hath had
some care of me, and will not suffer me to perishe without doinge
greater good turnes and better deedes than hitherto I haue don.
The Kings comming thither, seemed, to Prognosticate & whych
after chanced; and that God poured downe the Tempest for the
Wealth of the Fisher man; and commoditie of the Countrey. And
the straping of the Kyng was a thynge appointed to make voyde
those Warthes, and to purge and cleanse the Countrey Semblable
chaunces haue happened to other Princes, as to Constantine the
great, besides his City called New Rome, when he caused cer-
taine Warthes and Duches to be filled vp and dyed, to build a
fayre and sumptuous Temple, in the Honor and Memory of the
blessed Virgin that brought forth the Sauioz of the World. But
tel me good man (replied Manfor) canst thou not shew me & way
to the Court, and whither the King is gone? for gladly (if it were
possible) woul I ride thither. Verily (sayd the Fisher Man) it
will be almost day before ye can come there, the same beinge ten
leagues from hence. Forso much as thou knowest the way (ans-
wered Manfor) doe me so great pleasure to bring me thither, and
be assured that besides the good turne, for which I shall be bound
vnto thee, I wil curteously content thee for thy paynes. Sir (sayd
the poore man) you seeme to be an honest Gentleman, wherefore I
pray you to leight, and to tarry heere this Night, for that it is so
late, and the way to the City very euill and comber some for you
to passe. No no (sayd the King) if it be possible, I must repayre to
the place whither the King is gone; wherefore doe so much for
me as to bee my guide, and thou shalt see whether I be vnthank-
full to them that imploy theyr paynes for mee. If King Man-
for (sayd the Fisher man) were heere hymselfe in Person, and
made the like request, I woul not be so very a foole, nor so pre-
sumptuous, (at this time of the Night) to take vpon me with-
out Daunger to bring hym to his Palace. Wherefore (sayd the
King) ? Wherefore (quod pou) ? because the Warthes bee so
daungerous, as in the Day tyme, if one know not wel the way,
the Horse, (be he neuer so stronge and Lusty,) may chaunce to

Strike

Nicke fast, and tarry behynd for gage. And I would be sorry if the
 King were heere, that he should fall into Perill, or suffer anoyance
 and the rowythall would deeme my selfe unhappie if I did let hym
 to incur such euill or incombryce. Manfor that delighted in the
 communication of this good man, and desirous to know the cause
 that moued him to speak with such affection, said vnto hym: And
 why carest thou for the Life, health, or preservation of the King?
 What hast thou to doe with hym that wouldest be so sorry for hys
 state, and carefull of his safety? Ho, ho, said the goodman, doe you
 say that I am carefull for my Prince? Verily I loue him a hun-
 dred tymes better than I do my selfe, my Wife or children whych
 God hath sent me: & what Sir, do not you loue our Prince? Yes
 that I doe (replied the King,) for I haue better cause than thou,
 for that I am many times in his company, & liue vnder his charge
 and am entertayned with his wages. But what nedest thou to
 care for hym? Thou knowest him not, hee neuer dyd thee anpe
 good turne or pleasure: no; yet thou nedest not hope: henceforth to
 haue any pleasure at hys hands. What? (said the Fisher mā) must
 a Prince be loued for gaine and good turnes, rather than for hys
 Justice and currellie? I see wel that amongs you maister Courti-
 ers, the benefitts of kings be more regarded, and their gifts better
 liked than their vertue and nobilitie, which maketh them wonder-
 ful vnto vs: & ye do more esteeme the gold, honoꝝ & estates that they
 bestow vpon you, than their health & sauegard, which are the more
 to be considered, for that the King is our head, and God hath
 made him such one to kepe vs in Peace, and to be carefull of our
 states. Pardon me if I speake so boldly in your presence. The
 King (which toke singular delight in this Countrey Philosopher,)
 answered him: I am not offended because thy words appoche so
 neare the troth; but tel me what benefitt hast thou receiued of that
 King Manfor, of whome thou makest such accompt and louest so
 well? For I cannot thinke that euer he dyd thee good, or shewed
 thee pleasure, by reason of thy pouerty, and the little Furniture
 within thy house in respect of that which they possesse whome hee
 loueth and sauegeth, and vnto whome he sheweth so great family-
 aritie and Benefitte. Doe tell me Sir (replied the good man) for so

The Kinge of Marocco.

much as you so greatly regard the fauoures which Subjects receiue at theyr Princes handes, as in deede they ought to doe.
What greater goodnesse, richesse, or Benefite ought I to hope for, or can receiue of my King (being such one as I am,) but the profite and vility that all we whych be his bassalles do apprehend from day to day in the Iustyce that he rendereth to euery Wryghte, by not suffering the puissant and Rich to suppressse and ouertread the feeble and weak, and him that is deuoid of Fortunes goods, that indifferency be maintayned by the Officers, to whom he committeth the gouernement of his Prouinces, and the care which he hath that his people be not deuoured by exacttions, and intollerable tributes I do esteeme more his goodnesse, clemency and Loue, that he beareth to his subjects, than I doe all your deleyates ease in following the Court, I most humbly honoꝝ and reuerence my king in that he being farre from vs, doeth neuertheless so vse his gouernment, as we feele his pꝛesence like the Image of God for the peace and vniõ, wherein we though him do lyue and enjoy without disturbaunce that lytle whych G O D, and Fortune haue gꝛuē vs. Who (if not þ king) is he þ doeth pꝛeserue vs, & defend vs from the incurssions and pillages of those Theues and Pirates of Arabie, which inuade & make warre with their neighbours, and there is no friend they haue but they would displease if the King wꝛesely did not foꝛbyd & pꝛeuent their villanies. That great Lord which kepeth his Court at Constantinople and maketh himself to be adored of his people like a God, bydeleth not so much the Arabians, as our king doth, vnder the Protection & sauegard of whome, I that am a poore Fisher man, do for my povertie in peace, & without fear of theues do noꝛish my little family, applying my self to the fishing of Celes that be in these ditches and fenny places, whiche I carry to the market townes, & sel for þ sustenance & feeding of my wife & children, & esteeme my self right happy, that returning to my cabane & homely lodge at my pleasure, in what soeuer place I do abide, bicause (albeit far of from Neighbourhood, by the benefite and diligence of my Pꝛynce, none stape my tourney, or offendeth me by any meanes, whych is the cause
(sayd

(sayd he lifting by his hands and eyes aloft,) that I pray bñd
 God and his great Prophet Mahomer, that it may please them to
 preferue our King in health, and to geue him so great happs and
 contentation, as he is vertuous and debonaire, and that ouer hys
 Enimies (lying before him,) he may euermore be victorior, for
 noything his people in peace, and his children in toy and Nobili-
 ty. The King seeing that deuout affectyon of the passaunte, and
 knowyng it to be without guile or Hypocrisie, would gladly haue
 discouered himself, but yet willyng to reserue the same for better
 opportunity, he sayd vnto him. Forsomuch as thou louest the king
 so well, it is not impossible but those of his house be welcome vn-
 to thee, and that for thy Mansors sake, thou wilt helpe and do ser-
 uice to his Gentlemen. Let it suffice you (replied he) that my heart
 is more inclined to the King, than to the willes of those I serue
 him, for hope of preferment. Now being so affectionate to the king
 as I am, thynke whyther hys houtholde Seruautes haue po-
 wer to commaund me, and whither my willing mynde be prest to
 doe them good or not. But mee thynke ye neede not to stay heere
 at the gate in talke, being so wet as you be: Wherefore vouchsafe
 to come into my house, which is your owne, to take such ample
 lodging as I haue, where I wyl entreat you, (not according to
 your merite) but with the litle that God and his Prophet haue
 departed to my pouerty: And to morrow morning I will conduct
 you to the City, euen to the royall Palace of my Prynce. Truly
 (answered the King) albeit necessity did not prouoke me, yet thyns
 honesty deserueth well other reputation than a simple Countrey
 man, and I do thinke that I haue profited more in hearing thee
 speake, than by hearkeneng to the flattering and babbling tales
 of Courting trifiers, which dayly employ themselves to corrupte
 the eares of Prynces. What sir (sayd the Daylant,) thynke you
 that thys pooe Coate and simple lodging be not able to apprehend
 the Preceptes of Vertue? I haue sometimes heard tell, that the
 wise auoyding Cities and Troupes of Men, haue withdrawne
 themselves into the desertes, for leysure to contemplate heauen-
 ly thynges. Your skyll is greate replied Mansor: Goe wee
 then, as thou please to doe me that Curtesie as this night to be

The Kinge of Marocco.

mine hoste. So the the king went into the Rustical Lodge, where
in steele of Capistery and Turkey hangings, he sawe the house
lately hanged with fether Nets and Cordes, and in place of rich
feeling of Noble mans houses, he beheld Canes and Reedes whych
serued both for the feeling and covering. The fether mans Wife
continued in the kitchē, whilst Man for hymself both walked and
dressed his owne horse, to which horse the fether man durste not
once come neare for his Coage and lately trappour, with one
thing he was abundantly refreshed, and that the most needfull
thing which was fire, whereof there was no spare, no more then
there was of fische. But the king which had ben daintely fed, and
did not well taske and like th it kynde of meat, demaunded if hys
hunger could not be supplied with a peice flesh, for that hys sto-
macke was annoyed with the onely sauoure of the Celes. The
poore man, (as ye haue somewhat percerued by former discourse)
was a pleasaunt fellow, and delighred rather to prouoke laughter
than to prepare more dainty meat, said vnto the king: It is no
maruell though our kinges do furnishe themselves with Coun-
trei men, to serue them in their Warres, for the delicate byrning
vp and little force in fine Courtiers. Wee, albeit the Raine doth
fall vppon our heads, and the Winde assaile euery part of our bo-
dies all hurtie and Wet, doe not care either for fire or Bed, wee
feede vpon any kinde of meate that is set before vs, withoute se-
king Sauce for increasung of our appetites: and we (beholde) are
nimble, healthy, lusty, and neuer sicke, nor our mouth out of taske,
where ye do feeble such dissemperaunce of stomacke, as pity it is
to see, and more ado there is to bring the same into his right
order and taske, than to ordeine and dresse a supper for a whole ar-
mie. The king who laughed (with displayed throte,) hearing his
horse so merrily disposed, could haue bene contented to haue heard
him still, had not his appetite prouoked him, and the time of the
Night very late. Wherefoze he said vnto him. I do agree to what
you alleage, but performe I pray thee my request, and then wee
will satisfie our selues with further talke. Well Sir (replied
the kinges horse,) I see well that a hungry Belly hath no luste
to heare a merry song, whereof were you not so egre and sharpe
set,

let, I could sing a hundred. But I have a litle kiddle whych as yet is not weaned, the same will I cause to bee made ready, for I think it cannot be better bestowed. The supper by reaso of ⁵ holles curtelle, was passed forth in a thousand pleasaunt pastimes, whych the Fisherman of purpose vittered to recreate hys Guest, bicause he sawe hym to delight in those demples. And vpon the end of Supper, he sayd vnto the King: Now Sir, how like you this banket? It is not so sumptuous as those that be ordinarly made at our Prynces Court, yet I thinke that you shal slepe wth no lesse apperete than you haue eaten with a good stomack, as appeareth by the few Woordes you haue vittered in the tyme of your repast. But whereunto booteh it to employ tyme, ordeyned for eating, in expense of tyme, whych serueth not but to passe the tyme, and to shorten the day? And meete I ought rather to be taken for sustentation of Nature than for prouocation or motion of thyse feeble and Transcroype Flethe? Verily (sayd the King) your reason is good, and I doe meane to ryle from the Table, to passe the remnant of the Nyght in rest, therewith to satisfie my selfe so well as I haue wth eatyng, and do thanke you heartily for your good aduertysment. So the King went to Bed, and it was not long ere hee fell a sleepe, and consyued tyll the Mornyng.

And when the Sunne dyd ryle, the Fisherman came to wake hym, tellyng hym that it was tyme to ryle, and that hee was ready to byng him to the Court. All this whyle the Gentlemen of the kinges Traine were searching round aboute the Countrey to fynde his Maestie, making Cryes and Hues, that he myght heare them. The King knowyng their voices, and the noise they made, went forth to meete them: and if his People were gladd when they founde him, the Fisherman was no lesse amazed to see the honor the Courtiers did vnto his Guest. Which the curious king perceiuing sayd vnto him: My Friend, thou seest here, that Mansor, of whome yesternight thou madest so great accopt, and whome thou saidst, that thou didst loue so well. Bee assured, that for the Curtelle thou hast done him, besoze it bee longe, the same shall be so well acquited, as for euer thou shalt haue good cause to remembze it. The good mā was already vpon his way: bones

The King of Marocco.

bones beseeching the King that it would please him pardon his rude entertainment, and his ouermuch familiarity whych hee had vsed vnto him. But Masor causing him to rise vp, willed him to depart, and sayed that within few dayes [after he should heare further] Newes. Now in these fennish and marrellous groundes, the King had already builded diuers Castles and lodges for the pleasure and solace of hunting, Wherefore he purposed there to erect a goodly City, causing the waters to be boydded with great expedition, whych City he builded immediately, and compassing the circuite of the appoynted place, with strong Walles and depe Dytches, he gaue many immunities and Pryuiledges to those, that would repaize to people the same, by meanes whereof, in little tyme, was reduced to the state of a beautifull and wealthy City, whych is the very same, that befoze we sayd to be Cesar Elcabir, as much to say, The great Palace. This goodly worke being thus performed Masor sent for his host, to whome hee sayde To the end from henceforth thou mayest more honourably entertaine Kings into thy House, and mayest intreate them with greater sumptuositie, for the better solacyng of them with thy curtesy and pleasaunt talke, behold the City that I haue buylded, whych I doe geue vnto thee and thyne for euer, reseruing nothing but an acknowledgement of good wil, to the end thou mayest know, that a Gentlemans mind nouled in villany, is discouered, when forgetting a good turne, he incurreth the vice of Ingratitude. The good man seeing so liberall an offer, and present worthe of such a King fell downe vppon his knees, and kissing his foote with all humility, sayd vnto him. Sir if your Liberality did not supply the imperfection of my Weryte, and perfourmed not what wanted in me, to attayn so great estate, I would excuse my selfe of the charge whych it pleaseth you to geue mee, and whereunto for lacke of trayning vp, and vse of such a Dignity, I am altogether vnfit. But sith that the graces of G O D, and the gestes of Kynge's ought neuer to bee relected, by acceptynge this Benefite with humble thanks for the clemencie of your royall Maestye, I rest the Seruaunt and slave of you and yours. The King hearing hym

him speake so wisely, tooke hym vp, and embraced him, saying. Would to God and his great Prophete, that all they which rule Cities, and gouerne Prouinces, had so good a Nature as thine, when I durst be bolde to say, that the People shoulde lyue better at theyr ease, and Monarches without charge of conscience, for the ill behauiours of theyr Officers. Lyue good man, lyue at thine ease, mayntaine the people, obserue our lawes, and increase the Beauty of the City, whereof from this time forth wee doe make the posseller.

And truly the present was not to bee contempned, for that the same at this day is one of the fairest that is in Affrica, and is the Land of the blacke People, such as the Spaniards call Negroes. It is very full of Gardeins, furnished with abundance of Spices brought from the Moluccas, because of the martes and fatres ordeined there. To be short, Mansor shewed by this gift what is the force of a gentle heart, which can not abyde to bee vanquished in curtesie, and lesse suffer that vnder forgetfulnesse the memoery of a receyued good turne be lost. King Darius whilome, for a little garment, receiued in gift by Silofon the Samie, recompented him wth the gaine and royall dignitie of that City, and made him soveraine Lord thereof, and of the Ile of Samos. And what greater vertue can illustrate the name of a noble man, than to acknowledge and preferre them, which for Natural shame & bashfulnesse, dare not behold the Maiesty of their greatnesse? God sometymes with amore curteous Eye doth loke vpon the presents of a poore man, than the fat and rich offerings of him that is great & wealthy: Euen so a benefite, from what hand soeuer it proceedeth, cannot chole but bying forth the fructs of his Liberality that giueth the same, who by vsing largesse, feleth also the like in him, to whom it is employed. That magnificence no long time past bled S. Seignior of Venice, to Francesco Dandulo, who after he had dured the great displeasures of the Pope, in the name of the whole City, vpon his returne to Venice, for acknowledgment of his patience, and for abolishment of that Shame, was wth happy and vni forme Acclamatiyon of the whole State elected, and made

The Kinge of Marocco.

electd, and made Prince, and Duke of that Common wealth.
Worthy of praise truly is he, that by some pleasure bindeth an o-
ther to his curtesie: but when a Noble man, acknowledgeth for a
benefit, that which a Subject is bounde to giue him by duty and
seruice, there the prooffe of praise carryeth no fame at all. For
which cause I determined to display þe Despoyle of the barbarous
King Mansor, to the intent that our Gentlemen, nourished, and
trayned by in great ciuilitye, may assay by their mildenesse
and good education, to surmount the curtesie of that
Prince, of whom for this time wee pur-
pose to take our fare-
well,

The Conclusion, with an

Aduertisement to the
Reader.



What thou hast gained for thy better instruction, or what conceiued for recreation by reading these. 35. Nouells, I am no Iudge, although (by deeming) in reading and perusing, thou mayst (at thy pleasure) gather vath. But how soeuer profite, or delighe, can satisfie mine apoyntment, wherefore they were preferred into thy hands, contented am I that thou doe vouchsafe them Good lessons how to shun the Darts, and Pickes of insoleney, thou findest in the same. The vertuous noble may sauoz the fruits and taste the licour that stillet from the gums or buds of Vertue. The contrary may see the blossoms fall, that bloime from the Hubs of disloyalty and degenerat kinde. Young Gentlemen, and Ladies do biew a plot founded on sured ground, and what the foundation is, planted in thatting Soyle, with a fashion of attyre to garnish their inward parts, so well as (sparelesse) they employ vpon the vanishing pompe. E- uery sort and sexe that war fare in the feld of humayne life, may set here the sauourous fruct (so outwardly ly- king) that fausted the sensuall taste of Adams Wyse. They see also what griefts such fading fructs produce vnto posterity: what likewise the lusty growth & spring of vertues plant, and delicates it byauncheth, to those that carefully keepe the slips thereof, within the Dy- shard of their mindes. Diuers Tragical shewes by the
pennes

The Conclusion,

pennes description haue bene disclosed in greatest number of these Hypoxies, the same also I haue mollified & sweetened with the course of pleasaunt matters, of purpose not to damp the deyny mindes of those y^e I thinke and feare at sutch rehearfall. And bicause sodaynly (contrary to expectation) this Volume is risen to greater heape of leaues, I doe omit for this present time sundry Nouels of mery deuise, reseruing the same to be ioyned with the rest of an other part, wherein shall succede the remnaunt of Rinaldo, specially sutch (suffrable) as the learned French man François de Belleforrest hath selected, and the choysest done in the *Italian*. Some also out of Erizzo, Ser Giouani Florétino, Parabosco, Cynchio, Straparole, Sansouino, and the best liked out of the *Queene of Navarre*, and other Authoys. Take these in so good part with those that haue and shall come forth, as I do offre them with good will, curteously correcting sutch fautes, and Errors, as shall present themselves, eyther burying them in the Bosome of Faue, or pretermittig them with the beck of Curtesie.

FINIS.

